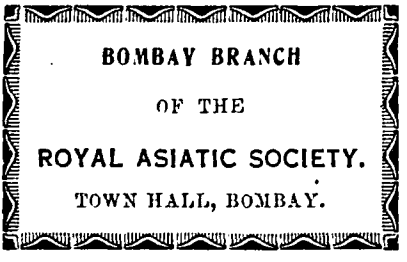
00108887



Digitized with financial assistance from
Government of Maharashtra
on 01 February, 2020

00108887

Non-Regular Military Forces in India

Report of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Committee

10888?

Dated 23rd January 1925

VOLUME II

Government of India Publications are obtainable from the Government of India Central Publication Branch, 8, Hastings Street, Calcutta, and from the following Agents :—

EUROPE.

OFFICE OF THE HIGH COMMISSIONER FOR INDIA, 42, GROSVENOR GARDENS, LONDON, S.W. 1.

Constable & Co., 10, Orange Street, Leicester Square, London, W.C.
Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner & Co., 68-74, Carter Lane, E.C., and 39, New Oxford Street, London, W.C.
Bernard Quaritch, 11, Grafton Street, New Bond Street, London, W.
P. S. King & Sons, 2 & 4, Great Smith Street, Westminster, London, S.W.
Grindlay & Co., 54, Parliament Street, London, S.W.
Lusac & Co., 46, Great Russell Street, London, W.C.
W. Thacker & Co., 2, Creed Lane, London, E.C.
T. Fisher Unwin, Ltd., 1, Adelphi Terrace, London, W.C.
Wheldon and Wesley, Ltd., 2, 3 & 4, Arthur Street, New Oxford Street, London, W.C. 2.
Luzac and Wesley, Ltd., 2, 3 & 4, Arthur Street, New Oxford Street, London, W.C. 2.
E. Ponsonby, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin.
B. H. Blackwell, 50 & 51, Broad Street, Oxford.
Deighton Bell & Co., Ltd., Cambridge.
Oliver and Boyd, Tweeddale Court, Edinburgh.
Ernest Leroux, 28, Rue Bonaparte, Paris.
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, Holland.
Otto Harrassowitz, Leipzig.
Friedländer und Sohn, Berlin.

INDIA AND CEYLON.

Provincial Book Depôts:

Madras.—Office of the Superintendent, Government Press, Mount Road, Madras.
Bombay.—Office of the Manager, Government Central Press, Bombay.
Sind.—Library attached to the Office of the Commissioner in Sind, Karachi.
Bengal.—Office of the Bengal Secretariat Book Depôt, Writers' Buildings, Room No. 1, Ground Floor, Calcutta.
United Provinces of Agra and Oudh.—Office of the Superintendent of Government Press, United Provinces of Agra and Oudh, Allahabad.
Punjab.—Controller, Government of Punjab, Lahore.
Burma.—Office of the Superintendent, Government Printing, Burma, Rangoon.
Central Provinces and Berar.—Office of the Central Provinces Secretariat, Nagpur.
Assam.—Office of the Superintendent, Assam Secretariat Press.
Bihar and Orissa.—Office of the Superintendent, Government Printing, Bihar and Orissa, P. O. Gulzarbagh, Patna.
Coorg.—Office of the Chief Commissioner of Coorg, Bangalore.
North-West Frontier Province.—Government Press, Peshawar.

Thacker, Spink & Co., Calcutta and Simla.
W. Newman & Co., Ltd., Calcutta.
R. Cambray & Co., Calcutta.
S. K. Lahiri & Co., Calcutta.
The Indian School Supply Depôt, 309, Bow Bazar Street, Calcutta, and 226, Nawabpur, Dacca.
Butterworth & Co. (India), Ltd., Calcutta.
Rai M. C. Sarcar Bahadur & Sons, 90-2A, Harrison Road, Calcutta.
The Weldon Library, 17, Park Street, Calcutta.
Standard Literature Company, Limited, Calcutta.
Association Press, Calcutta.
Chuckerverty, Chatterjee & Co., Ltd., 13, College Square, Calcutta.
Higginbotham & Co., Madras.
V. Kalyanarama Iyer & Co., Madras.
G. A. Natesan & Co., Madras.
Rochouse and Sons, Madras.
Bright & Co., Trivandrum.
V. S. Sambasivam, Bookseller, West Tower Street, Madurai.
Thacker & Co., Ltd., Bombay.
D. B. Taraporevala, Sons & Co., Bombay.
Sunder Pandurang, Bombay.
Ram Chandra Govind & Sons, Kalbadevi, Bombay.
S. M. Tripathi & Co., Booksellers, Princess Street, Kalbadevi Road, Bombay.
Proprietor, New Kitabkhana, Poona.
The Manager, Oriental Book Supplying Agency, 15, Shukrawar, Poona City.
R. S. Gondhalekar's Book Depôt, Publisher and Bookseller, Budhwar Chawdi, Poona City.
Managing Director, Co-operative Bookstall, Booksellers and Publishers, Poona City.
The Standard Bookstall, Karachi, Rawalpindi, Murree, Lahore, Peshawar and Quetta.
Karsondas Narandas & Sons, Surat.
A. H. Wheeler & Co., Allahabad, Calcutta and Bombay.
N. B. Mathur, Supdt., Nazir Kanun Hind Press, Allahabad.
The North India Christian Tract and Book Society, 18, Clive Road, Allahabad.
Ram Dayal Agarwala, 184, Katra, Allahabad.
Manager, Newal Kishore Press, Lucknow.
The Upper India Publishing House, Ltd., 41, Aminabad Park, Lucknow.
Munshi Seeta Ram, Managing Proprietor, Indian Army Book Depôt, Juhi, Cawnpore.
Rai Sahib M. Gulab Singh & Sons, Mufid-i-Am Press, Lahore and Allahabad.
Rama Krishna & Sons, Booksellers, Anarkali, Lahore.
Puri Brothers, Booksellers and Publishers, Katcheri Road, Lahore.
Manager of the Imperial Book Depôt, 63, Chandney Chawk Street, Delhi.
Oxford Book and Stationery Company, Delhi.
Supdt., American Baptist Mission Press, Rangoon.
Proprietor, Rangoon Times Press, Rangoon.
The Modern Publishing House, Ltd., 30, Phayre Street, Rangoon.
The International Buddhist Book Depôt, Post Box No. 971, Rangoon.
Manager, the "Hitavada," Nagpur.
S. C. Talukdar, Proprietor, Students & Co., Cooch Behar.
Times of Ceylon Co., Ltd.
The Manager, Ceylon Observer, Colombo.
The Manager, The Indian Book Shop, Benares City.
B. C. Basak, Esq., Proprietor, Albert Library, Dacca.

Report of the Committee appointed by the Governor General in Council to investigate and report what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force, so as to constitute it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army, and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the Non-Regular Military Forces in India, including the Auxiliary Force.

Volume II.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PAGE.

(1) Minutes of Meetings 1

(2) Opinions of Local Governments and Administrations—

Letter No. A.-27033-1 (A. G. A. T. F.), dated 1st April, 1924, from the Secretary to the Government of India, Army Department, to Local Governments and Administrations 3

Bengal Government (Letter No. 6740-P., dated 11th July 1924, and enclosures) 4

Bihar and Orissa Government (Letter No. 377-P. R., dated 10th June, 1924 and enclosures) 11

United Provinces Government (Letter No. 2760, dated 17th June, 1924 and enclosures) 20

Chief Commissioner, N.-W. Frontier Province (Letter No. 2621-G. N.-12-28, dated 13th August, 1924 and enclosures) 27

Chief Commissioner, N.-W. Frontier Province (Letter No. 3605-G. N.-12-28-1923, dated 6th September, 1924 and enclosures) . . . 31

Punjab Government (Letter No. 2665-S. Military, dated 15th August 1924, and enclosures) 32

A. G. G., Rajputana (Letter No. 4335, dated 10th July, 1924 and enclosures) 42

Bombay Government (Letter No. 5655-E., dated 18th July, 1924, and enclosures) 46

Chief Commissioner, Delhi, (Letter No. 2319-Military, dated 30th April, 1924 and enclosures) 51

Burma Government (Letter No. 188-E.-24, dated 25th June 1924 and enclosures) 53

Madras Government (Letter No. 4168-3, dated 11th June, 1924) . . 61

Chief Commissioner, Coorg (Letter No. 1952-129-20, dated 24th June, 1924, and enclosures) 63

(3) Questionnaire which formed the basis of the Written Statements of Witnesses 67

(4) List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to submit written statements for the information of the Committee 76

(5) Written Statements of Witnesses—

2nd Lieut. G. Sircar, M.A., B.L., Vakil, High Court (Bengal) . . 78

Hony. 2nd Lieut. N. R. Venkataraman, B.A., 11-3rd Madras Regt. . 79

Hony. 2nd Lieut. M. Haider Khan, M.A., B.Sc., 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C. 81

Hony. Lieut. Tek Singh, 11-17th Dogra Regiment 88

Mr. G. Miller, M.A., Principal, Government College, Ajmer . . . 90

Major S. W. Finnis, Adjutant, 11-15th Punjab Regiment . . . 91

Major H. W. Goldfrap, Adjutant, 11-5th Mahratta Light Infantry . 95

Major Hamill, O.C., 1st (Bombay) Battalion, U. T. C. . . . 99

Captain Mir Jaffar Khan, M.B.E., I.O.M., Sardar Bahadur (N.-W. F. P.). 100

Major T. F. O'Donnell, M.C., B.A., Registrar, Lucknow University, 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C. 103

Lieut. E. E. Garate, the Calcutta Battalion, A. F. I. 104

Captain G. L. Hyde, Adjutant, 2nd (Calcutta) Battalion, U. T. C. . 105

PAGE.

(5) Written Statements of Witnesses—*contd.*

Mr. S. N. Mullick, M.A., B.L. (Bengal) 110
Provincial Advisory Committee, United Provinces 113
Lieut.-Colonel Maharaja Sir Jai Chand, K.C.I.E., C.S.I. of Lambagraon 116
Mr. F. L. Brayne, M.C., I.C.S. (Punjab) 117
Major K. K. Chatterjee, F.R.C.S., I.T.F., Medical Corps (Bengal) . 120
Mr. R. L. Khare, Panchgani, Gwalior 127
Major F. J. O. Hume-Wright, Adjutant, 11-7th Rajput Regiment . 130
Khan Bahadur M. A. Momin, District Magistrate, Nadia . . . 131
Mr. Panchanan Barma, Secretary, Kshatriya Samity (Bengal) . . 133
Captain (Local Major) W. A. J. Hinds, Adjutant, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers 138
Captain H. V. Gell, Adjutant, 11-9th Jat Regiment 141
Hony. Lieut. P. V. Bapat, M. A., 1st (Bombay) Battalion, U. T. C. . 145
Hony. Lieut. Malik Muzaffar Khan, 11-13th F. F. Rifles 151
Captain J. J Waite, Adjutant, 11-14th Punjab Regiment . . . 154
Major J. St. Aubyn King, Adjutant, 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers . . 157
Mr. G. K. Nariman, Bombay 160
Mr. R. G. Pradhan, B.A., LL.B., M.L.C. (Bombay) 161
Mr. K.C. De, C.I.E., I.C.S. (Bengal) 165
Principal Rathnaswamy, M. Sc, Pachaiyappa's College, Madras . . 167
Mr. Sydney Loo-Nee, Bar.-at-Law (Burma) 168
Hony. Lieut. S. C. Ghosh Mullick (Bengal) 169
Lieut. Revd. T. D. Sully, 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C. . 172
Mr. Hormusjee Muncherjee, Vakil (Bombay) 174
Lieut. (Local Captain) S. Hissan-ud-din Khan, Bahadur, I.D.S.M. Adjutant, 11-12th F. F. Rifles 183
Rai Bahadur Chaudhri Amar Singh, O B.E. (United Provinces) . . 188
Mr. M. N. Katrak (Bombay) 189
Mr. K. Chengappa, B.A., M.L.C. (Coorg) 191
Honorary 2nd-Lieut. Syed Ali-Bin-Hamid, 11-9th Jat Regiment . . 194
Dr. Kaikhasru Kersasp Dadachanji, Bombay 198
Rai Bahadur Jadunath Mozoomdar, M.A., B.L., C.I.E., Jessore (Bengal) 246
Mr. Sukhludu Bilash Roy, Secretary, Recruiting Committee, Chittagong 247
Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., I. T. F. Medical Corps, President, I. T. F. Advisory Committee (Bengal) 248
Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., Adjutant, 11-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles 252
Lieutenant (Local Captain) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, 5th (Madras) Battalion, U. T. C. 254
Honorary 2nd-Lieut. A. N. Wadhawa, 11-15th Punjab Regiment . 255

(6) List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to appear to give evidence before the Committee 258

(7) Oral Evidence of Witnesses—

Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., Adjutant, 11-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles . 260
Lieut. (Local Captain) Raja Sher Mohammad Khan, Adjutant, 11-13th F. F. Rifles 266
Major N. M. Grylls, Adjutant, 11-1st Punjab Regiment . . . 272
Honorary 2nd-Lieut. M. Haider Khan, M.A., B.Sc., 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C. 278

PAGE.

(7) Oral Evidence of Witnesses—*contd.*

Honorary 2nd-Lieut. A. N. Wadhawa, 11-15th Punjab Regiment . 288

Major E. B. Mangin, M. C., 2nd Bombay Pioneers (late Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment) 297

Khan Bahadur Khawaja Mohammad Nur (Bihar and Orissa) . . 304

Captain K. S. Caldwell, O. C., Patna, U. T. C. 314

Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., I. T. Fo Medical Corps (Bengal) . 321

Captain (Local Major) W. A. J. Hinds, Adjutant, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers 333

Honorary Lieutenant (Local Captain) J. C. Oonwala, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers 335

Honorary 2nd-Lieut. S. P Singha, 11-15th Punjab Regiment . . 338

Honorary 2nd-Lieut. Tikka Sahib Surindra Singh Bedi, 11-1st Punjab Regiment 349

Captain J. N. Bannerjee, Bar.-at-Law (Bengal) . . . 354

Mr. F. L. Brayne, M. C., I.C.S. (Punjab) 368

Major H. S. Stewart, D. A. D., A. & T. F., P. & A. Dist. (Bengal) . 375

Lieut. P. W: McKie, Delhi Contingent, Auxiliary Force . . . 381

Lieut.-Colonel W. M. Craddock, D.S.O., M.C., O.C., Calcutta Scottish . 383

Mr. H. R. Nevill, C.I.E., O.B.E., V.D., I.C.S. (U. P.) . . . 390

Major W. J. Nance, Adjutant, 11-3rd Madras Regiment . . . 405

Honorary 2nd-Lieut. The Rajah of Kalikote, 11-3rd Madras Regiment 410

Lieutenant (Local Captain) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, 5th (Madras) Battalion, U. T. C. 415

Mr. K. C. De, C.I.E., I.C.S. (Bengal) 423

Mr. Palekanda Mudappa, B.A.B.L., M.L.C. (Coorg) 432

Captain K. L. Fasken, Adjutant, 11-20th Burma Rifles . . . 435

Honorary Lieut. L. V. Po, 11-20th Burma Rifles 441

Kanwar Ganpati Singh of Kharwa (Rajputana) 447

Mr. C D. M. Hindley, Chief Commissioner of Railways . . . 455

(8) Estimated cost of the Committee 465

Proceedings of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Committee.

1. The Committee held preliminary meetings in Simla on June 10th and 11th in order to decide upon the best method of collecting the information necessary to enable them to accomplish their task. The Chairman informed the meeting that a letter had been sent to all Local Governments asking for their opinions on the future of the non-regular forces in India. It was decided that, when their replies were received, a questionnaire should be prepared dealing with all important points raised therein, and that this questionnaire should be sent out to selected persons, official and non-official, who were either directly connected with the non-regular forces or who had taken special interest in them. Their replies, together with those of Local Governments would form a suitable basis upon which the Committee could commence their discussions. Having considered these replies and taken the oral evidence of such witnesses as seemed to the Committee suitable or were suggested by Local Governments, the Committee should be in a position to make its recommendations.

It was decided that the next meeting should be held immediately before the September session of the Legislative Assembly.

2. It proved impossible for the Committee to meet again until November and the second meeting was held in Delhi on November 10th. The President, after extending a hearty welcome to the members of the Committee, pointed out that much of the written evidence of witnesses had only recently been received and printed, and in consequence had only just been circulated to them, and suggested that the consideration of this part of the evidence should be postponed until after the examination of the witnesses who were to appear before them in person. This course was agreed to and in addition it was decided to form a sub-committee consisting of Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer and Captain Ajab Khan to consider and report on the various questions included in Sections A and E, of the questionnaire, which deal respectively with 'Pay and Allowances' and 'Recommended Amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules'.

The Secretary then read a note, prepared by the General Staff, on the military requirements of a second line for India, and the implications of any form of change from the present system, and later the sections of the I. T. F. Act dealing with the liability for service, conditions of service, system of training, and pay and allowances of the Force. After he had explained the present composition of the Force, the Committee adjourned until the next day.

THIRD MEETING.

November 11th, 1924.

3. The following witnesses were interrogated :—

Major H. S. Cardew, M. C., Adjutant, 11/18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.

Lt. (local Capt.) Raja Sher Mohammed Khan, Adjutant, 11/13th Frontier Force Rifles.

Major N. M. Grylls, Adjutant, 11/1st Punjab Regiment.

Hony. 2nd Lt. F. Haider Khan, M.A., B.Sc., 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C. (Aligarh).

FOURTH MEETING.

November 12th, 1924.

4. The following witnesses were interrogated :—

Hony. 2nd Lieutenant A. N. Wadhawa, 11/15th Punjab Regiment.

Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., 2nd Bombay Pioneers, late Adjutant, 11/19th Hyderabad Regiment.

Khan Bahadur Khwaja Mohammad Nur, President, I. T. F. Advisory Committee, Bihar and Orissa.

Captain K. S. Caldwell, O. C. Patna University Training Corps.

Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., I. T. F. Medical Corps (Bengal).

Major W. A. J. Hinds, Adjutant, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

Hony. Lieut. (Local Capt.) J. C. Oonwalla, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

FIFTH MEETING.

November 13th, 1924.

5. The following witnesses were interrogated :—

Hony. 2nd Lieut. S. P. Singha, 11/15th Punjab Regiment.

Hony. 2nd Lieutenant Tikka Sahib Sarindra Singh Bedi, 11/1st Punjab Regiment.

Capt. J. N. Banerjee, Bar-at-Law (Bengal).

Mr. F. L. Brayne, M.C., I.C.S., Deputy Commissioner, Gurgaon.

Major H. S. Stewart, 15th Punjab Regiment, Deputy Assistant Director, Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Presidency and Assam District.

Lieutenant P. W. McKie, Delhi Contingent, Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Colonel W. M. Craddock, D.S.O., M.C., O.C., Calcutta Scottish, Auxiliary Force.

SIXTH MEETING.

November 14th, 1924.

6. The following witnesses were interrogated :—

Lt.-Col. H. R. Nevill, C.I.E., O.B.E., V.D., I.C.S., District Magistrate, Agra.

Major W. J. Nance, Adjutant, 11/3rd Madras Regiment.

Hony. 2nd/Lt. The Raja of Kalikote, 11/3rd Madras Regiment.

Lt. (local Capt.) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, Madras University Training Corps.

Mr. K. C. De, C.I.E., I.C.S., Commissioner, Presidency Division, Bengal.

Mr. Palekanda Mudappa, B.A., B.L., M.L.C. (Coorg).

SEVENTH MEETING.

November 15th, 1924.

7. The following witnesses were interrogated :—

Capt. K. L. Fasken, Adjutant, 11/20th Burma Rifles.

Hony. Lieut. L. V. Po, 11/20th Burma Rifles.

Kunwar Ganpati Singh of Kharwa (Rajputana).

Mr. C. D. M. Hindley, Chief Commissioner of Railways.

8. From November 17th to 22nd the Committee met daily to consider the recommendations to be made to the Government of India with regard to the constitution and composition of the U. T. C., I. T. F. and A. F., and the removal of racial distinctions in them. The Committee then dispersed to consider its report.

EIGHTH MEETING.

9. On January 23rd, 1925, the Committee reassembled and finally passed and signed the report, for presentation to the Government of India.

LETTER TO THE CHIEF SECRETARIES TO THE GOVERNMENTS OF MADRAS, BOMBAY, BENGAL, THE UNITED PROVINCES, THE PUNJAB, BURMA AND BIHAR AND ORISSA, THE HON'BLE THE CHIEF COMMISSIONER AND AGENT TO THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL, NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE, THE HON'BLE THE AGENT TO THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN RAJPUTANA AND CHIEF COMMISSIONER, AJMER-MERWARA, THE HON'BLE THE RESIDENT IN MYSORE AND CHIEF COMMISSIONER, COORG, AND THE CHIEF COMMISSIONER, DELHI, No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A.T.F.), DATED THE 1ST APRIL 1924.

With reference to the attached copy of a resolution which was accepted by the Government of India in the Legislative Assembly on the 5th February 1924, I am directed to say that it is proposed to convene a Committee, as soon as possible, to consider the question of the reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force.

2. It is desired to place before the Committee as much information as can be obtained with regard to the Indian Territorial Force as at present constituted, and the Government of India would therefore be glad if, after consultation with the local Territorial Force Advisory Committee and the local military authority (*i.e.*, the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief of the Command), you would favour them with any practical suggestions for the improvement of the Force under the heads noted below :—

(i) Pay and allowances.

(ii) Popularity of the Force.

(iii) Methods of selecting candidates for commissions.

(iv) Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

(v) A list of selected persons whom it is considered the Committee should summon for examination. (The number should be limited to what the Local Government / Local Administration, in consultation with the local military authority, *i.e.*, General Officer Commanding-in-Chief of the Command, consider essential).

3. The Government of India would also be glad to be furnished with particulars of any reasonable complaints and grievances which the local Territorial Force Advisory Committee may desire to bring to notice.

RESOLUTION.

That this Assembly recommends to the Governor General in Council that a Committee, including members of the Legislature, be immediately appointed to investigate and report what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force so as to constitute it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular Army and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India including the Auxiliary Force.

LETTER FROM THE OFFICIATING CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BENGAL, No. 6740-P., DATED THE 11TH JULY 1924.

I am directed to refer to your letter No. A.-27033-1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, and subsequent reminders, regarding the opinion of this Government on certain questions affecting the organisation of the Indian Territorial Force.

In reply, I am to observe that the opinions of the several Associations consulted have only recently been received, while some have not yet replied. In these circumstances it has not been possible for the Governor in Council to give the matter adequate consideration. I am to communicate, however, the following provisional views, and it is presumed that this Government will be consulted when the Committee has reported.

Pay and allowances.—On the whole the Government of Bengal are inclined to consider that the pay and allowances at present provided during the training period are sufficient, but they agree with the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, that a monthly retaining allowance might be introduced during non-training periods following the principle adopted in the case of the Indian Army Reserve. Final orders are still awaited as to the pay to be drawn by Government servants when on military duty, and this Government would recommend that formal orders should be passed authorising them to receive their full Government pay in addition to travelling expenses and the allowance permissible under the Act.

Popularity of the Force.—It is probable that the Bengal Unit has suffered in popularity through the nomenclature adopted, this unit being, it is understood, a section of the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment under which name it is known. The name is believed to represent the place of the unit in the organisation of the Indian Army as a whole, but it conveys nothing in Bengal and may possibly have an adverse effect on recruitment through giving rise to some idea that recruits are liable to be sent for training outside Bengal.

Provided that no practical difficulty will be caused by naming the unit as the Bengal Territorial Battalion, without disturbing its technical relation to the regular army, I am to make this recommendation.

The local Territorial Advisory Committee have advised with a view to increase its popularity that the uniform of the Territorial Force should be revised in some points, such as the issue of helmets instead of pith hats, and shorts instead of pantaloons. These are details which will doubtless come for the consideration of the Committee and Government consider that any concession possible should be made to local preference in matters of this kind.

Candidates for commission.—The General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, recommends selection by Government, in consultation with the local Advisory Board, of men from the ranks whose names will then be submitted to the General Officer Commanding for approval. The Governor in Council entertains some doubt as to whether it is desirable that Government should intervene in the matter of commissions before names go to the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, but as at present advised would accept the opinion of this officer in the matter.

Improvement of the Force generally.—The question of the improvement of the Force generally is primarily a matter of military interest and the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, has suggested that, in order to bring the Force up to the standard suitable for a second line, six months' preliminary training is necessary. The Governor in Council appreciates the advantages of such a matter from the strictly military point of view, but is of opinion that this would tend to discourage recruitment as men would be reluctant to commit themselves to such a prolonged period of training. He is therefore inclined to put forward as an alternative suggestion that training should so far as possible be available all the year round at fixed training depôts, facilities being given to members of the Force to train on holidays and weekends. A suitable period for prolonged training would be in connection with the X'mas holidays.

Lists of persons to be examined by the Committee.—I am to mention the following names and to state that in the case of the military officers their names are put forward with the approval of the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District :—

(1) Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., President, Advisory Committee, Bengal.

(2) Captain G. L. Hyde, Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bengal Wing.

(3) Major H. S. Stuart, D.A.D., A. and T. F., Presidency and Assam District.

(4) Captain J. N. Banerji, Bar.-at-Law.

(5) Mr. Surendra Nath Mallick, M.A., B.L.

(6) Sir P. C. Mitter, Kt., C.I.E.

(7) Mr. S. R. Das, Bar.-at-Law.

(8) Major K. K. Chatarji.

(9) Khan Bahadur M. A. Momin (Magistrate of Nadia).

(10) Lieutenant S. C. Ghosh Maulik (6, Rainy Park, Ballygunj).

(11) Rai Jadunath Majumdar Bahadur, C.I.E. (Jessore).

(12) Babu B. P. Das of Feni.

(13) Maulvi Abdul Jabbar of Noakhali.

In paragraph 2 of the letter under reply the views of this Government were asked for after consultation with the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief of the Command. I am to explain that the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, was consulted in the first instance with a view to formulating provisional views of this Government and that it was the intention then to communicate these to the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, before putting them into final shape for submission to the Government of India. In view, however, of the urgency of the matter I am to communicate to the Government of India the views formed, after consultation with the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, and to state that a copy of this letter is being sent at the same time to the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command.

I am further to enclose copies of the replies* which have been received by this Government, and to suggest that these should be placed before the Committee for their information.

LETTER FROM THE MAJOR-GENERAL COMMANDING, PRESIDENCY AND ASSAM DISTRICT, TO THE CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BENGAL, No. 4969-10-A.T.F., DATED THE 17TH MAY 1924.

With reference to your No. 128—25-P.D., dated the 22nd April 1924.

I have the honour to forward a report on this subject from Major Mangin. Adjutant. 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment. The General Officer Commanding is entirely in agreement with this report and has added a few remarks of his own in the margin.

At present there are numbers of demobilized men in most provinces, who have had a thorough military training and make excellent material for the Territorial Force. This supply will automatically cease in a few years and we are faced with the raw material.

---

*Letter No. 4969—10-A.T.F., dated 17th May 1924, from General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District.

Letter dated 8th June 1924 and enclosures from the Bengal Advisory Committee.

Letter No. 440, dated 25th June 1924, from the British Indian Association.

2. In order to bring this material up to a standard suitable for a 2nd line, 90 days* preliminary training is considered necessary and subsequently 28 days every year, not necessarily consecutive. This would mean in some cases temporary accommodation in barracks and more amenities of life for the men during the 90 days' preliminary training.

3. The Territorial Force in this province is only territorial in name, more propaganda is required to instil into the recruiting areas, that the object of the Territorial Force is not a means of drawing a salary from Government nor a stepping stone afterwards to a Government employment. The time has also now come, when the class composition of Territorial units should be definitely fixed in Bengal, Bihar and Orissa Provinces.

It is suggested for this province—

For full battalion { 1 company Rajputs, 1 company Ahirs } For the wing. 1 company Muhammadans. 1 company mixed (Bengalis, Brahmins, Beharis, Khyasthas, etc.).

Bihar and Orissa Territorial Force should be separate† from Bengal Territorial Force, even if the total strength of one battalion for each province is not sanctioned. They should have a separate budget allotment and all correspondence and accounts should be kept separate.

4. A list of selected persons to be examined.

BIHAR AND ORISSA.

(1) Khan Sahib Khawaja Muhammad Nur, President, Legislative Assembly, Bihar and Orissa—President, Advisory Board. Address—Gya, Bihar and Orissa.

(2) Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bihar and Orissa Wing.

The above officer is being relieved of his present duties by Major Ransford.

As the latter officer has had no previous experience of Territorial work, it is suggested that if Major E. B. Mangin has been relieved of his duties before the Committee assembles, that he may be summoned from Agra, United Provinces, where he takes up the duties of 2nd-in-Command, 10-2nd Bombay Pioneers.

BENGAL.

(1) Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., President, Advisory Committee, Bengal. Address—Agra.

(2) Captain Hyde, Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bengal Wing.‡

The following suggestions were put forward by the Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bengal Wing :—

(i) No remarks.

(ii) No remarks.

(iii) The method of selecting candidates for commissions to remain as at present.

Territorial officers should obtain commissions as British officers after an approved term of service.

---

*I suggest six months' preliminary training.

T. A. C.

†I concur.

T. A. C.

‡To which I would add Major H. S. Stuart, D.A.D., A. and T.F., Presidency and Assam District.

T. A. C.

(iv) If organized on Auxiliary Force lines—

One company at Calcutta.

One company at Dacca.*

No extra expenditure involved as local buildings could be utilised.

He also suggests the reduction of University Corps to one company for each University on account of expense.

Name of Bengal Wing to be changed from present designation to "Bengal Territorial Battalion."†

E. B. MANGIN, *Major,*

Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment,
Bihar and Orissa Wing.

LETTER FROM MAJOR H. SUHRAWARDY, M.L.C., PRESIDENT, ADVISORY COMMITTEE, BENGAL, TO C. W. GURNER, ESQ., I.C.S., DATED THE 8TH JUNE 1924.

In continuation of my demi-official letter of the 29th May forwarding an advance copy of the minutes of a meeting of the Bengal Advisory Committee, Indian Territorial Force, I beg to send the enclosed complete minutes together with a note embodying the remarks from the Military Member on three items. Captain J. N. Banerji and myself have signed the minutes in token of approval as they stand. Captain Hyde has also signed them, but made the enclosed remarks against three items. There is no real difference of opinion between any of us on any important issues. This replaces the minutes sent in advance which might now be returned to me.

LETTER FROM MAJOR H. SUHRAWARDY, M.L.C., PRESIDENT, TERRITORIAL FORCE ADVISORY COMMITTEE, TO THE DEPUTY SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BENGAL, DATED THE 20TH MAY 1924.

With reference to your No. 123—35-P.D., Political Department, Political Branch, dated Darjeeling, the 2nd April, and your demi-official No. 508-P.D., dated 7th May 1924, I beg to forward herewith minutes of a meeting of the Bengal Territorial Force Advisory Committee held in Calcutta on the 14th instant.

I am afraid patriotism has not yet manifested itself spontaneously in the direction of exposing one's personal safety by participation in military or quasi-military movements in the country. On the other hand, efforts have been made by certain parties to create an atmosphere of suspicion against Government's intention. The better-minded people, who have helped the cause and joined the Force, deserve every consideration and praise. The suggestions, I believe, would improve their status and serve as an example for others to follow.

Minutes of a meeting of the Bengal Territorial Force Advisory Committee held at South Barrack, Fort William, Calcutta, at 10 a.m. on 14th May 1924.

PRESENT.

Major Hassan Suhrawardy—President.

Captain J. N. Banerji, Barrister-at-Law—Non-official Member.

Captain G. L. Hyde—Military Member.

Letter No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A.T.F.) from Government of India, Army Department, dated Simla, 1st April 1924, was considered and the following

---

*I doubt this. Armoury required at Dacca. Possibly also at Faridpur and Mymensingh.

T. A. C.

†I concur.

T. A. C.

recommendations suggested seriatim under the heads mentioned in the letter under consideration :—

(i) *Pay and allowances.*—That while recognising that a feeling does exist that members of the Indian Territorial Force and Auxiliary Force, India, should receive pay and allowances at same rates, the Committee have not arrived at any practical solution of the problem of adjusting present differences. It is suggested that some differences irrespective of nationality might be practical between units constituted on the militia principle and those constituted on the Auxiliary Force principle. The grant of a small allowance throughout the year to persons who have enlisted on the militia principle and have undergone an approved course of training might act as an incentive.

(ii) *Popularity of Force—*

(*a*) *Training.*—Indian Territorial Force to have two divisions—

(1) On Auxiliary Force principle— { Company at Calcutta. Company at Dacca.

(2) On militia principle—Bengal generally.

(*b*) *Rations.*—There appears to be a strong feeling in the Province that the value of the ration should be the same as that of the Auxiliary Force.

(*c*) *Clothing.*—Helmets should be issued instead of pith hats.

That instead of pantaloons an extra pair of shorts should be issued, or failing this one pair of trousers.

(*d*) *Nomenclature.*—That the designation "Hyderabad" be omitted from the name of the Bengal unit and a local name substituted

(*e*) *Rifles.*—That it does not seem necessary that members of the Auxiliary Force, India, or Indian Territorial Force should take their rifles to their homes, but that if the one is allowed to do so the other should also receive this permission.

(*f*) *Leave to attend training.*—That Government should take steps to advertise the existence of the Force with a request to the employers to accord the same facilities to members (who are their employees) to attend training as is now granted to members of the Auxiliary Force, India.

(*g*) *Concessions for trained Territorials.*—Members of the Force should be given certain advances on the recommendation of the Officer Commanding. Such small matters as invitation to attend local official functions and eligibility to wear uniform on such occasions and a free license for the use of guns for purposes of sport, with sufficient safeguards to prevent abuse, will give the trained Territorials a consciousness of their dignity and importance.

(*h*) *Status of commissioned officers of the Indian Territorial Force.*—Pending the award of King's commission to combatant Indian officers in the regular army, officers of the Indian Territorial Force at present receive a dual commission, their power of command is derived from His Excellency the Viceroy's commission like the Indian officers of the regular army, their rank from an honorary commission granted by His Majesty the King-Emperor; it should be made clear that officers who are recipients of this distinction should have precedence over those officers who hold only His Excellency the Viceroy's commission, this precedence should be observed on ceremonial occasions, in the parade grounds, as well as in the field.

(*i*) *Full dress uniform for Indian Territorial Force commissioned officers.*—Officers of the Territorial Force holding a King's commission should not only have a field service review order dress but also a full dress uniform and mess dress on the lines of regular army commissioned Infantry officers. The same should

apply to officers of the Indian Territorial Force Medical Corps but the dress, collar, badges and buttons should be on the lines of the Indian Medical Service officers, with a " T " below the badge of rank to distinguish the Territorial from members of the regular service. These attractive uniforms will appeal to that section of the public who admire a spectacular demonstration.

(iii) *Method of selecting candidates for commissions.*—Great care should be observed in selecting candidates for recommendation for commissions. There should be a selection committee which, in the first instance, should be the local Advisory Committee with two other members co-opted for this purpose. The recommendations from this committee of five are to be sent to Local Government for disposal.

(*a*) That generally members of the unit will be selected by the Officer Commanding to fill vacancies according to their merits.

(*b*) That the claims of men of standing and influence in the community who have helped the cause should receive due consideration. Local Advisory Committee to be consulted.

(iv) *Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the rôle for which it has been constituted.*—See paragraph (ii) remarks.

(v) *A list of selected persons whom it is considered the Committee should summon for examination—*

(1) The President of the Advisory Committee (Major Hassan Suhrawardy, who is in touch with public life, is Deputy President of the Bengal Legislative Council, and is connected with both the Universities of Calcutta and Dacca as a member of the Senate and Syndicate of one and of the Court and Executive Council of the other).

(2) The Military Member of the Advisory Committee. (Captain G. L. Hyde, whose expert opinion would be of much value as he is Adjutant of the C. U. T. C. and was Officer Commanding of 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Indian Territorial Force, Bengal Wing, during the last camp of exercise).

(3) Captain J. N. Banerji, Bar.-at-Law, who is the oldest Bengali volunteer, and has considerable experience in recruiting and is in touch with the student community.

(4) Mr. Surendranath Mullick, M.A., B.L., Fellow, Calcutta University—Ex-Minister, Government of Bengal, and in charge of Local Self-Government Department—Ex-Chairman of Calcutta Corporation. A gentleman of wide political vision and varied experience. Took a good deal of interest in the Territorial Force movement.

N.B.—There is no difference of opinion between any of the members on any important issues. They have all signed the minutes in token of approval.

Captain Hyde, the Military Member of the Advisory Committee, however, suggests the following :—

(ii) (b) This is absolutely contrary to the idea of an honorary commission. My suggestion was that after three years' service as Subadars, Honorary Lieutenants instead of being made Honorary Captains they should be made pucca 2nd-Lieutenants.

(ii) (i) Expensive and apt to restrict the people from whom officers can be selected too much.

(iii) The Advisory Committee has nothing to do with this question.

The Commanding Officer selects officers. Recommends them. The Local Government enquires into their antecedents. The Advisory Committee could recommend candidates to the Commanding Officer if it wanted.

LETTER FROM THE HONORARY SECRETARY, BRITISH INDIAN ASSOCIATION, TO THE DEPUTY SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BENGAL, POLITICAL DEPARTMENT, POLITICAL BRANCH, No. 440, DATED THE 25TH JUNE 1924.

I am directed by the Committee of the British Indian Association to acknowledge receipt of your letter No. 121--27-P.D., dated Darjeeling, the 22nd April last, forwarding a copy of letter No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A.T.F.), dated the 1st April 1924, and enclosure, from the Government of India, Army Department, regarding the question of the reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force and in reply to submit the following observations on the same.

2. As the members of the Indian Territorial Force come from respectable classes, it is only reasonable that their pay and allowances should be more than those of an ordinary sepoy and their food also should be correspondingly of a superior quality. Considering that most of these young men leave their comfortable homes to go through a serious course of military training, it is certainly desirable that the food supplied to them should be equal to the physical strain to which they are put. My Committee understand that the food given to the Territorials whilst in training camp consists of Burma rice and coarse dal which is hardly conducive to their health and is indeed positively repellant to all of them. My Committee suggest that those who are accustomed to a meat diet should have the same served out at least once in the course of the day and the quantity of meat to be given to each should be half a pound and the quantity of rice now supplied (one and a half pound each) may be reduced to one pound of rice or atta.

3. Recruiting for the Force should be entrusted to local Committees, who may be personally in touch with the prospective candidates and the number of the Territorial Force in Bengal at any rate should be raised to one full battalion. Meetings, route-marches should be held in different parts of the country for the purpose of getting recruits. Commissions in the army should be thrown open to members of the Territorial Force to suitable candidates and commissions in the Territorial Force should not be given to ousiders, unless such candidates have had previous military training.

4. It may also be suggested that a regular Bengali Regiment should be constituted so as to provide an opening to those Bengali youths who may prefer a military career for their livelihood.

5. For examination of candidates before the Committee it is desirable that men of experience alone should be selected for giving evidence before the Committee. In this connection, the first name that readily suggests itself to my Committee is that of Captain J. N. Banerji, who has been connected with volunteering for a quarter of a century and at the present moment holds the rank of Captain, having gradually risen from the rank of a private.

6. Those members of the Territorial Force who reside in Calcutta may have their training given in the same way as members of the Auxiliary Force and finish up their annual training in camp for a fortnight. The same remarks are applicable in respect of members of the Territorial Force located in Dacca.

7. In conclusion I am directed to suggest that the problem has to be approached from a point of view wider than that of the immediate return in money and in fighting capacity from a strictly military point of view. In the early days of the East India Company certain castes and tribes of Bengal and Bihar afforded recruits to the sepoy army. The recruiting ground gradually shifted to the United Provinces, the Punjab, the North-West Frontier Province and Nepal. From the point of view of the immediate return for military purposes this shifting of the recruiting ground was perhaps natural, but the result has been that many of the Indian provinces which at one time either in the early British days or in pre-British days provided their own soldiers have now for many decades past ceased to provide recruits to the army. From the point of view of self-defence of India as a whole it is very necessary to encourage recruitment in those provinces which for the reasons stated have ceased to supply recruits for a long time past. The conditions of these provinces differ in material respects. In methods of recruitment, pay, food, conditions of service, etc., due regard should be paid to the peculiarities of each province. Without such special consideration suited to the requirements of each province the success of the movement will be retarded. My Committee, therefore, urge that this aspect of the question should not be ignored.

LETTER FROM THE OFFICIATING CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BIHAR AND ORISSA, No. 377-P.R., DATED THE 10TH JUNE 1924.

I am directed to refer to Major Lumby's letter No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A.T.F.), dated the 1st April 1924, on the above subject and to submit the following recommendation which have been made in consultation with the local Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committee.

2. (*a*) *Pay and allowance.*—Two suggestions have been put forward for the payment of a retaining fee during the period when the Force is not under training—(1) the payment of a monthly fee of Rs. 3 and (2) the payment of an annual bonus of Rs. 16 when the recruit rejoins for the annual training. His Excellency in Council prefers the former alternative as marking the continuity of connection with the corps. But it is largely a question of funds and the second alternative may be considered, if a monthly payment would cost too much.

(*b*) *Clothing.*—The recruits, on completion of their training at the camp of exercise, have to return their clothing and equipment. It is said that many of the men enrolled here last season went back practically naked to their villages. It has been suggested that each recruit should be given a free issue of mufti or "Hindustani Kapra" to be retained by him on disbandment, and His Excellency in Council considers that this would be an incentive to join the force.

(*c*) *Improvement of the Force generally.*—If it is intended that the Territorial Force should be used as a second line, three months' preliminary training and thirty days' annual training seem essential to secure the necessary standard of efficiency.

(*d*) *Selection of candidates for commissions.*—The Local Government consider that, generally speaking, suitable candidates may fairly be expected to win their commissions from the ranks. The experiment of forming a platoon of special candidates for training as officers was actually tried, when the local Territorial Force was in camp last cold weather, and as a result certain persons were selected and recommended for commissions. It was felt, however, that the annual training in the case of such candidates should be supplemented by special instruction at a central school for the training of officers, as the existing local arrangements did not provide adequate facilities for officers' training. I am to suggest for consideration the possibility of sending selected officers for training to a central school or deputing them for three months to a territorial battalion or affiliated group.

(*e*) *Nomenclature.*—I am to invite a reference to my letter No. 2546-P., dated the 19th April 1924, in which the unsuitability of the present nomenclature of the provincial battalion was pointed out and to request that the proposal made therein may be laid before the Committee.

(*f*) *Improved medical attendance at the time of annual training.*—The Local Government are prepared to allow two or three Assistant Surgeons to join the Force and attend camps of exercise as medical officers. The General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, has been addressed on the subject of granting such men commissions.

(*g*) *Pay of Government officers called up and embodied for duty with the Indian Territorial Force.*—A reference was made to the Army Department on the 18th August 1923, but no orders have yet been received.

3. I am to enclose copies of (1) a communiqué issued by the Local Government when the local Indian Territorial Force was inaugurated, which contains the views of the Local Government as to the ultimate constitution of the Force; (2) the Resolution (No. 2644-P., dated the 12th April 1924) issued by the Local Government on the report of the Adjutant on the last annual training. In both the desirability of organising a separate unit for the province is emphasized.

4. The following gentlemen are suggested as suitable witnesses to be examined by the Committee :—

Major Mangin, late Adjutant (now at Agra).
Khan Bahadur Khawaja Muhammad Nur, President, Advisory Committee.
Captain K. S. Caldwell, Officer Commanding, Patna University Training Corps.
(The last named with special reference to conditions of service in the University Training Corps.)

LETTER FROM THE OFFICIATING CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BIHAR AND ORISSA, TO THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING, PRESIDENCY AND ASSAM DISTRICT, No. 2634-P., DATED THE 12TH APRIL 1924.

I am directed to say that Major E. B. Mangin has brought to the notice of the Local Government the difficulty which he has experienced during the recent camp of the Bihar and Orissa Wing of the 11th-19th Hyderabad Regiment in connection with the medical attendance of the members of the Force. The staff of the British Station Hospital at Dinapore did all they could to help in the matter in spite of being understaffed. To avoid similar difficulties in future the Local Government are willing to allow two or three Assistant Surgeons to join the Force and attend the camps of exercise as medical officers. I am to enquire whether such officers could be granted commission as medical officers in the Indian Territorial Force.

GOVERNMENT OF BIHAR AND ORISSA.

POLITICAL DEPARTMENT.

COMMUNIQUE.

Constitution of a Unit of the Indian Territorial Force in Bihar and Orissa.

The formation of a Unit of the Indian Territorial Force in Bihar and Orissa has now been sanctioned. The objects and conditions of service in the Force were explained in a communiqué published in February 1922 which is now republished for information. This Unit will consist of two sections, one of which will be known as the Patna University Training Corps and the other as the Provincial Territorial Force: enrolment for both these sections has commenced.

2. The Patna University Training Corps, in common with other University Companies, will be of a special character and will be made up of graduates and undergraduates of affiliated colleges. Dr. K. S. Caldwell of Patna College will be the Commanding Officer of the Corps and Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., will be the Adjutant. Enrolment has already begun.

3. At the outset there will be one battalion of the Territorial Force for Bengal and Bihar and Orissa, two companies being recruited in each Province. The battalion will be known as the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment. The name is not intended to imply any connexion with Hyderabad, nor will recruits be sent there for training. If sufficient recruits are forthcoming, it may be possible eventually to have a separate battalion for this Province. An Advisory Committee consisting of the Hon'ble Khan Bahadur Khawaja Muhammad Nur, as President, Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., and Babu Nirsu Narayan Singh, M. L. C., has been formed. Any communication should be addressed to Major Mangin, M.C., Adjutant, at Patna.

4. The Local Government have decided that the recruitment for the Territorial Force should, in the first place, be from the districts of Shahabad and Saran, and the District Officers have accordingly been asked to enrol candidates. Persons living in Shahabad and Saran who wish to join may obtain forms of enrolment from the offices of the District Magistrates. They should fill them up and return them to the District Magistrate who will retain them until the Advisory Committee are in a position to arrange for the applicants to be medically examined, and, if found fit, enrolled and attested. Each recruit of the provincial Territorial Force will be paid at the rate of Rs. 15 per mensem with rations, and will receive his uniform during the period of training, the uniform to be returned to camp on completion of that period. Each recruit should be informed that he renders himself liable to prosecution if, after enrolment, he does not appear on the days fixed at the training camp, Dinapore. The actual dates of the period of training will be decided by the Advisory Committee. They will probably be from the middle of January to the middle of March.

5. Any recruit coming to Patna may arrange for enlistment direct with the Adjutant at the New Circuit House, Patna. If an individual comes especially to enlist, Government allow 3rd class return railway fare plus four annas a day detention allowance, or by road (if there is no railway) annas two per 15 miles or part thereof towards the cost of his journey.

APPENDIX.

GOVERNMENT OF BIHAR AND ORISSA.

POLITICAL DEPARTMENT.

COMMUNIQUE.

As many enquiries have been received regarding possibility of a Territorial Unit in Bihar and Orissa, and the conditions of service therein, the following statement may be of general interest :—

The general principle underlying the Indian Territorial Force is the acceptance by Indians of a larger share of responsibility in the matter of the defence of India, and the maintenance of law and order both within the country and on its borders. The geographical situation of India is such that the maintenance of a standing army of a size considerably larger than that required in the other parts of the Empire is inevitable. The Territorial Force is to be a second line of defence like the Militia as maintained in England. Given an adequately trained second line of defence connected with the permanent army, and it is possible to allow the numbers of the latter to be fixed on the assumption that in the hour of trial the necessary number of trained men will be forthcoming to be made ready for service. It is necessary to emphasize, therefore, at the start that the Territorial Force is not, as has been sometimes thought, merely a volunteer force to be used on ceremonial occasions, but a real military unit destined for serious use, should occasion arise, as part and parcel of the regular army. It is not a case of playing at being soldiers but of real preparation for the stern business of war.

The Indian Territorial Force will consist of two sections : first the University Training Corps, which possesses a special character, and secondly the Territorial or Provincial units which should be organized and trained on the analogy of the militia as a second line to the Indian Army. The University Training Corps was started under the Indian Defence Force Act, 1917, and will be conducted on lines closely following the course hitherto laid down, the training of units being continuous throughout the period of residence at the University. These units will be restricted to graduates and undergraduates in residence at the University and affiliated colleges. They were first sanctioned in October 1918 as part of the Indian Defence Force under the designation of University Companies. They ceased to exist when the Auxiliary Force Act came into operation on the 18th October 1920.

The Indian Territorial Force Act (XLVIII of 1920) provides in section 4 that "the Governor General in Council may constitute for any province one or more corps or units of the Indian Territorial Force and may disband any corps or units so constituted". University Corps is defined as meaning "any corps of the Indian Territorial Force constituted for the appointment thereto of students of, and other persons connected with, the University established by law in British India or college affiliated to such University". Application has been made to the Government of India for the constitution of a University Corps for the Province of Bihar and Orissa. In the *Gazette of India*, dated August 6, 1921, the rules under sub-section (1) of section 13 of the Indian Territorial Force Act made by the Governor General in Council were published. The Commander-in-Chief can also make regulations consistent with this Act and these rules provide generally for all details connected with the organisation and personnel of the Indian Territorial Force and for the duties, military training, clothing, equipment, allowances and leave of persons enrolled. In particular and without prejudice to the generality of the foregoing power, such regulations may specify the courses of training or instruction to be followed by any person or class of persons enrolled.

In the case of the University Training Corps recruits will be required to undergo 90 drills of one hour each to be completed in six months from the date of enrolment, and those who have completed a recruit's course either in the Indian Defence Force or in the Territorial Force will have to do two hours' drill weekly throughout the period of their college terms. While this note deals in more detail with the other section of the Force, it may be pointed out

that it will be from among men who have served in the University Training Corps, at any rate in part, that officers will be sought for the provincial units as expansion proceeds.

The Territorial Force of Bihar and Orissa other than the University Training Corps is affiliated to the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment whose Headquarters, *viz.*, Benares, is the nearest training centre of a regular unit, as there are no training centres of regular units in Bihar and Orissa.

In exercise of the powers conferred by section 4 of the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, the Governor General in Council has sanctioned two companies for Bihar and Orissa (C and D Companies), *vide Gazette of India* (Army Department), No. 1153, dated the 17th August 1923. These two companies can be expanded as progress is made by orders of the General Officer Commanding, Presidency and Assam District, Fort William, Calcutta.

The conditions of service under the Territorial Force Act, 1920, are quite clear. Rules under that Act were published in the *Gazette of India*, dated the 6th August 1921, and may be shortly summarized.

As regards enrolment the candidate must be a person of good character, free from criminal antecedents, who has attained the age of 18 years (or for a University Corps 17 years) and be under the age of 31.

Exception.—A soldier discharged from His Majesty's Indian Forces with not less than three years' approved service and with a good character, may be enrolled if he has not attained the age of 35 and does not belong to the Indian Army Reserve.

All recruits will have to pass the usual medical examination. The requirements are :—Height 5′ 6″ or over; chest 31″ to 33″ expansion or over; good eyesight hearing and freedom from venereal disease. Recruits must enlist for six years. Training for the first year will be 56 days, *i.e.*, 28 days preliminary and 28 days annual training, both periods to be continuous. During training Government give free rations and clothing, the latter to be returned on completion of training. Pay will be received at Indian Army rates, *i.e.*, Rs. 15 and third class railway fare to and from the recruit's house, *plus* four annas a day subsistence allowance. If sufficient numbers are raised by that time, the first training will take place at Dinapore during the months of January, February and March 1924.

The form of application for enrolment is as follows :—

Subject.	Particulars to be filled by the applicant.
Name in full	
Father's name	
Religion, class and tribe	
Present address in full	
Permanent address in full	
Date of birth	
If a naturalized British subject, date of naturalization	
Present trade or profession	
Previous Military service, if any . . .	
Particular branch, corps or unit for service in which enrolment is desired	
Signature _____	
Date _____	

Signature of— (*a*) District Magistrate, (*b*) Recruiting Officer, (*c*) Officer Commanding.

_____

Indian Territorial Force.

Date _____

Persons desirous of being enrolled should apply either to the Officer Commanding the Corps or unit in which he desires to be enrolled, or to the District Magistrate of the district in which he ordinarily resides. The following is the form which will be filled up before enrolment :—

Serial No.	Questions to be put before enrolment.	Number.
1	2	3
1	What is your name?	1
2	What is your father's name?	2
3	Are you a British subject?	3
4	What is your village thana—taluk and district?	4
5	What is your present trade, profession or occupation?	5
6	Where are you employed?	6
7	What are your educational qualifications?	7
8	What is your age?	8
9	Have you ever been transported or imprisoned or whipped or ordered to furnish security for good behaviour?	9
10	Do you now belong to His Majesty's Forces, the Reserve or the Imperial Service Troops of any Indian State or the Nepal State Army?	10
11	Have you ever served in His Majesty's Forces, the Reserve, the Indian Defence Force or the Imperial Service Troops of any Indian State or the Nepal State Army? If so, state in which the period of service and the cause of discharge	11
12	Have you truly stated the whole, if any, of your previous military service?	12
13	Are you willing to be enrolled under the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920?	13
14	In which branch, corps or unit do you desire to be enrolled?	14
15	Are you willing to undergo military training and to perform military service as specified in the Act and to allow no caste usages to interfere with your military duty? *Note.*—Non-interference with caste usages will be observed exactly as in the case of the regular army.	15
16	Are you willing to serve until discharge as provided in the Act?	16
17	Have you ever previously applied for enrolment under the Act, and if so, with what result?	17
18	Have you been dismissed from the Indian Territorial Force?	18
19	Do you solemnly declare that the answers you have made to the questions in this form are true and that no part of them is false, and that you are willing to fulfil the engagements made?	19

*Signature*_____

Every person accepted for enrolment will be enrolled for a period of six years from the date of attestation, *i.e.*, the date when he makes the affirmation or takes the oath of allegiance at the time of enrolment. He may be discharged if convicted of any offence punishable with imprisonment, or if he has made any false statement when filling up any form, or if his services are no longer required, or if he is medically unfit. Questions of recruitment and discharge will be amongst those dealt with by an Advisory Committee. Whilst under training he is subject to the provisions of the Indian Army Act, 1911, and the rules under that Act with certain modifications. Every person enrolled will be bound to serve in any corps or unit of the Indian Territorial Force to which he has been appointed or transferred or is for the time being attached, and will be liable for military service :—

(*a*) when called out with any portion of the Indian Territorial Force by an order of the senior military officer present either to act in support of the civil power or to provide guards which, in the opinion of such officer, are essential; or

(*b*) when any portion of the Indian Territorial Force to which he belongs has been embodied to support or supplement His Majesty's regular forces in India in the event of an emergency by a notification directing such embodiment issued by the Governor General in Council and published in the *Gazette of India;* or

(*c*) when attached at his own request to any regular forces.

He will not be required to perform military service beyond the limits of India save under a general or special order of the Governor General in Council. Section 10 of the Indian Territorial Force Act also provides that any portion of the Indian Territorial Force which, having been called out or embodied under section 9, is performing military service shall be replaced by regular troops or otherwise as soon as circumstances permit, and shall not be required to perform such service after such replacement has been effected to the satisfaction of the senior military officer in charge, or after the cancellation of the order or notification under clause (*a*) or (*b*), as the case may be, of section 9.

One of the most frequent questions put in connection with the Territorial Force is,—From what class of the community will this force be recruited ? The answer is, from all classes who have in the past been accepted for military service and in this province preferably from the Muhammadans, Brahmans, Rajputs, Ahirs, and others who came forward for recruitment during the war. The second question is,—Why should an educated man enrol himself or try and get others to enrol? The answer to this is to be found in the single word 'Patriotism.' The demand has of late been increasingly made that Indians should take a greater part in the defence of their own country. That opportunity is now offered. The third question is,—Who will be the officers? The answer is that at first for instructional purposes the services of officers and probably of non-commissioned officers or from among the ranks of demobilized soldiers will be lent from the regular army and it may be noted that this in itself places a limit on the numbers that can be enrolled until the earlier recruits have been sufficiently trained to take their place as officers or non-commissioned officers. The criterion in the selection of officers is the recognized military standard of fitness to command in the field. Keenness and aptitude for military service are essential qualifications.

Our aim in Bihar and Orissa is to raise, apart from the University Corps, a full battalion. It is improbable that sufficient numbers will be forthcoming at first and we may have to be content with sending a platoon or a company to Benares for training. The constitution of a Territorial unit for Bihar and Orissa depends therefore on the fact that necessary recruits will be forthcoming. District Magistrates are being addressed on the subject and are being asked to give publicity to the opportunity now offered to Indians of serving their country. While it is desired to give every encouragement to the educated classes who have evinced a desire for military training, it seems probable that at first the most promising field of recruitment for an Indian militia will be found among those races and classes who came forward in the war. It may be that some men who have been demobilized would be willing again to undertake the annual training. As far as possible the Territorial units will be formed on the class company basis; as for example a company of Ahirs or a company of Rajputs. But until the Force develops and specialization becomes practicable this particularization cannot be effected on a large scale.

It will be left to Indians to do the recruitment and work up the enthusiasm. The Local Government do not wish to officialize the movement and consider that it would be undesirable and probably militate against future successful development of an indigenous military force if there be any pressure applied or any official stimulus to induce recruitment. The Indian Territorial Force was formed with the object of affording an outlet to the legitimate aspirations of those who urge that India should be allowed a larger amount of responsibility and share of the military burden. The lead can best be given by Indians for India. The Army Department will make the best use of the material provided, but without material can do little or nothing. Publicity and propaganda will be needed and this will come more effectively from the elected representatives of the people than from servants of the Government.

Pending action by the Advisory Committee any offers of help in recruitment or any enquiries for further information may be addressed to the Chief Secretary, or to the Adjutant, the New Circuit House, Patna.

No 2644-P.

GOVERNMENT OF BIHAR AND ORISSA.

POLITICAL DEPARTMENT.

RESOLUTION.

Dated the 12th April 1924.

READ—

Letter No. A.—3, dated the 28th March 1924, from Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., submitting a report on the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bihar and Orissa Wing.

The recruitment for the Bihar and Orissa Wing of the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment was begun in the middle of the year 1923, and the first camp of exercise was held at Dinapore from the 15th January 1924. During this short period the recruitment was satisfactory and 237 men attended the camp. The total strength at present allotted to Bihar and Orissa is two companies (400 men) and it is hoped that the full strength will be enrolled before the next field training season begins.

The recruitment was at first unsatisfactory owing to the misleading designation of the unit. It is therefore proposed to approach the military authorities on the subject of changing the nomenclature from 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment to Bihar and Orissa Territorial Battalion.

The full programme of 56 days' training was carried out, except for musketry. The result was very satisfactory. The daily percentage of sick was less than 2 per cent. and steps are being taken to place a medical officer in charge of the Force during the next camp season.

The recruitment for the 7th (Patna) Company, University Training Corps, was begun in September 1923. At first 160 students offered themselves for enrolment, but actually 77 joined the corps and only 47 attended the camp with the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment under Captain K. S. Caldwell. Good progress was made in arms, drill and rifle exercises.

The difficulties experienced by the Adjutant, the shortage of instructors, the necessity of the presence of a medical officer throughout the period of training, and the issue of clothing will be brought in due course to the notice of the Army Department. Recruiting will, as suggested by the Adjutant, be kept open in the districts named.

The success that has attended the first year's efforts to establish a Territorial Force in Bihar and Orissa justifies the hope that eventually it may be possible to form a battalion for the province independent of Bengal.

The Governor in Council desires to express his thanks to Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., to Captain K. S. Caldwell, and to the two non-military members of the Advisory Committee, the Hon'ble Khan Bahadur Khawaja Muhammad Nur and Babu Nirsu Narayan Singh, for their services.

ORDER.—Ordered that copies of the Resolution be forwarded to Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., Captain K. S. Caldwell, the Hon'ble Khan Bahadur Khawaja Muhammad Nur and Babu Nirsu Narayan Singh, for information.

Ordered also that the Resolution with the report be published in the *Bihar and Orissa Gazette.*

By order of the Governor in Council,

E. L. L. HAMMOND,
Offg. Chief Secretary to Government.

LETTER FROM MAJOR E. B. MANGIN, M.C., ADJUTANT, 11-19TH HYDERABAD REGIMENT, BIHAR AND ORISSA WING, TO THE CHIEF SECRETARY, POLITICAL DEPARTMENT, SECRETARIAT, PATNA, NO. A.-3, DATED DINAPORE, THE 28TH MARCH 1924.

In accordance with your letters No. 1676-P., dated the 7th March 1924, and No. 1884-P., dated the 17th March 1924, I have the honour to report as follows on the 1st Annual Training of the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bihar and Orissa Wing, at Dinapore, from 20th January to 16th March 1924.

2. The camp actually opened on the 15th January. Prior to this there were only 80 names on the books of the Regiment. It was necessary therefore for the Adjutant to proceed to the Shahabad district to obtain recruits. With the able assistance of Mr. Johnston, I.C.S., Collector of Arrah, and also retired Indian officers of that district, successful results were obtained, as on the evening of the 19th January 159 recruits, mostly from the Shahabad District, arrived in the camp at Dinapore. On the 20th January, another 100 recruits arrived, also mostly from that district.

The following is the class composition of the men who arrived in camp and subsequently stayed to the end :—

Ahirs	87
Rajputs	73
Brahmins (Kanujias)	38
Other Brahmins	13
Muhammadans	16
Bengalis	4
Kayesthas	2
Kurmis	4
Total	237

The districts from which the above come are as follows :—

Shahabad District—

Ahirs	60
Rajputs	60
Brahmins	26
Muhammadans	10
Total	156

Patna District (Barh and Manair)—

Ahirs	27
Brahmins	14
Bengalis	2
Muhammadans	4
Various	3
Total	50

Saran District (Chapra)—

Rajputs	13
Muhammadans	2
Various	10
Total	25

Ranchi	2
Muzaffarpur	1
Gaya	1
Monghyr	1
Bhagalpur	1
Total	237

The number of recruits who came to the camp to be enlisted, but were rejected as being useless or medically unfit or incapable of carrying arms, was 110, made up as follows :—

Ahirs	54
Rajputs	34
Brahmins	15
Kayar	1
Mussulmans	4
Kayestha	1
Kurmi	1
Total	110

All recruiting for the current year's training was stopped on the 1st February 1924, as it was found impossible to procure instructors to train recruits at so many different stages of training. Notice was given, however, that recruits would be attested, medically examined and sent to their homes and would be required for next year's training. About 60 men appeared, but would not enrol for next year, as it was too far ahead; only three men were enlisted in this way. A batch of 20 men came from the Chapra District, but as three of the 20 were medically unfit and rejected, the others refused to sign on, unless the three medically unfit men were enlisted with them for next year. This method of recruiting was therefore a failure and was stopped. Fifty-one men did not put in an appearance in camp, after having been served with notices, most of the recipients refusing to receive them. Very few of these absentees can be arrested, as their Form II had not been made out owing to want of time before the camp started. The various District Officers are being informed, however, of the names of the absentees.

3. *Training.*—The full programme of 56 days was carried out, except for musketry. Physical training and arms drill reached a very high standard of efficiency, considering the number of days under training. Extended order drill was practised and battalion drill. Four route marches took place and no one fell out. During the last month three hours of preliminary musketry took place daily. Each man fired 10 rounds on the miniature range with moderate results. Fifty of the most advanced men fired four practices with ball ammunition on the Lincolnshire Regiment rifle range. The results were encouraging when the rest was used, but without rest the percentages were not good, and it was considered that more preliminary musketry was required before the musketry course could be attempted. Good results should be attained at next year's training in musketry.

4. *Medical.*—The daily percentage of sick was less than two per cent. One Rajput died of pneumonia on the 29th February 1924. Sporadic cases of mumps interfered with the training owing to the necessary segregation precautions. Nine cases occurred. It appears essential that a doctor should be attached to the camp for training. The British Station Hospital staff, Dinapore, did all they could for us but often heavy work was thrown on them in examining recruits, especially at the beginning of the camp when they happened to be understaffed through having camps of their own to attend to. In Bengal three officers at least have joined the Indian Territorial Force Medical Corps and attended the camp. It is hoped that Bihar and Orissa will come forward with a few medical officers next year when they can take their turn in camp.

5. *Clothing and equipment.*—All Government clothing was withdrawn on the dispersal of the camp. This appeared to be the grounds for many complaints, as many of the men had to go away practically naked to their villages. There is, however, no remedy for this as Government are very strict on the point that all clothing should be withdrawn. The only solution is that men should be given clothing from local Territorial Funds on return to their village on some such scale as the following :—

	Rs.	A.	P.
One pair shirts or dhotee	2	8	0
One pugree	4	0	0
One pair countryshoes	2	0	0

The above for 300 men would mean an annual expenditure of Rs. 2,400, but the scale could be limited by the Advisory Committee.

6. *Feeding.*—Great difficulty was experienced at first in the feeding arrangements. Five different messes were required. The Advisory Committee assisted in this matter and eventually a sound organisation was inaugurated. It may be pointed out that the cooks and the fatigue men (15 per diem) were out of all proportion to the number of men present and also in excess of the number allowed in a regular unit. If the unit is to be a success as a fighting unit, the tendency to overdo cooking arrangements must be avoided, and this was impressed upon the men later on when the camp settled down.

7. *Nomenclature.*—The name 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment should be changed, as this has had a deterrent effect on recruiting in the districts. The following names for the local unit have been suggested :—

The Bihar and Orissa Territorial Battalion.

The Bihar Territorial Battalion.

The Shahabad Regiment.

But the opinion of the Local Government is desired on this point before a change in the nomenclature of the unit is submitted to Army Headquarters.

8. *Place of training.*—Dinapore appears to be the best place for training and, as the men now know Dinapore, the office of the unit has been transferred to Dinapore permanently.

9. Subscriptions to the amount of Rs. 300 were received from the Raja Bahadur of Amawan and also another subscription of Rs. 100. These amounts were expended on extra food, *e.g.*, halwa, tea and sugar, as the men required some food before going on early parade in the morning, and this is not included in the daily Government ration. Prizes for sports were also expended out of this fund.

Report on 7th (Patna) Company, University Training Corps.

The above corps was constituted according to the current Indian Army List on 21st January 1921, but no effort appears to have been made to raise any men until September 1923, when 160 men gave in their names, out of which 77 materialised. Out of these 77 men 47 came into camp with the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment, Bihar and Orissa Wing, under Captain Caldwell from the 10th February 1924 to the 24th February 1924. In spite of the fact that on arrival in camp most of the men were untrained or had very little training, good progress was made in arms, drill and rifle exercises. No musketry was attempted. The Officer Commanding, Dinapore (Lieutenant-Colonel Greatwood, D.S.O.), inspected the corps on the 23rd February 1924 and expressed himself pleased with the progress made. The corps consists of approximately half Bengalis and half Beharis, with a few Muhammadans, and there are prospects that after the College vacation more men will join. Half the men who have joined belong to the Patna College.

FROM R. MILNER-WHITE, ESQUIRE, I.C.S., DEPUTY SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT, UNITED PROVINCES, No. 2760, DATED THE 17TH JUNE 1924.

With reference to Army Department letter No. A.-27033-I.(A.G.,A.T.F.), dated the 1st April 1924, I am directed to forward for the information of the Government of India a copy of the correspondence noted below, received from the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, Naini Tal, and the President, Advisory Committee, Allahabad, and to say that the Governor in Council endorses the suggestion of the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, that the period of training should be extended, or, if financial considerations do not permit of this, that better provision should be made for the instruction of officers and non-commissioned officers.

2. The following is a list of persons whom it is considered the Committee should summon for examination :—

1. Major J. O. Hume-Wright, 11th-7th Rajput Regiment.
2. Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., 11th-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.
3. Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., formerly of the 11th-19th Hyderabad Regiment.
4. Major H. S. Stewart, D. A. D., of Auxiliary and Territorial Force, Presidency and Assam Districts
5. Captain H. V. Gell, 11th-9th Royal Jat Regiment.
6. Mr. H. Nevill, C.I.E., I.C.S., District Magistrate, Agra.
7. Rai Bahadur Chaudhri Amar Singh, O.B.E., Bulandshahr.
8. Lieutenant Sheikh Imtiaz Rasul Khan of Jehangirabad, Lucknow.
9. Saiyid Ali Bin Hamid, Tahsildar of Sambhal, Moradabad.
10. Major T. F. O'Donnell, M.C., B.A., Registrar, Lucknow University, Lucknow.
11. Reverend T. D. Sully, St. John's College, Agra.
12. Mr. M. Haidar Khan, M.A., B.Sc., Muslim University, Aligarh.
13. A representative of the Benares University (will be nominated later).

3. No grievances have been brought to the notice of Government by the Local Territorial Force Advisory Committee.

Letter No. 22842—13-A., dated the 5th May 1924, and enclosures, from the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, Naini Tal.

Resolution No. 12, dated the 15th May 1924, from the President, Advisory Committee, Allahabad.

FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING-IN-CHIEF, EASTERN COMMAND, NAINI TAL, No. 22842—13-A., DATED THE 5TH MAY 1924.

I have the honour to acknowledge receipt of your letter No. 455—III-190, dated 21st April 1924, regarding the Committee which the Government of India propose to convene, as soon as possible, to consider the question of re-organization of the Indian Territorial Force.

You say that the Governor in Council would be glad if I can favour him with any practical suggestions for the improvement of the Force under various heads. I have the honour to offer the following remarks.

(1) *Pay and Allowances.*—In Rule 17 of the Indian Territorial Force Rules, 1921, as amended by Government of India Notification No. 1499 of 1923, it is laid down that pay and allowances are admissible to the members of the Indian Territorial Force, during periods of embodiment or training, at the same rates as are admissible to the corresponding ranks of His Majesty's Indian Forces. It is obviously undesirable that members of the Indian Territorial Force should be paid higher rates than the members of the regular Indian Army. Consequently, it is not possible to make any practical suggestions for improvement under this head.

(2) *Popularity of the Force.*—I enclose herewith a copy of the strength return for the month ending 30th April 1924 of Indian Territorial Force units located in the Eastern Command. An examination of the figures tends, in my opinion, to show that the Force is not unpopular if consideration be paid to the comparatively short period since the inception of the Force, and to the fact that, owing to training for the season 1923-24 having recently been completed, those persons found unfit for further service will have been eliminated from their units. The number of persons commissioned as officers

may appear to be small, but this is largely due to the action of my predecessor as General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Eastern Command, who limited the number of commissions which might be granted in each unit to 1-3rd of the establishment until such time as applicants have proved their worth. I have recently issued instructions that the limit may now be raised to 2-3rds of the establishment. For purposes of comparison between the numbers actually enrolled and the authorised establishment, I enclose a copy of the Peace Establishment of an Indian Infantry Battalion and Company (T. F.).

(3) *Methods of selecting candidates for commissions.*—I would invite your attention to Annexure 1 to India Army Order No. 282 of 1924, Provisional Regulations for the Indian Territorial Force. I cannot suggest any improvement in the method of selection, cumbrous though it may appear to be. It appears to me to be essential that the various Military and Civil Authorities, who are required to scrutinise an application for a commission, should invariably be consulted.

(4) *Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.*—The Force may be said in general terms to have been constituted for two reasons :—

(*a*) Political, in order to satisfy the legitimate aspirations of Indians in connection with the defence of their country.

(*b*) Military, in order to provide a framework on which a Territorial Force can be built up in such a manner as to provide in times of stress a second line to the Regular Army, and thus, by expanding the fighting forces of India, to provide more adequately for its protection against foreign aggression.

From a political point of view it would perhaps have been of some advantage if the more educated and politically minded classes had shown a greater inclination to offer themselves as members of the Indian Territorial Force.

From a Military point of view, the fact that persons of the classes mentioned have shown little inclination to join may be considered as advantageous to the ultimate efficiency of the Force. The bulk of the rank and file of the Force is at present drawn from the same source as provides recruits for the active Battalions of the Indian Army. Many indeed have previously served in the ranks of the Indian Army and have either taken their discharge voluntarily or were demobilized on reduction of Army establishments after the War. It is probable that the greatest attraction to membership of the Force is to be found in the pay offered during periods of training or embodiment. If this be true, an extended period of training would be welcomed by the rank and file. Improvement from a Military point of view can undoubtedly be attained by lengthening the periods of training, and the cost of the Force would be proportionately increased. If, however, the Government of India are unwilling to face this additional cost, it would appear to be desirable to improve the efficiency of the Force by concentrating on the instruction of Officers and Non-commissioned Officers. This instruction could be given during periods of attachment to training and active Battalions of the Indian Army, on a more extended scale than is now provided for, and at special courses instituted for the purpose. The present system of instruction cannot be regarded as satisfactory. The training of Territorial units takes place during the collective training period of the regular Indian Army, and the provision of instructional staff on the scale authorised cannot be made without serious detriment to the regular units. Consequently, the Territorial Officers and Non-commissioned Officers, who are themselves untrained, have to be employed in the training of the Territorial troops. It has been represented to me that under the present system, Territorial Instructors are so weak, both in knowledge and power of command, that in practice units depend entirely on the few Officers and Non-commissioned Officers of regular units for their instruction in all subjects. It would be unreasonable to expect too much of a Force which has been constituted so recently, but no great advance can be expected if Territorial units have to begin afresh at the beginning of every training period and spend a large proportion of the short training period in purely elementary work. The Adjutant of Territorial Force units would doubtless be able to offer pertinent criticism on the present system of instruction.

(5) *Persons to be selected for examination before the Committee to be convened by the Government of India.*—I have already reported to the Adjutant General in India that I consider the following officers suitable for examination :—

Major J. O. Hume-Wright, 11th-7th Rajput Regiment.

Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., 11th-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.

Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., formerly 11th-19th Hyderabad Regiment.

Major H. S. Stewart, Deputy Assistant Director of Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Presidency and Assam District.

Captain H. V. Gell, 11th-9th Royal Jat Regiment.

In addition to the above, I would suggest for the consideration of the Governor in Council that Mr. H. Nevill, C.I.E., I.C.S., District Magistrate, Agra, who was largely responsible for the initial work in connection with the inspection of the Indian Territorial Force when employed as Director of Auxiliary and Territorial Forces at Army Headquarters, might be selected to give evidence before the Committee.

INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Strength return for the month ending 30th April 1924 of units located in the Eastern Command Area.

Unit.	Permanent Staff.		En-rolled.	Strength of Unit		Super-numerary and attached Officers and N. C. O's.	Remarks.
	Officers Adjutants.	Instructors.	Officers.	Other Ranks.	Total.		
11th Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment	1	...	7	519	527	...	Owing to non-receipt of strength return for April strength return for the month of March is shown for this Regiment.
12th-7th Rajput Regiment	1	1 N. C. O.	5	581	588		
11th-19th H. Regiment { Bihar and Orissa Companies	1	1 Q. M. H.	...	2 1	243		
11th-19th H. Regiment { Bengal Companies	1	1	6	367	375		
11th Battalion, 18th Royal Garhwal Regiment	1	...	6	473	480	...	Owing to non-receipt of strength return for April, strength return for the month of March is shown for this Regiment.
11th Battalion, 14th Punjab Regiment	1	1 Q. M. H.	7	646	655		
11th Battalion, 9th Jat Regiment	1	...	13	652	666		
2nd (Calcutta) Battalion, University Training Corps.	1	5	3	475	484	1 B. O.	
3rd (Allahabad) Battalion, University Training Corps.	1	3	12	320	336		
7th (Patna) Company, University Training Corps	...	1	...	82	83		
8th (Benares) Company, University Training Corps.	...	1	2	80	83		
Total	9	14	61	4,436	4,520	1	

Copy of Advisory Committee resolution No. 12, dated the 15th May 1924.

Read letter No. 455-III-190, dated 21st April, 1924, from R. Milner-White, Esq., I.C.S., Deputy Secretary to Government, United Provinces, forwarding a copy of resolution accepted by the Government of India in the Legislative Assembly of 5th February, 1924, to consider the question of the reorganization of the Indian Territorial Force, with President's note, dated 13th May, 1924.

Read with the note of the President's and the various items on which the opinion of this Committee was required were discussed and the following decisions were arrived at :—

(1) (*a*) *Pay and Allowances*—

Resolved that in the opinion of this Committee all the members of the Territorial Force, other than the Officers, should be allowed a pay during the non-embodied period and this should be a rupee less than the pay given to class II Reserve the Regular Indian Army.

Further resolved that the payment of this allowance should be made in arrears when the man appears for training and the Officer Commanding should be empowered to withhold this in cases of absentees who cannot give a satisfactory explanation for their absence.

The question of the allowance was then considered and it was resolved that in the opinion of this Committee it is necessary to give every recruit the existing allowance for Mufti payable to regular recruits, viz., Rs. 22.

(*b*) As regards the travelling and subsistence allowance the Committee recommend that the travelling allowance and subsistence for recruits should be allowed on the same basis as in the regular army so that provision may be made for the re-imbursement of voluntary recruiters and settlement of accounts rendered easier.

As regards the pay of the officers of the Territorial Force, the Committee recommends that the pay of an Officer Commanding a Company be fixed as soon as possible. At present no extra pay is available and they recommend that the pay should be the pay of the rank and Rs. 100 a month for staff. This is recommended in view of the extra responsibility involved.

(2) *Popularity of the Force*—

It was brought to the notice of the Committee by Captain Kelley, the Officer Commanding, 11th-7th Rajputs, Agra, that there existed a demand for the period of training to be increased to 56 days from 28 and the Committee were unanimous in thinking that if the period of training was increased as demanded it would not only add to the popularity but add largely to the efficiency of the Force.

The Committee think that if the recommendations placed under the preceding heading, viz., pay and allowance are accepted that will further add to the popularity of the Force.

(3) *Methods of selecting candidates for Commissions*—

The Committee think that the method of selecting candidates for Commissions as laid down in the Provisional Territorial Force Regulations are quite satisfactory.

The Committee, however, think that in cases of *ex*-Indian Army Viceroy's Commissioned Officers which have to be referred to the District Civil authorities the Government might be requested to circularise the District Officers and issue private instructions directing them not to give undue weight to the social status alone as long as these candidates are loyal and efficient.

(4) *Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted*—

The Committee considered the question of the improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted at length and admitted the existence of a grievance amongst the educated, higher and middle classes of Indians as regards their being not eligible to be enlisted in the Indian Auxiliary Force. The Committee recognised the necessity of the existence of a separate Auxiliary Force for obvious reasons. They however

also recognise the existence of the feeling amongst the educated and higher classes of Indians for being allowed an avenue which would give them a little better status and terms as compared to the present Indian Territorial Force.

The present Indian Territorial Force having been admitted to be able to serve as a regular second line of reserve to the Regular Army the fact that the enrolments of those whose professional or other duties is likely to render it doubtful whether their services would be available in time of war is a source of weakness to the Territorial Force. The Committee therefore after weighing the pros and cons of the facts and taking all views into consideration unanimously recommend that the present Territorial Force be split up and constituted into two :—(1) A true Territorial Force whose obligations and training should correspond with those of the Auxiliary Force, India. (2) A Militia Force which should be composed as the present provincial units and should have conditions of services existing in the present Territorial Force provincial units.

(5) *A list of selected persons whom it is considered the Committee should summon for examination—*

The Committee suggest the following names :—

1. Major D. R. Ranjit Singh, O.B.E., President of the Advisory Committee;
2. Captain C. C. Kelley, the Officer Commanding, 12-7th Rajputs, Agra, who will also represent as Military Member, and
3. H. R. Nevill, Esq., C.I.E., I.C.S., Collector of Agra.

The Committee think that the above recommendations include practically all reasonable complaints and grievances.

(Sd.) D. R. RANJIT SINGH,
President.

FROM THE HON'BLE MR. H. N. BOLTON, C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S., CHIEF COMMISSIONER, NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE, No. 2621-G.N. /12-28, DATED THE 13TH AUGUST 1924.

With reference to your telegram No. A.-27033 (A.G.), dated the 26th July 1924, I have the honour to enclose, for your intermediate information, a copy of a letter dated the 6th July 1924, from Honorary Captain Mir Jafar Khan, Acting President of the Territorial Force Advisory Committee, together with a copy of my letter No. 1761-G. N., dated the 12th July 1924, to Headquarters, Northern Command, on the same subject.

I am unable to submit my views on the suggestions put forward in Captain Mir Jafar Khan's letter until I hear further from the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Northern Command. As, however, the Committee is now to assemble on 25th August, I have considered it advisable to furnish, for their information, whatever material is at present available on the subject.

FROM HONORARY CAPTAIN MIR JAFAR KHAN, PRESIDENT, ADVISORY COMMITTEE, ZAIDA, DISTRICT PESHAWAR, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE HON'BLE THE CHIEF COMMISSIONER, NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE, DATED THE 6TH JULY 1924.

With reference to your office No. 629-G. N./12-28-1923, dated 10th June 1924 (endorsement No. 630-G.N./12-28-1923, dated 10th June 1924), I beg to state that I am submitting my statement which is herewith attached. I am also sending a copy of the same to the District Headquarters, Peshawar.

STATEMENT BY HONORARY CAPTAIN MIR JAFAR KHAN, M.B.E., I.O.M., KHAN SAHIB, SARDAR BAHADUR OF ZAIDA, DISTRICT PESHAWAR, PRESIDENT, ADVISORY COMMITTEE, DATED THE 6TH JULY 1924.

Terms of reference.

1. Pay and allowances.
2. Popularity of the Force.
3. Methods of selecting candidates for Commission.
4. Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

I am of the opinion that it is absolutely necessary to make improvements at the earliest possible moment in the Indian Territorial Force, and to revise its scale of pay and allowances. There is much to be done in order to make the Force efficient and attractive. With the present scale of pay and allowances and the conditions prevailing, it is feared that it would be next to impossible to find suitable men forthcoming for the Force. This Force has been started on the analogy of the Militia and Territorial at Home, and every possible effort should be made to make it as efficient and up-to-date as those Forces. To achieve this end, I make the following suggestions, which I hope will ensure enlistment in the Force of really suitable young men and so make it serve the purpose of an efficient second line to the Regular Army.

(1) *Pay and allowances.*

1. I feel the absolute necessity of giving some retaining fee to the members of the Force during the non-training period. If this retaining fee is sanctioned it would prevent the men of the Force from going on long journeys as for instance to Burma and other distant places, in search of employment. Moreover this retaining fee would have a very salutary effect, viz., the members of the Force would put their hearts into their work. At present, when a man returns from training and is asked by his friends what pay he would get during his non-training period, it really puts him to shame to say that he is getting none. When this retaining fee is sanctioned then Rs. 14-7-0 and 28 free rations which a sepoy of the Territorial gets in one year in ordinary circumstances would become fairly attractive to men to join the Force.

2. I recommend that Honorary Lieutenants and 2nd-Lieutenants should get Rs. 250 and Rs. 200, respectively, per mensem, and an increment of Rs. 50 after passing the retention examination. They should also be given retaining fee during the non-training period.

3. As regards the outfit allowance, I suggest that Rs. 200 should be paid on first appointment and Rs. 100 on confirmation.

4. I also suggest that mess allowance should be increased.

5. Indian Territorial Force officers should be entitled to travel on Form E during the training period and while going on duty. They should also get travelling allowance for journeys by railway and also detention allowance when sent on duty.

6. Dhobis, cooks and barbers should be authorized in the peace establishment. Their pay should be fixed having regard to the number of persons whom they serve. The retaining of these men on the peace establishment of the Force would save a good deal of the sepoy's time which they would be able to devote to their work.

7. Instead of the present caretakers of the battalion's store, I would suggest that the requisite number of N. C. Os. and sepoys should be obtained from amongst the Regular Army. These men should remain in the battalion for one year. Thus every year a new batch of men may be obtained from the different regiments of the Regular Army by rotation. In this way no permanent staff would be needed for taking care of the battalion's store, and further it would be more safe to leave the battalion's store in the hands of experienced men from the Regular Army. Moreover, the battalion would save the amount which it incurs under the present arrangement; for men from the Regular Army would get their pay from their own regiments.

8. I do not think that any further allowance should be given to the Adjutant during the training period, when a new field officer has been appointed and the Adjutant has to perform the duties of Quartermaster; as he is permanently on the staff of the battalion and must be already drawing a decent pay along with a decent allowance.

9. As regards pension, I am not in a position to give a definite opinion. British officers of the Regular Army are eligible for pension after 28 years. In case of the Territorial Force, holders of the Honorary King's Commission would, if they are to remain for 28 years in the Force in order to be eligible for pension, have actually served 28 months or if the period of training is raised to two months then 56 months. Even if full allowance be made for war emergencies, this period of actual service would in very rare cases come up to $\frac{1}{4}$ of 28 years. I would therefore suggest that in case the men and officers of the Indian Territorial Force are not called for purposes of War, they should not be eligible for pension. In case they have remained for a reasonable period on active service pension may be given them.

10. I suggest that the present system of obtaining temporary clerks should be maintained—owing to the general spread of education among the urban classes, it would be very easy to secure really capable clerks on a slightly high pay. I am however of the opinion that one permanent clerk should be attached with the Training Battalion as quartermaster clerk.

As to the whole-time civilian clerk, I suggest that his pay should begin from Rs. 50—5—100. In these days even graduates would be willing to act as clerks on Rs. 50 per mensem. The whole-time civilian clerk should not be given the commissioned rank of Jemadar as a matter of course. It may be given only in exceptional cases and as a reward for good services.

11. I do not know what are the rights and privileges enjoyed by the Auxiliary Force, I am therefore not in a position to say what privileges and concessions of the Auxiliary Force should be given to the Territorial Force.

(2) *Popularity of the Force.*

1. There is no doubt about the fact that if the experiment of the Territorial Force proves a success it would become an instrument of immense value for the defence of the country. If enthusiastic young men could be secured for the Force there is no gainsaying the fact that the Force would constitute an efficient second line to the Regular Army. Unfortunately, the masses of the people in this province are largely uneducated and they do not realize the permanent necessity of the defence of the country. People in this part of the country join the Territorial Force only to earn a livelihood when they

fail to get a job anywhere else. It is, therefore, suggested that the members of the Force should be given the following privileges and concessions :—

(i) After the period of training is over, they should be given retaining fee.

(ii) The sepoys should be assured that while applying for posts of peons and chowkidars or other jobs of a similar nature in Government Departments they would be given preference over other applicants.

(iii) In case a member of the Force is disabled or killed while on active service his family should be entitled to the same privileges as are given to the families and children of the members of the Regular Army.

2. In the case of holders of the Honorary King's Commission being disabled or killed their families and children should be liberally rewarded.

3. The words Subedar and Jemadar should be removed from before the names of those officers whose service is entirely satisfactory and who distinguish themselves by their work in the Force.

4. Promotion should be made possible from the ranks to Jemadar Adjutant and Jemadar Quartermaster and up to Subedar.

5. In case the Platoon Commanders and Company Officers distinguish themselves in field they may be promoted to the rank of Captain, etc.

6. A small band should be provided during the training period.

7. Chuplies should be given to sepoys without charge after every two years.

8. Members of the Force may be given permission to have themselves transferred to the Regular Army whenever they so choose.

9. The officers of the Force should be recognized by authorities in darbars, civil and military functions.

10. Charpoys should be provided for units of the Indian Territorial Force from the regimental fund. Charpoys can be obtained on a monthly rent of annas 0-8-0 each.

11. The following pucca accommodation should be provided for the battalion :—

(i) Store rooms for clothing, equipment and rations.

(ii) Quarter-Guard. Nowshera is not far away from the Afridi territory. Therefore, it would be advisable to keep the rifles in a safe place.

(iii) Bells-of-Arms.

(iv) Kitchen.

(v) 5 pucca floors for the tents of British officers, also one more for the tent of the field officer.

(vi) Accommodation for men in charge of the store.

(vii) Wash-houses.

(3) *Methods of selecting candidates for Commission.*

1. The Honorary King's Commission should be given only to the sons of the Indian military officers or the sons of Khans, provided in both cases they are matric at least. Commission may also be given to those officers of the Regular Army holding Viceroy's Commission, who have served for less than 10 years in the Army and have not obtained pension. But before the last mentioned are accepted in the Territorial, enquiries should be made as to their conduct and character from their late Commanding Officers.

2. Aspirants for the commission should be taken through the Deputy Commissioner of the District or the Assistant Commissioner of the sub-division concerned and the Commanding Officer of the Battalion. In the case of the late commissioned officers of the Regular Army candidates should not be accepted in the Force except on the recommendation of Officer Commanding concerned.

As regards the President of the Committee he should have a general voice in the selection of candidates.

3. Commission should be given to those aspirants only who bring their complete platoons with them.

(4) *Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the rôle for which it has been constituted.*

1. I suggest that A Reserve and B Reserve of the Regular Army should be abolished and Indian Territorial Force substituted in their place. The sepoys of the Indian Territorial Force should be given half of the pay of the sepoys of A Reserve and B Reserve put together as retaining-fee during the non-training period.

2. Complete battalions of the fighting classes should be raised.

3. I am of opinion that the present period of training is an extremely short one. This may be raised to two months for trained soldiers and three months for recruits.

4. There should be one Vice-President of the Advisory Committee to act as President in the absence of the President.

5. As regards the powers of the Advisory Committee, it should have full control over the affairs of the battalion. Questions regarding promotions, degradations, resignations and appointments in the battalion should be entirely left in the hands of the Committee.

6. Discipline, training, musketry and powers of the Commanding Officer as regards punishment of delinquents should be the same as those of the Regular Army.

7. I do not think it should improve the condition of the battalion in any way if during the embodiment period the permanent Adjutant of the battalion should be made the field officer. The present system of obtaining the services of a new field officer for the embodiment period is a healthier one. For under the present system the field officer has at his disposal all the useful information regarding the battalion possessed by the Adjutant and a result arrived at after the two officers have exchanged views with each other would go a good deal towards ensuring the desired standard of efficiency of the battalion.

8. During the first two years of training, men should be obtained from the Regular Forces for the purpose of guard, rifle and sentry duties.

9. Officers, N. C. Os., and followers should come up every year both for periodical and preliminary training, the former two to command the new recruits and the latter to cook, etc., for them.

10. District Commanders should be given authority to sanction certain concessions that are given to the Regular Army in the case of Indian Territorial Force on certain occasions. Sometimes difficulties are encountered in this connection.

11. Commanding Officers and Company Commanders should be detained for a few days after the training is finished for completely handing over charge of clothing, etc.

12. Arrangements should be made that the Advisory Committee should once at least, after the training, hold committee with the Adjutant.

13. Permission to extend service beyond 4 and 6 years at present laid down should be given to really efficient men.

14. All Indian Territorial Force officers should undergo 10 months' preliminary training with the Training Battalion on completion of their first periodical training and be entitled to full pay and allowance during this period.

15. Indian Territorial Force officers should be given opportunities of attending courses of instruction as for the Regular Army, when they have completed 10 months' training with the Training Battalion, and passed retention examination.

16. 10 N. C. Os. per Indian Territorial Force unit not below the rank of naik should be sent to the Training Battalion of their group for instructions for three months prior to the embodiment of their battalion and should receive the pay of rank during such period.

17. The Territorial Camp should be designated as a standing camp and not temporary camp.

18. Instructional staff should be necessarily from the Active Battalions of the Group and not pensioners.

FROM THE HON'BLE MR. H. N. BOLTON, C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S., CHIEF COMMISSIONER, NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE, No. $\frac{3805\text{-G. N.}}{12\text{-}28\text{-}1923}$, DATED NATHIA GALI, THE 6TH SEPTEMBER 1924.

I have the honour to invite a reference to my letter No. 2621-G. N., dated the 13th August 1924, enclosing, for your information, a copy of a letter from the Acting President of the Territorial Force Advisory Committee of this Province. I now enclose a copy of the remarks made by the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Northern Command, on the suggestions put forward by the Advisory Committee. I have nothing to add to these remarks.

MEMORANDUM FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING-IN-CHIEF, NORTHERN COMMAND, MURREE, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE CHIEF COMMISSIONER, NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE, No. 19751/10-A. T. F., DATED THE 25TH AUGUST 1924.

With reference to your memorandum No. 1761-G. N.-12/28—1923, dated the 12th July 1924, I have the following remarks to make on the suggestions contained in the Report of the Advisory Committee of the Territorial Force forwarded under cover of your above quoted memorandum.

The points dealt with by the Advisory Committee may conveniently be classified under the following heads :—

(*a*) *Pay and Allowances.*—The suggestions include increase of pay to officers; the grant of retention allowance to the men; enhanced outfit, mess and travelling allowances; in fact, the only individual who is definitely debarred from any increase is the Adjutant.

Desirable as these may be, it is a question of high finance. In principle, however, I do not consider that the Territorial should in any case receive higher remuneration than the regular or the reservist, who, as a fighting unit, is of far greater value to the State.

(*b*) *Measures to increase the popularity of the Force.*—These include the grant of a retaining fee; the provision of a band; the provision of country shoes; the provision of standing accommodation and charpoys, all of which involve additional expenditure.

The measures are desirable if the requisite funds are forthcoming; but I am strongly opposed to the diversion of funds from the Regular Army budget to the Territorial Force budget.

(*c*) *Selection for the grant of Concessions.*—The Advisory Committee evidently do not appreciate the underlying principle of democracy which was one of the main features of the Territorial Force at its inception. From a professional point of view character, capacity for leadership and professional knowledge are of greater value than both social status or a University degree.

(*d*) *Training.*—An increased period of training is undoubtedly desirable; but it would involve considerable additional cost, and it is doubtful whether the men would be prepared to come out for a longer period.

In connection with this subject I would remark that the Committee appear to regard the Regular Army as an inexhaustible source from which caretakers, trainers and duty men of all descriptions can be drawn.

The Regular Army has more than enough work to do to keep itself efficient, and any further calls on the Regular Army for extraneous duties must inevitably reduce that efficiency.

(*e*) *The substitution of the Territorial Force for the Reserve.*—I have no hesitation in saying that no regular soldier could ever agree to this proposal. The value of the two categories as fighting units is not comparable.

The Reservist has had 5 years' training as a regular; is proficient in the rifle; has a good knowledge of the Lewis gun; and probably has worked with the Vickers gun. In addition he has been exercised in field manœuvres, and is imbued with a sense of discipline and of *esprit de corps*. A Territorial of the same standing would have had 6 months' training, all of which would have been of the barrack square. He would have fired an elementary and modified course with the rifle each year; but would never have handled a Lewis gun or a Vickers gun. He would have done no field work.

2. The success of the Territorial Force lies in the ability of its supporters to produce officers with character and capacity for leadership, and who are prepared to study the profession of arms. The measure of efficiency of any military unit is the measure of efficiency of its officers.

FROM E. G. F. ABRAHAM, ESQ., C.B., I.C.S., HOME SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF THE PUNJAB, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, No. 2665-S. MILY., DATED SIMLA, THE 15TH AUGUST 1924.

With reference to Major Lumby's letter No. A.-27033/1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st of April 1924, I am directed by the Governor in Council to enclose a copy of the correspondence noted below* and to communicate the following observations on the five points with regard to which the opinion of the Punjab Government is required :—

(i) *Pay and Allowances.*—The Governor in Council considers that the pay and allowance of the Indian Territorial Force during periods of training should, as at present, be on the scale admissible in His Majesty's Indian forces. The suggestion that a monthly retaining fee should be paid to members of the Force does not commend itself to this Government. Taking into consideration the grounds on which the Force was established it does not appear that the case for such a fee has been proved. It is true that reservists are paid even when not called out for service or training; but the new reservist comes under more stringent conditions than the Territorial soldier and belongs to the professional soldier class. If the Territorial Force is to perform its primary function, it should be possible to fill the ranks without a retaining fee; if it is not possible, the scheme is something of a failure.

(ii) *Popularity.*—The Governor in Council has no comments to offer on the suggestions made by the authorities consulted.

(iii) *Method of selecting candidates for Commissions.*—The Punjab Government consider that the selection of candidates for Commissions should invariably be made by the military authorities. The sole duty devolving upon the civil authority concerned should be to certify to a candidate's social status. The standard of fitness in other respects is a matter for decision by the military authorities.

(iv) *Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the rôle for which it was constituted.*—The Governor in Council can offer no useful comments on the suggestions made by the authorities consulted as to this point.

(v) *A list of selected persons whom it is considered that the Committee should examine.*—The following gentlemen could suitably be called as witnesses :—

(1) Honorary Lieutenant Rao Bahadur Chaudhuri Lal Chand of Rohtak.

(2) Sardar Bahadur Sardar Gajjan Singh, O.B.E., of Ludhiana.

(3) Khan Bahadur Malik Muhammad Amin Khan, O.B.E., of Shamsabad (Attock District).

(4) Sardar Mukand Singh. (Full address will follow.)

(5) Khan Bahadur Sayyid Sir Mehdi Shah, K.C.I.E., O.B.E., of Gojra, Lyallpur District.

(6) Captain Ajab Khan, O.B.E., I.O.M., Campbellpur, Attock District.

(7) Sardar Suraj Singh. (Full address will follow.)

(8) Lieutenant-Colonel Maharaja Sir Jai Chand, K.C.I.E., C.S.I., of Lambagraon, Kangra District.

(9) Sardar Hira Singh. (Full address will follow.)

(10) Lieutenant Malik Gulsher Khan.

(11) Sardar Thakur Singh. (Full address will follow.)

---

*(1) Opinions of Local Advisory Committee.
Letter from Colonel Nawab Malik Sir Umar Hayat Khan, with enclosure.
Letter, dated 19th May 1924, from Colonel Commandant D. I. Shuttleworth, C.B.E., D.S.O., Commanding, Jullundur Brigade Area.

(2) Opinion of General Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Northern Command.
Northern Command letter No. 19751-6-A.T.F., dated 10th July 1924, with enclosures.

(12) Major W. M. Grylls, 11-1st Punjab Regiment.

(13) Lieutenant Muzaffar Khan, 11-13th Frontier Force Rifles (Territorial).

(14) Captain Sher Muhammad Khan Ghakhar, Adjutant, 11-13th Frontier Force Rifles (Territorial).

2. With regard to the concluding paragraph of Major Lumby's letter, the Local Advisory Committee suggest (*a*) that the status of officers of the Territorial Force should be raised and (*b*) that recruitment for the Force should be limited to the martial classes. The Governor in Council is unable to endorse either of these suggestions. With regard to the second, he considers that there is already a tendency in parts of the Punjab to make the Force either a reserve consisting of demobilized soldiers, or a training ground for young men who desire to enter the Regular Army. This tendency may have useful results, but it is a departure from the original scheme and purposes of the Force.

LETTER FROM THE HON'BLE COLONEL NAWAB MALIK SIR UMAR HAYAT KHAN, PRESIDENT, INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE ADVISORY COMMITTEE, PUNJAB, LAHORE, TO THE HOME SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF THE PUNJAB, LAHORE, DATED THE MAY 1924.

I am in receipt of your No. 12298 along with the copy of No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A.T.F.), dated 1st April 1924, and I enclose the views of Captain Sardar Lakha Singh and myself on the subject; the views of Colonel Commandant, Jullundur, will be forwarded later on.

Views on Indian Territorial Force.

To answer the questions contained in No. A.-27033-1 (A.G., A. T. F.) adequately and effectively it is necessary to first deal with the matter generally before coming to the specific issues therein. A second line could only be a second line to one which is first and to this it should closely resemble in organization and other details; as the organization of the Auxiliary Force resembles that of British Infantry or other formations as Artillery, etc., as long as the first line, i.e., British and Indian Infantry, could not be brought on par with one another in every detail, it is impossible for the second lines to become similar to their respective first lines. Thus the resolution adopted and its object in view could not be realized if things remain as they are. In the British Infantry above the Sergeants all are in possession of King's Commissions while in Indian Infantry such is not the case. In the latter apart from the British Officers holding King's Commissions there are Indian Officers who only hold Viceroy's Commission. From the beginning of the History, India has had its fighting classes and those who have other walks of life, i.e., non-martial ones. This has continued and survived up to the present day. Thus to keep up the efficiency of the Army it is absolutely essential that the stuff it may be made of should be out of the same material, i.e., the martial class. It is only thus that the structure could be built on a firm basis. If bad stuff was used it would not be worth the money spent on it. Hitherto, the highest rank the Indians have got to, since very recently, was that of Risaldar and Subedar-Major for which one generally started either from ranks or direct commissions which were given generally to the good families. Thus, if officers for Territorial Force are to be taken from the fighting material they should be recruited from this very material. If such officers for the Territorial Force were recruited with the King's Commission without passing the Sandhurst or equivalent test while those of the Regular Army were given inferior ranks, i.e., Viceroy's Commission, this will create a bone of contention and discontent in whole of the Army. Already there is a grievance among the Indian Officers that while in the previous organizations they commanded squadrons or companies or troops or half companies, respectively, in the Cavalry and Infantry they are now in charge of a dozen of combatants in the new organization called Field Troops, etc., and when sometimes a junior officer goes on leave, a non-commissioned officer is put in charge of the same dozen of men as a commissioned officer. They think that in this way their position and powers have already deteriorated. Then again if the second line is ever to take the field directly they reinforce a regular

Battalion, if all the Officers had King's Commissions and none the Viceroy's Commission, it will be difficult for them to fit into the Battalion and if those with the King's Commission were given inferior posts they will naturally be discontented. On the other hand, if they were placed above the regular Indian Officers they will also be discontented, which is the last thing that one would wish for during the war. In this connection some other vital points should also be taken into consideration, that is the terms of contract, the object underlying the various formations, the course and period of training and the difference in the pay and allowances between the Auxiliary and the Territorial Forces. These considerations make the amalgamation still more difficult. The training period of the Auxiliary Force is about a week while that of the Territorial about four weeks which is essential for the latter. An Englishman generally knows how to fire a gun, he knows the words of command which are in English and has perhaps gone through some sort of drill during his school days. On the other hand, when a sturdy uneducated peasant of the martial class is enlisted in the Territorial Force, he naturally takes much longer time to understand the drill in Foreign language and learn the use of the fire arms. The Territorial soldier is liable to go to the front to defend his country while the member of the Auxiliary Force is generally meant for internal or local commotion. A member of the Auxiliary Force is paid at the rate of the British soldiers, while a member of the Territorial Force at that of the Indian soldiers, i.e., a difference of 5 to 1. If English soldier is paid at the rate of the Indian soldier's pay there will be no Auxiliary Force, while if Indian soldier is paid that of the English soldiers it looks ridiculous to pay five times the rate to an untrained soldier. If the pay of the Territorials was even doubled it brings about much discontent in the Regular Indian Army.

Though we have accepted the resolution and have promised to constitute a Committee, I don't think anything useful will be gained by it unless the whole question of the Commissions in the Indian Army is fully tackled, i.e., that all the Indian officers should be given King's Commissions similar to the British units. It will be then easy for the Territorial Force to resemble the Auxiliary Force. If such a far-reaching step was contemplated the Committee of Legislature or of experts could be of any avail. In my opinion, the Advisory Committee, which generally deals with the Territorial subjects, ought to be the nucleus of the future Committee, to which should be added the other members, may they be of Legislature or others.

I have appended a list out of which could be chosen members for the Committee or for witnesses to be examined by the Committee as desired.

I will now deal categorically with the various interrogatives contained in the letter :—

1. The pay and the allowances of the Territorial soldiers should not be more than that of the Regular Army, because they are called out at a time when there is no harvesting going on and if they already belong to a proper class which generally follows the profession of arms, it will give them employment and a little money. But as this is not sufficient and there are no other prospects attached thereto, that service cannot be so popular. If it is meant to make these Battalions more attractive and useful, it is necessary that they should be given some monthly allowances like that of the reservists. Now that the price of the wheat in particular and foodstuffs in general has decreased, I think Rs. 2 to 3 per mensem should be ample for attraction and the popularity of the Force. This will bind them down and the Battalion would have a stronger hold on such soldiers.

2. The above allowance would make the Force popular enough, but if a Territorial Colour is added by giving it the name of the place from where it is raised, e.g., The Jhelum Platoon, The Shahpur Platoon, The Gujrat Platoon, etc., and the civil authorities as well as leading persons took keener interest to have that platoon best all round, and competitions for such were forthcoming in which prizes were offered, the Force is bound to become more efficient. At times of emergency Police or Regular Army could have batches out of these Battalions who know some discipline, etc., which will be of great use to these Forces. This will save them the time that they take over training the raw material.

3. The methods of selecting for Commission could be first through the Deputy Commissioners who may choose such men of influence who can raise their respective platoons and keep them up to strength. Such names may be

submitted to the Officer Commanding of a particular Territorial Battalion, who should pick out the candidates, so that in future they may always look up to their Commanding Officers as their benefactors and thus naturally the former will have a greater hold on them. If candidates are able to raise their own platoons it would suffice to show their capacity and influence which is so necessary in this connection.

4. If all the above is effected, it will generally bring efficiency to the Force. An extra time given to the officers and non-commissioned officers for training to enable them to fulfil the role of instructors, and perhaps a longer period for the training of recruits, say a week or two, would be sufficient for general improvement of the Force as a whole.

I think one question in connection with Territorial Force is worth consideration, that is to fix the numbers of the various fighting clans according to their numerical strength serving in the Regular Army. This can be accomplished in a slightly different way founded on the Territorial basis. For instance if a District has furnished, say, ten thousand recruits to the Army it should be allowed to enlist some percentage thereof into the Territorial Battalion which recruits for that District and in the same way fixed percentage should be equally applicable to all the districts. The District authorities, especially the Soldier's Board in it, may be asked to open a register for candidates from which soldiers may be picked out for the Territorial Force. Prizes may also be offered to the best platoons for various districts which will stimulate recruiting of a better class. If this is accomplished recruitment for the Territorial Force will become much easier.

List of proposed witnesses to be examined by the Committee.

1. The Hon'ble Lieutenant Rao Bahadur Ch. Lal Chand, Minister to Government, Punjab.
2. Sardar Bahadur Gajjan Singh, Ludhiana.
3. Khan Bahadur Malik Mohammed Amin Khan, Shamsabad.
4. Sardar Mukand Singh.
5. Khan Bahadur Sayed Mehdi Shah, Lyallpur.
6. Captain Ajab Khan.
7. Sardar Suraj Singh.
8. Colonel Raja Jai Chand of Lambagraon.
9. Sardar Hira Singh.
10. Lieutenant Malik Gulsher Khan.
11. Sardar Thakar Singh.

FROM COLONEL COMMANDANT D. I. SHUTTLEWORTH, C.B.E., D.S.O., COMMANDING, JULLUNDUR BRIGADE AREA, TO THE HOME SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF THE PUNJAB, LAHORE, No. NIL, DATED THE 19TH MAY 1924.

I have received a letter from Colonel the Honourable Nawab Malik Sir Umar Hayat Khan Tiwana, K.C.I.E., C.B.E., M.V.O., forwarding the correspondence enclosed which I am returning direct.

I agree that there should be no increase in the present pay and allowances of the Territorial Force, which should not be in excess of the existing rates, as laid down for the Indian Army.

I agree that a monthly payment of one or two rupees should be authorized during the months Territorials are not collected for training, and I agree that the money should only be paid to those who obey the order calling them out, as it will act as an inducement.

2. Territorial designations are very sound: within a Battalion a Commanding Officer can determine this, but battalions themselves when recruited from a single area should I agree take its name.

I do not think that time can be given up to competitions during the 28 days allotted for training, which are very fully occupied, at present. I agree though that the idea of competitions organized on a military or athletic basis are sound, if arranged to take place on dates fixed so as not to curtail the training period.

3. I agree.

4. Until officers and N. C. O.'s reach laid-down standards of efficiency varied according to their rank, an additional month's training annually should be obligatory but Commanding Officers should be given wide powers to exclude individuals in any particular year, so as to avoid hardships. The principle of refresher classes for qualified officers and N. C. O.'s should be accepted and classes in tactics, weapon training, mountain warfare, organization and interior economy in peace and war should be held at schools for Territorial Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers.

5. I am unable to report in this sub-head as I have insufficient knowledge of individuals.

The above answers the points included within the terms of reference. As regards the general questions raised, although sympathising fully with the other members of the Committee I am unable to subscribe to the suggestions sent forward. I agree generally that the Territorial Army would be improved if it limited its composition to those classes enlisted by the Indian Army, but, on the other hand the natural impulse to serve on the part of a people must be considered and a territorial force should offer a wide scope to enlistment of all classes. I think that so long as the Territorial Force is officered by the same class as officer the Indian Army that a King's Commission is inadvisable, but that the question of selecting and training certain Territorial Officers to entitle them to the honour of possessing King's Commissions is important, and it is possible that a suitable class of Indians could be obtained, if so the Territorial idea within the platoon and company could be carried out, but the practical difficulties at present are very great. I do not think that the Territorial Force and the Auxiliary Force can be amalgamated, neither can they be treated on the same basis. In practice, the difficulties are insuperable as the rules of the two forces are so distinct.

I cannot agree that all Indian Officers in the Regular Army should be given King's Commissions. These are open to selected officers, trained at Sandhurst. The enlargement of the scope of other Indian officers of the Indian Army is a question which is receiving attention. It is outside the province of a Committee dealing with the Territorial Force. With reference to the other point raised, about Indian Officers, as Regular units will never be mixed, on service, with Territorial units the supposed difficulties should not occur in war.

To save time, I have answered this direct, and have sent a copy to the Honourable Nawab Malik Sir Umar Hayat Khan Tiwana, K.C.I.E., C.B.E., M.V.O.

As I am on tour in the District these letters are signed for me by a Staff Officer, who has had them typed out.

LETTER FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING-IN-CHIEF, NORTHERN COMMAND, TO THE HOME SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT OF THE PUNJAB, LAHORE, No. 19751—6-A. T. F., DATED MURREE, THE 10TH JULY 1924.

With reference to correspondence ending with your telegram No. 1718-S.-Military, dated the 8th July 1924, I have the honour to forward herewith* copies of remarks from General Officers Commanding, Lahore and Rawalpindi Districts, with whom I agree.

---

*Rawalpindi District No. R. P.-2278—3-A.-1, dated 10th/15th May 1924, and R. P.-2571—3-A.-1, dated 27th May 1924, with enclosures.

Lahore District No. 18471—11-T. F., dated the 2nd July 1924, and 24549—5-T. F., dated the 11th June 1924, with enclosures.

MEMORANDUM FROM THE 'COMMANDING, RAWALPINDI DISTRICT, TO THE ADVISORY COMMITTEE, INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE, LAHORE, No. R. P.-2278—3-A.-1, DATED MURREE, THE 10TH/13TH MAY 1924.

1. The improvement of the Territorial scheme as it exists at present depends primarily on policy and finance.

Policy within certain limits has been already laid down; units have been formed and in this District now done two annual trainings. A certain amount of experience has been gained and a number of officers have very carefully studied the question.

As regards finance there are also limits and it is purely a matter for the Government to decide whether these limits are to be widened if it is proved that this is the only way by which the Territorial Force can be made useful for the purpose for which it exists, *viz.*, War.

An alternative is to reduce existent expenditure under some heads in order to find money for such improvements as are found to be essential if efficiency for War is to be attained.

In view of the general financial situation it is presumed that suggestions must be based on the above alternative as at present any nett increase in expenditure is not feasible even if policy appears to demand it.

2. In spite of this presumption I forward the remarks of the Officers who commanded the two Territorial Battalions in this District and those of the Brigade Commanders as these contain many practical suggestions which are well worth attention.

3. Subject to the following remarks I recommend for serious consideration of the points put forward, and eliminating the question of the disbandment of certain units which have not filled their ranks, which is a matter for Superior authority to decide. In order to meet the extra cost of any proposals decided on I advise that establishments be reduced to the extent necessary.

(*a*) *Officers.*—The weakest point in the present system is the inefficiency of the majority of the officers and the absence of any means by which the efficiency of these officers can be brought up to a reasonable standard.

It is not their fault that this is so.

There is no reason why we should expect the average Indian Territorial Officer to do what no other body of Territorial Officers in the British Empire could do in similar circumstances.

Unless they are well selected, well grounded, and well taught subsequently, they cannot be expected to reach a reasonable standard.

Selection should involve the qualities of leadership, natural ability as instructors and that sympathy and character which must be instinctive in an officer. There must be none of the idea of the applicant for a commission looking merely for possible reward, for personal "izat" or for opportunity to curry favour with some superior. This limits the present field of selection but it will pay the Territorial Force to get such officers.

To give the aspirant officer a sound grounding, some form of Cadet training either in schools or Training Battalions is essential. I therefore recommend the proposal made by the Officer Commanding 11—13th F. F. Rifles.

His military education must be continued. The Annual Training is not enough and further training in an active or training battalion is necessary in addition to the annual training.

(*b*) *Non-Commissioned Officers.*—As regards the Non-Commissioned officers, to a modified extent the arguments produced above in regard to officers apply, and unless a Non-Commissioned Officer is reasonably efficient as an Instructor and Leader he is not pulling his weight. I therefore recommend that the Non-Commissioned Officers should receive three months' instruction on promotion and be called out annually for 28 days prior to the assembly of the Unit to be specially trained in their duties.

(*c*) *Recruits.*—Both Territorial Battalion Commanders consider that the period of recruits' initial training should be increased to four months and I agree entirely with this view. A period of 56 days is not enough and before the next annual training a man, insufficiently grounded, forgets most of what he has learnt and much has to be repeated.

If recruits are trained for four months and then do their annual training of 28 days it is certain that they will then be useful soldiers and the following year they should be able to make definite progress.

(*d*) *Instructors.*—The provision of Instructors is a difficult problem. The existing methods are not satisfactory. The suggestion of the Officer Commanding 11—13th F. F. Rifles to give each Battalion a permanent establishment of Non-Commissioned Officers and men seconded from Units in the Regiment would undoubtedly improve matters, but in present circumstances it is not feasible. Instructors must still be obtained from the Active Battalions of the Regiment.

(*e*) *Wastage.*—Regarding the wastage due to men not coming up for training it may be automatically solved by a smaller establishment, which will certainly be necessary if the above proposals in regard to the training of Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and recruits are accepted.

In any case I disagree entirely with the suggestion that Reservists should be taken into the Territorial Force. The Reservist has his rôle in the Military Machine and he should be held to it without modification. There has hardly been time yet to find out exactly to what extent the Territorial system will become popular. When better known it is quite possible that sufficient men will be willing to undertake the very small liability incurred by the men in the ranks. Failing that it may be necessary eventually to grant men a retaining fee.

From the above remarks it is I hope clear that the principle I recommend is :—

That it is better to produce a Territorial Force which is reasonably efficient for War and which has competent small unit Commanders even though the establishment of men is very small rather than a Force with a large establishment and inefficient small unit Commanders.

It is a well known fact which has been definitely proved that good officers and Non-Commissioned Officers can very quickly train the men, but even a large number of moderate or inefficient Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers will never train even the best material; it simply becomes a case of the blind leading the blind down the broad way which leadeth to destruction.

Copy to :—

Northern Command (A. T. F.), reference their No. 5029—26-A. T. F., dated 21st March 1924.

MEMORANDUM FROM THE COMMANDING, RAWALPINDI DISTRICT, TO THE NORTHERN COMMAND (A. T. F.), No. R. P.-2571—3-A.-1, DATED MURREE, THE 27TH MAY 1924.

Reference your memorandum No. 19751—2-A. T. F., dated 12th May 1924.

1. My views regarding the measure necessary to bring about a general improvement in the Indian Territorial Force were forwarded to the Advisory Committee on 12th May 1924, and a copy was sent to you under my memorandum No. R. P.-2278—3-A.-1, dated 12th May 1924.

2. In addition, I am now to give my views in regard to certain headings, *vide* Army Department letter No. A.-27033 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated 1st April 1924.

(1) *Pay and allowances.*—Judging from the experiences of the Force in the past two years in this District it is clear that efficiency for War will never be obtained under the present Territorial Force Regulations.

It is clear too that officers of the Force hitherto commissioned are not drawn to their work by patriotic motives.

The main attraction is the rank and "Izzat" it brings.

Consequently I have been forced to the conclusion given in the concluding paragraph of the letter referred to above which was sent to the Advisory Committee, that the Officers (Non-Commissioned Officers too) must be given far more training. This means increased pay and allowances as they will have to be paid for more months in the year.

I think that the existing rates of pay should remain, as they are enough for those who now join the Force.

The question of a retaining fee is one that will probably have to be faced in a year or two if it is the policy of the Government to maintain large establishments of Territorial troops. But in this connection the Reserve of the Regular Army must be considered and we must avoid bringing about a situation whereby the Territorial Force soldier will earn money from Government more easily than the Reserve soldier.

I attach a report by the Officer Commanding, 101st Punjab Regiment, which describes very well the views taken by the men who enlist in this District. The Territorial Battalion is merely a stepping stone to something better. If the " something better " is achieved the Territorial Unit must suffer.

A retaining fee would undoubtedly tend to keep men in their Territorial Unit but I would advise that this should be further considered in, say, another two years' time when we have more experience to guide us.

The first problem is to train the cadre of Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers.

Captain Sher Mohammad, 11—13th F. F. Rifles, recommends that Territorial Force Officers should be given the pay of British Officers. Were their qualifications similar there might be little force in this suggestion, but as matters stand at present the recommendation may be put out of court at once.

2. *Popularity of the force.*—I am most strongly of opinion that the basis of popularity if it is to be of real permanent value must rest on a foundation of efficiency.

It is a matter beyond controversy that the good fighting unit is invariably a popular unit, as is also the unit which in peace time always turns out well, carries out its duties in an exemplary manner, without fuss, which is contented, and which is proud of its efficiency.

Efficiency can only come from good officers who know their work, who are competent to train their Non-Commissioned Officers, and who know how to look after their men.

So we come back to the same point—make the officers efficient then we shall have a popular force.

The Officer Commanding, 11—13th F. F. Rifles, considers that " the names Subedar and Jemadar should be abolished because the officers join the Force for ' Izzat ' and like only to be called Lieutenant ".

I hold that they must prove themselves in every way fit to be Lieutenants before they are given this substantive rank. In other words the achievement of efficiency must come before the resultant reward.

The 11th Infantry Brigade suggests the rank of Platoon and Company Commanders. This would involve the revision of the Indian Army Act.

3. *Method of selecting candidates for commissions.*—This is satisfactory.

What we have to watch is that leaders are selected who are the natural leaders of the men in civil life.

Only in this way can wastage be filled up in peace and war in a force of the nature of a Territorial Army.

At the same time the policy should not be to confine service in the Territorial Force to one class only if there are others with public spirit and patriotism who are prepared to share the burden and to qualify themselves for commissions. At present the officers in the Territorial Battalions in this District are from the Zamindar class almost entirely because this is the class which has come forward most readily.

As a larger proportion of the population of India tends to become industrialised we should draw officers from the townspeople and from the professional classes to the extent that these are desirous in sharing in the duty of national defence.

4. *Improvement of the force generally.*—I have dealt with this in my letter to the Advisory Committee, and have nothing further to add.

5. *Officers selected for examination by the committee.*—I suggest the names of :—

Major W. M. Grylls, 11-1st Punjab Regiment, and

Lieutenant Malik Muzaffar Khan, 11-13th F. F. Rifles.

The first has studied the whole subject very deeply and has gained first hand knowledge in the past two years training.

The second can represent the views of the Territorial Force Officer.

MEMORANDUM FROM THE COMMANDING, LAHORE DISTRICT, TO THE NORTHERN COMMAND, No. 24549—5-T. F., DATED DALHOUSIE, THE 11TH JUNE 1924.

Reference your No. 19751—2-A. T. F., dated the 12th May 1924.

The following points are forwarded for consideration by the Committee which will shortly assemble to consider the re-organization of the Indian Territorial Force :—

(i) *Pay and allowances.*—(*a*) The existing rates of pay and allowances are sufficient. There should be no distinction in pay between the Regular and Territorial Armies.

(*b*) It is suggested that the members of the Indian Territorial Force, other than officers, should be granted a small retaining fee for the period during which they are not embodied, which amount should be paid to men in arrears when they come for annual training.

Such an allowance would act as an inducement, as many men leave the army because there is no one at their homes, and their private affairs do not admit of their prolonged absence. Many men can see no reason why, as they receive no retaining fee in the Territorial Force, they should abandon any employment they may have obtained during the non-training season, when called up for embodiment.

In this case it is considered that a sum of Rs. 2 per mensem for the portion of the year during which they are not embodied would be sufficient.

(*ii*) *Popularity of the force.*—The suggestion made above, would, if adopted, tend greatly to increase the popularity of the Force, as everyone joins the Force in the hope of some personal advantage or profit, and at any rate as far as the Non-Commissioned Officers and men are concerned, nothing therefore would increase the popularity of the force so much as the introduction of a small retaining fee or allowance.

(*iii*) *Method of selecting candidates for commissions.*—At present the case of all candidates for Commission who are approved by the Administrative Commandant of the Battalion, and are considered by him suitable are referred to the Civil authorities concerned for their approval. A number of cases have occurred of candidates, who are absolutely unknown to the Administrative Commandant applying for Commissions.

In such cases reference is made to the Civil authorities. If the candidate is approved by them, he is asked to enrol himself as a sepoy and if he does well in the sepoy, or Non-Commissioned ranks, he is then recommended for a commission. In certain cases where a man of well known family and position and has been recommended by the civil authorities he has, although serving in the ranks, and drawing the pay of his rank, been treated more or less, in the same manner as a candidate on probation for a direct commission in the Regular Army, when not on duty.

The candidates for commissions should come from the same District as that, from which the men they will command come, and should be known to them, as the men will naturally work better under a man from their own part of the country than under a stranger.

(*iv*) *Improvement of the force generally having regard to the rôle for which it has been constituted.*—It is proposed that the period of annual training should be 56 days for everyone and not 28 days as at present. The Territorial soldier unless he has served in the Regular Army, has at the end of six years for which he is enrolled done 7 months' training, or one month's less than is prescribed for

the recruit training of the regular soldier. Moreover this training is not continuous, as in the case of the regular soldier, but is carried out at long intervals. Consequently when he is embodied for annual training he has forgotten a good deal of what he learnt in the previous year, and in the short time available anything in the nature of progressive training is rendered extremely difficult.

If, for financial reasons, the above suggestion is impracticable, I would suggest that all Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers should be embodied for 56 days' training annually. This to be in addition to the extra training with a Regular Unit at present admissible for all officers.

(*v*) Names of suitable officers, Indian Territorial Force units, have already been submitted under these Headquarters No. 24549—2-T. F., dated the 3rd May 1924, in addition to which the Adjutant General in India has proposed Major S. W. Finnis, 11-15th Punjab Regiment, should go before the committee.

Further to above, I strongly agree with the proposal put forward in your No. 20490—1-A. T. F., dated 27th May 1924, and I am forwarding my views in detail.

LETTER FROM THE AGENT TO THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL IN RAJPUTANA AND CHIEF COMMISSIONER OF AJMER-MERWARA, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA IN THE ARMY DEPARTMENT, No. 4335, DATED MOUNT ABU, THE 10TH JULY 1924.

I have the honour to refer to the Army Department letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, and to forward, for the information of the Government of India, a copy of letter No. 7, dated the 3rd May 1924, from the Officer Commanding the 11-4th Bombay Grenadiers (Territorials), who is also President of the local Advisory Committee.

2. I concur generally in the opinions expressed by the Officer Commanding, and as regards paragraph 2 (V) of the Army Department letter under reply, I would suggest that the following persons might suitably be summoned to give evidence before the Committee :—

1. Captain D. W. Reid, D.S.O., M.C., Adjutant, 11-4th Bombay Grenadiers (Territorials).
2. Mr. A. Miller, Principal, Government College, Ajmer.
3. Mr. H. M. C. Harris, Head Master, Government High School, Ajmer, and
4. Kanwar Gunpati Singh of Kharwa.

3. With reference to paragraph 3 of the Army Department letter I am informed that the local Territorial Force Advisory Committee have no complaints or grievances to bring to notice. They have also expressed their complete agreement with the observations contained in the letter of the Officer Commanding the 11-4th Bombay Grenadiers (Territorial).

4. Generally speaking it may be said that the Territorial Battalion, which has been formed in Ajmer-Merwara, gives great promise of becoming an efficient and useful unit and of providing scope for the military aspirations of a section of the community. It must, however, be admitted that at present it appears to appeal only to a limited class. With few exceptions all the persons who have availed themselves of the opportunity for military training, are either ex-soldiers or members of families with military traditions in Merwara. Very few members of the more educated classes have shown any disposition to avail themselves of this opportunity. This is probably due, in some cases, to caste prejudice, but, I think, the chief reason is aversion to the somewhat strenuous training which those who join the Territorial Force are required to undergo in order to make themselves efficient. I inspected the Territorials recently while in Camp at Markera and was much struck with the efficiency of the battalion and the keenness of officers and men.

LETTER FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING-IN-CHIEF, WESTERN COMMAND, TO THE ADJUTANT GENERAL IN INDIA, ARMY HEADQUARTERS, SIMLA, No. 13191—6-A. T. F., DATED QUETTA, THE 2ND AUGUST 1924.

Reference your No. A.-27033—2 (A. T. F.), dated the 5th April 1924.

The attached suggestions and notes are forwarded in accordance with Army Department letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, a copy of which was received under your above quoted memorandum.

The notes in the left hand margin have been made by this Headquarters. (Approved and revised by General Officer Commanding-in-Chief personally).

LETTER FROM THE OFFICER COMMANDING, 11-4TH BOMBAY GRENADIERS (TERRITORIALS), CAMP MAKRERA, TO HEADQUARTERS, NASIRABAD BRIGADE AREA, MOUNT ABU, No. 7, DATED THE 3RD MAY 1924.

Reference your No. G.-50—4—2, dated 27th April 1924, forwarding copy of Sind-Rajputana letter No. A.—3—32—3, dated 25th April 1924.

I do not know whether this part of India is in a position by itself as regards the Indian Territorial Force.

The class who have so far been enrolled and who have shown the slightest interest in the Territorial Force have been the Mers and Merats from Ajmer-Merwara, all belonging to the agricultural class and whose families have been used to Military services.

Army Department letter No. A.—27033—2 (A. T. F.), dated 5th April 1924.	*1. Pay and Allowances.*
(*a*) This would appear to be unnecessary, and the present financial situation will not allow of it.	(*a*) That a monthly allowance of Re. 1 or more be given to members of the Territorial Force when not embodied for training.
(*b*) No increase of pay appears to be necessary. Something should be done about the commission, however. Organization as in the Napalese Army is being considered, and if thought feasible will be submitted for consideration.	(*b*) That, even in the event of no alteration in the commission granted to Territorial Force Officers an increase in their pay be made to befit the award of an honorary second Lieutenancy and further higher ranks.
(*c*) It is considered that this would be unnecessary expenditure at present.	(*c*) That a band allowance be authorised for Territorial Force Units similar to that laid down for Auxiliary Force (India) Units.
(*d*) A grant for such special instruction might be considered but it is recommended that the projected scheme for such training be given sufficient trial to test it thoroughly. (Adjutant General's letter No. A.-27948—2 (A. T. F.), dated the 19th July 1924). (Platoon Commander's Course.)	(*d*) That all expenses incurred, or liable to be incurred, during training be forwarded for sanction to the General Officer Commanding for payment, and that the present allowance authorized per company for Camp grant (Pay and Allowances, Part II, paragraph 240) be utilised for the special instruction of officers and non-commissioned officers, throughout the non-training period. Amount sanctioned up to a maximum of Rs. 1,500 per annum.

2. Popularity of Force.

(*a*) This appears to be the case but there seems to be no remedy except re-organization of the officer question.

(*a*) As regards Ajmer-Merwara, there is no doubt as to the popularity of the Force amongst the Mers and Merats. This is, as above stated, due to the fact that the men of the District have always been used to Military service. The officers at present with this unit have joined to a great extent merely from loyalty and a sense of duty as all of them are old Indian Officers, the majority now being honorary Second Lieutenants and Jemadars and wearing one star when their rank and pay in the Army had been that of a Subadar and distinguishing badge a further star. One was a Subedar Major and has joined merely from a sense of duty and to assist this Battalion.

Educated Young men in the District.

There appears to be no solution to this. An inexhaustible supply of inefficient officers is all that can be expected from this class.

They are a class to be avoided.

(*b*) The Istamrirdars: Several endeavours have been made to enlist the sympathies of this class, but they will not consider the question until they can receive a commission putting them on an equal footing with the latest Second Lieutenant from Sandhurst. Whether they would ever prove an asset remains to be seen. I consider it highly unlikely that they will sacrifice their ease and pleasure for the arduousness of even one month's training.

Sons of well educated gentlemen of the Urban Class.

The College boys serving are very keen, but their parents take exception to the boys serving *in the ranks.*

Could not a College Company be organized, on the lines of those in Bombay and Calcutta Universities.

It is essential that one officer in such a company should be a Master at the College and a European.

Recently I have had quite a number of boys of 18 from Government College and High School, expressing a desire to enrol. Many of them are of good and promising material. I find the greatest difficulty, however, in enrolling these boys. They themselves are very keen in most cases and only too willing but their parents are continually raising objections and excuses for not permitting their sons or relatives to join. I have several instances of boys having enrolled and then having to *with draw their names owing to pressure from home.*

3 and 4.

(*a*) This appears to be the crux of the matter.

(*a*) Given a satisfactory commission and the popularity of the Force will increase at once. The commission in force at present is regarded with the greatest distrust by any Indian with Military experience, while those lacking military experience consider it more with amusement than any other feeling.

(*b*) This would seem to be sound and is put forward for considera tion.

(*b*) I would suggest that there be platoon Commanders to be known either as under-officers or Jemadar and to hold rank as such for a maximum period of three years, when, if failing to qualify for the rank of Company Officer he be made a Subedar; the latter being the highest rank to which he can rise except under exceptional circumstances. On passing an examination for Company officer the under-officer should be promoted to Company Officer on a vacancy occurring.

(*c*) The pay is considered sufficient.

(*c*) The Company Ofiicer to hold the rank of Honorary 2nd Lieutenant or Honorary Lieutenant no stipulation as to Jemadar or Subedar being made, and an increase in the scale of pay, in accordance with the honour of the appointment; though not on the same scale as a British 2nd Lieutenant or Lieutenant.

I consider that only under some such condition will the right class of officer be maintained and am firmly convinced that the whole question hinges on this.

NOTE.—A reply or *Nil* report will be sent with regard to para. 3, later as an Advisory Committee is being held on the 6th.

LETTER FROM J. A. SHILLIDY, ESQ., DEPUTY SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BOMBAY, HOME DEPARTMENT, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, NO. 5655-E., DATED BOMBAY CASTLE, THE 18TH JULY 1924. (*Confidential.*)

I am directed by the Governor in Council to reply to your letter No. A.-27033—1—A. G., A. T. F., dated the 1st April 1924, and to forward copies of a Memorandum from the Officer Commanding, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers, I. T. F., of the proceedings of a meeting of the Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committee for this Presidency and of the proceedings of a meeting of the Auxiliary Force Committee, Bombay District.

2. With reference to the first four points raised by the Government of India in paragraph 2 of their letter I am to say that this Government supports the recommendations of the Territorial Force Advisory Committee with this exception that it is not prepared to commit itself to any scheme of remission of land revenue to persons, while they are actually serving in the Territorial Force, without further examination.

3. The chief problem in this Presidency has been the status of the Parsi battalions. It is not necessary to discuss how the present situation arose, but it may be stated that the Parsis argue they were led to believe that these two battalions were on the same footing as the Auxiliary Force and not the Territorial Force.

4. The present demands of the Parsi battalions are :—

(1) That they should draw the same pay as the Auxiliary Force.

(2) That they should be liable to local service as is the Auxiliary Force.

In justification of the first demand it was pointed out that the general standard of living amongst the Parsis was quite different from that of many other classes of Indians and more closely approximated to the European standard.

5. This Government has given the question very careful consideration and is of opinion that the demands of the Parsis cannot be lightly dismissed. One of the conditions laid down by the Government of India in the discussion of this question is that the purpose of the creation of the Territorial Force should be borne in mind, namely, that it is to be a second line of defence to the Indian Army. If the Parsi battalions are to be a second line of defence, it is difficult to see how they can be given rates of pay equivalent to those of a British soldier, and how their liability to service can be limited to the local areas in which they live. On the other hand, the case of the Parsis is different from that of other communities. There are very substantial local considerations which make them press for the obligation of local service only; and it is undoubtedly true that the standard of living amongst the Parsis is very different to that of other communities. Whether it would be politic or possible to make a dstinction between the Parsis and other communities this Government is not prepared to say; but for such a step there would be this justification, that formerly Parsis alone amongst Indian communities were eligible for the old volunteer corps. This Government, however, recognises the very great difficulty of the question, and, should it be found impossible to make any such distinction, it would suggest for the consideration of the Government of India that the Parsi battalions should be put on the same footing "*mutatis mutandis*" as the University battalions.

6. One of the points in the resolution of the Legislative Assembly accepted by the Government of India was the question of the removal of all distinctions between the Auxiliary and the Territorial Forces. That question has not been specifically referred to in the letter of the Government of India, but in this connection I am to invite your attenton to the resolution of the Auxiliary Force Committee of the Bombay District. In the opinion of this Government the removal of these distinctions is not possible while the purposes of the two forces remain different. The Auxiliary Force is not and cannot be a second line of defence to European regiments. At the most the Auxiliary Force supplies a possible reserve of officers, which was of use in the late war, and also furnishes a security force for the maintenance of order, in the largest towns only, in the absence of the regular European battalions. The numbers of the Auxiliary Force are, and must be, far too small to be effective as a second line of defence.

7. On the other hand if the Territorial Force is not to be a second line of defence, it is hard to see why it exists; while if it is to be a second line of defence, then its conditions of service and rates of pay must approximate to those of Indian Battalions for whom it serves that purpose.

8. The list of selected persons for witnesses asked for in the letter of the Government of India will be forwarded very shortly.

LETTER FROM THE OFFICER COMMANDING, 11-2ND BOMBAY PIONEERS, I. T. F., BOMBAY, TO THE DEPUTY SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BOMBAY, HOME DEPARTMENT, No. 18—3-S., DATED BOMBAY, THE 25TH JUNE 1924. (*Confidential*).

The enclosed proceedings of the meeting of the Advisory Committee of the Indian Territorial Force, Bombay Presidency held at the Secretariat, Bombay, on 13th June 1924 are forwarded duly signed. Please acknowledge receipt.

Copy to Administrative Commandant and Adjutant, 11-5th Mahratta L. I., Belgaum, in continuation of his M. I. L.-52/5, dated 16th June 1924, and my No. 18-2-S., dated 18th June 1924.

Proceedings of a meeting of the Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committee for Bombay Presidency, held at the Secretariat, June, 13th, 1924.

1. *Members present.*—The members present were—

Sir Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy, Bart. (*Chairman*).

Major H. W. Goldfrap, D.S.O., M.C.

2. The Chairman read a telegram from Captain S. N. Goghle expressing his regret at his inability to attend owing to indisposition. A letter from him to the Deputy Secretary, Home Department, embodying his remarks and suggestions was before the Committee.

3. Mr. Shillidy, I.C.S., Deputy Secretary, Home Department, Bombay Government, was present to offer information regarding measures taken by the Civil Authorities.

4. At the invitation of the Chairman, Major W. A. G. Hinds, M.C., Adjutant and Admin. Comdt., 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers, and two officers of that unit were present at the proceedings.

5. The Committee proceeded to consider the points on which suggestions were asked for from them in Government of India, Army Department, letter No. A.-27033—1-A. G., A. T. F., dated 1st April 1924, addressed to Chief Secretary, Local Governments.

6. *Pay and allowances.*—After a discussion of the present pay and allowances it was resolved that—

1st Resolution.—When a man has completed, to the satisfaction of his Commanding Officer, his first period of annual training, he should become entitled to territorial deferred pay at the rate of rupee one per mensem, payable annually on the completion, to the satisfaction of his commanding officer, of each subsequent training. Should he for any reason whatsoever miss an annual training, he will cease to be entitled to such deferred pay from the date he completed his previous training to the date on which he completes to the satisfaction of his Commanding Officer, his next annual training.

2nd Resolution.—The present road allowance to approved applicants for enrolment in and enrolled men of the Indian Territorial Force when called up for embodiment for training or service should be increased to the rate laid down in Army Regulations, India, Volume X, for Civilians on a salary under rupees fifty per mensem, namely, annas two per mile.

The Committee also considered a suggestion put forward, it is understood by the Honourable Mr. Jadhav, Minister for Education, Bombay Government, that a remission of land revenue might be made to enrolled men annually during their

service in the Indian Territorial Force, and consider that, if this is practicable from the point of view of the Civil Authorities, it might be adopted in place of the Territorial Deferred pay advocated in Resolution 1 to the extent of a remission of about a similar amount under the same terms. The Committee consider, however, that the suggestion requires a detailed examination by the Government of India as to its practicability and probable effect on the Indian Territorial Force in other provinces.

7. *Popularity of the Force.*—The Committee consider that the popularity of the Indian Territorial Force would be much increased by the measures recommended in Resolutions 1 and 2 but that a wider dissemination of information regarding the liabilities, terms of service, pay and allowances, of the Force is essential and it was therefore resolved that—

Resolution 3.—An outline of Indian Territorial Force Act and Rules and all orders referring to pay and allowances should be prepared in English by Army Headquarters, in as simple language as possible, and issued to Local Governments for dissemination by them in the appropriate vernaculars.

8. *Method of selecting candidates for commissions.*—After considerable discussion as to the working of the present rules for the admission of applicants for a commission in the Indian Territorial Force. and consideration of some sort of selection board and/or examination, it was agreed that the present rules and procedure are sufficient, for the time being, to ensure a proper selection provided that they are consciously applied but resolved that :—

Resolution No. 4.—Before an officer is confirmed in his first appointment to a unit his Commanding Officer and the two senior Territorial Officers of the unit should sign and forward to the General Officer Commanding the District a certificate that he is in their opinion, in every way suitable for a commission in the Indian Territorial Force.

9. *Improvement of the Force generally.*—The Committee resolved that, in order to improve the standard of training in a force meant to be a second line reserve for the Indian Army :—

Resolution 5.—A permanent staff of instructors in the proportion of one regular Indian Officer per two platoons and one regular non-commissioned officer per platoon of the enrolled strength of each Territorial Force unit should be attached to training battalions under conditions similar to those of training at present for British officers appointed company commanders in Indian Territorial Force units.

10. The Committee selected the following persons whom they consider should be summoned for examination by the Committee to be appointed by the Government of India.

Provincial Unit	Major H. W. Goldfrap, D.S.O., M.C., Adjutant and Admn. Comdt., 11-5th Belgaum.
	Hony. Lt. and Subedar Aba Saheb Nimbalkhar Khardekar, 11-5th M. L. I., of Ashta, Satara District
Parsi Units	Major King and Major Hinds, M.C., Adjutants of Parsi Pioneer Units, Bombay.
	Other gentlemen whose names will be submitted direct to Home Department by the Chairman after consultation with the Parsi Advisory Committee.

11. *Complaints and Grievances.*—The Committee consider that any complaints and grievances of the Provincial Unit would be met if effect were given to the resolutions already passed, but that the case of Parsi Pioneer Units in Bombay requires separate consideration.

The Chairman read letters which he had received from two members of the Parsi Advisory Committee, and Major Hinds and the two Parsi officers present were then questioned as to the nature of the alleged grievances of the Parsi Units.

The Committee agreed that so far as could be ascertained the Parsis feel that their standard of life is so far different to that of the majority of Indians that some special concessions in the way of addition to the pay of their officers and men, and modifications in their terms of service are essential if they are to remain in the Indian Territorial Force.

The Committee understand that separate representations on the present state of affairs are being made by the Parsi Advisory Sub-Committee a copy of which will be forwarded to the local Government at a very early date, and the Committee were agreed that these representations are likely to merit the careful consideration of Government.

12. The proceedings then terminated.

(Sd.) JAMSETJEE JEEJEEBHOY,

Chairman.

(Sd.) H. W. GOLDFRAP, *Major,*

Member and pro tem. *Secretary.*

BOMBAY;
13th June 1924.

Proceedings of a meeting of Auxiliary Force Committee, Bombay District, assembled at Bombay on 17th June 1924, for the purpose of considering the terms of reference of the Committee of the Legislature assembled to sit at Simla on the subject of the reorganization of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces.

PRESIDENT

D. W. WILSON, C.I.E.

MEMBERS.

R. A. SPENCE.

F. W. PETCH.

J. S. KIRBY.

Deputy Secretary to the Government of Bombay, (MR. SHILLIDY).

Major H. B. LED TREE (Officiating Staff Captain A. T. F., Bombay District and Secretary to Auxiliary Force Advisory Committee).

The Committee having assembled pursuant to order passed to consider what steps should be taken to remove racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular forces including the Auxiliary Force.

The following Officers Commanding Auxiliary Force Units were present :—

F. J. Page, Lt.-Colonel, 1st Bn., B. B. & C. I. Rly. Regt.

H. H. Scott, Major, 1st Bn., G. I. P. Rly. Regt.

H. F. Lodge, Major, V Bombay Brigade, R. F. A.

H. R. Watson, Lieut., Bombay Light Horse.

N. Maughan, Capt., No. 3 Field Coy., R. E.

W. M. Martin, Capt., Bombay Battalion.

Major-General H. A. V. Cummins, C.B., C.M.G., was present during the proceedings.

RESOLUTION.—After consultation with the Commanding Officers of the Auxiliary Force Units in Bombay, the Advisory Committee are of opinion that the removal of racial distinctions as regards the Auxiliary Force is not only undesirable but would also lead to extinction of that Force as an efficient force.

(Signed) D. W. WILSON, MAJOR, *President.*
" R. A. SPENCE
" F. W. PETCH } *Members.*
" J. S. KIRBY
" H. B. LED TREE, MAJOR,

Officiating Staff Captain, A. T. F. Bombay District, Secretary to the Auxiliary Force Advisory Committee.

BOMBAY;
17th June 1924.

LETTER FROM E. R. ABBOTT, ESQ., C.I.E., I.C.S., CHIEF COMMISSIONER, DELHI, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, No. 2319-MILITARY, DATED THE 30TH APRIL 1924.

In reply to the Government of India, Army Department, letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, I have the honour to enclose copies of the correspondence noted below* from the Officers Commanding the two Indian Territorial Force Units in the Delhi Independent Brigade Area.

COPY OF A MEMORANDUM FROM THE ADJUTANT, 11-14TH PUNJAB REGIMENT, TO THE HEADQUARTERS, DELHI INDEPENDENT BRIGADE AREA, NEW CANTONMENTS, DELHI, No. H.-1-11, DATED 21ST APRIL 1924.

Reference your letter No. 486-42-G., dated the 11th April 1924, regarding suggestions for the reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force.

The particulars asked for in your above quoted letter are as follows :—

1. Pay and allowances admissible at present are quite alright except that the Unit should be given an allowance towards the upkeep and repairs of clothing, etc., other than the Public Clothing already sanctioned under the provisions of Army Instruction (India) No. 115 of 1923, so as to ensure the life of each article as is laid down in the regulations.

At present articles in need of repair are being worn, the result being in a short time they will have to be condemned owing to the Unit having no funds at their disposal to have them repaired locally and so prolong the life of the same.

No provision has been made for Indian Territorial Officers Commanding Companies in respect to command, pay, etc.

2. Regarding the popularity of the Force my experience is, it all depends upon the Deputy Commissioners of the respective District concerned.

In Gurgaon District the Deputy Commissioner (F. L. Brayne, Esquire, M.C., I.C.S.) is very keen and takes a great interest in Territorials, the result being that all his subordinates follow suit and there is no difficulty in obtaining recruits and the Unit is very popular; as matter of fact this District alone could produce a Battalion. They have subscribed nearly four thousand rupees towards trophies, prize, etc., to be competed for annually which is a great stimulant in the Battalion and the people of the District have shown a great interest in the Unit.

My other District Rohtak has taken little or no interest in the Territorial Force and the result being that recruits from this area, which is an excellent recruiting ground for the regular Army, is practically at a standstill except the Tehsil of Sonepat which has given a good number of recruits; this was due to the hard work of the late sub-divisional officer, M. Mohammed Faridullah, P.C.S. Another point has been brought up is, if the members of the Territorial Force received a remuneration of about Rs. 3 per mensem similar to Reserve during the non-training period, this would increase the popularity of the Territorial Force. The accumulated amount to be paid at the end of the training period.

3. The present methods of selecting candidates for Commission in this Unit has been very satisfactory. The majority of Commissioned Officers of this Unit belonged to Regular Army and up to the present have proved themselves very capable and hard-working.

4. I think it would be of great assistance to all Units, if possible, to allot vacancies at the different Schools of instructions for the Indian Officers and N. C. O.'s of the Territorial Force, then it would not be necessary for Units to depend on the Regular Army for Instructors during the period of embodiment, as the experience of this unit has been, that owing to two Territorial Battalions being in the same Brigade it is practically impossible to get anything like the authorised Instructional Staff, the result being that sometimes the instruction given by our own N. C. O.'s is a bit ancient and out of date.

---

*1. From the Adjutant, 11-14th Punjab Regiment, memo. No. H.-1-11, dated the 21st April 1924.

2. From the Officer Commanding, 12-7th Rajput Regiment, memo. No. 840-0-A., dated the 16th April 1924.

If it is impossible to allot these vacancies, I suggest that at least 16 Non-Commissioned Officers of the Unit could be called up 10 days before training commence and put through a Tabloid course of the work proposed.

No provision has been made for Company Commanders to join their Territorial Units at least 7 days before and after training, which I think is very necessary.

I suggest that the periodical training be increased to 56 days as the present 28 days are very short for the programme of work which has to be carried out during the Annual Training.

5. The Deputy Commissioner, Gurgaon District (F. L. Brayne, Esquire, M.C., I.C.S.) and the Adjutant of the Unit where necessary.

COPY OF A MEMORANDUM FROM THE OFFICER COMMANDING, 12-7TH RAJPUT REGIMENT, TO THE HEADQUARTERS, DELHI INDEPENDENT BRIGADE, No. 840-4-A., DATED 16TH APRIL 1924.

Reference your No. 486-42-G., dated 11th April 1924.

The following recommendations are forwarded.

1. Pay and allowances as at present for the embodied periods but during the non-embodied periods a monthly rate of one rupee below that paid to class 2 reservists. This to be payable in arrears annually and automatically forfeited if a man is absent without sufficient reason.

Travelling allowance and subsistence for recruits on the same basis as in the Regular Army so that provision may be made for the reimbursement of voluntary recruiters and the settlement of accounts rendered easier.

The pay of Territorial Officers Commanding Companies to be fixed as soon as possible. At present no pay is available. Suggested rate, pay of rank *plus* 100 staff.

2. The above suggestions would if carried out greatly increase the popularity of the Force, whilst both popularity and efficiency would be improved if the training can be extended from 28 to 56 days annually.

3. Satisfactory as at present.

4. Provision of facilities for officers and men of the Force to attend courses of instruction.

Making it an offence for a Territorial to enrol in the Army or Police without notifying the enrolling officer that he is a serving Territorial and also for a man not notifying any permanent change of address to his Commanding Officer. This step should decrease the considerable annual wastage caused by the number of calling up notices returned annually as "addressee untraceable".

The decentralisation of the present Advisory Committees from Provinces to Divisions or even Districts, so that such Committees may be in more real touch with the matters with which they are called upon to deal.

5. Mr. Nevill, I.C.S., late Director of the Force who is at present Collector at Agra.

Such Territorial Force Adjutants as it is thought advisable to examine.

FROM MR. F. LEWISOHN, C.B.E., CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BURMA (HOME AND POLITICAL DEPARTMENT), TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, SIMLA, No. 188-E.—24, DATED MAYMYO, THE 25TH JUNE 1924.

With reference to Major Rawson Lumby's letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, I am directed to submit copies of letters Nos. A.-1324—9 (A. T. F.) and A.-1324—11 (A. T. F.), dated the 12th May 1924, from the General Officer Commanding, Burma District, and of the enclosures thereto and to offer the following remarks.

2. So far as the rank and file are concerned, Maung San Shwe Bu recommends that the pay be raised to Rs. 20 per mensem, while Honorary Lieutenant Tin Tut, I.C.S., recommends that the men be paid for the days occupied travelling to and from the Camp. These recommendations have not been endorsed by the Advisory Committee which possibly did not have them before them when they met on the 5th of May. The Local Government is not prepared to support the suggestion that the pay should be raised to Rs. 20 per mensem, because it is obvious that such a measure would arouse grave discontent amongst Sepoys of the Regular Indian Army serving in Burma. The small concession regarding pay during the time occupied travelling to and from Camp might perhaps be considered.

3. With regard to officers of the Indian Territorial Force, Maung Tin Tut advocates that officers of the Indian Territorial Force should be given the same status as officers of the Army of India Reserve of Officers. The question is one of great difficulty, involving as it does invidious comparisons between the British and the Indian Army. The Governor in Council does not consider it feasible to put Burman officers of a Burma Territorial Battalion on the same footing as British officers and thereby give them a higher status than Burman officers of a Burma Regular Battalion. On the other hand, His Excellency in Council considers that special recognition might be given to officers of the Territorial Force who hold Honorary King's Commissions and that this might suitably be done as suggested by Honorary Lieutenant L. V. Po by giving such officers pay on the same scale as officers holding corresponding position in the Regular Army during the period of training.

4. The Governor in Council is unable to support Maung Tin Tut's proposal that Government officers who are Territorial officers should be permitted during their period of training to draw their full civil pay and allowances *plus* half Military pay. No doubt service as a Territorial officer under present condition involves some sacrifice, but that is in accordance with the proper spirit of a territorial army. If men will not accept a commission in a Territorial Force, unless they get full compensation and a little over, it were better that they should stand aside.

5. With reference to the recommendations made by the Advisory Committee and the comments made thereon by the General Officer Commanding, I am to say that His Excellency in Council concurs with General Tytler that the best available men should be selected for Commissions, that preference should not be given to University Graduates and that there is no sufficient reason for endeavouring to find Burmese substitutes for such titles as Subadar, Jemadar, Havildar, etc. On the other hand, His Excellency in Council strongly supports the proposal of the Advisory Committee that the Training Camps for the University Training Corps which can only be held between the 15th March and the 15th June should be held in the hills. General Tytler states that the proposal is not feasible for financial reasons. The Governor in Council can only conclude that if it is impossible to find the few extra thousand rupees which would be necessary to make these Training Camps attractive to the University Training Corps, this experiment, to which the Government of India attach much importance, is being conducted under financial conditions which do not lend themselves to the prospect of success.

7. I am to add that this Government has not proposed any persons for examination by the Committee in view of the reluctance of Burman officers to make the journey to Simla.

LETTER FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING, BURMA DISTRICT, TO THE CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BURMA, No. A.-1324—9 (A. T. F.), DATED THE 12TH MAY 1924.

In continuation of this office No. A.-1324—2 (A. T. F.), dated the 21st April 1924, I have the honour to forward you a copy of the minutes of a meeting of the Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committee held at Rangoon on the 5th May 1924, giving their opinion on the points raised in Army Department letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, from the Government of India in the Army Department, to the Chief Secretary to the Government of Burma.

2. My remarks on the recommendations are as below :—

Provincial Bn. [11-20th Burma Rifles (I. T. F.)].

I am in agreement with the recommendations and remarks made under headings—

I. *Pay and Allowances.*

II. *Popularity of the Force.*

IV. *Improvement of the Force generally.*

Minute III. *Methods of selecting candidates for Commissions.*—I am of opinion that the best available men should be selected, and that preference should not be given to candidates on account of their being graduates of the University.

Minute VI. *Complaints.*—The question of continuance of a meat ration affects the whole Indian Army. In Burma meat is being issued at present, and will be continued subject to the approval of the Government of India.

Minute VII. *Date and place of annual training.*—The Local Government has been addressed on this subject. (Reference the Chief Secretary's to the Government of Burma, Military Department letter No. 63-E.-22—Part III, dated the 28th April 1924.)

* * * * * *

University Training Corps.

I am in favour of the recommendations and remarks made under headings—

IV. *Improvement of the Force.* (*a* and *b*.)

Minute I. *Pay.*—Members of all University Training Corps (I. T. F.) are not entitled to any pay. Auxiliary Force (India) officers, being members of the University Staff solely for duty with the University Training Corps, should likewise not draw pay.

Minute II. *Popularity.*—I am not in favour of Burmese terminology. Indian Terminology is in use in all Battalions of the 20th Burma Rifles.

Minute III. *Commissions.*—Although A and B certificates are desirable, I do not consider that the holding of such certificates should out-balance other qualifications.

Minute V. *Training Camp.*—I do not consider this proposal feasible for financial reasons.

Minute VI. *General.*—Both suggestions are receiving attention.

3. I enclose copies of replies received from 2 Indian Territorial Force officers on the points raised in Army Department letter already referred to. The reply from the 3rd officer consulted (Honorary Lieutenant Tin Tut, I.C.S.) will be forwarded when received.

TERRITORIAL ADVISORY COMMITTEE.

Minutes of a meeting held at Rangoon on 5th May 1924 for the purpose of advising on the points raised in A. H. Q. No. A.-27033—2 (A. T. F.), dated the 5th April 1924, and the question regarding the period in which the prescribed training is to be carried out in 1924-25.

PRESENT :

Maung BA TOO, *President.*

Major C. F. M. WORSELY, D. A. D. A. and T. F., Member, Burma District.

Provincial Bn. (11-20th Burma Rifles) (I. T. F.).

1. *Pay and Allowances.*—(*a*) *Officers* : It is recommended that if a Territorial officer is called upon to do any duty usually performed by a British officer of the Regular Army attached to a Territorial unit or, of a Territorial officer of higher grade, he should be given extra-duty pay.

(*b*) *Other Ranks* : Is considered adequate.

2. *Popularity of the Force.*—It is considered that facilities might be given for I. T. F. Provincial Bn. and U. T. C. to compete in Army Rifle and Sports meetings.

3. *Methods of selecting candidates for Commissions.*—It is considered that in future preference should be given to—

(*a*) University Graduates who have served in the U. T. C.

(*b*) Selected men promoted from the non-commissioned ranks.

(*c*) *Ex*-regular officers.

(*d*) Educated private gentlemen.

Officers under the headings (*b*), (*c*) and (*d*) to pass a literary test before being confirmed in their appointment.

4. *Improvement of the Force generally.*—Longer training if financially possible.

5. *Selected persons recommended to give evidence before the Committee.*—Names will be given when it is known if proposed gentlemen are willing to attend in Simla.

6. *Complaints.*—The only general complaint during the last training was the discontinuance of the meat ration. It is understood that this question is under consideration.

7. *Date and place of annual training.*—It is considered that training, with the exception of Akyab Detachment, should take place at one central station and at one time. It is suggested that civil officers of the Districts concerned should be consulted on these points, the Advisory Committee not being conversant with conditions in all districts in Burma.

University Training Corps.

1. *Pay.—Officers.* British officers of A. F. I. attached to U. T. C. for duty draw pay and allowances during embodied service in Camp, when attending courses and for parades.

I. T. F. officers of U. T. C. performing the same duties draw no pay. This is inequitable and is a source of complaint.

2. *Popularity.*—The educated Burman, who is in touch with modern political movements, objects to the I. A. terminology, *i.e.*, Subedar, Jemadar, Havildar, etc.

If Burmese terminology is desirable in order to make the Force more popular, the Committee are of the opinion that the Burmese equivalent terms should be adopted in preference to British terms.

3. *Commissions.*—This has been referred to in notes under heading Provincial Battalion. Something equivalent to the A and B certificates, in vogue in British U. T. C., in the senior and junior divisions might be introduced, the holding of such either certificate would lead to direct commission in the T. F., and, under certain conditions of further training and education, to admission to the I. A. This would be one small link between the I. T. F., and the I. A.

4. *Improvement of the Force.*—(*a*) More facilities should be given to encourage the U. T. C. to attend courses. There should be a strong inducement for officers who have no military experience on joining the U. T. C. to undergo training with a Regular Battalion with a view to passing their retention examination. These courses to be undergone during the vacation.

(*b*) During the period of development it would be useful to have some central authority to distribute information about development of U. T. C. in other provinces.

This central organisation might arrange inter U. T. C. competitions and it is suggested that funds may be made available for this purpose.

5. *Training Camp.*—Training Camps can be held only during long vacation, *i.e.*, 15th March to 15th June. Owing to climatic conditions camps must be held in the hills for which an additional Rs. 3,000 approximately would be required for transport expenses.

Camps near Rangoon or any large town are unsatisfactory for many reasons.

6. *General.*—(*a*) There are no funds available for Tactical schemes for officers nor for field days for the Battalion. It is suggested on the advice of the O.C. U. T. C. that a company of Sappers and Miners should be formed from students of the University who are taking courses in Engineering and Forestry, this company to form part of the Battalion.

COPY OF A LETTER FROM HONY. 2ND-LIEUT. SAN SHWE BU, 11-20TH BURMA RIFLES (I. T. F.), TO THE D. A. D. A. AND T. F., BURMA DISTRICT.

Reference your No. A.-1324—4 (A. T. F.), dated the 21st April 1924. Personally I am of opinion that the system under which the present Territorial Force is run is altogether wrong. The object of the military authorities in organising this Force is quite sound; but they have handled it in a spirit of playfulness. They want something really efficient and useful as a sort of stand by the regular army and yet they are not prepared to spend money over things for which expenditure ought to be incurred. In short they want something for nothing. The amount of money so grudgingly spent at present is so barren of proportionate returns that it seems justified to consider it as so much waste. For a scheme of this sort to have any measure of success it must have more generous financial backing than is meted out at present.

2. *Pay and Allowances.*—The question of pay and allowances is a most difficult one, for the two people (Indians and Burmans) who compose this Force are very much different in ways and habits, standard of living and general outlook of life. Any scheme of uniformity in this direction must therefore be regarded as unsatisfactory. On the other hand, the Burmese standard of living is really high and the present rates (Rs. 17-8-0) are not adequate for them. In this predicament I would rather err on the *plus* than on the *minus* side and I would accordingly increase the rate to Rs. 20. This will not only satisfy the Burmas but will please the Indian more.

3. *Popularity.*—At present the Force is by no means popular. There are several reasons for this. The men who join up do not do so from patriotic motives as in England. The educated classes in this country in their dream of future political independence alone recognise the necessity for the existence of such a Force. The poor people are actuated by purely mercenary motives. In England the Territorials consist of city business men who are released for 15 days in the year for training purposes. When their work in the field is over they return to their normal course of life. But here the men who join up are mostly jobless. When they do get jobs their employers are unwilling to spare them for their period of training. So that since they must live like everybody else it is more to their interest to find employment throughout the year than to sit idle for the greater part of it. I do not think they can be blamed for this nor is it just to expect sacrifices of them for a Force which cannot utilize them for more than 28 days in the year. As almost all the men have no employment I would recommend that the period of training be extended to at least 3 months in the year. I personally know that they themselves would like to extend it for the entire twelve months. As things are at present the disciplinary value of the training is almost nugatory owing to the shortness of the period and the length of the idleness which offers infinite scope for mischief. A prolonged period

of training would mean greater efficiency and a more lasting value. At the same time the Force would become increasingly popular.

4. *Commissions.*—To tell the honest truth, men of my class and position in society have no use for Indian commissions. Apart from the technical side of the question we feel that we ought not to be placed in the same rank as those who are hardly educated and whose training and mode of life fall far short of a desired standard. This factor has contributed in no small measure to the waning enthusiasm displayed by the Burmese officers of the province. Now again it must be conceded that we are not too well paid in civil life. By joining the Force we have made a real sacrifice of a portion of our leisure, on which there are many demands both public and private and that in return for this, if we have to incur additional expenditure, as we do at present, we feel we have just cause for complaint. To obviate this unjust proposition upon our slender purse we ought to be given proportionate allowance of at least a hundred rupees a month during the period of training. We should not like to be insistent about military pay but we strongly object against increased expenditure incurred on purely altruistic grounds.

5. *Commissions, Selection.*—Regarding the selection of candidates for commissions I would place education in the forefront of qualifications required for the purpose. The standard fixed should not be less than the Intermediate Arts or Sciences of a University. Later on, when, with the expansion of the Territorial army, the number of applicants for commission appreciably increases, an adequate literary test as well as certain amount of training should be laid down for eligibility. Besides the educated, a certain number of commissions should be ear-marked every year for men of sterling worth and achievement within the ranks. But this should be the most difficult stepping stone, far more so than what is now obtaining in the Indian Army, where men are promoted for qualities shared by a good many of the rest. For in the case of promotion, the greater the difficulty the greater is the effort and consequently the greater is the honour of achievement.

6. *Improvement of the Force.*—I have no doubt that training together as a battalion will be eminently beneficial to the lads. But this is not all we need think about. We have to consider other factors as well. To begin with there is the geographical difficulty. Arakan is too remote from Burma for her sons to leave it for any centre in the latter country merely for the sake of 28 days' training. Another is the inadequacy of subsisting allowance which amounts to 4 annas per diem. By the time the lads finish their training they will have no more pay to draw. No doubt their passage back will be paid but they will have no more money to fall back upon during the time they wait at Rangoon to catch the boat to Arakan. I see a great deal of trouble in this. If they could only live on dhall and rice their allowance might suffice for other things as well. But you know as well as I do they cannot do that and consequently they will be up to all sorts of mischief. In this scheme of united training Arakanese should be left out at least until such time as the conditions of service change. We ought to have a separate Territorial Force for Arakan and as we are expecting political separation from India in the no distant future, it seems to me that Arakan, as it lies between the two countries, ought to develop a force on its own. In order to make the Territorial scheme a complete success I am strongly of opinion that real recruiting ought to be done during the off period. I urge this specially for Arakan because communications are very bad here and it takes quite a long time for ideas to circulate throughout the country and a still longer time for their proper understanding and appreciation. We have just passed through a very bad economic year, for which a lot of recruits ought to be forthcoming. Even then I certainly think that recruiting ought to be done.

7. *Conference.*—Lastly, I shall speak about myself. You know that I have a family to look after. You also know the importance of my work to Arakan. My principal object in joining the Force was to encourage others to do the same. I cannot possibly afford both in time and money to set up two separate establishments even though for a short time. *For the same reason I cannot go across to India* to give evidence before the committee which is shortly to be appointed to consider the question of reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force. You will admit that my position is one of peculiar difficulty and of late I have been seriously urged both by friends and relations to resign the commission as soon as possible, a temptation which has so far been overcome by my sense of duty to the country.

LETTER FROM HONY. LIEUT. L. V. PO, TO THE D. A. D. A. AND T. F., BURMA DISTRICT.

Reference your No. A.-1324—4 (A. T. F.), dated the 21st April 1924.

In reply to second para. I have the honour to say that :—

Should I be so fortunate as to be recommended for examination by the proposed committee, I would be willing to proceed to India provided that I am paid for the journey and the time spent there. *Re* letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.).

Organisation, A. D. Regr. No. 1795-D., dated Simla, 1st April 1924.

2. *Appointment of a committee to consider the question of the reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force.*—As to questions (1) and (2) *re* Pay and Allowances, and popularity of the Force, I would suggest that officers of the Territorial Force holding Honorary King's Commission be paid on the same scales as officers holding corresponding positions in the regular army during the period under training. This, in my opinion, would be strongly conducive to the popularity of the Force as in view of the better prospects, young men and officers of the right stamp in the Force would aspire to the ranks. If it is considered that as the Force is second in line to the regular army and that though the Honorary King's Commission is given, Honorary Pay could not be given, I would suggest that the Honorary rank in the Territorial Force be abolished and the old time Viceroy's commission be retained. Of course this would affect the feelings of the Territorial officers to a certain extent and may cause some resignations. The present position of Hony. Lieut. is, I must say, a very awkward one. He is entitled to a salute from a Subadar-Major and travels 1st class, but when it comes to the pay side of the affair he gets less than a Subadar-Major. I have often wondered what the Hony. Lieuts. of the Territorial Force would become in case of war and mobilization.

3. My answer to the question (3) is that the selection of candidates for commissions should be based primarily on merit and service; but qualifications being equal, preference should be given to young men of respectable families.

LETTER FROM THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING, BURMA DISTRICT, TO THE CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF BURMA, HOME AND POLITICAL DEPARTMENT, No. A.-1324—11 (A. T. F.), DATED THE 12-13TH MAY 1924.

In continuation of this office No. A.-1324—9 (A. T. F.), dated 12th May 1924.

I have the honour to forward herewith a copy of a letter from Honorary Lieutenant Tin Tut, I.C.S., 11-20th Burma Rifles, for information.

COPY OF A LETTER FROM MAUNG TIN TUT, I.C.S., TO THE D. A. D. A. AND T. F., BURMA DISTRICT.

Reference your Memo. No. A.-1324—4 (A. T. F.), dated 21st April 1924.

I am willing to proceed to India if called upon to do so.

SUGGESTIONS FOR THE IMPROVEMENT OF THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

1. *Pay and Allowances.*—At present Honorary Lieutenants and Honorary 2nd-Lieutenants of the Territorial Force are paid as Subadars and Jemadars, *i.e.*, their total emoluments are respectively Rs. 145 and Rs. 90 per month during training. The rates are inadequate with reference to the class from which Territorial officers are drawn and an officer who attends the annual training has to spend from Rs. 300 to Rs. 500 out of his own pocket private means from accepting commissions. Government officers are permitted to draw their civil pay in lieu of military pay, but this is an inadequate relief owing to the loss of allowance such as deputation allowance and sub-divisional house allowance, and owing to the necessity of married officers having to keep up two establishments during the training season. I would suggest that Territorial officers be paid during training at the same rates as Indian Army officers holding the King's Commission and that Government officers be permitted to draw their full civil pay and allowances *plus* half military pay. It may be mentioned that officers in the Indian Auxiliary Force draw pay of Indian Army officers during training and that officers of the Army of India Reserve of Officers are paid Rs. 750 for the month's training.

Other ranks of the Territorial Force are in a worse plight as they are paid according to their equivalent ranks in the Indian Army. A havildar, who in civil life is a commercial clerk drawing about Rs. 100 a month, is as a Territorial paid Rs. 25 (pay and batta), while a rifleman, who in civil life is a skilled artificer earning about Rs. 40 a month gets Rs. 17-8 (pay and batta) for the month's training, part of this meagre sum is cut for extra messing and replacement of lost kit. It is nothing unusual for a rifleman at the end of four weeks' training to receive about five rupees as his net emoluments, in sharp contrast to the Anglo-Indian or Native Christian of the Auxiliary Force who would get something like a hundred rupees for a similar period of training.

Rations supplied to all ranks of the Territorial Force consists of rice (or atta), dhal, ghi, sugar, onions and salt, and the unfortunate men are doomed to a monotonous diet of rice and dhal. It is not surprising that the Burman, who ordinarily lives on meat and fish, politely declines the food and makes other arrangements at considerable cost to himself.

Nowhere is the Territorial Force treated more callously than in the matter of travelling allowances. Officers until recently were given a bare railway warrant which entitles them to a second class seat on the railway, but they will in future be given a single first class fare. No officer, who holds the King's Commission even in an honorary capacity wishes to travel anything but first class and incidental expenses on the journey and the fares of servants have to be paid out of his own pocket. The N. C. O.'s and men are similarly given third class tickets. Neither officers nor men are paid for the time they spend on the journey to and from the training centre. I would recommend that in case of officers they be given travelling allowance at the same rates as British officers in the Indian Army, that non-commissioned officers be given second class fares, and that non-commissioned officers and men be paid for the days occupied travelling to and from the camp.

2. *Popularity of the Force.*—When first constituted the Force was popular owing to the belief that officers were to be given substantive King's Commission and that the men would be treated sympathetically. The Force has long ceased to be popular as in the opinion of the public neither of these expectations have been realised. A cause for the paucity of recruits is the low status given to the Territorial Force as compared with the Auxiliary Force, and an additional cause is the meagre rate of pay.

Suggestions for the improvement of pay and allowances have already been made. The status of members of the Territorial Force can be enhanced by giving the men the status of British soldiers as is done in the Auxiliary Force, and by giving the officers substantive King's Commissions as is done to officers in the Auxiliary Force.

Officers of the Territorial Force held two commissions each—

(1) A substantive commission as a Subadar or Jamadar in the Indian Territorial Force.

(2) An Honorary King's Commission as a Lieutenant or a Second-Lieutenant in the Indian Land Forces.

The effect of these two commissions is that a Territorial officer of whatever rank is junior in command to Second-Lieutenants from (*a*) the British Army, (*b*) the Indian Army, and (*c*) Subedar Majors from the Indian Army. The only benefit that the Hony. rank confers on territorial officers is that they are entitled to wear the uniform of British officers, and be saluted as such. As to the nomenclature, most territorial officers of my acquaintance would prefer to be termed plain "Subadar" rather than a "Honorary" Lieutenant. The differentiation in rank made between Auxiliary Force Officers, a proportion of whom are Anglo-Indians, and Territorial Force Officers, who are in some instances ruling chiefs and Indian Civilians, has caused great discontent.

There are two alternative remedies which I would suggest—

(1) to grant substantive King's Commissions to all officers of the Territorial Force,

(2) to grant substantive King's Commissions to selected officers of the Territorial Force.

There is popular stigma attached to Indian Land Force Commissions even if they are substantive. Such commissions have an inferior status as compared with Indian Army Commissions and would be resented by the public. To grant substantive commissions in the Indian Land Forces to Territorial Officers would give no satisfaction. If either of the alternatives I have suggested is accepted, I would recommend that the officers or selected officers be given the same status as officers of the Army of India Reserve of officers.

The men's chief grievance is that they are treated with a lack of sympathy. It is occasionally forgotten that the men are not regulars and that a man who ordinarily lives in comfort cannot be expected to live during training on rice and dhal. Another grievance is that the uniform is given to the men for use in the training season only. A territorial leaves his village for a month and returns with nothing to show that he has become one of the King-Emperor's men. In one instance a Rifleman complained that on his return to the village he was suspected of having been absent in jail. A set of uniform might well be given outright to all members of the Force who have done a month's satisfactory training.

Improvement of the Force generally.—The Territorial Force at present has to depend too much on the regular Army. An average Territorial Battalion during training is officered as follows :—

1 Commandant (Regular).
1 Adjutant and Quartermaster (Regular).
4 Company Commanders (Regular).
4 Company Second-in-Command (Territorials).
1 Assistant Adjutant (Territorial).
1 Assistant Quartermaster (Territorial).
6 Instructor Indian Officers (Regular).
16 Platoon Commanders (Territorial).

It will be seen above that the six highest appointments are given to Regular Officers from the Indian Army, while Territorial officers have to serve in subordinate capacities only.

A great Territorialisation Indianisation of these appointments appears to me to be necessary if the Force is to be a real training ground for Indians. I understand that in the Bombay Territorial Battalion all the Company Commanders are Indians but in all the other Battalions there are no Territorial Company Commanders.

Territorial Officers are at present permitted to be attached to regular battalions for short periods, but while with the regular battalions such officers are in the curious position of being neither British Officers nor Indian Officers and find their position very uncomfortable, while the low rates of pay given to them debars them financially from joining the British Officers' Mess. A better status is therefore necessary for this purpose. On the other hand opportunity might be given to Territorial Officers and N. C. O.'s for attending special courses of training in subjects like physical Training and Musketry. If this is permitted it will be possible in time to dispense with Instructor Officers from the regular Army.

LETTER FROM N. E. MARJORIBANKS, ESQ., C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S., ACTING CHIEF SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF MADRAS, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, No. 4168—3, DATED OOTACAMUND, THE 11TH JUNE 1924.

I am directed to reply to your letter No. A.-27033—1 (A.G., A.T.F.), dated the 1st April 1924, on the subject of the reorganization of the Indian Territorial Force.

2. One of the members of the Territorial Force Advisory Committee is Sir P. S. Sivaswami Ayyar who is also, it is understood, a member of the Committee appointed by the Government of India to examine the question. He has preferred to reserve his suggestions and to place them directly before the

Committee when it meets at Simla. After consulting the other members of the Advisory Committee and the General Officer Commanding, Madras District, I am to submit the following reply under the five heads named in paragraph 2 of your letter :—

(1) *Pay and allowances.*—The Governor in Council has no suggestion to make.

(2) *Popularity of the Force.*—It is understood that no difficulty is found in filling the ranks of the battalions already sanctioned, and that material would be readily forthcoming for a larger force. The supply of suitable officers does, however, present a difficulty. This it may be hoped will in course of time be met by drawing officers from the ranks of the University Training Corps and by the gradual extension of interest in the movement among the zamindar class which ought to provide the most suitable material. But it must be recognised that difficulty will continue to be experienced in obtaining suitable officers as long as the vexed question of the military status of the officers remains unsettled. The question whether Territorial officers should take rank, for the purpose of precedence and command, with British or with Indian officers is mainly a military question in regard to which the Governor in Council is not qualified to give an opinion. He would only say that, while anxious to see the highest possible position assigned to Territorial officers with a view to popularising service in the force, he would not be prepared to recommend any step in that direction which would be likely to affect the status of and cause dissatisfaction among the Indian officers of the regular army.

(3) *Methods of selecting candidates for commissions.*—The Governor in Council considers that for the present the existing methods are suitable and sufficient. In the future it may be desirable to transfer the duty of selecting officers to Territorial Committees on the lines of those existing in England. But such committees can hardly be satisfactorily formed until they can be filled, at any rate to a large extent, by persons who have themselves had actual experience in the Territorial Force. Such persons are not at present available, and any change in this respect would therefore be premature.

(4) *Improvement of the force generally having regard to the rôle for which it has been constituted.*—The Governor in Council understands that the function of the Territorial Force is to provide second line troops to support the regular army. This being the case the question appears to be entirely a military question upon which the Government of Madras can offer no opinion.

(5) *List of persons to be examined by the Committee.*—After consultation with the General Officer Commanding, Madras District, the Governor in Council would suggest that the following officers should be examined :—

Name of Officer.	Designation.
Major H. N. K. Bremner . . .	Administrative Commandant, 12-3 Madras Regiment.
Rajah of Kalikote	Territorial Officer.
Captain F. Maxwell Lawford . . .	Adjutant of the Madras University Corps.

If the Committee desire to obtain the views of a civil officer whose official position has brought him into close contact with one of the territorial battalions in this Presidency Mr. J. A. Thorne, Collector of Malabar, might also be examined.

3. With reference to paragraph 3 of your letter I am to say that the only matters brought to notice by the local Advisory Committee to which the Governor in Council thinks it necessary to draw attention are (1) the insufficiency of the travelling allowances granted to members of the territorial forces and (2) the complaint that the British Officers posted to territorial battalions in this Presidency are not as a rule drawn, as it is thought they should be, from Madras units of the regular army but from regiments belonging to other parts of India. The Governor in Council supports the suggestion that a change should be made in this respect and that the British Officers should in future be usually drawn from Madras regiments.

LETTER FROM A. N. L. CATER, ESQ., I.C.S., SECRETARY TO THE CHIEF COMMISSIONER OF COORG, TO THE SECRETARY TO THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ARMY DEPARTMENT, No. $\frac{1952}{129-20}$ ENCLO. 5 SHEETS, DATED BANGALORE, THE 24TH JUNE 1924.

I am directed to refer to your letter No. A.-27033—1 (A. G., A. T. F.), dated the 1st April 1924, and to say that the advisory committee in Coorg and the General Officer Commanding, Madras District, were consulted on the matter, and I am to enclose a copy of letter No. 93—3, dated the 25th May 1924, from the Administrative Commandant, 14-3rd Battalion, Madras Regiment, and letter dated the 7th June 1924, from M. R. Ry. P. Medappa, a member of the advisory committee.

2. After careful consideration and discussion with the General Officer Commanding, Madras District, the Chief Commissioner desires to offer the following opinion on the various points mentioned in your letter :—

(i) *Pay and allowances.*—The Chief Commissioner does not consider it feasible to increase the pay of officers to that of officers holding the King's Commission in the regular Indian Army. It should be the same as the pay of Indian officers with Viceroy's Commission as at present. He would, however, recommend a messing allowance for officers in addition to their pay.

(ii) *Popularity of the Force.*—The following measures suggested by the Commandant to increase the popularity of the Territorial Force have the Chief Commissioner's support :—

(1) *Officers.*—

(*a*) Increase the number of years in which an officer has to pass his retention examination from 2 to 3 years.

(*b*) Build an officers' club at the headquarters of each Territorial Battalion, and give a monthly allowance for its upkeep, with a grant for the purchase of furniture, etc.

(*c*) Give officers a free issue of the more expensive articles of their outfit, such as swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance of Rs. 100.

(*d*) Increase the road allowance to As. 4 a mile.

(2) *Other Ranks.*—

(*a*) Sanction to call out the non-commissioned officers for the preliminary training.

(*b*) Increase the men's road allowances to 2 pies a mile.

(iii) *Methods of Selecting Candidates for Commissions.*—The Chief Commissioner agrees that before any candidate is selected to act as an officer on probation, his candidature should be approved in writing by a board composed of (1) the chief civil officer of the District, (2) the Administrative Commandant concerned and (3) the senior Territorial officer.

(iv) *Improvement of the Force generally.*—The Chief Commissioner supports the following suggestions for the improvement of the Territorial Force generally :—

(1) A grant of Rs. 500 annually to each battalion taking part in a Territorial Week at a convenient centre and free rations to competitors up to a strength of 30.

(2) Permission to retain 50 rifles and 1,000 rounds per battalion on permanent charge, wherewith to raise rifle clubs and maintain an interest in the musketry of a battalion in the non-training period, at any centre where a suitable armoury in charge of a responsible officer can be provided.

(3) Provision of beds and mosquito curtains for each man, provided it is recommended by the local medical authorities.

The Chief Commissioner is unable to approve proposals (4) and (5) made in paragraph 4 of the Commandant's letter on the ground of expense, but he would support (4) if funds could be found from savings under the ordinary annual allotments.

3. Turning to Mr. Medappa's letter the Chief Commissioner does not support the proposal to give the same rates of pay as the Auxiliary Force (India) nor the abolition of deductions from pay.

The amount of training and its nature must of course be decided by the officer commanding, but he should maintain as close touch as possible with the advisory committee, which may be increased to 5 members including the military officer and should meet at least twice between March 1st and May 1st.

4. As regards paragraph 3 of your letter, I am to say that the opinion has been expressed that the training given to the force at present is too strenuous and that the working hours are unduly prolonged. It will be seen that Mr. Medappa makes complaint of the medical attendance afforded this year to the local battalion but the Chief Commissioner is not prepared to endorse this entirely. He is informed that Mr. Medappa never once visited the training camp and that his views are based on hearsay evidence. It happens that it was an exceptionally unhealthy spring in Coorg and the men came up from their homes, with fever in them, to the higher altitude of Mercara and the change coupled with a good deal of hard work proved too much for a number of them. The result was a considerable amount of sickness and unfortunately six men succumbed to pneumonia. It will be advisable to effect some improvement in the hospital arrangements another year, and if the military authorities wish it, a Coorg Civil Sub-Assistant Surgeon will be deputed.

5. If it is desired to summon any witnesses from Coorg the following names are suggested :—

Rao Bahadur K. Chengappa, B.A.,
District Magistrate and an officer of the Corps.

Palekanda Medappa, B.A., B.L.,
Member, Advisory Committee and Legislative Council.

Kelapanda Acchayya. Has two sons in the local battalion.

It is presumed that, if they are summoned, their expenses will be paid.

LETTER FROM THE ADMINISTRATIVE COMMANDANT, 14TH-3RD BATTALION, MADRAS REGIMENT, TO THE COMMISSIONER OF COORG, NO. 93-3, DATED THE 25TH MAY 1924.

Reference your No. 159-E. B., dated 12th May 1924, I beg to offer the following suggestions for the improvement of the Territorial Force :—

1. *Pay and allowances.—Officers.*—I consider that their pay is totally inadequate to attract the right stamp of men. These officers hold Honorary King's Commissions, and as such should be paid the same rate of pay as Indian gentlemen holding King's Commissions in the regular Indian Army. The officers appear to be divided into three categories—(1) Officials whose civil salary largely exceeds their military pay, (2) wealthy non-officials whose military pay is of no value to them, and (3) poor officials and non-official civilians, whose military pay is so small that it is swallowed up in their mess expenses and it is impossible for them to maintain the dignity and prestige of their Commissions as officers. In my battalion this class preponderates.

The difficulties of this latter class are accentuated if an officers' mess on European lines is formed and all officers are obliged to live in the mess. Even if no officers' mess exists in a regiment, the poor married officer, who has to support two establishments during the training period finds the military pay of his rank very inadequate.

This feeling discourages enthusiasm, and breeds indifference and inefficiency. Officers are called upon to pass a none too easy retention examination within two years of their being gazetted as officers. In order to do so, they have to work extremely hard, and they feel that their meagre pay is very small compensation for the 8 hours' work a day they put in. In theory, patriotism should over-ride all questions of lucre, but in practice, it is found that the labourer feels he is worthy of his hire, and in the case of the I. T. F. officer his hire is put at too low a figure altogether.

Other ranks.—N. C. Os.—To popularise the Force, and to obtain N. C. Os. who will be of a class to promote to commissioned rank as vacancies occur, a higher rate of pay should be given, and I would suggest the following rates :—

	Rs.		Rs.
Bn. Havildar-Major	35	*plus*	15
Bn. Q. M.-Havildar	35	„	10
Coy. Havildar-Major	30	„	8
Coy. Q M.-Havildar	30	„	8
Havildars	30		
Naiks	25		
Sepoys	20		

2. *Popularity of the Force.—Officers.*—The popularity of the Force seems to me to depend chiefly on whether the Territorial officers have the right spirit, and whether they are willing to really throw their hearts into their work, and to put up with hard work for 56 days each year in order to try and make their battalions efficient. I would say that, with the younger and the few really keen officers, the training period is on the whole popular, but that with some of the older officers who had expected in joining the Territorial Force to have plenty of games, an easy time, and very little work, the training period is quite likely unpopular. I think that the present scale of officers' pay for the real hard work they have to do has a great deal to do with the lack of real enthusiasm and keenness shown by some of the officers. If less work is made the remedy, the result will be a great falling off in the efficiency of all ranks, and the popularity of the Force would hardly seem to compensate for lack of efficiency. The spirit of the officers will in time be reflected on their men, and the remedies I would suggest are as follows :—

(*a*) Increase the pay of officers as proposed in paragraph 1.

(*b*) Decrease the period of preliminary training from 28 to 14 days. Now that two training periods have been completed the officers are well ahead of their men and 14 days brushing up should be sufficient.

(*c*) Increase the number of years in which an officer has to pass his retention examination from 2 to 3 years.

(*d*) Build an officers' club at the headquarters of each Territorial Battalion, and give a monthly allowance for its upkeep *plus* a grant with which to purchase furniture, etc.

(*e*) Give officers a free issue of the more expensive articles of their outfit such as swords and binoculars, and an annual clothing allowance of Rs. 100.

(*f*) Increase the road allowance to 4 annas a mile.

Other ranks.—For other ranks, I would suggest :—

(*a*) An increase of pay.

(*b*) Sanction to call out the N. C. Os. for the preliminary training. With inefficient N. C. Os. every one's work is increased.

(*c*) Increase the periodical training from 28 days to 42. Another fortnight would make a less strenuous training programme possible. The hours of work could be reduced if more time was available over which to spread out the work. 28 days is altogether too little. After deducting three or four Sundays, 1 or 2 days for taking over kits, and settling down, and 1 or 2 days for returning kits, etc., another day for sports and another day for paying out the men, the 28 days is reduced to under 20 working days, in which time the previous year's training has to be revised, fresh progress has to be made, an annual course of 6 practices has to be fired and the men made efficient enough to fire that course, and inter-platoon games and competitions have to be got through.

(*d*) Increase the men's road allowances to 2 pies a mile, the equivalent rate at which 3rd class rail fares are calculated.

3. *Method of selecting candidates for commissions.*—I would suggest that before any candidate is selected to act as an officer on probation, his candidature should first be approved of in writing by a board composed of (1) the chief civil official of his district, (2) the administrative Commandant concerned and (3) the Senior Territorial Officer.

4. *Improvement of the Force.*—(1) A grant of Rs. 500 annually to each Battalion taking part in a Territorial week at a convenient centre, and free rations to competitors up to a strength of 30.

(2) Permission to retain 50 rifles and 1,000 rounds per battalion on permanent charge, wherewith to raise rifle clubs and maintain an interest in the musketry of a battalion in the non-training period.

(3) Provision of beds, and mosquito curtains for each man.

(4) Rule that one training out of the 6, should be held at a station outside the battalion's headquarters.

(5) Decrease the preliminary, and increase the periodical training periods as already suggested. This in my opinion would do more than anything else to increase the efficiency and popularise the I. T. F.

LETTER FROM M. R. RY. P. MEDAPPA, AVL., B.A., B.L., M.L.C., TO THE COMMISSIONER OF COORG, DATED THE 7TH JUNE 1924.

With reference to your letter dated the 12th May 1924, I enclose herewith a copy of the suggestions which if adopted, will, in my opinion, popularise the Territorial Force and make it a success.

Pay and allowances.—It is an open secret that the members of the Territorial Force are very much disappointed at the pay and allowances given to them at present. The average Coorg who joined the Force joined it certainly without the slightest notion of making money out of it but was actuated mostly by a sense of patriotism and was allured by the probable attractions and pleasures of military life. They have much to their chagrin found in the Territorial Force none of the attractions which they were promised and which they themselves thought was likely from what they saw of the Auxiliary Force which holds its camp in Mercara every year. It has come to my knowledge that almost all the commissioned and non-commissioned officers of the Territorial Battalion in Coorg were very much out of pocket after their training. This was not due to any extravagance on their part for they had little time for any pleasures but was due solely for maintaining themselves. This is true in a more significant way of the privates as a whole. The members of the battalion thought and I think rightly that service on patriotic motives will not mean expenses out of their pockets. It is therefore necessary and essential for the popularity of the Force that the scale of the pay and allowances be raised to that of the Auxiliary Force. An objection may no doubt be made on the score of money but if the Territorial movement is to be a success then it stands to reason that the members who join it should not be out of pocket. And after all since the period of training is only for a month in a year the increase in the expenditure may not be so very marked. I therefore am strongly of opinion that the pay and allowances of the Territorial Force be brought on to a level with that of the Auxiliary Force. This is necessary not only to remove the petty heart-burnings of the people about the differential treatment now existing between the Auxiliary and the Territorial Forces, but I think it necessary on grounds of justice and equity. It is difficult for one to understand a lieutenant being paid differently in the two different units, while their rank and status is supposed to be the same for every other purpose. The mess started during the last training clearly brings out the inequity of this rather unjustifiable difference. For the normal mess expenses must in reality have over-run the pay allowed to them—leaving alone the question of extras which the individuals might have incurred.

The existing system of clipping off from the salary of the privates for washing, vegetables, etc., must I think be entirely stopped.

Popularity of the Force.—The Force is by no means popular at present. Although the people joined it with great enthusiasm so much so that the gentlemen who induced the people to join the ranks are now made to look very small and those that opposed it are clapping their hands in glee. Coorgs as a rule love military life but it cannot be expected that any one can stand for long the rigour of active service. There is more or less a general consensus of opinion that the training given to the Force is far too much and beats the rigour of even the most regular of the Regular Army. Several of the ranks who joined the Regular Army during the War are of this opinion. The working

hours I think must be limited to the mornings only and the afternoons be left free for recreations, sports and lectures. It is very desirable that the programme of work drawn up by the Officer Commanding the Regiment is forwarded for the opinions and suggestions of the Advisory Committee. The system now prevalent of doing things without any sort of consultation of the Advisory Committee will not, to say the least, make the Force more popular.

The conveniences to which even the poorest Coorg is accustomed must at least be given to the Force as a whole. Cots for sleeping and tables and benches for dining to which every Coorg is used, must be provided. The medical assistance now given in the person of a Military Sub-Assistant Surgeon is hopelessly inadequate. A medical man of greater responsibility and learning must in my opinion be placed in charge of the health section of the battalion. I think it also very desirable that a temporary military hospital be opened during the period of training and intimations of sickness be furnished expeditiously to the relatives of those concerned. Neglect and delay of intimating serious cases of illness to the relatives has gone a long way in focussing public opinion against the Force. It will be a welcome factor if the Medical Assistants are recruited from amongst the qualified Coorgs themselves. As it is very often the Medical Assistant being ignorant of the dialect is unable to understand the complaint made to him and therefore to diagnose the case correctly with the result that the private begins to lose faith in the medical assistance and care given to him by the military authorities.

It is desirable that the battalion be divided into sections according to the age of the members and the length of the training be regulated according to their respective ages in consultation with the Advisory Committee. The enlistment of the civil officers of the Government must be restricted as far as possible, as very often it interferes and clashes both with their military and civil duties and responsibilities. The period for the bond of 6 years now existing if reduced to 3 or at the most 4 years will, I think, bring in a greater number of people. I also think that prayers for discharge if leniently dealt with will have a similar effect and dispel the notions of fear and distrust infused into the masses by the disappointed and the discontented. As far as possible attempts must be made to officer the regiment from amongst the natives themselves. The presence of the outside Tamilian and Muhammadan is looked upon with derision and disfavour by the people of those sections of the communities which form the regiment.

Methods of selecting candidates for Commissions.—This is by far the most important factor for the popularity of the Force and as such deserves the most careful consideration from the authorities. In my opinion it is necessary the officers of the commissioned ranks be recruited directly as far as possible, and the promotion from amongst the non-commissioned ranks be resorted to only in cases of exceptional merit. Even in this method of direct recruiting care must be taken to select as far as possible people who are above need and who come of good social standing. It is needless to add that sportive youths belonging to respectable families and if possible with University qualifications will make exceptionally good officers. The method of giving commissions to men in lower rungs of life is the surest method of evoking discontentment amongst the rank and file. An experiment may be made of selecting the officers for the battalion from the University Training Corps. It will be possible in my opinion to get suitable men as officers if the condition of the men is improved and the work is made lighter and sufficient attraction are given. To attain this it is desirable in my opinion that the selection of the officers be made in consultation with the Civil Heads of the Administration and the Advisory Committee.

The Advisory Committee.—The Advisory Committee has so far done little or no work as there has been but one meeting for the purpose of sending in the suggestion now being made. I think that the number of the Committee should be increased from 3 to 5 with not more than 2 Government servants, 1 military and the other civil. All of them being eligible for enrolment under the Indian Territorial Act. It is necessary that a record be kept of the proceedings of the Advisory Committee which should be submitted from time to time for the inspection of the Officer Commanding the District. The practice of doing things single-handed and in a military autocratic way is one of the chief causes for the disappointment and discontentment now prevailing in the Force. The Advisory Committee can go a long way to allay this if the Commanding Officer consults them from time to time.

AUXILIARY AND TERRITORIAL FORCES COMMITTEE.

QUESTIONNAIRE.

A. *Pay and Allowances.*—It has been suggested that :—

1. Members of the I. T. F. should be given a retaining fee for the non-training period at the rate of Rs. 2 per mensem; this amount should be increased proportionately every two years until 6 years are completed.
2. Members of the I. T. F. should be paid for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centre or the present road and subsistence allowance increased.
3. Increased travelling allowance should be given to members of the U. T. C. when proceeding to and from their place of parade or camp.
4. In units in which an I. T. F. officers' mess is maintained, officers should be given a messing allowance in addition to the allowance per mess already paid.
5. The annual allowance for the upkeep and repair of clothing (0-8-0 per man) should be increased.
6. Travelling and subsistence allowance should be paid to recruits at the same rates as allowed in the regular Army.
7. Recruits should be given an allowance for mufti clothing at the rate of Rs. 22.
8. Government should consider the question of abolishing all pay for I. T. F. officers and make their rank purely honorary.
9. I. T. F. officers' pay should be increased to a rate compatible with the grant to them of Hony. King's commissions.
10. A band allowance should be authorised for I. T. F. units similar to that laid down for A. F. (I.) units.
11. The road allowance to approved applicants for enrolment, and to enrolled men of the I. T. F., when embodied for training or service, should be annas two per mile.
12. Government should examine the question of a remission of land revenue to enrolled men of the I. T. F. annually during their service. This is an alternative to the grant of a retaining fee.
13. As an alternative to item A.-1, members should be given a bonus, on the lines of the Home Militia bounty, after completion of the full annual training.
14. As an alternative to items A.-2 and 11, the rates of mileage allowance authorised for the regular army by A. I. I. 573 of 1st July 1924 (new para. 29-0 A. R. I., Volume X) should be authorised for I. T. F. provincial units in place of the present road and subsistence allowance.
15. The following rates of travelling allowance should be authorised for University Training Corps :—
    (i) When proceeding to and from the place of parade or instruction in the performance of preliminary or periodical training.
    (*a*) Officers—A refund of any conveyance expenses thereby incurred, subject to the following provisions.

    No such refund will be admissible if the distance travelled in a single direction is less than one mile.

    The officer commanding the unit may authorise any payment made on this account at a rate not exceeding eight annas a mile, and no higher rate can be authorised save on the previous sanction of the G. O. C. District. Where railways, tramways or similar conveyances can be utilized for the purpose, the actual fares only will be admissible and in all cases public facilities will be taken into consideration in determining the rate of allowance.

    (*b*) Other ranks—as at present.

(ii) When proceeding to and from the training camp—

(*a*) Officers—by rail or river. 1st class warrants; by road—mileage allowance at eight annas a mile.

(*b*) Other ranks—as at present.

B. *Popularity of the Force.*—It has been suggested that :—

1. The number of years in which an I. T. F. officer has to pass his retention examination should be increased from 2 to 3 years.

2. (*a*) Officers clubs at the training centre of each provincial unit would increase the popularity of the force.

(*b*) If sanctioned, an allowance would be necessary for the upkeep of the club and a grant would be required for the purchase of furniture.

3. I. T. F. officers should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance.

4. I. T. F. N. C. Os. and men should be given a free issue of mufti clothing to take to their homes after training.

5. " Territorial weeks " for sports and shooting competitions, held at convenient centres in Provinces, would increase the popularity of the force.

6. I. T. F. units should be given provincial names, *e.g.*, 11th/14th Punjab Regiment (the Gurgaon Territorial Battalion).

7. The scale of rations should be varied to suit members of each unit. This could be done by a liberal scale of equivalents or in communication with the Supply Officer provided the cost of the ration were not exceeded.

8. An outline of the I. T. F. Act and Rules and all orders referring to pay and allowances should be prepared in English at Army Headquarters in as simple language as possible and issued to local governments for dissemination by them in appropriate vernaculars.

C. *Method of selecting candidates for commissions in the Indian Territorial Force* :—

1. Is the present system satisfactory or is an alternative recommended?

It has been suggested that—

2. Candidates should, before appointment on probation, be approved in writing by a board composed of—

(i) the chief civil officer of the District,

(ii) the Administrative Commandant of the unit concerned,

(iii) the senior I. T. F. officer of the unit concerned.

3. Candidates should be selected by the Advisory Committee, in consultation with the Administrative Commandant of the unit, before submission to the District Commander and Local Government for approval.

4. Candidates should not be given commissions direct but should go through the ranks and be selected at the end of the training period with due regard to—

(i) Power of command.

(ii) Physical fitness.

(iii) Aptitude for military training.

(iv) Previous record of service (if any).

(v) Local influence.

(vi) Social status.

5. Before an officer is confirmed in his first appointment to a unit his Commanding Officer and the two senior Territorial Force officers of the unit should sign and forward to the G. O. C. District a certificate that he is, in their opinion, in every way suitable for a commission in the Indian Territorial Force.

6. As alternative to items C. 2, 3, 4 and 5 :—

(i) A candidate, other than an ex-officer or N. C. O. of the regular army, should be enrolled as a sepoy and carry out his preliminary and first year's periodical training in the ranks before he submits his application for a commission.

(ii) Candidates should submit their applications to the Administrative Commandant, who will consult the local civil authority and his Advisory Committee (if the Advisory Committees are constituted for Districts or units, *vide* item D.-2). The application should then be submitted to the G. O. C. District with the recommendation or otherwise, in writing, of the Administrative Commandant, the local civil authority and the Advisory Committee. If recommended by the G. O. C. District, the application should be submitted to the Local Government for concurrence before submission to Army Headquarters.

(iii) The Administrative Commandant's and local civil authority's recommendation should be made with reference to :—

(i) Power of Command.

(ii) Physical fitness.

(iii) Aptitude for military service.

(iv) Education.

(v) Previous record of service (if any).

(vi) Local influence.

(vii) Social status.

D. *Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.*—It has been suggested that :—

1. Government servants should not be permitted to enrol in provincial units of the I. T. F., in view of the liabilities they undertake.

2. I. T. F. Advisory Committees should be increased to 5 or more members and constituted for Districts instead of Provinces, and should include a local Territorial Force officer in addition to the Military Member.

3. The period of training of I. T. F. provincial units should be increased to :—

(*a*)

Preliminary training	...	...	3 months
Periodical training	...	...	28 days.

or

(*b*)

Preliminary training	...	...	56 days.
Periodical training	...	...	56 days.

4. A central school should be organized for all officers of the Territorial Force. Vacancies to be given according to the strength of the Force in each province and length of course 3 months. Syllabus as laid down for the retention examination. If funds do not permit of the above, attachment to affiliated Training Battalions should be undergone for 60 days.

5. Permission should be given for the permanent retention of a certain number of arms and rounds of ammunition by units, wherewith to raise rifle clubs during the non-training period; these rifles and ammunition to be kept at any convenient centre where a suitable and properly protected armoury can be provided.

6. Beds and mosquito curtains for each man should be provided, if recommended by the local medical authorities.

7. Company Commanders are required with the unit headquarters 7 days before and 7 days after the training period.

8. Provision should be made for vacancies for I. T. F. officers and N. C. Os. at physical training and weapon training courses at Army Schools.

9. At least 16 I. T. F. N. C. Os. should be called up 10 days before training commences to be put through a short course of instruction in drill.

10. I. T. F. Medical officers should be attached to each provincial unit during the training period.

11. The I. T. F. Medical Corps should be organised into units.

12. The Bihar and Orissa Companies of the 11th-19th Hyderabad Regiment should be separated from the Bengal Companies.

13. A section of the I. T. F. should be formed with liabilities similar to those of the Auxiliary Force (India)—that is, liabilities for local service only—and trained on the same system.

14. Electrical and Mechanical Companies should be constituted for Calcutta and Bombay respectively.

15. Resolution passed at the Universities Conference on the 21st May, 1924.

"That this conference recommends to the military authorities :—

(1) The institution of A and B certificates in University Training Corps and the overhauling of the system of granting commissions in the University Training Corps;

(2) That a central information body be set up to co-ordinate and bring into touch the University Training Corps in different places;

This has already been done.

(3) That the military authorities add to their subventions for the purpose of training camps, etc., and that the Universities should supplement these funds;

(4) That some effort should be made to ensure closer working between the University Training Corps and the battalions of the Territorial Force;

(5) That Sapper and Medical units should be encouraged;

(6) That Anglo-Indians should be permitted to enter the University Training Corps;

(7) That Universities should take the holding of A and B certificates into account in estimating the work of students in examinations;

(8) That the military authorities should hold out facilities to University Training Corps to take part in any rifle meetings and the like."

16. The preliminary period of training should be increased to six months.

17. A permanent staff of one regular Indian officer per two platoons and one regular N. C. O. per platoon of the enrolled strength of each Territorial Force battalion should be attached to the affiliated Training Battalions under conditions similar to those obtaining at present for British officers seconded as Company Commanders of I. T. F. battalions.

18. As an alternative to item D. 4, the platoon commanders courses, started this year, should be continued and, in addition provision should be made for the attendance of I. T. F. officers at the physical training, weapon training and signalling courses at Army schools (*vide* item D. 8).

19. Lance Naiks and Naiks before promotion to Naik and Havildar, respectively, should be attached, with their own consent, to a regular battalion, active or training for a period not exceeding 2 months. The number allowed to be so attached should not exceed the number of vacancies existing at the time in the ranks of Naik and Havildar respectively, and those selected should not have less than three years' service unexpired.

E. Recommended amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules.—

1. To amend Section 5 of the I. T. F. Act to obviate the necessity for I. T. F. officers being re-enrolled so long as they hold their commissions. (*See* annexure I.)

2. To amend Section 11 (1) of the I. T. F. Act to make it clearer that an I. T. F. officer is an officer within the meaning of Section 7 (2) of the Indian Army Act when doing duty as a commissioned officer. (*See* annexure II.)

3. To prescribe rules, in accordance with Sections 6 (1) and 7 (1) of the I. T. F. Act, to regulate appointments and transfers. (*See* annexure III.)

4. To amend Rule 11 to allow of a member of a U. T. C. unit being transferred to a provincial unit. (*See* annexure IV.)

5. To amend Rule 12 to make clear the authority to authorize discharge. (*See* annexure V.)

6. To amend Rule 17 to preclude members of the I. T. F. (other than U. T. C. units) from drawing pay while on leave during the training periods. (*See* annexure VI.)

7. Should it be considered by the A. and T. F. Committee that the number of members of Advisory Committees should be increased or that they should be constituted for Districts instead of Provinces or both, then section 12 (1) I. T. F. Act 1920, and Rules 29 and 30 will require amendment.

ANNEXURE I.

Officers of the Indian Territorial Force.

Enrolment and discharge of——.

1. The Indian Territorial Force Act and Rules are not at present clear on the question of discharge, resignation, retirement, etc., of officers of the Indian Territorial Force.

2. The position of persons enrolled under the Indian Territorial Force Act is as follows :—

(1) Under Section 5 of the Act the maximum period for which a person may enrol is 6 years (in regard to re-enrolment *see* Rule 10).

(2) Under Rule 11 (1) every enrolled person shall, on becoming entitled to receive his discharge, be so discharged with all convenient speed.

(3) Under Rule 3 (*d*) no person may be enrolled who has attained the age of 35.

Persons who wish to become officers of the Territorial Force are first enrolled under the Act, and are then gazetted as officers in the Force.

3. The effect of the Law and Rules referred to in the preceding para. is to produce two inconvenient results, namely,—

(1) that an officer who has completed his term of enrolment must be re-enrolled if he is to continue as an officer of the Territorial Force,

and

(2) an officer must, in any case, cease to be an officer before he reaches the age of 41.

It is desirable to obviate both these results and to provide either—

(1) that an officer may be permitted to re-enrol and continue as an officer, either regardless of an age limit, or at any rate beyond the age of 40, or

(2) that an officer should be exempt from the necessity of re-enrolling, and should continue to be an officer for so long and up to such an age as may be thought desirable.

4. It has been provisionally decided that it would be more satisfactory and fitting to exempt officers of the Indian Territorial Force from the necessity of re-enrolling, and to allow them to be officers for so long and up to such age as may be decided upon.

It has been ruled that legislation will be necessary before this end can be attained; such legislation to take the form of the addition of a proviso to Section 5 (1) of the Act on the following lines :—

> " that a person who has been commissioned as an officer shall be deemed to be enrolled for so long as he holds a commission."

5. When this has been done subsidiary orders necessary to provide for age limits, discharge, resignations, etc., can be framed by the Government of India or the Commander-in-Chief, independent of the Act or Rules, for the reason that the authority granting the commission can provide, in the order granting the same, for the period it is to be held, or can terminate it at will by subsequent order, either by way of acceptance of resignation or otherwise.

The effect of legislation on the lines suggested in para. 4 above will be to abolish the application of the fixed period of enrolment for so long as the person enrolled continues to hold a commission. Should the commission held by such person terminate before the expiry of the period of his enrolment he will remain an enrolled person until the expiration of that period, or until discharged from the Force prior to the expiration thereof.

6. The subsidiary orders (or regulations) to be issued by the Government of India or the Commander-in-Chief will have to provide for :—

(*a*) the age limit to which officers may serve. This has been suggested as 52—or on completion of 32 years' service, including commissioned service in any Branch of His Majesty's Indian Land Forces;

(*b*) for the acceptance of resignation of commission before the expiry of the age or service limit;

(*c*) for the termination at any time of the commission should such be desired by the authority granting the same;

(*d*) for the discharge from the Indian Territorial Force if the commission is terminated during the original period of enrolment—should such discharge be considered desirable.

ANNEXURE II.

There has been some doubt as to whether Section 11, I. T. F. Act 1920 gives power of command to I. T. F. officers under the Indian Army Act, unless Section 7 (2) I. A. A. is amended so as to include as officer holding an Indian rank in the Indian Territorial Force when he is subject to the Indian Army Act. It was also doubtful if an I. T. F. officer could sit on a court martial under the Indian Army Act.

It has been ruled that no amendment of Section 7 (2) Indian Army Act is necessary as Section 11, I. T. F. Act 1920 gives the necessary power of command and status as an officer. It is suggested, however, that Section 11, I T. F. Act 1920, would be clearer if the words "to him" in line 9 were omitted.

ANNEXURE III.

ENROLMENT, APPOINTMENT TO CORPS AND UNITS AND TRANSFER.

No Rules have been prescribed to regulate the appointment and transfer of members of the I. T. F. in accordance with Sects. 6 (1) and 7 (1) of the I. T. F. Act. It is proposed that these rules should be included in Part I of the I. T. F. Rules, and the heading of that Part altered to read :—

"ENROLMENT, APPOINTMENT TO CORPS OR UNIT AND TRANSFER."

Appointment.

10-A. (1) A person enrolled for a particular unit or for a corps that consists of one unit only shall be appointed to that corps or unit by the officer who enrolled him.

(2) A person enrolled for a particular corps shall, if that corps consists of more than one unit, be appointed by the Officer Commanding the District within which the headquarters of that corps is situated to a unit of that corps.

(3) A person enrolled for a particular branch shall be appointed by the Officer Commanding the District within which the person resides to a unit of that branch situated within that District and constituted for the Province within which the person resides; or where no such unit of that branch is situated within that District by the Officer Commanding that District in communication with the Officer Commanding any other District, to a unit of that branch constituted for the Province within which the person resides.

(4) All appointments shall be reported to the headquarters of the corps or unit concerned.

Transfer.

10-B. (1) The transfer to another corps or unit of a person who has been appointed to a corps or unit shall be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District within which the headquarters of the corps or unit to which the person belongs is situated.

(2) An authority who proposes to authorise a transfer shall, if the proposed transfer is to a corps or unit the headquarters of which is situated within the command of an Officer Commanding another District, before authorising the transfer obtain the concurrence of the Officer Commanding the District within which the headquarters of the said corps or unit is situated.

(3) A person who desires to be transferred shall submit his application in writing, through his Commanding Officer, to the authority competent to authorise the transfer and shall, in the application, state his reasons for desiring the transfer and the corps or unit to which he desires to be transferred.

(4) Excepting when a person has ceased to reside within the Province for which the corps or unit to which he belongs is constituted, the authority competent to authorise the transfer may refuse to authorise it.

(5) A person who has ceased to reside in the Province for which the corps or unit to which he belongs is constituted may, if not enrolled for that particular corps or unit, be compulsorily transferred to a corps or unit of the same branch constituted for the Province in which he for the time being resides : and a person enrolled for a particular corps may be compulsorily transferred to any unit of that corps.

(6) On disbandment of a corps or unit a person not enrolled for that particular corps or unit may be compulsorily transferred to another corps or unit, provided that if he was enrolled for a particular branch he is transferred to a corps or unit of that branch.

ANNEXURE IV.

In accordance with the present Rule 11 (3) of the I. T. F. Rules a member of a University Training Corps who wishes to join a provincial unit of the I. T. F. on leaving his University has to be discharged and re-enrolled. In order to allow of such a member being transferred the following amendment of Rule 11 (3) is proposed :—

> Any person enrolled, who is for the time being appointed to a University Corps shall, unless he is transferred with his own consent to another corps or unit, be discharged on ceasing to be connected with, or to reside at, the University or, as the case may be, a college affiliated thereto.

ANNEXURE V.

There are certain inaccuracies in Rule 12 of the I. T. F. Rules, and the rule is not complete. This has led to several questions as to its application. It is, therefore, proposed to re-cast the rule as under :—

Rule 12.—The following officers are the authorities to authorise discharges under Rule 11 :—

Ground of discharge.	Authority to authorise discharge.
In the case of persons enrolled who are commissioned officers.	
1. As in sub-rule (1) of Rule 11 ...	The Officer Commanding the District.
2. As in clause (*a*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Governor General in Council.
3. As in clause (*b*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Governor General in Council.
4. As in clause (*c*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Governor General in Council.
5. As in clause (*d*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District on the recommendation of a board of at least two medical officers.

Ground for discharge.	Authority to authorise discharge.
In the case of persons enrolled who are not commissioned officers.	
1. As in sub-rule (1) of Rule 11 ...	The Officer Commanding.
2. As in clause (*a*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District.
3. As in clause (*b*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District.
4. As in clause (*c*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	
(*a*) when the person enrolled is unlikely to become an efficient soldier.	(*a*) The Commanding Officer but only in the case of persons enrolled who have not completed their preliminary training.
(*b*) all other cases	(*b*) The Officer Commanding the District.
5. As in clause (*d*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Commanding Officer on the recommendation of a board of at least two medical officers.
6. As in sub-rule (3) of Rule 11, when the person enrolled does not wish to be transferred to another corps or unit.	The Commanding Officer.

A discharge duly authorised will be carried out by the Commanding Officer with all convenient speed.

Any discharge in the above table that can be authorised by the Commanding Officer may be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District, the Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in India, or the Governor General in Council.

Any discharge in the above table that can be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District, may be authorised by the Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in India or the Governor General in Council.

ANNEXURE VI.

Members of the Indian Territorial Force are embodied for training as follows :—

in the first year of their service for 56 days, (*i.e.*, 28 days preliminary training and 28 days annual training) and thereafter for 28 days annual training.

At present no rules exist regarding leave during those periods and consequently there is no uniformity in procedure. Members receive pay for the full period of training and it is necessary for efficiency that full advantage should be taken of the limited period prescribed by the I. T. F. Rules.

It is, therefore, proposed that the grant of leave during the training period should be limited to exceptionally urgent cases and then only without pay for the period of the leave.

In order to do this it is necessary to amend Rule 17 by the addition of a proviso at the end of the rule as follows :—

"provided that an enrolled person, who is not a member of a University Corps, and who is called out or embodied for training, shall not be entitled to any such pay and allowances for any day or days he may be absent on leave during the period of training."

List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to submit written statements for the information of the Committee.

Names.	Statement received or not.
Mr. A. Miller, Government College, Ajmer	Statement received.
Mr. H. M. C. Harris, Government High School, Ajmer	Statement not received.
Mr. R. L. Khare, Gwalior	Statement received.
Captain G. L. Hyde, Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment (Bengal Wing).	,,
Mr. S. N. Mullick, M. A., B. L., Calcutta	,,
Khan Bahadur M. A. Momin (Magistrate of Nadia)	,,
Hony. Lieutenant S. C. Ghosh Mullick (Bengal)	,,
Rai Bahadur Jadunath Mozoomdar, C. I. E., M. A., B. L. (Jessore).	,,
2nd Lieutenant E. E. Garate, Calcutta Battalion	,,
2nd Lieutenant G. Sircar, M. A., B. L., Dum Dum Cantt.	,,
Major K. K. Chatterjee, F. R. C. S. I., I. T. F. Medical Corps (Calcutta).	,,
Rai Sahib Punchanan Burman, O. B. E., President, Kshetriya Samity, Rangpur.	,,
Mr. Sukhludu Bilash Roy, Secretary, Recruiting Committee, Chittagong.	,,
Mr. S. R. Das, Bar.-at-Law, Calcutta	Statement not received.
Babu B. P. Das of Feni	,,
Maulvi Abdul Jabbar of Noakhali	,,
Mr. P. K. Bose, Bar.-at-Law, Dacca	,,
Major J. St. Aubyn King, Adjutant, 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers, Poona.	Statement received.
Major H. Hamill, O. C. Bombay U. T. C., Bombay	,,
Mr. R. G. Pradhan, B. A., LL.B., M. L. C., Nasik	,,
Mr. G. K. Nariman, Mazagaon, Bombay	,,
Hony. Lieutenant P. B. Bapat, B. A., Bombay U. T. C., N. E. School, Satara.	,,
Major H. W. Goldfrap, Adjutant, 11-5th Mahratta Light Infantry, Belgaum.	,,
Dr. Kaikhosru Kersasp Dadachanji, Bombay	,,
Mr. Hormusjee Muncherjee, Vakil, Bombay	,,
Mr. M. N. Katrak, Bombay	,,

List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to submit written statement for the information of the Committee—contd.

Names.	Statement received or not.
Captain P. B. Everett, M. C., Adjutant, Bombay U. T. C., Kirkee.	Statement not received.
Mr. Sydney Loo Nee, Bar.-at-law, Rangoon . . .	Statement received.
Rai Bahadur K. Changappa, B.A., M.L.C., Coorg . .	„
Mr. Kellapanda Acchayya, Coorg	Statement not received.
Captain J. J. Waite, Adjutant, 11-14th Punjab Regiment, Delhi.	Statement received.
Hony. 2nd Lieut. N. R. Venkataraman, B.A., 11-3rd Madras Regiment, Madras.	„
Principal Rathnaswamy, M.Sc., Pachyappa College, Madras .	„
Professor M. A. Candeth, Presidency College, Madras . .	Statement not received.
Captain Mir Jaffar Khan, M.B.E., I.O.M., of Zaida . .	Statement received.
Hony. Lieut. Tek Singh, 11-17th Dogra Regiment, Jullundur.	„
Major S. W. Finnis, Adjutant, 11-15th Punjab Regiment, Jullundur.	„
Hony. Lieut. Malik Muzaffar Khan, 11-13th F. F. Rifles, Campbellpore.	„
Lt.-Colonel Maharaja Sir Jai Chand, K.C.I.E., C.S.I., of Lambagraon (Kangra District).	„
Hony. Lieut. Rao Bahadur Chaudhri Lal Chand of Rohtak .	Statement not received.
Sardar Bahadur Sardar Gajjan Singh, O.B.E., of Ludhiana .	„
Khan Bahadur Malik Mohammad Amin Khan, O.B.E., of Shamsabad (Attock District).	„
Sardar Hira Singh	„
Lieut. Malik Golsher Khan (19th K. G. O. Lancers) . .	„
Sardar Thakur Singh	„
Major F. G. O. Hume-Wright, Adjutant, 11-7th Rajput Regiment, Fyzabad.	Statement received.
Captain H. V. Gell, Adjutant, 11-9th Jat Regiment, Meerut	„
Rai Bahadur Chaudhri Amar Singh, O.B.E., Bulandshahr .	„
Hony. 2nd Lieut. Saiyid Ali Bin Hamid, Tahsildar of Sambhal, Mooradabad, 11-9th Jat Regt.	„
Lieut. Revd. T. D. Sully, 3rd (U P.) Bn. U. T. C., St. John's College, Agra.	„
Major T. F. O'Donnell, M.C., B.A., O. C. United Provinces U. T. C. and Registrar, Lucknow University, Lucknow.	„
Major Ranjit Singh, President, U. P. I. T. F. Advisory Committee, Allahabad.	„

Statement by 2nd-Lieutenant G. Sircar, M.A., B.L., Vakil, High Court (Bengal).

Introduction.—My grandfather, the late Revd. H. H. Sandel, was attached to St. Paul's Cathedral, Calcutta, and built St. Mary's Church, Calcutta, his son-in-law, the Very Revd. Canon Bannerjee, being in charge thereof. My uncle, the late Raja K. L. Goswami, was a member of the Bengal Government Executive Council in 1910. I was presented at H. E. the Viceroy's Levee in 1910 by the Chief Justice of Bengal. I brought nearly 600 educated combatant recruits during the war, raised and organised the 43rd Indian Divisional Signal Corps (Bengalees), was attached Lincolnshire Regiment and then Assistant Recruiting Officer for combatants, Bengal, being Coroner of Calcutta in 1920.

Answers to Questionnaire.—I have read the questionnaire, and while agreeing generally with the spirit thereof shall state orally my opinion on the details, subject to the following principle that in "volunteering" there should be no invidious distinctions based on racial basis, *i.e.*, where class for class the recruits and officers although drawn from various nationalities, are of the same social standing by birth, education and employment in civil life mixing freely in clubs, hotels and society functions, there should be no differentiation into "Auxiliary" or "Territorials" in "volunteering", *i.e.*, in Civil-Military life.

Further the "Auxiliary Forces" is really not of much military value and should be remodelled on the lines of the Home Territorials, and therefore there should be one "Volunteer" Force in India, *i.e.*, "Territorials" only. But as these will be drawn from higher class Indians, they can not be attached to Sepoy regiments nor can the foreign element therein which must perforce be therefore, as a whole on the British basis.

I have served in a British Volunteer unit as a College student being in English Schools in India and have found there and in other Volunteer Corps a large number of Anglo-Indians, Armenians, Parsis, Kintals (or low class Indian Christians), Hindus, Mahomedans, Burmese, and Bhutias, the sergeants and in one instance, the Adjutant and C. O. being pure Armenians and Anglo-Indians.

This course of military training did not interfere with my University B. A. studies. Given, therefore, some form of compulsory military training in our Universities for their students after being trained as Boy Scouts in the High Schools, we will find very good material for officers with King's commissions for regulars also *via* the Universities and "Territorials" as they are doing in England now. *Vide* Scrutator in "Truth" of 13th August, 1924, pages 288 and 289, the summary of which article is as follows:—

> "The whole scheme of entrance to the Army now stands thus: A candidate can get in through Woolwich or Sandhurst. If he fails, he can get into any branch of the Service through a University up to the age of 24, with an antedate, giving him the same seniority as if he had passed; or he can get into the Cavalry, Infantry, Tanks, or R. A. S. C. up to the age of 25 through the Territorial Army, without antedate. The doors into the army have now, in all conscience, been opened widely enough. Let us hope that there will soon be a *queue* waiting to enter."

Conclusion.—Some regular officers, retired or not, should be attached to our Universities as Professor to give lectures or to coach students or Territorial officers as suggested in Truth. Thus we shall have properly trained candidates by public competitive simultaneous examinations for Army officers in India (whether the candidates are Europeans or Indians) as is already being done for the I. C. S. in India.

Personal.—I am still very keen on soldiering and am confident that the genius of the great British nation will yet make good fighting material out of Bengalees in particular and all Indian nationalities in general, training the best of these (*i.e.*, those of good birth with "character" and sound education) for King's commissions as the best material available, and I am prepared to help Government again in raising volunteer corps as I did for regulars during the Great War.

God save the King, whose most loyal subject I am.

Statement by Honorary 2nd-Lieutenant N. R. Venkataraman, B.A., 11/3rd Madras Regiment, Namakal.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. A retaining fee for the non-training period is not necessary.

2. They should be paid for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centre.

3. Actual travelling expenses should be given to the members of the U. T. C. to and from their place of parade or camp.

4. When there is an I. T. F. Officers' mess, such of the officers who are members of the mess should be given a messing allowance. I am not aware of any mess allowance paid to any officer of a Territorial Battalion in Madras. There is an Officers' mess in 11-3rd Battalion Madras Regiment. Considering that the expenses for a month come to an average of Rs. six hundred a month, I consider an allowance of Rs. five hundred is necessary, during the training period, *every month*. It should be optional for an officer to join the mess.

5. Yes. By one rupee.

6. Yes.

7. An allowance at the rate of Rs. 25 for mufti-clothing may be given to recruits.

8. No. It should not be purely honorary.

9. I. T. F. Officers pay should be increased to a rate compatible with the grant to them of Hony. King's Commns.

10. Yes. A band allowance should be given as suggested.

11. Yes. It may be granted.

12. Yes.

13. Yes.

14. Provisions in A.-2 and A.-11 are enough.

15. Yes. The provisions in para. 15 (ii) (*a*) and (*b*) should also apply to the provincial I. T. F. units. It is suggested that the officers may be issued 'E' Form thus enabling them to pay II class and travel I class by rail and then claim 1¼ I class allowance as in the Regular Army.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. Yes. It may be increased to 3 years.

2. (*a*) Yes. Where there is no mess. (*b*) A furniture allowance would then be necessary.

3. Yes. They should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance.

4. The I. T. F. N. C. Os. should also be given one set of uniform to take to their homes after training.

5. Yes.

6. They may be given provincial and linguistic names, *e.g.*, 11-3rd Madras Regiment (Tamil Territorial Battalion or Andhra Territorial Battalion, etc.).

7. Yes.

8. Yes. The dissemination may be done.

C.—Method of selecting candidates for commissions in I. T. F.

1. The present system requires modification.

2. Yes. This is preferable to C. 3.

3. Please *vide* answer to C. 2.

4. No. They may be given commission direct.

5. Yes.

6. (ii) and (iii) of this para. may be adopted.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally.

1. They may be permitted to enrol in the provincial units of I. T. F.

2. Yes. It may be increased to six members. A retired Indian Officer in the district may also be of the number.

3. I. T. F. Training—

Preliminary training	... 56 days.
Periodical training	... 28 days.

4. This is preferable to D. 18.

5 to 11. Yes.

12. I cannot say anything about it.

15. Yes.

16. No.

17. Yes.

18. *Vide* D. 4. Provisions for the attendance of I. T. F. Os. at wireless-telegraph classes also should be made.

19. Yes.

E.—Amendments to I. T. F. Act.

1. Section 5 (1) of the Act may be amended by the addition of the proviso noted in clause 2 of para. 4 in Annexure I. Subsidiary orders *re*: matters in para. 6 have to be provided for.

2. In I. T. F. Act, 1920, no amendment to section 7 (2) is necessary. Suggestion in Annexure II of omission of " to him " in line 9 would be clearer.

3 to 5. Rules prescribed in Annexure III and amendments proposed in Annexures IV and V may be adopted.

6. Rule 17 may be amended as stated in Annexure VI.

7. It appears not to be necessary at present.

Additional suggestions.

1. There should be a reference library either in the club or the mess on all matters concerning the army for the use of the officers.

2. A Battalion for each province should be formed the recruitment for which should be strictly limited to graduates and the educated members of the aristocratic class. In all other matters, the rules of the I. T. F. provincial units shall apply except in the grant of commissions. The suggestion in C. 4 of the Questionnaire may be adopted in granting commissions. Such of those who desire to undergo training in other branches of the army with a view to serve in that branch may be given the opportunity to do so.

3. There should be at least one platoon for each district. They should mobilise at least one week prior to the annual training at the District Headquarters and join the training centre without loss of time so as to have the full benefit of the training at the training centre.

4. A list of members of the I. T. F. in each district should be kept in the District Magistrate's Office for the information of the officer.

5. Members of the I. T. F. should be exempt from Income Tax, Toll-fees, Profession tax and Arms License fees.

6. Members of the I. T. F. should be eligible to vote in Local Boards.

7. Preference should be given to members of I. T. F. in cases of application for assignment of lands on *darkhast*.

8. Expenses incurred for attendance at the Territorial Weeks and at Rifle and Shooting Association competitions should be borne by the Government.

9. Slack seasons for the groups of districts should be ascertained and the periodical training should be in the slack season of the year for the several districts. This is most important if I. T. F. is to be popular.

Statement by M. Haidar Khan, M.A., B.Sc., Honorary 2nd-Lieutenant, 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C.

In giving my views on the subject matter I have first briefly answered the questions sent to me in serial order. These replies to questions on one group are followed by general remarks on the subject of the Section as a whole.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. I do not think the payment of a retaining fee would do very much to make the force attractive. If it is proposed to enlist members of the poorest classes, it would make a difference but the I. T. F. would degenerate from a volunteer force to an inefficient and a low paid organisation. Moreover the money could be very much better spent in other ways.

2. Yes. I think that members of the I. T. F. should not be out of pocket over their work as soldiers.

3. It is hardly necessary. U. T. C. members are of superior intelligence and certainly join the honour and glory and not for any money. If this money is spent upon giving them greater comforts when in camp, the expenditure would be much more useful. But if camps are held during vacation time when U. T. C. people have to travel one by one from and to their homes the question will have some importance.

As far as I am aware no travelling allowance is paid to U. T. C. men when going to the parade grounds. This does not seem to be very necessary either.

4. I have no knowledge of any unit of the I. T. F. which has an officers' mess but I feel that I. T. F. officers should be able to have the same life as regular officers without being out of pocket. All the same, it does not seem to be a very good way of spending money.

5. This allowance is absurdly small. The Scouts in Gligit Agency (members of a local militia) get Rs. 4-2 a year. I think that even this would be hardly sufficient. I would suggest about Rs. 6.

6. Yes. This seems fair.

7. No. It would mean a very large outlay. I do not think we should give anything to the I. T. F. men while they are following their ordinary occupation. A badge or any other distinctive mark which they may wear with their ordinary clothes will be useful but that can be made part of their equipment. I think we should neither intefere with I. T. F. men's life when they are not in training, nor should we provide for them during this period in any manner.

Supplementary Questions.

8 and 9. No. I think that an effort should be made to see that officers are not out of pocket by joining the I. T. F. Abolition of pay would prevent the professional classes from joining. Moreover, honorary work is never of good standard. Similarly there should be no bribe offered, and as far as possible the same rate of pay should be given as applicable to persons holding the same rank in the Regular Army.

10. This is a very minor point. I do not think it strictly necessary.

11. Yes.

12. No. No retaining fee or exemption of land revenue should be given. The service should be voluntary.

13. Yes. After completion of training a bonus (not very substantial) would give men something to work for. This should not be very large.

14. This seems reasonable. I do not know what are the actual rates of mileage allowance. But anything which brings the I. T. F. in uniformity with the Regular Forces will improve matters.

15. (i) No. No allowance should be necessary.

(ii) Yes.

PAY AND ALLOWANCE (GENERAL).

I do not think any great alteration in pay and allowance is necessary in order to improve and expand the I. T. F. At least this is not the cause of the lukewarm response which this movement has so far evoked. The fact that members of the Auxiliary Force get their allowance at a higher rate is certainly a grievance but a minor one. In India it will always be necessary to provide differently for different classes, and in practice some distinction will have to continue. I think that the principle which should underlie this question is that nobody should be out of pocket by joining the I. T. F.; and at the same time he should not gain anything material. I am opposed to a retaining fee, remission of land revenue, or an allowance for mufti clothing but I am in favour of a bounty at the end of the training period.

I feel that if the I. T. F. is to attract the best people in the land, the question of racial distinction will become very important. I strongly feel that to constitute a second line of defence is part of the ordinary duties of a citizen and the constitution of two different bodies under two Acts is not desirable. But in a country like India, we cannot neglect class distinctions in practice, and therefore I beg to suggest that while there should be one law governing non-regular military forces, the actual enlistment should be in class companies. Just as the U. T. C. has special rates of allowances and special treatment, in the same way there should be a certain amount of elasticity provided in these matters in the general body. The needs of the different classes would be different and there should be scales accordingly (of allowance and rations), keeping in view the general status of the members of a company. These different scales could be regulated under orders of C.-in-Chief. In this way we could have Urban and Rural Companies or Platoons, Hindu and Muslim companies and also European and Anglo-Indian companies. The blending of different groups would introduce an element of healthy competition and perhaps the example of the efficiency of one section would help to improve the others.

I do not know under what conditions officers of the I. T. F. can get attached to regular regiments but I should like to see this encouraged. Officers can do this only if they do not stand to lose materially by such attachment. I therefore feel that officers should be compulsorily attached for a period sufficiently long to ensure their thorough training and during this time they should be paid either their salary in civil employment or according to the Military rank they hold, (whichever is greater). Any expenditure which would produce efficiency would be extremely desirable.

B.—POPULARITY OF THE FORCES.

1. No. The longer a thing is put off the less seriously it is taken. It would be best if there is an examination within a year, and if it is made compulsory. The I. T. F. will be popular if it is taken seriously. In this connection it would be best to encourage attachment of I. T. F. officers under section 7 (3) of the Act.

2. (*a*) Officers' Clubs would certainly add to the popularity but it is a minor point. Unless training is carried on during the whole year, this would mean a waste of money. Moreover what is required is that I. T. F. officers should be in touch with officers of His Majesty's Regular Forces. A Club meant only for these would probably be a failure and will not develop corporate life, compatible with the amount of expenditure.

(*b*) This money would be better spent in other ways, *e.g.*, in arranging Rifle Meeting for I. T. F. men and in inviting I. T. F. officers to manœuvres of the Regular Army.

3. Yes. The present allowance of Rs. 300 is inadequate for an officer's equipment. They are I believe given swords and binoculars in the British Territorial Forces. The general principle that officers should not be out of pocket by joining the I. T. F. should be strictly adhered to. Annual clothing allowance would not be necessary if the first allowance is increased to Rs. 500. I would much rather have a better outfit allowance, but perhaps the hope of getting a little money annually will give people something to look forward to.

4. No. Officers and men should not make anything out of this movement. A grant like this will be in the nature of a bribe.

5. Yes. Money proposed to be spent on officers' clubs would be much better spent on such things.

6. Yes. This is a minor point, but *esprit de corps* has got to be worked up and a mere number is never inspiring.

7. It would be desirable but I think the practical disadvantages will be very great. It would be much better if class platoons or companies were formed and scales of rations corresponded to their special collective needs.

Supplementary.

8. This is highly necessary. I would suggest that some other military literature should also be supplied free to officers commanding detachments of I. T. F., *viz.*, Manual of Military Law; A. R. I.; etc.

General.

As I have mentioned, distinctive racial treatment in the organisation of the non-regular forces is a factor of some importance. It will become a thing of much greater consequence in the future; and if it is removed now, the fact will go a very long way towards attracting the most educated sections of Indians.

I personally feel that apart from the point mentioned above, the root cause of unpopularity lies in the inefficiency of the units. Those who are in it do not take it seriously and those who are out of it take very little notice of the movement. The training should be so efficient that it should become an end in itself. People who get trained should feel that they have learnt a useful and a manly art. Anything which would make the officers and men efficient would make the scheme popular. They will begin to take it seriously and to develop a pride in the body.

Esprit de corps has got to be worked up. For this efficiency as a military unit would be highly beneficial. It would be better if the units were given provincial names, and further if there were class units, and each class in a way competed with the others.

I strongly feel that efficiency can best be obtained by making it compulsory for officers and N. C. Os. to be attached to the Regular forces. I feel that a certain number of I. T. F. officers should be invited to Army manœuvres. Contact with regulars will develop mutual recognition which will go a long way towards popularity. The I. T. F. should have a regular cadre of instructors. In the initial stages, it is necessary to have something like two Regular N. C. Os. per company and some supplementary Regular officers besides the Adjutant per Battalion. A little show will also help to make the scheme popular. I think there should be an I. T. F. officer as Hon. A. D. C. to all big officers down to G. Os. Commanding Districts. These people could accompany the officers on tours when convenient. The I. T. F. should be asked to provide guards of honour during Governor's visits and during local Durbars. Civil and Military officers should be asked to review the Territorials whenever possible. Care should also be taken that this establishment should not become the monopoly of any particular class. It should take in all classes in its fold and the organisation should be truly national. Government servants should not be encouraged to take a leading part in the organisation although they ought to be able to join. We should avoid the impression that the organisation is solely run by the Government. All classes should be properly balanced.

Effort should be made to start mounted units. These will be very popular. A small beginning could be made in districts which go in for horse breeding.

C.—Methods of selecting candidates for commission in the I. T. F.

1. I do not know what the present system is.

2. Yes. It is very desirable that the Senior I. T. F. officer of the unit concerned should have something to say about the selection of an officer for his unit. I also feel that the territorial movement being allied both to the Civil and the Military, representatives of the both sections should be present on the Selection Board. In the initial stages it would be of great advantage to derive some support from the Civil administrators of districts. This committee should see to the fitness of the candidates.

3. The names should then be submitted to the Provincial Advisory Committee the chief function of which should be the balancing of interests in the Province as a whole. This Committee will see that the zamindars, Hindus and Mohamedans and other interests are all represented. The names can then be submitted to the Local Government for approval (through the District Command).

If District Advisory Committees are formed then the question is to be answered in the affirmative.

4. *I strongly disagree with this suggestion.* Discipline is going to be the weakest point in the Territorial Forces, and if the officers rise from the ranks, they will naturally be of the same class as the men and will not be able to maintain discipline. The points mentioned in the last para. of the question will doubtless be the considerations which will move the Selection Committee in exercising their choice. While the door for promotion to officer's rank should not be barred, commission by promotion from the ranks should be exceptional instead of being the rule. When the Corps has been once established and has some definite traditions behind it, recourse can be had to promotion from the ranks more freely.

5. No. This formality should not be required. The first selection should be carefully made but officers should not be made to obtain recommendations for confirmation. But I think a probationary period during which an officer could be got rid of on the report of the Officer Commanding is necessary to correct occasional mistakes which are bound to be made by the Selection Committee.

6. No. Candidates for Commissions should not start as rankers. This would undermine discipline.

General.

Modern Military training requires considerable mental development on the part of officers, and consequently it seems to me that definite encouragement should be given to educated people. I feel very strongly on this point and I think it will be disastrous if most of the officers were to come from the less educated zamindars. I would therefore suggest that *ex*-U. T. C. men should form the backbone of the I. T. F. officers. I believe this was the real reason why U. T. C. was organised. The rules to be made for selecting officers should clearly recognise this fact.

I also feel that rankers will not form suitable officers. This body is going to be comparatively inefficient and the greatest drawback of inefficient organisations is lack of discipline. If officers come from the same class as men and if they themselves had been sepoys in the same body, they will naturally mix too much with the men when off duty. Indians as a rule have not got inherent ideas of discipline and men will resent disciplinary measures inflicted by such officers. They themselves will be inclined to be rather weak and the system will be a failure. This defect appears even in Native State forces where officers generally rise from the ranks and belong to the same caste as the men. In a volunteer body this will never do, although it may be possible to work it up in certain units.

I feel that applications should be scrutinised by some such Committee as mentioned in 2. They should choose two names to be submitted to the Advisory Committee (Provincial). The first committee will judge of the fitness of applicants and I am sure the considerations which will determine their choice will be of the kind mentioned in 4. The Advisory Committee will make a final recommendation to the local Government. In making its choice it would simply see to the balancing of the class interests, *i.e.*, zamindars and non-zamindars, Hindus and Mohamedans, etc. The applications of non-U. T. C. men should be entertained only in exceptional circumstances.

At present some officers in the U. T. C. are European British subjects. They cannot be enrolled as I. T. F. men which is a condition precedent to appointment as an officer and I doubt whether their appointment has been at all legal. I therefore feel that for officers it should not be necessary that they be enrolled as members of the force before applying. They should be appointed straight off and then they should be deemed to be enrolled by a special rule made by the Governor-General in Council.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally.

1. No. Government servants should not form the backbone, but they do not incur any liability which is opposed to their liability as a Government servant and they should be allowed to join. But they should not be encouraged as officers. The movement should not lose two of its most important attributes; *viz.*, (1) Public nature, (2) Voluntary character. Special platoons of Government servants would be very useful.

2. Yes. Five members would be useful and one representative of the I. T. F. should be included. One Adjutant should be present and act as Secretary. To bring in the Civil side a Commissioner might be added, whose appointment would be made by the local Government.

3. Periodical training should in no case exceed 28 days. This is the utmost a person can spare and still continue his usual occupation. The preliminary training of 3 or 2 months would seriously hamper a person; but on the other hand inefficiency will kill the movement. The smallest period consonant with efficiency should be maintained. The present system should be given sufficient trial.

Preliminary training could be given in small squads in different centres.

4. A separate school will mean more money and probably less efficiency by lowering the general standard. Attachment to affiliated training battalions should be encouraged. The greater the point of contact between regular and I. T. F. officers, the better.

5. Yes. This sort of thing would be very useful and the money well spent.

6. This is a bit too much. I do not think soldiers require feather beds during the period of training. Of course this training should be during healthy seasons and at healthy places.

7. Yes. Company Commanders, etc., should come a few days earlier. The N. C. O.'s of Gilgit Scouts do the same. All officers should come a few days earlier and see to the general requirements of the camp.

8. Yes. They should do it at a spell.

9. At present ten days drill would not be of much use. The territorials will have to work with regular N. C. O.'s for the present. Later on it would be all right if N. C. O.'s came a few days earlier and did some drill.

10 & 11. This is most desirable if there are sufficient number of men willing to be enrolled and to be organised as such.

12. I am not aware of any special point connected with this issue but see no harm in the suggestion.

13. No. Uniformity is desirable. It would be much better if the Act was modified and similar conditions held for both the Auxiliary and the Territorial Forces (if it is desirable to keep both separate).

14. Yes. If there are enough people ready to be enrolled.

15. Recommendation of the Universities Conference—

i. I don't know any special system of recruitment for officers. Special rules for every unit are not desirable but as a rule the Vice-chancellor and Senior U. T. C. officer should be asked to nominate people and these names should then be submitted to the Provincial Advisory Committee. I do not think A & B certificates would be of much value.

ii. This does not require any opinion.

iii. I do not think many Universities can supplement these funds. So far no camp has been held in my Province. I therefore cannot give any opinion. But I am opposed to waste of money.

iv. This is desirable and can only be done by attachments on a generous scale. I think I. T. F. officers of the future ought to come out of present U. T. C. cadets and therefore this is most necessary.

v. Encouragement should be given to all branches but the question of expense is very important.

vi. This is most necessary. No class should be debarred.

vii. This is for the universities to consider, I as an educational man will not accept any test for estimating the work of students other than a uniform system of examination. The military authorities are not concerned with this part.

viii. Yes. They should have at least the same rights as other I. T. F. men.

Supplementary.

16. No. Nobody can spare so much time without upsetting his ordinary vocation.

17. Yes. Some sort of training cadre is necessary at least in the beginning.

18. Yes. The point is already commented upon in answer to question 8.

19. Yes. I would make the attachment compulsory after promotion. Due regard should be paid to the principle that men should not be out of pocket and that they should not spoil their business. U. T. C. men should not come under the operation of this Rule.

General.

As I have mentioned before, greater touch should be introduced between the Regular Forces and the Territorials. The points to be observed are that the character of the organisation should always remain voluntary and the members should be unhampered in the pursuit of their ordinary calling. At the same time they should be made as efficient as possible. The principle of attachment should be encouraged and periods of training should not be very long. I think that for preliminary training it would be much better if squad drill was held at a large number of centres; and at least in urban areas this would work very well. The men will then be quite ready for work in camps. It would be only at these camps that Arms, etc., will be supplied and weapon drill taught.

Too much money spent in making the I. T. F. complete with a medical corps and a transport unit will not be economical. Effort should be made to get the ordinary units giong efficiently before starting Sappers and Medical Corps.

E.—Recommended Amendments.

1. I am entirely in agreement with the amendment proposed in Annexure I; the amendment to be in the form of an addition of a proviso to section 5 (1) of the Act.

There is a further anomaly. At present there are officers like Majors Dann and O'Donnell in the 3rd Allahabad Battalion. By section 5 (1) of the Act British subjects other than Europeans may offer themselves for enrolment and an officer has to be enrolled first before he can be given a commission. Both the above officers being European British subjects could not have been enrolled and hence they were incapable of being made officers. This anomaly should also be removed.

2. No amendment seem to be necessary.

3. Some rules are necessary but it seems to me needless to make the transfer compulsory. The person concerned should have the option of getting his discharge.

4. I do not agree with the proposed amendment. U. T. C. is a separate organisation and members will, as a rule, not put in 6 years, as the average time a student spends at a University is very much smaller. If they wish to join the general territorial body they should be enrolled afresh.

5. Yes. But the Universities have such a migratory population that the Officer Commanding a detachment should be substituted for Commanding Officer. Also the Registrar of Universities and Principals of Colleges should keep a list of their students who join the U. T. C. and when a person's case comes under 11 (3) (rules), notice should be given forthwith to the Senior U. T. C. Officer in the station.

6 and 7. I agree with the proposed amendment.

General.

I have only given my opinion on the suggested amendments and have not tried to formulate fresh suggestions; as I feel that the principle has to be decided first and the work of drafting can be left to the experts. My contention however is that the present Act contemplates racial distinction which should be made to disappear. This would mean the repeal of the entire Act and also that of the Indian Auxiliary Force Act (49 of 1920). In place of these two there would have to be a new Act authorising the formation of non-regular forces. These might be enrolled on the basis of classes and the Commander-in-Chief could be authorised to regulate the pay, allowances and scales of rations of various companies according to their special requirements. We would thus have the same law and could allow for the enormous differences between the members of the different classes. I do not wish to press the immediate repeal of these Acts as the present system has not yet been tried. But it will have to come eventually if the movement is to have the popularity it deserves.

Concluding Remarks.

In the end I beg to submit that for a force of this nature, an efficient set of officers is the first necessity. I know from personal experience that my want of knowledge of military matters has in the past prevented me from taking the amount of interest I would have otherwise done. Efficient officer for the present can only be trained by attachments to Regular Forces. I should like to see the Government concentrating on the efficiency of the U. T. C. and these men when they leave the Universities and get settled in life should form the officers. At present in my University we have been given only half an Instructor. No arms have been provided and the result is that not a single man has been trained. As a result of this the members are exposed to the ridicule of their fellow students as they have not gained anything by joining the U. T. C. Officers should be attached to the Regular forces and as far as possible Indian officers should be preferred to English, as the latter do not seem to take the same amount of interest. When a considerable number of U. T. C. men have been trained the general movement in the country is sure to succeed, provided recourse is had to well-educated and thoroughly trained persons of good social position for officering the body. The impetus of running the force should come from within and not from without.

In conclusion I beg to add that to further the I. T. F. under the present Act we should proceed in the following steps. We should first concentrate on training efficient officers and then on training the U. T. C. When this latter body has attained a respectable standard of skill, the general body will begin to show signs of improvement.

Statement by Honorary Lieutenant Tek Singh, 11/17th Dogra Regiment.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

Points 1, 12, 13.—I am in favour of the suggestion contained in 1, to the effect that a monthly retaining fee of Rs. 2 per mensem, increased proportionately every two years, until six years are completed, should be granted. I presume that in the case of a member of the Indian Territorial Force re-enrolling on the completion of six years' service, he would continue to draw the retaining fee he enjoyed at the end of six years.

I am not in favour of the suggestion contained in 12. The amount of land revenue paid varies greatly, and while some men would undoubtedly benefit by the remission, in the case of others the benefit would be so small as to be practically negligible.

Points 2, 11, 14.—With regard to point 2, the pay of a sepoy for each day of his journey travelling to, and returning from, training, would amount to very little more than the rates of road and subsistence allowance at present admissible. If the rates suggested in 11, *viz.*, 2 annas per mile, cannot be granted, I am in favour of the suggestion in 14, that the rates authorised in A. I. (I.) No. 573 of 1924 be adopted.

Point 4.—I am in favour of the suggestion that a messing allowance per officer should be admissible in addition to the allowance for a Mess.

Point 5.—I think that the allowance of Rs. 0/8/0 per man is sufficient.

Point 6.—I consider that the rates of travelling and subsistence allowance should be the same for recruits as those admissible for enrolled men, when embodied for training.

Point 7.—I approve of the suggestion to give an allowance of Rs. 22 to each recruit for the provision of mufti clothing. If this allowance is granted, the pattern of mufti clothing should be laid down for the Battalion, as is done in Regular units.

Point 9.—I think that some increase of pay is necessary to enable I. T. F. Officers to maintain their position.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

Point 1.—I think that the number of years in which an officer has to pass his retention examination should be increased to three years.

Point 2.—If a Mess is maintained, I do not think that a Club is necessary.

Point 3.—I think that Territorial Force Officers should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars, and that an annual clothing allowance should be admissible.

Point 4.—I prefer the allowance of Rs. 22 per recruit to the suggestion that a free issue of mufti clothing should be made.

Point 5.—In the case of this unit, I am afraid that such "Territorial weeks" would be impracticable. The men live so very widely scattered, that the selection of suitable centres would be a difficult matter, and it would take a long time to assemble them.

Point 6.—This unit has already a Territorial designation in the word "Dogra".

Point 7.—I am not in favour of this. It would complicate cooking arrangements to a great extent, and so long as the men get the same scale of rations as the Training Battalion, they will be quite satisfied.

Point 8.—I am strongly in favour of the preparation in vernacular of a simple outline of the I. T. F. Rules and Act, and orders regarding pay and allowances.

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

Points 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.—I am in favour of the procedure outlined in point 5, *viz.* that candidates should serve in the ranks first.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

Point 1.—I agree that Government servants should not be enrolled.

Point 2.—I think that the Advisory Committee should be increased to include one member from each class, or area, from which large numbers have enrolled themselves in the Territorial Force. Each member, except the Military Member, to have a small local committee under him, including a Territorial Force Officer, to advise and assist him with regard to the class, or area, with which he is concerned. For instance one member might be appointed to represent Dogras, and his sub-committee could be found from Kangra and Hoshiarpur Districts and the adjacent States. These sub-committees could probably stimulate interest in adjacent areas which have not so far taken much interest in the movement.

Points 3, 16.—I am in favour of { 56 days Preliminary Training. / 56 days Periodical Training.

Points 4, 18.—I think that the continuation of the Platoon Commanders Course is preferable to the formation of a Central School, but I also think that either is preferable to the attachment of officers to Regular Battalions, until they have received a more thorough elementary training.

Point 5.—The formation of such Rifle Clubs would not be practicable in the case of the unit to which I belong.

Point 6.—I do not consider that either beds, or mosquito curtains are necessary. Their provision would entail the provision of an enormous amount of tentage.

Point 7.—I agree.

Point 9.—I think that all N. C. O.'s should be called up at least ten days before training commences, or, as an alternative, instead of 56 days' periodical training for all, *vide* para. 3, all officers and N. C. O.'s should be embodied for 56 days, and the remainder for 42 days.

Point 17.—I think that this would assist uniformity of training from one year to another. I would, however, suggest one Regular Officer per Company, and two Non-Commissioned Officers per platoon.

Point 19.—Before Lance-Naiks and Naiks are attached to Regular units, I think that further opportunities are necessary for the instruction of N. C. O.'s in elementary work to fit them for such attachment, and to enable them to derive the greatest advantage from it.

E.—AMENDMENTS TO THE I. T. F. ACT AND RULES.

With reference to Annexure I, para. 6, I would suggest that it should be stated whether Territorial Force Officers will be permitted to retain their rank on retirement, on completing 32 years' service, or reaching 52 years of age, or on resignation due to ill-health, wounds or really serious private affairs, which do not admit of their continuing to serve.

Statement by Mr. G. Miller, M.A., Princ'pal, Government College Ajmer.

A. 1. This is a good suggestion, because it will help to keep the members interested.

2. Pay should be given for the days spent in travelling, in addition to the road allowance.

5. It is essential that the allowance for the up-keep of clothing should be increased; and in fixing the amount of allowance the cost of washing should be taken into account.

6. Yes.

7. Instead of this I should prefer B. No. 4 namely a free issue of mufti clothing.

B. 4. This would be an inducement to many to join the force.

5. I think this would serve to increase the popularity of the force.

6. The local corps might be called the Rajputana Corps.

7. College students are generally from good homes and accustomed to good food. Their diet should be liberal.

C. 2. I approve of this.

4. This will be a great advantage for it will make it possible for students to obtain commissions.

D. 2. A local Territorial officer should be included in the Committee.

3. For students it will be difficult to have Preliminary training for 3 months, even 56 days is too much. Periodical training of 28 days is sufficiently long.

4. I suggest the attachment to affiliated training Battalions for a time.

5. Seems to be a necessary corollary to No. B 5.

8. If this course is decided on it should be, for students at least, during the period of periodical training.

9. This would be advantageous.

15. (1) Certificates should be given and men who get them should be eligible for a commission.

15. (6) Anglo-Indian students should be admitted to the Territorial Force especially at University centres.

15. (7) Yes.

E. 4. This amendment to Rule 11 is very necessary. Students should be discharged when they leave College, unless they find it convenient to be transferred to another unit.

General.

College students joining the Territorial Force should, as far as possible, come under the same rules and regulations as those joining the University Training Corps. They should be treated as the intelligent part of the force, and be trained in signalling, etc.

Statement by Major S. W. Finnis, Adjutant, 11/15th Punjab Regiment.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. A retaining fee would possibly attract more men of hereditary fighting classes to join the Force.

See reply to Item 13.

2. In this unit practically every man can reach his home in under 24 hours and I do not consider that pay is essential for the time spent in travel, for on the homeward journey the man has with him the unexpired portion of the rations issued on the last day of training and is put to no expense.

For the journey to training I consider that a subsistence allowance of 6 annas should be given to each man to cover his food.

As regards road allowance, I consider that no allowance is necessary for journeys under 5 miles, but that 2 annas per mile should be allowed for every mile over 5 by road to men when coming up and returning from any duty in connection with the Force.

See replies to Items 11 and 14.

3. Applies to U. T. C. only.

4. In a unit of this nature composed of officers and men of several classes and creeds it is under the present circumstances difficult to induce all officers to join a mess, as undoubtedly officers who join the mess are out of pocket considerably.

I suggest a daily messing allowance of Rs. 1/8/0 should be given to every officer who feeds in the mess.

The mess allowance already granted would then be entirely available for arranging an anteroom dining room, etc., required for the mess.

See reply to B. 2 (*a*) and (*b*).

5. The present allowance is quite sufficient.

6. Concurred in.

7. I do not agree. During the training period a man has not much leisure in which to wear mufti and I have found that the average Territorial soldier seems quite pleased to wear uniform when going to the bazar, etc.

8. I do not agree. Many men who make the best stamp of officer have little or no private means.

9. The present scale of officers' pay is not such as to attract the best men, in spite of the great concession already granted in the shape of Honorary King's Commissions. I consider that a rate of pay somewhere between that of an Indian Officer and a King's Commission Officer should be given, say Rs. 200 per mensem to commence with, gradually increasing with an increment after 6 years' service.

There are several officers who in civil life are in business or who are in charge of estates. These officers are quite content with the present pay when out for their annual training, but they would be hard hit if mobilised for a long period for service, etc.

10. Not necessary. During the short training period it is not possible to train a band.

11. See reply to Item 2.

12. I cannot see that this is necessary. The Territorial soldier already gets some privileges, such as a gun license, very easily. I find that many men who join only do so for what they hope to obtain as personal gain, in return for not having to give up much of their time.

See reply to Item 13.

13. I consider that a bonus to be given at the end of each annual training would lead to more efficiency than retaining fee, especially if it could be arranged that the amount of bonus be dependant on the skill displayed in the annual musketry course.

I would suggest Rs. 20 for a 1st class shot, Rs. 15 2nd class and Rs. 10 for 3rd class shot; no bonus to be given to any man who for any reason, except *bonâ fide* medical certificate or previous exemption, does not appear on the due date fixed for training.

14. See reply to Item 2.

15. Applies to U. T. C. only.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. I think the rule should read that an Officer must qualify for retention before the completion of his third annual training.

2. See reply to A.-4.

I think that if a suitable mess is arranged with a comfortable ante-room it meets all the requirements of a club. I sounded my officers as to their desire to join the Jullundur Club, in view of the fact that they held Honorary King's Commissions. All, except two who were already club members, replied that as long as they had a comfortable meeting place in camp they did not want to join clubs in view of the expense entailed mainly.

If the whole of the present mess allowance is available for fixing up a good mess in camp it will meet the case. I am not in favour of purchasing furniture as it has to be stored for 10 months annually and is liable to great depreciation when in store.

3. A free issue of swords and binoculars is desirable as then all officers would be similarly equipped. These should not become the personal property of an officer until he has served for 5 or 6 years.

I don't think an annual clothing allowance is required. The present outfit allowance does an officer very well for the first years of his service; a sum of money as upkeep allowance might be given on completion of every 5 years' service as an officer.

4. I do not agree. If such an issue was made the clothing would be worn out between two trainings and would require replacement.

Any man who wants to show at his home that he is a Territorial soldier can do so by buying a regimental puggri and fringe.

5. An excellent idea. It is not desirable to hold any competitions during the actual training which take men away from their work, but if competitions could be arranged in a Province at the end of a training there would not be great expense incurred in travelling allowance, rations, etc.

Great enthusiasm was shewn in this unit over the Northern Command Hockey Tournament in 1923, but it did take men away at an important time of the training.

6. A good idea where possible, as it leads without any doubt to more interest being shewn by the civil officials of a District and encourages enrolment.

In my area, however, which covers 18 civil districts the selection of a name would be no easy matter.

7. Presumably necessary in various parts of India, but with 3 years' experience I have found that the standard ration in every way meets requirements and I have had no complaints whatever. In fact even in one month one can notice men filling out appreciably.

8. Something of this nature is urgently required. The greater part of my correspondence nowadays is answering queries on the subject of enrolment, pay, etc.

I find that many civil officers can give no information to candidates for enrolment and thus many good men are lost to the Force.

C.—Method of selecting Candidates for Commissions in the I. T. Force.

1. The present system is not satisfactory as an Administrative Commandant has to work very much in the dark. Recommendations at present are based too much on the family antecedents of an applicant, such as the number of recruits produced by his father during the war, or the amount given to War Loan by his uncle, etc., without in any way shewing if the man himself has any aptitude for a military life.

Of all the proposals put forward in Items 2 to 6 I consider that No. 6 is the most practicable.

The real ideal in selecting an officer is to try and obtain an officer who can produce his own following as his platoon, and where this has been possible in this unit, it has proved a success. Such an officer who knows his men in civil life can naturally get the best out of them during military training and can also control and discipline them with more ease.

At present no aspirant for a commission in the Northern Command may be attached to a unit for training until he has been approved by higher authority, so an Administrative Commandant cannot estimate a man's capabilities as a soldier prior to sending in his application. I think this should be altered at once.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. I certainly agree. The majority of such people, who only join for their personal advancement in civil employment, have now resigned as they find they do not gain financially during military training.

Very few such persons would be available on general mobilisation and none of them would be much good in such an eventuality.

See reply to Item 13.

2 Advisory Committees should be constituted for Districts and one of the members should be a Territorial Force officer. The present Committee for the Punjab has hitherto not been a very live affair, as owing to the scattered places of residences of the Members it has, I think, never actually met, and correspondence between the Members has taken a very long time.

The presence of an I. T. F. Officer on the Committee would, I consider, assist the civilian members in settling many points.

3. I agree with proposal (*b*) in preference to (*a*).

In 56 days the recruit can learn enough to enable him to take his place in the ranks with the older soldiers.

The benefit of 56 days periodical training is apparent. I have now done 3 trainings and each year have completed the musketry course and have got as far advanced as Battalion drill, but have not been able to do any kind of field work. With 56 days to train in much can be done and there would be a great advancement yearly in efficiency.

4. I prefer the scheme of a platoon commanders course each year.

Officers will learn much more at such a course under Instructors whom they know than by being attached to a Training Battalion or at a central school.

See replies to Items 8 and 18.

5. A good idea where practicable. It is scarcely so in this unit as the men come from so many different districts.

6. I do not consider this necessary in the Punjab for annual training. There are no mosquitoes in the winter, and there is not sufficient room for beds in tents. In inclement weather the men can draw straw as bedding on the recommendation of the Medical Officer.

7. Yes, certainly.

8. This would be of great benefit, as then a Territorial unit would not be absolutely dependant on Regular Army Instructors.

9. An excellent plan. I would further suggest that the Company Havildar Major and the Quartermaster Havildar of each Company should attend the preliminary training to look after the recruits of their companies as regards rations and camp discipline.

10. This would ensure having a Medical Officer who would take a personal interest in the men, instead of the sudden arrival of a Territorial unit putting an extra strain on the local Medical Officers as at present.

11. No opinion to offer

12. No opinion to offer.

13. See reply to Item 1.

It was once suggested to me by a Deputy Commissioner that a kind of Territorial reserve might be formed from Governments, such as clerks in civil offices.

His idea was that such men should be trained for as long as they could be spared at the same time as a Provincial Battalion was being trained. With some knowledge of soldiering he considered that such men might come in useful in Districts, especially outlying ones, in case of trouble locally. The main idea strikes me as quite sound as, by forming units of this nature, the aspirations of the educated classes could be to some extent fulfilled, and as shewn in answer to Item 1 above such men are not worth their place in a unit which should be part of an efficient second line army.

14. No opinion to offer.

15. (4) I don't see that much benefit can accrue from any closer working as the present system of training is so different.

16. See reply to Item 3 above. It is too late now to have a long preliminary training in a unit which has been three years in existence as the number of recruits who would benefit is very small.

17. I certainly consider that a permanent staff of some kind should be found to obviate the necessity of hunting round for Instructors every year. I would suggest 1 regular Indian Officer per Company instead of 1 per 2 platoons.

I find that if there are a large number of regular Indian officers present for a training the Territorial officers avoid a lot of work they should do for themselves and get to rely too much on the Indian Officer to keep their commands going.

18. See replies to Items 4 and 8.

I have not yet had the opportunity to see the effect of an annual platoon commander's course but I feel sure that it is going to be the best way to train the Territorial officer. I also agree that in addition officers must attend courses at Army schools, most especially in Musketry and Physical Training.

19. There should be some promotion test to qualify an N. C. O. for promotion. If some test were laid down the young Non-Commissioned Officer who shewed keenness would almost certainly ask to be allowed to undergo voluntary training.

E.—Recommended amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules.

1. I agree with the proposal in para. 4 of Annexure I. Some legislation is urgently desired to allow of an officer being discharged if his services are not considered desirable.

2. I agree with the suggestion in Annexure II.

3. The proposals in Annexure III appear to cover cases of this nature, but I can offer no opinion as I have had no experience.

4. I agree with the proposed change, which I presume will also include an Officer who transfers.

5. I concur. Rule 12 is at present very vague.

6. I agree with the proposed amendment to Rule 17. Personally I absolutely refuse leave during training unless a man can go and do what he wants to between afternoon parade one day and morning parade the next day, or between Saturday afternoon and Monday morning.

7 Yes.

Statement by Major H. W. Goldfrap, Adjutant, 11/5th Mahratta Light Infantry.

2. My statement is divided up as follows :—

A. A brief history and account of the present state of this unit of the Indian Territorial Force.

B. General consideration of the steps which might be taken to expand and improve provincial units and render them an efficient second line for the regular army.

C. The suggestions of the Questionnaire of which I am in favour.

D. Summary of my views.

3. My opinions are based on the experience gained during the three years I have been Adjutant and Administrative Commandant of the 11/5th Mahratta Light Infantry, which is the only provincial unit constituted for Bombay Presidency, and twenty years' service in the regular army.

My remarks do not apply to the University Training Corps or the Parsee Battalions.

My suggestions are made in the light of my own experience only and would require to be considered in conjunction with those put forward by other units and provinces.

A.—11/5TH MAHRATTA LIGHT INFANTRY, HEADQUARTER, BELGAUM.

1921.—This unit was constituted in 1921 and I took up my present appointment in October of that year.

After a preliminary tour of the whole Presidency and interviews with members of the Government and the Commissioners of the Divisions I was brought to the conclusion that the chances of obtaining applicants of the class required to form an efficient nucleus for the unit were confined to the better known recruiting areas of the Central and Southern Divisions of the Presidency.

As my staff was confined to one clerk and it was considered inadvisable to use the regular army recruiting staff or the Civil administrative officials it was necessary to supplement the Presidency Advisory Committee by District Branch Committees, consisting of non-officials nominated by the Collector of the District in order to—

(*a*) disseminate information about and find the most suitable applicants for the Indian Territorial Force;

(*b*) advise on conditions in the District and the most suitable time for training.

At the first meeting of these Committees I attended to give such information as they required, and the necessary application forms and instructions were issued to the Committee and to Collectors for distribution to Mamlatdars to whom applicants were referred for information.

1922.—By the middle of 1922 therefore there was in each of some 12 Districts an organisation to make the Indian Territorial Force known, find suitable applicants for it and send their names forward for enrolment.

Indian ex-officers Associations and pensioned Indian Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and men were informed by letter, and by personal interviews and lectures at the gathering of ex-soldiers to meet the Prince of Wales when he visted Poona. At a special meeting of interested members of the Legislative Assembly at Poona, the objects of the force and the terms and conditions of service were fully explained to them.

At a Durbar of the Sardars of the Deccan, His Excellency the Governor asked those present to try and recruit platoons for the Indian Territorial Force with the object of getting a commission therein.

By the end of 1922 however only one suitable officer and 142 men had come forward for enrolment and the greater proportion of these were from North Kanara District where the Branch Committee has done most excellent work.

1923.—In 1923 the first training were held the strength being then a little under one company, and directly after training a circular sent out to all Districts in which there were Branch Committees showing the numbers at present enrolled from each District and asking Committees to use every effort to raise a District Platoon of 40 men.

1924.—By March 1924 when the second training was held the enrolled strength was 5 officers and 280 men. Every publicity was given to photographs and accounts of the training camp and Districts again given their figures and asked to complete their platoons up to strength before the end of the year.

Present State.—The following figures give a summary of the movement up to date :—

Strength.—Total applications. Difficult to check accurately as less than 50 per cent. appear for enrolment when called upon to do so, and do not return their forms.

Total medically examined	532
Total enrolled	408
Present strength	295
Wastage up to date from all causes ... about 15 per cent. per annum.	

Composition.—A great number of castes are represented in the above figures, namely, Brahmin, Lingayat, Jain, Mahratta, Mussulman, Bandari, Telugu, Namdhari, Christian, etc., etc.

The best form of organisation is therefore a question of considerable difficulty, but with the idea of encouraging recruiting and stimulating a friendly rivalry between Districts, the men have been organised as far as caste permits, by District platoons.

Education.—The degree of education varies from complete illiteracy to B.A. (passed as well as failed) and B.Sc. The average standard may be taken as ability to read and write the vernaculars (chiefly Mahratti, Urdu and Canarese) though quite a number talk English.

Training.—At present each year recruits are as numerous as those who have done one or two trainings, and preliminary training has had to be omitted so far, as few men will consent to be absent from their homes and occupations for 56 days consecutively.

The training therefore has been confined to elementary parade work and elementary musketry.

At the end of 28 days the men can perform the simple ceremonial required by an inspection parade ending up with a march past. At the last training 61 per cent. qualified in the Territorial Musketry course.

Every effort is made to stimulate a healthy rivalry between sections, platoons and companies by weekly competitions in drill and prizes at the end of training for drill and musketry.

Training is carried out according to a detailed and progressive programme prepared beforehand.

Officers.—There are at present 5 officers gazetted in this unit—three of which are still on probation. Before appearing for their retention examination they can be attached to a regular unit for two months on full pay and allowances if they wish, but it is difficult to see how one of them, who is a professor in a Science College and another who is the manager in a large printing press, will be able to get away for three months in one year. Only two of the five have had any previous military experience.

Recruiting.—The present rate of recruiting works out at about 120 recruits per annum. Most of these are found, not by the District Committees, but by applicants for a commission, vacancies for which of course depend on the numbers enrolled. It has been pointed out to Committees that the finding of suitable applicants in the required numbers can only be done by them, but with the exception of North Kanara District no Committee has found more than 10 or twelve men from an entire District and some have only found one or two out of a population of probably more than half a million people. Provided a man is medically fit the standards of height and chest are not strictly enforced.

B.—GENERAL CONSIDERATION OF THE STEPS WHICH MIGHT BE TAKEN TO EXPAND AND IMPROVE PROVINCIAL TERRITORIAL UNITS AND RENDER THEM AN EFFICIENT SECOND LINE FOR THE REGULAR INDIAN ARMY.

Inferences.—From the above facts it appears that—

(1) The Indian Territorial Force has not made much progress in this Presidency.

(2) The present rate of wastage is much too high.

(3) The standard of training of officers and men, unless they can spare more time which is doubtful, is likely to remain largely elementary.

(4) District Committees have not, with one exception, been successful in finding even 40 men from a District.

(5) That a satisfactory organisation must always be difficult owing to the large admixture of castes from which the men are drawn and the prevalence of caste prejudices.

Object of the I. T. F.—The popularity of the Force could easily be increased by a large increase in present pay and allowances and a large decrease in its liabilities for service. The problem of creating an efficient second line reserve, which is the object of the Force, is very much more difficult.

A second line reserve connotes a force which can be called up and put into the fighting line, wherever that may be, as soon as it is required. How soon it might be required is not possible to say, but it is certain that two to three weeks would be required to mobilize this unit and six to eight months' continuous and intensive training before the unit was fit to fight. It would also require a cadre of regular officers and Non-Commissioned Officers to train and lead it.

Increase of Training Periods.—By increasing the present periods of annual and preliminary training the efficiency of the unit could certainly be raised, but it is equally certain that this could not be done without serious detriment to the ordinary occupations by which the men earn their living and would therefore only form a fresh deterrent to their joining.

Increase of Pay.—No practicable increase of pay would be sufficient to induce an agriculturist, for example, to leave his fields every year, in time of peace, for periods which would seriously interfere with sowing and harvesting, and in this province it is only for about six weeks in March and April that the small holder can get away. Clerical and other professions could seldom get away for more than a month and even this means using the whole of their annual leave.

Further any increase of pay over the present rates, which are those laid down for the regular army, might well cause serious discontent especially when the regular army and Territorial Force were on active service together.

Main Considerations.—It would seem then, that if the efforts to be made to improve the I. T. F. are not to defeat their own object, the following are the main considerations to be borne in mind—

(1) The necessity for obtaining the best possible class of material for military training by an increased publicity and persuasion by voluntary agencies such as District Committees.

(2) Pay and Allowances are not and cannot be made the attraction without defeating the objects for which the I. T. F. was created. The standards existing in the regular army must be the basis of pay in the Second Line Reserve, but allowances should be made adequate to cover the expenses of men joining the Force and to induce them to make themselves efficient by a regular attendance at trainings.

(3) The leisured classes are practically non-existent in this part of the Province and the casual labourer is not of the type required. The agricultural and professional classes are not likely to be able to devote more than 28 consecutive days in the case of the men and perhaps 56 in the case of the officers to annual training. All extra periods of training must therefore be voluntary.

C.—CONSIDERATION OF QUESTIONNAIRE.

In view of what has been said above I am in favour of the following suggestions—

A.—Pay and Allowances.

No. 11. Increased road allowance.

No. 12. Remission of land revenue to enrolled men; or

No. 13. Bonus on completion of each training to the satisfaction of the Commanding Officer.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

No. 1. Increase of period of probation of officers.

No. 3. Free issue of sword and binoculars to officers and annual clothing allowance.

No. 8. Outline of Act and Rules, and regulations, pay and allowances to be issued in simple language for translation into vernaculars and distribution by Local Governments.

C.—Methods of Selecting Candidates for Commissions.

No. 4. All candidates for a commission to first enrol in the ranks.

No. 5. Recommendation of a board of officers of the unit to be required before an officer is passed for final retention.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

No. 2. District Advisory Committees.

No. 7. Company Commanders to join 7 days before and remain 7 days after training.

No. 10. I. T. F. Medical officer to be attached during training.

No. 15. (4) Closer liasion between U. T. C. and provincial units.

No. 17. Provision of permanent staff of Instructors.

Terms of service of clerical and menial staff to be the same as for other permanent employees of Government.

E.—Recommended Amendments to I. T. F. Act and Rules.

No. 1. To amend Section 5.

No. 6. To amend Rule 17.

No. 7. District Advisory Committees.

D.—SUMMARY.

I do not see that Government can play more than a secondary part in the improvement of the I. T. F.

What is really wanted is a progressive education of the people to the Territorial Force idea by voluntary agencies. If men can be induced to join because they realise the necessity for the force and for the best and most suitable men to join it, we shall get on fast enough. But as long as they join, or induce others to join simply to get what material benefit they can oct of it for themselves, we shall get nowhere.

I still believe in District Committees provided men can be found to serve on them in this spirit and I think the services of a District should be recognised by giving publicity to the number and quality of the men it provides.

More money will undoubtedly be necessary but after the removal of existing anomalies in allowances it should be devoted to publicity and the maintenance of the cadre of trained instructors required to instruct the men now and to bring the unit quickly to active service standard in case of war.

More than anything however we want a new spirit of unofficial interest and active co-operation in the building up of an efficient second line reserve at a reasonable expense of time and money.

Statement by Major Hamill, Officer Commanding, 1st (Bombay) Battalion, U. T. C.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1—2. Not applicable.

3. See reply to A.-15.

4—7. Not applicable.

8. U. T. C. Officers do not receive pay.

9 U. T. C. Officers do not receive pay.

10. Agree.

11—14. Not applicable.

15. Agree.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. Agree if applicable to U. T. C. Officers. As these Officers are not eligible for attachment to Regular Units and U. T. C. personnel do not receive pay there is no opportunity to learn interior economy, etc.

2. Not applicable.

3. Consider that Outfit Allowance is sufficient to cover cost of purchasing swords and binoculars. Suggests annual clothing allowance Rs. 20 for U. T. C. Officers.

4. Not applicable.

5. Agree.

6—8. Not applicable.

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commissions in I. T. F.

1. The present system in this Unit of selecting Officers from the Staffs of Colleges in which platoons are formed is the only satisfactory one. Experience has proved that it is undesirable for these Officers to pass through the ranks.

2—6. See C.-1.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, etc.

1—3. Not applicable.

4. Agree, if U. T. C. Officers are given pay while at the school.

5. Not applicable.

6. Agree but an increased scale of tentage will be necessary.

7. Not applicable.

8. See reply to D.-4.

9—14. Not applicable.

15. (1) Agree, no necessity to overhaul present system of granting commissions.

(2)—(5) Agree.

(6) Do not agree.

(7)—(8) Agree.

16—17. Not applicable.

18. See reply to D.-4.

19. Not applicable.

E. 1—7. Agree.

Statement by Captain Mir Jaffar Khan, M.B.E., I.O.M., Sardar Bahadar (N.-W. F. Province).

A.—Pay and Allowance.

1. The sum of Rs. 2 per mensem, which it is suggested should be given to the Members of the Indian Territorial Force during the non-training period, is too small an amount. In my opinion Rs. 3 per mensem should be given with an increment of Re. 1 after every two years until six years are completed and the maximum of Rs. 6 per mensem is reached.

2. I prefer the system of paying road and subsistence allowance to the one under which the Members of the Indian Territorial Force would be paid for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centre. I however suggest that the present road and subsistence allowance should be increased.

3. I agree with the proposal that Members of the U. T. C. should be given increased travelling allowance when proceeding to and from their place of parade or camp.

4. I suggest that a handsome amout as Messing allowance should be given to those Indian Territorial Force Officers only who are Lieutenants or possess higher Commission.

5. I am of the opinion that the annual allowance for the upkeep and repair of clothing should be increased to Re. 1.

6. I agree with the suggestion that recruits of the Indian Territorial Force should get the same travelling and subsistence allowance as allowed to recruits of the regular Army.

7. I suggest that the allowance for mufti clothing should be given to the recruits at the rate of Rs. 25. People would be tempted to join the Indian Territorial Force if recruits return to their homes decently dressed after the training period. In my opinion the good dress of the recruits would popularize the force more than anything else.

8. I am not in favour of abolishing all pay for Indian Territorial Force Officers and making their rank a purely honorary one.

9. I agree with the proposal that Indian Territorial Force Officers' pay should be increased to a rate compatible with the grant to them of Honorary King's Commissions.

10. I think that it is very necessary that a hand allowance should be authorised for Indian Territorial Force Units similar to that laid down for A. F. (I.) Units.

11. I am of opinion that road allowance to approved applicants for enrolment and to enrolled men of the Indian Territorial Force when embodied for training or service should be annas two per mile.

12. I prefer the grant of a retaining fee to enrolled men of the Indian Territorial Force to the remission to them of land revenue, for the reason that all members of the Indian Territorial Force would not be liable to the Government for the same amount of land-revenue. In the case of one member land revenue may be Rs. 5 per annum while in the case of another it may be Rs. 500 per annum.

13. I believe a monthly retaining fee for the non-training period would be more acceptable to the members than the bonus. I am therefore not in favour of the suggestion contained in item A.-13.

14. I prefer the suggestions contained in items A.-2 and 11 to the one contained in A.-14.

15. I totally agree with the suggestions contained in item 15 (*i*) (*a* and *b*) and (*ii*) (*a* and *b*).

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. I agree with the proposal that the number of years in which an Indian Territorial Force Officer has to pass his retention examination should be increased from 2 to 3 years, as a three years' course would make them more efficient and well-trained.

2. (*a* and *b*). I am of the opinion that no separate clubs should be maintained for the officers of the Force. However if the officers of the Force prove themselves really deserving, they may be allowed to become members of the clubs of the British officers of the Regular Army. If this suggestion is approved, officers of the Force would learn many things by their contact and association with their brother officers of the Regular Army. In this way a lot of xtra expenditure would be done away with.

3. I agree with the proposal that I. T. F. Officers should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance.

4. I am in favour of a free issue of mufti clothing being given to I. T. F. N. C. Os. to take to their homes after training.

5. I am in favour of Territorial weeks being held at convenient centres in Provinces for sports and shooting.

6. I agree with the suggestion that Provincial names should be given to I. T. F. units. For in this case units would have a claim upon the sympathy of a full Province.

7. I suggest that members of units should be given only that ration which suits them. For instance, for a unit composed exclusively of Bengalees the most proper thing for ration would be rice.

8. I agree with the suggestion that an outline of the I. T. F. Act and Rules and all orders referring to pay, etc., should be prepared in English in very simple language and issued to Local Governments for dissemination by them in appropriate vernaculars.

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

1. In my opinion the present system of selecting candidates for commissions is not satisfactory.

2, 3, 4, 5 and 6. In place of the suggestions contained in items C.—2, 3, 4, 5 and 6 I would suggest that candidates for commissions should be selected as follows :

(*a*) One-third should be selected by the President of the Advisory Committee in consultation with the Administrative Commandant of the unit and the Chief Civil Officer (Deputy Commissioner) of the District concerned. The names of the approved candidates should then be submitted to the General Officer Commanding District and the Local Government before submission to Army Head Quarters.

In the selection of candidates for direct commission due regard should be had to the candidate's education, family status, physique, etc.

(*b*) Two-thirds of the candidates should be selected from amongst the ranks with due regard to candidates :

(i) Power of command.

(ii) Physical fitness.

(iii) Aptitude for military service.

(iv) Education.

(v) Previous record of service (if any).

(vi) Local influence.

(vii) Social status.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

1. I agree with the suggestion that Government servants should not be permitted to enrol in provincial units of the I. T. F.

2. I suggest that Advisory Committees should be constituted for Districts instead of Provinces, the number of members not being less than five. But at the same time I suggest that Provincial Advisory Committees should not be abolished. This Committee should contain only the seniormost member of the District Committee. I further suggest that both Committees should contain one Local Territorial Force Officer and one Military member.

108887

3. As regards the period of training of I. T. F. Provincial units, I suggest that preliminary training should be increased to 3 months and the periodical training should be for 28 days.

4. I prefer the alternative contained in item D. 18 to the present one.

5. I am in favour of rifle clubs being raised during the non-training period. For this it would be necessary that units should retain some arms and ammunition. I therefore agree with the suggestion that permission should be given to units to retain permanently a fixed number of arms and ammunition.

6. I am in favour of beds and mosquito curtains being given to each man.

7. In my opinion company commanders should remain with the unit headquarters 7 days before and 7 days after the training period.

8. I agree with the suggestion that provisicn should be made for vacancies for I. T. F. officers and N.C.O.s at physical training and weapon training courses at Army Schools.

9. I am in favour of at least 16 I. T. F. N.C.Os. being called up 10 days before training commences to be put through a short course of instruction in drill.

10. I think it of the utmost importance that I. T. F. Medical officers should be attached to each provincial unit during the training period.

11. I am in favour of the suggestion that I. T. F. Medical Corps should be organised into units.

12. I agree with the suggestion that the Bihar and Orissa Companies of the 11th/19th Hyderabad Regiment should be separated from the Bengal Companies.

13. I am in favour of the suggestion that a section of the I. T. F. should be formed with liabilities similar to those of the Auxiliary Force (India) and trained on the same system.

14. I have no objection if Electrical and Mechanical and Motor Transport Companies should be constituted for Calcutta and Bombay respectively.

16. The period of preliminary training should not exceed three months. The training period should be fixed for that time of the year when it is not harvest time. For instance, training period in N.-W. F. Province ought to commence from 15th December and last till 15th March.

17. I agree with the suggestion that a permanent staff of one regular Indian officer per two platoons and one regular N.C.O. per platoon of the enrolled strength of each Territorial Force battalion should be attached to the affiliated Training Battalions under conditions similar to those obtaining at present for British officers seconded as Company Commanders of I. T. F. battalions.

18. I am in favour of the suggestion that platoon commanders courses should be continued and provision should be made for the attendance of I. T. F. Officers at the physical training, weapon training and signalling courses at Army Schools.

19. I agree with the suggestion that Lance Naiks and Naiks before promotion to Naik and Havildar respectively should be attached, with their own consent to a regular battalion for a period not exceeding 2 months.

Statement by Major T. F. O'Donnell, M.C., B.A., Registrar, Lucknow University [3rd (U. P.) Battalion U. T. C.]

Question No.	Reply.
A—1	No.
A—2	Yes.
A—3	"
A—4	No.
A—5	Yes.
A—6	No.
A—7	"
A—8	"
A—9	Yes.
A—10	"
A—11	"
A—12	"
A—13	No.
A—14	"
A—15	Yes.
B—1	No.
B—2	Premature.
B—3	No.
B—4	"
B—5	Premature.
B—6	Yes.
B—7	"
B—8	"
C—1	No.
C—2	"
C—3	"
C—4	Yes.
C—5	"
C—6	I agree with this alternative, with the addition of the exception of any one who has completed two years' instruction in a University Training Corps.
D—1	They should be allowed.
D—2	Yes.
D—3 (*a*)	"
D—3 (*b*)	No.
D—4	Yes.
D—5	Impracticable.
D—6	Yes.
D—7	"
D—8	"
D—9	"
D—10	"
D—11	Premature.
D—12	
D—13	
D—14	
D—15 (1)	Yes.
D—15 (3)	"
D—15 (4)	"
D—15 (5)	Premature.
D—15 (6)	Yes.
D—15 (7)	"
D—15 (8)	"
D—16 17, 18 and 19	
E—1	Yes.
E—2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 7	

Statement by Lieut. E.E. Garate, The Calcutta Battalion (A. F. I.).

A.—Pay and Allowance.

1. The suggestion is good but the retaining fee should be paid at the end of the training season to only those members who have made themselves efficient and extra efficient.

4. If the extra allowance suggested is being granted to the Officers of the Auxiliary Force Units, it should be admissible for the I. T. F. Officers Mess also.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

5. An excellent suggestion and which could be worked in conjunction with the Auxiliary Force Units during the period of the Camp of Exercise.

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commission in the Indian Territorial Force.

4. This suggestion is sound and if applied also to the Auxiliary Force Units without Colour distinctions, would, apart from the fact of removing racial distinction, show better results.

That this Conference recommends to the Military Authorities—

6. At present there is no distinct Unit which Anglo-Indian University students can enter. This being so I do fall in with the proposal that the Anglo-Indian youths be permitted to enter the U. T. C., at present confined to Indians only, with the two-fold reason that it may help to remove all racial distinction which is of paramount importance, and also lessen the expenditure for maintaining an extra Unit.

Statement by Captain G. L. Hyde, Adjutant, 2nd (Calcutta Regt. U. T. C.

The points raised have been considered chiefly from a local standpoint as this is presumably what is required.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. This would be valuable as a means of keeping trace of the members if the amounts were paid monthly and would make them feel that they belonged to the Force for more than the training period. It cannot be considered as inconsistent with the militia principle but I do not consider that the majority of the members are in need of actual money nor do I consider the expense of Rs. 15,620 per annum increasing with the service of the men for each unit justifiable. Of course those who favour this proposal might point to the bonus given to members of the A. F. I. as a parallel case.

2. Certainly in Bengal subsistence allowance at 4 annas per diem is quite insufficient. A subsistence allowance of 8 annas per diem is necessary and should be paid for the actual number of days in the train and for the road journey calculated at 15 miles per day. Road allowance must depend on how the traveller is supposed to accomplish the journey. At the present rate of annas 2 per 15 miles he would have to walk and carry his kit himself for practically the whole journey. As a regular soldier is expected to do this I see no reason for altering it in the case of the I. T. F.

3. The present allowance for parade attendance is quite adequate. A small extra allowance might be necessary to cover the cost of transporting personal kit to the Annual Camp or to the station *en route* for camp. This can be met from the Training Grant. In the case of the 2nd (Calcutta) Battalion University Training Corps the annual cost is not likely to be more than Rs. 300.

4. The anomalous position of the I. T. F. Officers is bound to lead to numerous suggestions of this nature. It is certainly not necessary in the wing of the unit of which I am Adjutant. My officers are :

Two Zemindars both wealthy.

Four Deputy or Sub-Deputy Magistrates in receipt of full civil pay during training.

If required the Indian ration (value approx. Rs. 0-6-6 per diem) to which each Officer is entitled might be drawn in cash instead of in kind.

The governing point in the matter seems to be that the T. F. Officers receive pay at the same scale as Regular I. Os. and may be expected to have much the same habits.

5. This is necessary to cover the cost of washing the men's garments at the conclusion of the Camp. An extra 8 annas per man is required making a total of Re. 1.

6. This is already sanctioned and has never been objected to by the Accounts Department.

7. There seems to be no reason for incurring this expense.

B. (1) In view of the facilities given to officers to learn their work the period of two years seems ample for any one with ordinary aptitude.

(2) *a, b*. This would not be practicable in Bengal where not more than one Officer resides in any particular place.

(3) The Outfit Allowance is sufficient to cover the cost of a sword. Binoculars might be kept in Unit charge and issued when required as to I.O.'s. In view of the fact that the actual deterioration in uniform is not totally represented by the wear and tear during training, which latter should be made good out of the Officer's Pay, I favour an allowance of Rs. 25 per annum on this count.

(4) There appear to be no reasonable grounds to warrant such a suggestion.

(5) This would involve (1) a willingness or capacity on the part of Members to bear rail and living expenses in connection with the week; (2) keenness in sports and shooting in a marked degree.

I do not consider that the Members of the Unit under my command would be either willing or able to bear the necessary expense, nor do I think they are sufficiently keen about sports or shooting.

(6) This is more than necessary. That this Unit should be the Bengal Wing of the 11/19th Hyderabad Regiment is in itself a deterrent to recruiting. It should be called the Bengal Territorial Battalion and word "Hyderabad" omitted if possible.

(7) A reasonable suggestion which might easily be carried out—due regard being given to the fact that no alternative scale of rations will be available on Field Service.

C. (1) To date the present system has worked satisfactorily but undoubtedly the Advisory Committee and also the T. F. Officers of the Unit feel that their wishes should be consulted officially in the selection of further Commissioned Officers.

The argument of the T. F. Officers is that they are permanent in the Unit whereas the Adjutant is only there for a short period and that they should therefore have some say in the selection of their confrères. The Advisory Committee are inclined to decry the value of the present official inquiry into the standing of candidates and contend that their own unofficial investigations would produce better results.

My own opinion on the subject after due consideration is as follows:

(*a*) The normal method of giving Commissions in a Unit like the Bengal Wing, where men of good social standing enlist in the hope of advancement to the higher ranks should be from the Regiment.

(*b*) There is no reason why the applications of local magnates, etc., should not be considered on their merit.

So far 8 Commissions have been given as follows:

1 Deputy Magistrate 3 Sub-Deputy Magistrates 1 Clerk	...	Enlisted in the Ranks.
1 Maharanja of Dinajpur ...	...	Direct Commission.
1 Zemindar	...	A Member of the University Training Corps for one year. Direct Commission.

In the case of (*a*) men promoted from the ranks, the written opinion of the senior T. F. Officer of the Unit concerned might be obtained by the Adjutant before submitting to the District Commander.

In the case of (*b*) Direct Commissions the written opinion of the Advisory Committee might well be obtained.

Further procedure should be as at present.

D. (1) If the Local Government is prepared to sanction the enlistment of its servants, in the full knowledge of the liabilities they incur there appears to be no objection to this. The number permitted to join would naturally be strictly limited but there is no reason why Government should not encourage the movement. Well disciplined material should be available from this source.

(2) Once a Unit is up to strength the number of new recruits required annually should be small. An increase in the size of the Committee would not therefore seem necessary. The addition of a T. F. Officer would only be practical if one could be found living near the Station at which the Advisory Committee meets—usually the Head Quarters Station of the Unit.

(3) While agreeing that the more training the men get the more efficient the unit should become. Any increase in the liabilities would make recruiting much more difficult. Many men are enlisted in this Unit for whom such an increase as is suggested would be quite impossible.

(4) The arrangements for training Officers during the current year are in excess of what can be taken advantage of by the Officers and N.C.O's of this Unit. The suggestion made seems to have been acted upon already.

(5) There is no reason to suppose that this would be a success in this Unit. It depends on the keenness of the men and their proximity to Headquarters during the non-training period.

(6) The advantage of protecting a man against Malaria for one month in the year is not obvious. The Medical Authorities might be consulted.

I am not in favour of beds in Camps.

(7) As the organisation progresses this would be of great advantage to Adjutants.

(8) No Officers or N.C.O's. are likely to be sufficiently advanced to be able to take advantage of the Ordinary Courses. They should learn sufficient for their requirements during their attachments to Regular Units.

(9) This suggestion is an excellent one and would greatly facilitate training.

(10) This is already in force.

(11) An I. A. O. has already been published sanctioning this organisation. The initiation of units would appear to be dependent on local demands.

(12) This is essential, the present Official arrangement being quite unworkable. The units are separated in practice at present but no separate establishment in Wings has yet been sanctioned.

(13) This proposal rather ignores the rôle for which the I. T. F. is constituted and would, if given effect to, mean the formation of a third line in addition to a second line.

I have no doubt that the inauguration of such units would be very popular in Bengal where there is considerable keenness about any thing showy which does not involve unpleasant liabilities. The method of training which would be casual rather than thorough would also appeal.

Apart from these considerations, a demand does exist for the formation of Units on the lines of the Auxiliary Force and these would be raised at any rate in Dacca and Calcutta. The present T. F. Unit would naturally be correspondingly difficult to maintain.

The question of bringing the T. F. into line with the A. F. I. is naturally closely associated with this demand. The desire for uniformity seems to be not so much concerned with the Europeans as with the Anglo-Indians. While admitting that my opinion on this matter is of little value I have formed the following conclusions.

The two forces might be amalgamated and Units formed as follows :—

1. Volunteer Units for Europeans (Open to Anglo-Indians).	To draw no pay.
2. A. F. I. Units—(1) for Anglo-Indians, (2) for Indians.	Drawing pay during Training at T. F. Rates.

The criterion might be that the cost to Government on account of Pay and Rations of the two types of Units per mensem should be the same, *i.e.*, approx. Rs. 30.

Undoubtedly a large number of Anglo-Indians do live on Indian rates of pay and in Indian Style in their civil lives. They should therefore be prepared to undergo military training for the same pay as Indians if the need for learning the art of self-defence seems sufficiently imperative to them.

(14) This would resolve itself rapidly into a mere registration of the names of men willing to serve in case of war. The training of such Units is impractical in peace time in view of the expenditure required for equipment, and the inability of firms to dispense with skilled labour for any length of time.

(15) (1). The institution of these certificates would be an incentive to senior N.C.O.'s to word and learn about Military matters. While students are not eligible for direct commissions in the Regular Army it would not seem desirable to grant any certificates corresponding to the one which University Candidates at home require as one of the conditions of appointment to the Regular forces.

The present system of granting commissions normally to members of the Staff only is particularly difficult in a University like Calcutta where the majority of the professors, lecturers, etc., are either too old or too engrossed in professional

matters. So far in three years I have only succeeded in obtaining 2 officers of this class, (one) Lt. McDonald of the Scottish Churches College who is seconded for duty from the A. F. I. General list, (2) Hon. 2/Lt. and Jamadar A. K. Ghose, M.A., of South Suburban College. The other two Officers are students to whom it is not usually considered desirable to grant commissions. Undoubtedly the chance of obtaining a commission in the U. T. C. is a great incentive to the senior N.C.Os., many of whom will work enthusiastically for as much as 6 or 7 years to obtain such a distinction. The fact remains however that they are not as suitable in the rank as the permanent staff, as they are generally lacking in experience and broadmindedness.

3. The present grant has been sufficient to date as a largest camp hitherto held was only attended by 350 men out of 670. In any case the grant made by the Military authorities should be ample as far as one can estimate. As regards the Universities, while a general rule would be preferable the matter will probably be one which the various Universities will view differently.

4. It is difficult to see any practical steps which can be taken to secure this end. When training is further advanced Field days might be arranged for the two Units. Members of the U. T. C. should be encouraged to join the I. T. F. after leaving the University. Possibly Joint Athletic sports might be held in this Province.

5. This would be according to the local demand. As far as Medical Students are concerned, I think those in Calcutta welcome a purely Military training as a change from their College St. Johns Ambulance work. Engineering students too are quite satisfied to form a Platoon in the U. T. C.

6. The U. T. C. should be opened to all students of the University.

7. This depends on the views of individual universities. I do not think it holds in England. While agreeing that the holding of a A or B Certificate would presume increased efficiency on the part of the holder there is no reason why it should degenerate into an excuse for a lower standard in his ordinary work.

8. This would encourage the members in Musketry. The standard at present is not sufficiently high to admit of participation.

E. (1) Very necessary.

(2) No comment.

(3) (i) Could not the transfer be made direct between Administrative Commandants instead of through Districts?

(ii) Would it be possible for a man, enlisted in a certain provincial unit, to remain in that unit even if he left the province, provided that no extra expense was incurred by Government.

A small number of soldiers who left their homes for Calcutta and were transferred under these rules would be a source of difficulty on account of (1) Head gear, (2) Food.

(4) In view of the entirely different obligations incurred re-enlistment including medical re-examination seems desirable.

(5) Yes. But the Officer Commanding a U. T. C. should have the power of discharging members failing to fulfil their obligations without reference to higher authority.

(6) Desirable.

(7) Noted.

Supplementary Questionnaire.

A.—8. I do not consider that this would improve the efficiency of the Force.

9. Indian Officers in the Regular Army do not receive any increase on this score.

10. This might be attempted in certain units. I should not care to start a band in Bengal.

11. This allowance would seem excessive.

12. Would be an incentive and would increase the popularity of the Force.

13. I am not competent to judge whether the additional expense would be justified by any increased efficiency in the Force.

15. (i) The present rates of T. A. for U. T. C. members are adequate in Calcutta. Extra expense on account of transport of kit when attending the annual Camp has been met from the Training Grant.

(ii) Officers' T. A. is necessary and should be as here suggested.

B.—8. Useful.

C.—5. A reasonable suggestion, if the senior T. F. Officers' opinions are of value.

D.—17. So long as an instructional staff is available from local units this does not seem necessary. It would, however, regularise the present procedure.

Memorandum on the relations of University Corps with Universities.

There is a strong tendency at the present day to encourage military training as an integral part of the education of the youth of India. While considering the talk of compulsory Military Training for all students as an impractical vision and whilst strongly disapproving of any attempt towards allowing proficiency in that Training to form an excuse for a lower standard in scholastic attainments, I am strongly in favour of making the University Corps more an integral part of the normal students' career and more under University control.

Let us take the concrete case of the Calcutta University Training Corps in the light of the past three years' experience. The following points emerge very clearly: (i) there is a great deal of initial keenness to join the Corps, (ii) the annual turnover of members is absurdly large (approx. 50 per cent.), (iii) beyond the authority to discharge the defaulting members the adjutant has very little power to compel a continuity of attendance, and experiences considerable difficulty in getting into touch with absentees and in compelling them to return kit issued to them.

A reorganisation on the following lines is suggested:—The Educational Authorities of the province should move the University concerned with a view to ascertaining which of its colleges are desirous of maintaining a platoon or platoons in the U. T. C. The colleges electing to do this should be prepared to nominate a suitable member of their staff (with an allowance if necessary) to take complete charge of the college unit and, in particular, under rules made by the college, to ensure the attendance of members on parades, to draw kit for his unit from the Quartermaster's stores and to be responsible for the return of the kit of any discharged members. Under these provisions any student enlisting would at once realise that any omission in his Corps duties would be liable to prejudice his career as a student, and the colleges, in close touch with the Corps through their staff could readily estimate the value of their unit and dispense with it if it proved unsatisfactory. As a minor point in the working of the scheme parades would be arranged to fit in with the routine of each college and complete units would parade at one time.

If this suggestion were adopted the adjutant would remain responsible for the training and organisation of the Corps, but platoon Organisation and control would be in the hands of the Educational Authorities.

Statement by Mr. S. N. Mallick, M.A., B.L. (Bengal).

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. The suggestion is a good one and is worth an experiment. The success will depend on the class of people who are expected to join the I. T. F. In case of men of higher social standing there is the risk of their sense of vanity being wounded by such a proposal. Rs. 2, however, seems to be too small, but I can't recommend any increase not knowing the total amount involved.

2. I would accept the latter suggestion if that does not entail a very much heavier expenditure on this head.

3. Not necessary if at least annas 5 out of the annas 6 due be paid to them. A deduction of annas 2 for the entertainments fund is too much.

4. I accept the suggestion provided the increase is reasonable.

5. I think annas 8 per man is too small and it may be raised to Re. 1.

6. This seems quite reasonable.

7. I think Rs. 22 is too high, Rs. 10 is quite enough and Rs. 12 would be ample.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. The suggestion is quite acceptable.

2. (*a*) The idea is a good one and an experiment may be made.

(*b*) Yes—but not in a lavish scale.

3. Yes.

4. I do not think it is necessary.

5. This is a very useful suggestion and should be accepted.

6. Yes, provincial and local names should whenever possible be given and they would be attractive. But misleading names (*e.g.*, "Hyderabad Regiment" for the Calcutta University Corps, etc.) should be avoided.

7. This suggestion if given effect to will no doubt add to the popularity of the Force and I say so from a certain amount of personal knowlege in the matter.

C.—Method of selecting candidates for commissions in the I. T. F.

1. Present system is not quite satisfactory.

2. Yes the suggestion is a good one; but too much political aspect should not be given to the selection through the intervention of the Chief Civil Officer of the District.

3. The suggestion is an excellent one.

4. The suggestion is an excellent one. A certain amount of educational qualification (not of a high character) may also be insisted upon.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally.

1. I am opposed to this suggestion. This will entail the result of lowering the status of the Force in public estimation. (N.B.)

2. This is acceptable.

3. The period of training may be—

Preliminary training	...	...	...	56 days.
Periodical training	...	...	...	28 days.

Help should be rendered by Government so far as possible and whenever necessary to secure for the men leave from their ordinary work.

4. The idea of a Central School is an excellent one and should not be given up for want of funds. Decent beginning should be made as soon as possible.

5. This suggestion should be given effect to.

6. Yes. So far as Bengal is concerned there must be mosquito-curtains (of the less expensive type) given to the men. Camp cots of an inexpensive type might be provided for beds as I have noticed serious trouble to the men in February last in Calcutta owing to heavy showers. In a damp country to sleep on wet ground—particularly in winter—may affect the health and efficiency of the men.

7. Yes.

8. Yes.

9. Undoubtedly.

10. Yes, but not too many of them.

12. May be.

13. Yes.

14. Yes; but the scale need not be expensive.

15. The suggestions made by the Universities Conference seem to be very good.

N.B.—I feel very strongly on the subject and if it were possible I would have gone so far as to say that in the case of Government servants it should be under certain circumstances compulsory. A post under Government is still looked upon with respect and to exclude them from the I. T. F. would imply that it is meant only for low class people.

E.—Recommended Amendments to the I. T. F Act and Rules.

1. The amendment may be made.

2. Do. do.

3. Do. do.

4. Do. do.

5. Do. do.

6. Do. do.

7. The amendment may be made but the necessity for District Advisory Committees has not yet arisen but representative and active District Recruiting Committees may be established with some advantage.

Supplementary Questionnaire.

Answers.

A.—8. I do not approve of the suggestion in respect of all officers, but provision may be made for some Hony. Officers so that men having competence and belonging to the higher ranks of society may also be attracted.

9. This suggestion may be accepted.

10. This has been desired and seems to be useful.

11. This may be accepted.

12. Remission of land revenue may not touch the men at all in some of the Provinces, *e.g.*, Bengal. For the purpose of keeping touch with the Force a retaining fee is likely to have more effect being purely personal.

13. It is difficult to anticipate the result of this suggestion particularly on recruitment; but as a general proportion it is no doubt sound.

14. Not having the new para. 29-0, A. R. I., Volume X, before me it is difficult for me to answer the question but as a matter of principle no difference need exist on this head between the Regular Army and the I. T. F. Such differences are irritating.

15. (i) (*a*) The suggestion may be accepted.

(*b*) Do. do.

(ii) (*a*) Do. do.

B.—8. The suggestion may be accepted.

C.—5. The certificate should have to be signed by two non-official members of the Advisory Board.

6. This suggestion seems to me to be better than those in items C.-2, 3, 4 and 5.

D.—16. I very much wish that it could be increased to six months but under the present circumstances six months at a stretch and just at the commencement may, I fear, act as a great deterrent.

17. This seems to be desirable but I am not competent to give any opinion on a technical matter like this.

18. I think the idea of central schools is better; such schools are also likely to have a good deal of moral effect.

Not knowing the details of the system suggested in the alternative I do not feel competent to give any opinion.

19. The suggestion seems to be a very desirable one. But I venture to think that the designations "Naiks", "Lance Naiks" and "Havildars", etc., are not much acceptable to men from this (Bengal) Province. More acceptable names (in which the men are likely to feel a pride) may be selected for Bengal men.

Statement by the Provincial Advisory Committee, United Provinces.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. As it has been experienced that without there being any retaining fee for the non-training period desirable recruits have not been attracted it is suggested that Rs. 2 p. m. be fixed as retaining fee up to 2 years service and Rs. 2-8-0 from 2 to 4 years service and Rs. 3 p. m. from 4 to 6 years service.

Note.—As at present there is no proper provision for enforcing the men to join the annual training, it is recommended that this pay be allowed to accumulate and disbursed to the recipients when they have come for the annual training.

2. No increment in the present road and subsistence allowance which seems to be adequate is recommended.

The members of the I. T. F., however, should be paid for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centre.

3. The Committee agrees to the proposal for increased travelling allowance to the members of the University Training Corps.

4. The Committee does not understand why should there be a separate messing allowance given to the I. T. F. officers who aspire to the status of King's commissioned officers who do not receive any such allowance.

5. The allowance of annas 8 per man per mensem should be increased to the Re. 1 per man per mensem or Rs. 12 per annum. This increased allowance would cover the cost of wasting the kits and replacing articles damaged by unfair wear and tear or lost by neglect.

6. The answer has already been met under A.-2.

A.—7 and B.—4. The Committee recommends that an allowance of Rs 22 to all the I. T. F. men and N. C. O.'s to cover the cost of 1 suit of Mufti clothes which should consist of " white undress uniform " as worn by the regular unit of Indian Army. This allowance would only be allowed when the men have completed their recruits course and first annual training.

The Committee further recommends that this white undress uniform should include one set of the regimental buttons, shoulder badges, and Pugri badges. Any loss or damage to the first issue should be made good from the clothing allowance mentioned under A.-5 or A.-1.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. Considering the annual training period is only of a short duration, the Committee recommends the retention examination period to be increased to 3 years from 2 years.

2. The Committee thinks the word clubs mentioned under 2(*a*) and 2(*b*) refers to mess already mentioned under A(4) and agrees with the recommendations mentioned in the questionnaire.

3. The Committee recommends that the I. T. F. officers should be given a free issue of swords, binoculars and revolvers also. They should, however, not be entitled to any annual clothing allowance beyond the initial outfit allowance as is the case with the King's Commissioned Officer.

At the termination of their agreement these officers should have the option of returning their swords, binoculars and revolvers or retaining them on payment.

4. This has been replied to under A.-7.

5. The " territorial weeks " are recommended and it is suggested that best time for these weeks should be at the end of the annual training.

6. The Committee thinks it desirable that the units should be given their local names for the sake of identification such as 11-7th Rajputs may be called the Oudh Territorial Battalions, the 12-7th Rajputs may be called the Agra Territorial Battalion.

7. The Committee understands that the system recommended is already in vogue

C.—The Committee does not think the present system to be quite satisfactory and recommends the following procedure to be adopted for selecting candidates for commission in the I. T. F. :—

(*a*) the initial selection should be made by a Committee consisting of (1) O. C. of the regiments, (2) a Senior Territorial Officer and (3) the Company Commander,

(*b*) the selected candidate's name should then be submitted to the Provincial Advisory Committee and approved by the same,

(*c*) the name of the candidate approved by the Provincial Advisory Committee should then be submitted to the Governor of the Province in Council acting with his ministers as a whole and if approved,

(*d*) the name will then be submitted to the District Commander for being forwarded to higher authorities with a view to granting of the commission.

D.—1. The Committee do not recommend that Government servants as a whole should be precluded from joining the Provincial unit of the I. T. F. They do, however, think that certain classes of Government servants, *e.g.*, Police, Jails department or any other special department whose duties would not generally allow them to work outside their department in time of war should be kept out.

2. The Committee recommends that the number of members to the Provincial Advisory Committee should be increased to 5 instead of 3 and that the Provincial Committee should be retained. The District Advisory Committees may advantageously be created to help the recruitments, etc., but should work under the Provincial Advisory Committee. A local territorial officer in the opinion of this Committee should make a very useful member of the District Advisory Committees.

3. (*b*) The Committee suggests preliminary training for 56 days and periodical training for 56 days should be the periods recommended.

4. The Committee agrees to the starting of a central school for the officers of the Territorial Force as suggested in D.-4, and thinks it highly desirable.

5. The Committee agrees to the recommendations under D.-5, and thinks that this will mean a great encouragement to the I. T. F. and to the U. T. C. movements. They are, however, alive to great caution being exercised in the matter of protecting the armoury.

6. The Committee agrees to the supply of mosquito curtain when recommended by a medical authority but is afraid that the supply of beds to all the rank and file would probably mean a great disorganisation of the camps.

7. The suggestion is accepted and strongly recommended.

8. This procedure is expected to develop gradually.

9. The Committee agrees to and welcomes the proposal.

10. Do. do.

11. Do. do.

12. The Committee do not consider themselves competent or in a position to judge.

13. The Committee do not think it advisable to narrow the liabilities of the I. T. F. at present anyhow.

Should the Government however agree to a previous recommendation of this Committee, *viz.*, the creation of a separate Indian Militia on lines similar to the Auxiliary Force "India" the Committee will then recommend the liabilities of this newly created Militia Force, to be limited on the same lines as those of the Auxiliary Force.

14. The Committee are not competent to judge.

15. (1) The Committee agrees to the institution of A and B certificates in U. T. C. and recommends the system for granting commissions in the U. T. C. to be on the same lines as in the I. T. F. as recommended under C.

NOTE.—The Provincial Advisory Committee before forwarding the name to the Government shall consult the Principal of the College.

15. (3) The Committee agrees to the proposal.

15. (4) This is highly desirable.

15. (5) The Committee agrees.

15. (6) The Committee do not object to the Anglo-Indians being permitted to enter the U. T. C. as long as they are members of the University and will conform to the general rules and regulations of the University Training Corps.

15. (7) The proposal is accepted and recommended.

15. (8) The proposal seems highly desirable.

E.—In view of the changes that the recommendations made under A, B, C and D would involve and anomalies pointed out in the annexures, the Committee agrees with the recommended amendments to the I. T. F. Act and rules mentioned under E.

Supplementary Questionnaire.

A.—8. The Committee are not in favour of abolishing all pay for I. T. F. officers. They think that at the present stage it is highly expedient to have the pay attached to these officers.

9. The Committee while agreeing to the increased rate of pay to the I. T. F. officers are afraid if the same is made compatible with the grant to them of Hony. King's Commission it will create anomalies in cards of Jamadars and Subedars of the regular army.

10. The Committee agrees to the recommendation where a band can be organised and which latter seems desirable.

11. The Committee agrees to the road allowance at the rate of annas 2 per mile for the enrolled men of the I. T. F. only when embodied for training or service.

12. The Committee prefers the retaining fee to the remission of land revenue for the enrolled men of the I. T. F. as the latter evidently involves a tortuous and a long procedure.

13. Here again the Committee would rather prefer the retaining fee to the bonus.

14. This principle has already been agreed to under A.-2 and A.-11.

15. (i) and (ii) are agreed to.

B.—The Committee highly approves of this and think it highly desirable.

C.—5. The Committee do not agree to the suggestion, as it is just possible and there may be a Territorial Officer who may be unpopular with his comrades and get an efficient officer in the opinion of the Commanding Officer.

6. (1) The Committee are of opinion that no exception should be made in the case of candidates for commission but an ex-officer may be allowed to wear his uniform while training in the rank.

(2) The Committee is of opinion that their proposals contained under C regarding this procedure is preferable.

(3) . Ditto ditto.

D.—16. The period of six months seems to be much too long and would probably entail the question of permanent barracks.

D.—17. The proposal seems very desirable but looks rather impracticable in view of the reductions that have already been proposed in the Indian Army.

D.—18. The proposal seems desirable and is recommended.

D.—19. The suggestion is accepted and recommended.

Statement by Lieutenant-Colonel Maharaja Sir Jai Chand, K.C.I.E., C.S.I., of Lambagraon.

Questionnaire. Question No.	Reply.
A—1	This suggestion has my whole-hearted support.
A—2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 7	I have no opposition.
B—1 and 2	I have no opposition.
B—3	I have no opposition, if not for the binoculars at present.
B—4 and 5	I have no opposition.
B—6	I have no opposition, as considering over the number of men of our battalion, *e.g.*, "11th Battalion, 17th Dogra Regiment" ought to be given name "The Kangra Territorial Battalion."
D—1	I am also not in favour for future of such permission even one could conveniently or without any hitch manage to carry on both these duties.
D—2	If constituted for districts, would be quite desirable and should include a local Territorial Force Officer in addition to the Military Member.
D—3 (*b*)	Why not (*b*)? It would be more desirable, I think.
D—5	I also suggest for these necessary improvements and feasibilities.
D—9 and 10	It also looks very necessary.

Statement by Mr. F. L. Brayne, M.C., I.C.S. (Punjab).

ANSWERS.

A.—1. At present far too many people, for one excuse or another, drop out of the Battalion. To encourage them to stay the whole period and, if possible, a second period the following should be paid—

	Rs.
at end of 2nd consecutive period of training ...	10
3rd	20
4th	30
5th	40
6th	50

for second contract Rs. 50 a year throughout. If training is missed with permission, increment does not increase but is not forfeited. Otherwise sepoy goes back to zero. Besides a great increase in efficiency, there would be a great saving in the recruiting, training, clothing expenses, etc., if we did not have to enlist large numbers of new men every year to replace wastage.

This should be started with back effect as regards calculation of increment but not as regards payments, *i.e.*, people finishing their 4th period at this coming camp should draw Rs. 30.

Ex-soldiers with their 4 years agreement might start at Rs. 20 and draw Rs. 20, Rs. 30, Rs. 40 and for a second period Rs. 50.

2. Yes, a day's pay for time spent travelling.

4. Not wanted for our officers.

5. 6. Yes.

7. Soldiers must go home properly clothed, regimental puggery and fringe and decent national clothing. Recruits to be once issued with proper Mufti free and thereafter compelled to pay for it. Rs. 2 annual upkeep allowance of Mufti.

B.—2. Officers very few, not needed. A territorial club with branches, where needed, in the district to keep the men together and continue the games and shooting. Occasional sports and shooting meetings, etc., would be held. Lectures, instruction, etc., might even be started on subjects of interest and utility if the club took on. The club could admit on suitable payment other members besides 'terriers' if not of military age or eligible for enlistment, and suitable honorary members.

Government would help the club and the District Territorial Association would do the rest. The management would be joint Territorial and Association members. As for gear, if regimental gear goes to the club, it will never come back, but the regiment can pass on superfluous gear at its discretion.

It is just possible that in this way we could spread the love of games to the villages, to take the place of litigation, etc.

4. See A. 7.

5. See B. 2.

6. Certainly and Districts should certainly be given this honour as a reward for keenness already displayed and to encourage them to take a pride in the efficiency of their Battalions.

7. Rations are satisfactory and it will not do to encourage them to be dainty.

C.—1, 2 and 3. Present system satisfactory whereby Regimental Authorities give commissions in consultation with District Authorities.

4. No direct commissions or else people will become too proud to go into the ranks. We want to make the Battalion a *corps d'elite* where the sons of the local gentry will be knocked into shape and they must all go through the mill. Direct commissions should be absolutely forbidden and it should be a matter of pride among the local gentry that they and their sons are recruits, etc., as in England. Direct commissions will absolutely ruin the Battalion.

D.—1. Government servants should certainly be allowed to join but with permission and knowledge of the head of their Department and they should be allowed when they can be conveniently spared to be absent for training without pay but without losing leave or service.

2. I have never heard of an Advisory Committee and it does not function as far as Gurgaon is concerned. We have our own Informal Advisory Committee consisting of myself and the chief gentry of the district whom I consult upon all matters of interest or importance. Formal Committees are useless as they never function. The proof of the pudding is in the eating—We have raised a battalion and provided it with all the money it wants for sports, prizes, etc., etc (Rs. 5,000).

If there must be a formal Committee then it should be for the recruiting area of each battalion only. Gurgaon dates of harvest, etc., differ from Punjab and the whole of our conditions are largely different, and so a Punjab Committee would be useless for us.

3. 1 month preliminary, 2 months periodical.

The best possible date for breaking up camp for our Battalion should be fixed in consultation with Gurgaon District Authorities, with reference to the date when harvesting begins.

4. Useless. Territorial training is not different from any other Military training.

5. See B.—2.
6. Beds, yes; curtains, no; as we train in cold weather.
7. Yes.
8. Yes.
9. Yes.
10. No need.

13. I am quite ready to use the Gurgaon Territorials in aid of the civil power provided I could get hold of the Commanding Officer or the Adjutant at a crisis to command them.

E.—7. Advisory Committees should be for Battalion recruiting areas only, not provincial, as no provincial Committee can really speak for individual areas, *i.e.*, each battalion should have its own committees, if a formal committee is wanted at all.

SUPPLEMENTARY.

A.—8. Poor districts could not afford this.

9. No.

I consider that the present system should be changed and platoon commanders should be in future Viceroy's Commissions (Jamedar and Subedar) and company officers, etc., King's Commissions. No S. M. wanted.

10. Band is waste of money. No band can be the least use if only trained for the short period of Territorial Units.

11. Yes, only when they go to the camp for training.

12. No.

13. See A.—1.

C.—5. 6. All too elaborate.

6. (1) There should be no such thing as candidates and no one should be enlisted on the understanding he was going to be pushed into a commission. All enlistments should be as sepoys only and promotion made as previously suggested. Once privileged recruits are taken no gentleman's son will enlist as a plain sepoy. If a privileged recruit is a failure and cannot be promoted, he will try and get out of the regiment and will have a grievance and the regiment will be discredited. All should enlist on level terms.

D.—16. Impossible. They would be loafers for the rest of the year as they would have to drop out of village farm routine and on their return would not be wanted.

17. It is quite impracticable for the Territorial Battalion to appoint its own staff and then attach them to the training Battalion in the off season. They

would not be the Training Battalion's own officers; it would take no particular interest in them and unless they were suitable for its needs, they would be put on routine duties and spend the year loafing and be worse than useless next training season. This staff should be seconded from regular units to the Territorials and then attached to the Training Battalion during the non-training season. We should then get a permanent staff available for our wants. At present we never get the same Indian Officers or Non-Commissioned Officers or British Officers from year to year or even for the whole of one training system. Nor do we get a full staff so that we are asked to train men under an impossible handicap.

The training staff, British and Indian, should all come from the same unit, so that they may train on exactly the same principles and know each other. At present our Indian Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers come from the units in one Brigade, and this Brigade has two Territorial Units and all the duties connected with Delhi; it is quite impossible to give us either a full staff or a picked staff.

Our Indian staff must come from the same training Battalion, from which the company commanders come, and must be seconded in the same way.

At present we get officers from all over the place, and they are changed freely during the training period and never by any chance return the next year. We never have more than one quarter of our authorised staff. Last year out of one authorised staff of 8 Indian Officers and 16 Non-Commissioned Officers we got 2 Indian Officers, 2 Havildars, and 2 Lance-Naiks and with these we are expected to turn out guardsmen.

These extra officers need not entirely waste their time during the slack season. One of the reasons given for the inordinate delays in the settlement of pension claims is the shortage of staff in the training Battalion to go through the masses of records now in their charge. These seconded officers could be given this work as the first call upon their time during the rest of the year and help to remove the grave scandal of the non-payment of pensions. If the scheme recently proposed that all pensions should be paid from the Training Battalions were put in force they would have plenty to do for the rest of the year, and one of the greatest post-War problems of the army, the proper distribution of pensions, would be solved.

18. Facilities should be provided to allow Territorial Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and men who show an aptitude for military subjects to attend courses, be attached to regular units for training, manoeuvres, etc., etc., with the consent of the military authorities concerned, in their own time and without further cost to Government than perhaps their railway fares to and from the unit they join and their rations while so serving, provided they pass out satisfactorily at the conclusion of their period with the unit.

19. The Regimental Authorities should not be hampered in this way by regulations.

Proposals under B.

1. It should be possible during the off seasons to mobilise such portion of the Battalion as the District Commander may approve, for ceremonial purposes, *e.g.*, at the visits of Viceroy, Commander-in-Chief, Governor, etc., etc., it should be possible to obtain permission to produce a Guard of Honour of appropriate strength, and the District Commander should be authorised to sanction the necessary expenditure and all other necessary arrangements. This would do a very great deal to popularise the force and draw public attention to it, and would help greatly to smarten up the men themselves.

2. Territorials should have some distinguishing mark in the off season. The puggry and fringe would be the best thing, and this they should be allowed to take away; if they do not produce it at the next camp in good order, the price of a new one should be cut.

3. The Territorials are in their infancy and should not be hedged in with too many regulations, but should be allowed to develop as far as possible on their own lines as long as they conform to military principles. What suits one Battalion may be impossible for another, and rigid uniformity in things not essential should not be insisted on and District Commander should be given very considerable latitude in sanctioning reasonable proposals.

Statement by Major K. K. Chatterjee, F.R.C.S.I., I. T. F. Medical Corps (Bengal).

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. I agree.

2. I would suggest the following scale :—

Road Allowance @ 0/3/0 per mile;

Subsistence or daily allowance @ 0/8/0 per diem.

3. In my opinion the travelling allowance of the members of the U. T. C. should be the same as for the I. T. F.

4. I agree and I suggest that an allowance of Rs. 10 per diem per officer in addition to the allowance per mess.

(*N.B.*—Regarding 1, 2, 3 and 4—*Vide* Memorandum as Alternative Scheme, Appendix I).

5. I agree.

6. I agree.

7. I agree.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. In some districts 2 years may be sufficient, but in other districts 3 years may be required.

2. (*a*) This is a very good idea.

(*b*) This is a necessary item for 2 (*a*).

3. I do not think it is necessary as officers receive outfit allowance when they get their Commission; however, it would be welcome provided funds are available.

4. I would limit it only to recruits (*Vide* Para. 7, Q. 1).

5. A very good suggestion and I fully agree that it would increase the popularity of the Force.

6. I agree.

7. I agree (*Vide* my Report on I. T. F. Camp of Exercise—Appendix I).

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commission in the I. T. F.

1. The present system is not satisfactory.

2. The suggestions in Paras. 2, 3 and 4 are good, but I would like Para. 2 to read as follows :—

> Candidates should, before appointment on probation, be approved in writing by a Board composed of (i) the Chief Civil Officer of the District, (ii) the Administrative Commandant of the Unit concerned, (iii) the Senior I. T. F. Officer of the Unit concerned, (iv) a medical Officer (I. T. F.) of the Unit concerned, preferably a senior Medical Officer.

3. I agree.

4. A good rule but exceptions may be made in very special cases.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

1. I cannot agree. On the other hand, I think Government servants should be encouraged to enrol in Provincial Units of the I. T. F. (*Vide* Confidential Notes—Appendix III).

2. I agree that an Advisory Committee should be increased to 5 or 6 members for districts and not of Provinces and also that it should include a Local Territorial Force Officer in addition to a Military member, but I suggest that a Medical Officer be also included; this, I think, is essential.

3. I suggest preliminary training 28 days and periodical training 28 days.

4. I agree.

5. I agree.

6. I agree (*Vide* Confidential Notes—Appendix III).

7. I agree.

8. I agree.

9. I agree but I like to add that I. T. F. Officers including Medical Officers should be called up at least 5 days before training commences (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

10. I agree (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

11. I agree (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

12. I agree.

13. I do not agree as I consider there may be confusion during recruiting and there should be the same condition for all I. T. F. men and N. C. O.'s and Officers (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

14. I agree.

15. University Conference Resolutions :—

(i) I agree.

(ii) I agree.

(iii) I agree.

(iv) I would like to be enlightened as to what is meant by closure working.

(v) I agree. (Also *Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

(vi) I like this suggestion but there should be practical difficulties.

(vii) I agree.

(viii) I agree.

E.

1. The addition of a proviso to Section 5/A of the Act as stated in Annexure I.

4 and Annexure IV. This will apply to a member (private) but not an officer (*Vide* Confidential Notes—Appendix II).

6 and Annexure VI. I agree but I understand exceptions would be made in cases of sickness.

7. (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I for suggested amendments).

Supplementary Questionnaires.

A.

8. Disagree (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

9. I agree (*Vide* Memorandum—Appendix I).

11 and 15. I think allowances for the I. T. F. and U. T. C. should be the same.

12. I agree.

13. A good alternative idea.

14. This may cause confusion

8. I agree.

5. This may be vested in the Advisory Board.

6. Agreed.

D.

16. Too long a period.
17. Agreed.
18. Agreed.
19. Agreed.

K. K. CHATTERJEE,
Major, F.R.C.S.,
Indian Territorial Force,
Medical Corps.

MEMORANDUM (Appendix I).

In drawing up this memorandum for the improvement and expansion of the Indian Territorial Force and the Medical Corps attached to it, I have taken advantage of the experiences gathered as an Executive Officer in Charge of the St. John Ambulance Brigade, District No. II (Bengal, Bihar and Orissa and Assam) as Acting Assistant Commissioner and District Superintendent in Charge of the Brigade. I have also had an opportunity of studying the subject as Senior Medical Officer in Charge of the two Camps of Exercise, one at Kanchrapara where the University Training Corps was encamped and another in Fort William where the Indian Territorial Force was encamped. The St. John Ambulance Brigade District No. II, consists of ten divisions and two more divisions are being organised. Of these twelve I have practically originated and formed nine divisions consisting of a large number of Officers, N. C. O.'s and a fluctuating number of 500 to 600 men. I have been able to study the mentality of men and officers. There were strong and weak points in the control and management of men and power of organisation. I have also watched the officers and men of the University Training Corps and the Indian Territorial Force from the same standpoint. I have been led to think that of the officers, N. C. O.'s and men, those who had previous military or semi-military training have proved more efficient than those who have not had these, in spite of the fact that the latter may have had better education and were of better social standing. It has struck me that the men here—particularly a Bengalee—has to learn how to obey before he desires to command or wants others to obey him. I have recruited and trained compounders for duty as Hospital Orderlies during the last War, and while doing so I have noticed the same tendency among them. I am however impressed that once they are put under discipline and get the grinding, they prove quite satisfactory and efficient officers as far as discipline, organisation and command are concerned. In my connection with the S. J. A. B., I have mixed with Indians (Bengalees, Biharees, Hindus and Muhammadans) and Anglo-Indians and Europeans and though at first fellow-feeling and camaraderie were wanting between them, particularly between the Anglo-Indians and Indians, I have lately been noticing with much pleasure that it is improving and an *espirit de corps* is developing in them.

There are two non-regular Forces, namely (1) the Auxiliary Force (India) and (2) Indian Territorial Force which includes the University Training Corps. The Auxiliary Force is meant for service in India and the Territorial Force for general service as a second line of reserve to the Regular Army, though the University Training Corps does not strictly correspond to this. Besides, it is understood that men and officers of the Auxiliary Force may at a time of need volunteer for general service as a Force from which it has developed has done in the past. I suggest that the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces may have the same nomenclature and that as the distribution of duties to the two Forces cannot very strictly be followed, I suggest that the Territorial Force may have two sections—(1) for local service and (2) for general service. Here I may suggest that in the earlier stages some difficulty may arise in recruitment.

I think that the Indian Territorial Force should consist entirely of Indians though for the present as a temporary measure the Officer Commanding the Force should be an Officer of a Regular British Regiment lent to the Force for the purpose.

Budget.—Some difficulty is apprehended with regard to budget. The distribution of budget may be made as follows :—

The whole military budget is in the hands of H. E. the Commander-in-Chief. H. E. or his Secretary (Finance Secretary) can distribute it under two headings—(1) for Regular Forces controlled by a Secretary and (2) for non-regular Forces, I. T. F., etc., with a Secretary, preferably an Indian. Similarly, the budget will be distributed to the districts; for instance, the budget that goes to G. O. C., Eastern Command, will be distributed to the Regular Force and non-regular Forces. The budget for the latter (non-regular Force) will be in the hands of a Secretary, preferably an Indian.

The Territorial Committee.—The present organisation and functions of an Advisory Committee are not satisfactory. In my opinion there should be an Indian Territorial Force Committee at Headquarters (Capitals) of each Province. This Committee should consist of the G. O. C. or a military officer which he may nominate, two non-official members, one senior officer of the Indian Territorial Force and one senior officer of the Indian Territorial Force, Medical Corps. Besides the functions and power vested in this Committee I would recommend that in consultation with the Secretary it should have some control on the budget. The other (Territorial) (Advisory) Committee which may be called the District Territorial Committee should be in the district towns at the collector's headquarters and should consist of senior civil officers, *e.g.*, the Collector, two non-officials, a member of the Indian Territorial Force and an officer of the Indian Territorial Force, Medical Corps.

Pay, Allowances and Status.—I do not recommend abolition of pay of I. T. F. Officers. The St. John Ambulance is a voluntary organisation and in organising a large number of divisions in my district I have experienced great difficulty in this connection. I have had to provide funds for kit, travelling expenses and mess when members of divisions have been on duty; without this it has been unworkable. My experience during the Camps of the I. T. F. and the U. T. C. has been the same.

The status, pay and allowances of the members of I. T. F. should be on the same basis as those for the Auxiliary Force (I). This should be possible if my budget scheme be adopted. The difference in the status, pay and allowances in the case of Regular British and Indian Armies is not strictly applicable to non-regular Forces like the Territorial Force.

I am in favour of a preliminary short intensive training for the officers of the I. T. F. and the Medical Corps before each camping season and before anticipated operations or mobilization. This should obviate the necessity of deputing officers of the Regular Army as Drill Sergeants or Instructors during Camp of Exercise.

I am not in favour of dual commission for officers of the I. T. F., for instance, if a Jemadar or a Subadar is given an honorary rank as second-lieutenant it makes his position rather ambiguous. If a King's Commission is granted to an officer in appreciation of his work or ability it may be a full commission and not an honorary. This will clear much of the difficulty that has arisen lately due to officers' holding dual commissions.

Indian Territorial Force, Medical Corps.

Organisation.—I understand this Corps is being re-organised. Under the Director of the Medical Services (D. M. S.) or a D. M. S. for the non-regular forces D. M. S. (T)., there should be for each provincial unit an Assistant Director of Medical Services, Territorial A. D. M. S. (T)., who should be by choice a Senior Medical Officer of the Indian Territorial Force, Medical Corps, and preferably one who has his headquarters at the Capital of the Province and is a resident there. Under him there will be an Administrative Medical Officer (A. M. O.) in each district in the province. The constitution of the Unit or the Corps, besides these officers, should consist of assistant surgeons, a corps of orderlies and stretcher bearers who will be N. C. O.'s, warrant officers and men. These will be distinct from combatants. From these will be constituted two detachments, namely, regimental, medical and a sanitary detachment. These will be trained in first aid, stretcher drill, nursing, military hygiene, sanitation, water duties, mosquito brigade work and quinine parades, etc. In a way this would constitute the Field Ambulance Section. In my district (S. J. A. B. District No. II). I have a large number of medical

men, sub-assistant surgeons, senior and junior medical students and compounders who will be only too glad to volunteer for this section.

Training.—Officers, warrant officers, N. C. O.'s and men will have periodical trainings. The senior officers may periodically be attached to a Station Hospital. The period can be arranged to suit each province. They should have an intensive short course before each Camp of Exercise and certainly before mobilization. A course of lectures should be arranged in each province and the subjects should be inclusive, that is, first aid, stretcher drill, nursing, military hygiene and sanitation, water duties, mosquito brigade work, quinine parades and tooth parades, etc.

Designation.—The designation for medical officers at present is Indian Territorial Force, Medical Corps, seems to be rather a long one; in view of the recommendations of the Lee Commission I would suggest R. A. M. C. (T) or I. M. S. (T). Of course, this will depend on the general designation that is to be given to the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces.

K. K. CHATTERJEE,
Major, F.R.C.S.
Indian Territorial Force,
Medical Corps.

INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE (Appendix II).

11/19 Hyderabad Regiment, Bengal Wing.

Camp of Exercise, 1924.

Sanitation.—The sanitary arrangements were satisfactory. The kitchen and men's mess, the latrine and the tents with the surrounding area were inspected daily and were maintained in healthy conditions. The Kitchen utensils were regularly inspected and were found to be clean. The kitchens were divided into four sections, (1) for officers, (2) for the Hindu Sepoys, (3) for the Muhammadan Sepoys and (4) for Gurkha Instructors and men but there is at present only one paved sink for the kitchen for washing purposes; I recommend construction of two additional sinks of the existing type. Conservancy was efficient and good. The drinking water in the water-tank was good; on two occasions the water was found to have a peculiar smell in it and on examination it was found to contain fungus. Immediate measures were taken and the tank was emptied. The interior of the tank was secured and bleaching powder used as disinfectant. I propose that as a routine measure the tank be emptied out once every fortnight and chlorogen used as disinfectant. Two bottles of chlorogen should be enough for the whole period; it is a cheap and efficient disinfectant. The tank for bathing water also grew fungus. It was emptied and treated similarly. The latrine accommodation was sufficient till the strength went up above 300. Not much inconvenience was felt due to efficient and expeditious conservancy; if however for future camps the number exceeds 300 the latrine accommodation may be increased.

Water supply.—Water supply was efficient till the arrival of B.. Company and new recruits in addition when a slight shortage was felt in the water supply; the capacity of the tank may be ascertained. In my opinion the present capacity should be enough if a continuous supply of water in the tank be assured. The ground surrounding the tank was at times slushy. I suggest that an area of about 4 ft. surrounding the tank be paved.

Tents.—All tents were in good condition. Some men suffered from cold and I think if straw-mattresses are supplied it will help the Sepoys and N. C. O.'s to keep warm. The sick were sent to the Indian Station Hospital and on one or two occasions the O. C. of I. S. Hospital reported that the number of sick sent there was high. I suggest that cases with minor ailments may be kept in a special tent to be called the 'Sick Tent'. This is, further, desirable as it would prevent spread of infection in the men's tents.

Health of Officers, N. C. O.'s and Sepoys.—Good health was generally maintained and on examination I found that at the close of the camp the men were in better health and physique than when they joined. There is only one case of illness of any serious nature, namely, that of Broncho-pneumonia who made an uninterrupted recovery at the I. S. Hospital. The cases of sickness consisted of fever, throat complaints, such as pharyngitis, laryngitis, etc., a

few cases of bowel complaints and some cases of V. D. Most of the fever cases were imported, the men coming from malarial districts came infected with malaria. For malaria cases I recommend holding Quinine Parades every other day for the first week after these men came into camp and later twice a week. The cases of throat complaints were mostly imported and these patients evidently infected others in their tents. It is also possible that the malaria cases also spread infection likewise. That is why I suggested segregating them in the Sick Tent. Bowel complaints, in my opinion, were due mainly to the sudden change of diet as the cases reduced in number after the men got used to the food supplied in the camp. V. D. cases were either promptly sent to the I. S. Hospital or discharged. There were a very large number of cases of pyorrhœa and spongy gums. Oral sepsis like this would account for a certain number of throat and bowel cases; as a remedy I suggest a sufficient supply of green vegetables and fruits. In consultation with the O. C. I find that an addition of one anna per head to the existing food scale will be quite sufficient to meet these. I further recommend a supply of tooth brushes and antiseptic tooth powders. I also propose that for the next camp Tooth Parades be held twice a week. There were a fair number of cases of infection of the skin chiefly due to scabies and tenia. For this I propose a supply of two shorts and under clothing to the men and also that after the breaking off of camp all old kit be disinfected by sting. There were some cases of injury during games of hockey and football. All cases of suspected injury to the bones and joints I examined under X-ray and all were cured before the camp broke off.

Camping Season.—It has been suggested to me that the Camp be held earlier, from the middle of January to the middle of February on the grounds that it got hot during the later part of this season. This is a good and acceptable suggestion though I see no reason why we officers and men should not get used to different temperatures in view of future emergencies.

Ambulance and first aid.—Men and N. C. O.'s were initiated to the elementary principles of First Aid and Stretcher Drill. I propose to organise it on a more systematic basis at the next season in view of my scheme for the formation of a Field Ambulance Division.

K. K. CHATTERJEE,

Major, F.R.C.S.,
Indian Territorial Force,
Medical Corps.

NUMBER OF CASES TREATED AS SICK.

B. Company.

Date.	No. of cases.
January 1924—	
19	1
20	1
21	2
22	3
23	4
24	2
25	2
26	2
27	3
28	3
29	2
30	3
31	2

NUMBER OF CASES TREATED AS SICK—*contd.*

B. Company—contd.

Date.	No. of cases.
February 1924—	
1	2
2	2
3	2
4	2
5	3
6	3
7	3
8	4
9	4
10	4

A and B Companies.

February 1924—	
11	6
12	8
13	7
14	7
15	10
16	10
17	9
18	7
19	9
20	12
21	16
22	22
23	22
24	21
25	24
26	20
27	20
28	20
29	20
March 1924—	
1	17
2	20
3	15
4	16
5	26
6	30
7	19
8	*Nil*
9	1
10	2

Statement by Mr. R. L. Khare, Panchgani, Gwalior.

My experience, both as a member of the I. D. F. and I. T. F., shows that the former was more popular than the latter. I know the spirit of the members of the I. D. F. and how vigorously the members were working. That was because they knew (in those years when the last war was raging furiously) that a day may arise when they would have to defend India from foreign invasion. But an I. T. F. member has not the same enthusiasm. He always thinks that he will have to go outside India not to defend his own mother-land but to die for others with whom he is at all connected in no way. Naturally the Force is not so popular as it was expected to be.

Moreover the general policy of the Government of India has made the educated Indian mind suspicious about Government's intentions. I know many cases when the candidate was dissuaded from joining the I. T. F. on the ground of this misgiving.

Moreover the present system of training is, to be frank, a mere show. All arms are not opened. The Indian is given a Viceroy's Commission and an honorary King's Commission. In making the King's Commission Honorary the Government's policy is as clear as day light. It is none else but a suspicious one. When Government say that they want to give Swaraj to India they should be ready to hand over the power into the Indian hands without grudge. It is high time the Government knew that an Indian, especially an educated one, feels it a dishonour to be obliged to salute a 2nd-Lieutenant who is far below him in many respects. Even an ordinary soldier dishonours the Indian Officer. This must be changed and if Indians are to be given commissions at all they should be none else but King's Commissions. We shall go without Commissions rather than have Viceroy's commissions. The head-dress too must be changed from a hat to Feta or a turban. The rest of the dress should be British Regiment pattern.

Thus the clear issue before us at present is :—

1. The I. T. Forces should be for the defence of India and for "Service in India" as the Auxiliary Forces are.
2. Indians should be given King's Commissions and not those of the Viceroy.
3. Every Battalion should be complete in itself, *i.e.*, with all arms including Battery.
4. The Head-dress should be a Feta or a turban.

Thus the following change is necessary in section third of the Act :—

The proviso "Provided that the Governor General..... from time to time" should be dropped and the words "With all arms" should be substituted for the same.

Communal representation must be strictly avoided The I. T. F is for the defence of the whole of India and not for a sect or a creed.

B.—In order to increase the popularity of the Force the first and the foremost suggestion I have to make is to put the Annual Budget of the I. T. F. before the Legislative Assembly and the body should be allowed to make changes in the same. If a member of the I. T. F. wants to join the Regular Forces he should be allowed to do so and his services in the I. T. F. should be taken into account. Thus a new avenue will be opened to the educated young men of India and Government will not feel the same difficulty which they feel now in Indianising the Army.

Further when the Indians come to be given King's Commissions looking to the short life of the Indian an Officer should be a Major after twelve years of Commissioned service and a Captain after seven years provided he passes the necessary examination.

Any Officer holding the office of a captain or any other rank above that of a captain should be eligible for election or a nomination to the Assembly, Provincial Councils, Municipalities or Local Boards. Thus the I. T. F. men will always be before the public eye.

Any officer or an N. C. O. wishing to continue his service after the expiry of his term of service should not be made to re-enrol and his former services should be counted.

Appointments, promotions, transfers, removal, retirement or any other Government Notifications for the information of the members should be published in the *Government of India Gazette* in the Court-language (English) and in Local Vernaculars in the Presidency Government Gazettes.

Officers from I. T. F. should be appointed Honorary aide-de-camp to the Viceroy, Governor, the Commander-in-Chief and to a Lieut.-Governor subject to the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief.

C.—As far as U. T. C. is concerned the present system of selecting candidates is totally unsatisfactory. Commissions are given at present to Professors only. While many competent students who can be efficient officers are passed over. Therefore students as well as professors should be given Commissions, provided they pass the required test.

The Chief Civil Officer of the District should not be a member of the Committee formed to choose a candidate for Commission. Out of the three members suggested one should be member of the Legislative Council who has headed the poll during the triennial elections.

Social status and local influence should not come in the way of promotion of a candidate. A man should be raised to a higher post on his own intrinsic merit. Social status or local influence will not aid an officer on the field as the real soldier in him.

D.—According to the present system each District forms only one platoon. Thus the ratio of the privates to the population of the District is roughly 1 : 2,000. I therefore suggest that a district should be allowed to form one company, the strength of which should be about 250 for the present.

All these men should be trained and drilled at the chief station of the district for a period of three months as far as preliminary training is concerned. The periodical training should not exceed thirty days per year. There should be A and B reserve classes as there are in Auxiliary Forces.

Rifle clubs should be raised at the chief station of the Taluk, provided at least ten members belong to that Taluk. Here a certain number of Rifles and rounds of ammunition can be kept in the police guard and the Advisory Committee should see that each member gets at least sixty rounds during the non-training period.

I am totally against allowing the Anglo-Indians to join any branch of the I. T. F. They may if they like join the Auxiliary forces. They feel that they are not Indians and this feeling of their was amply illustrated in the United Provinces case regarding whipping. The same kind of partiality is likely to come in if they join the U. T. C.

I have answered some of the items in the questionnaire as given above. I wish to make the following few suggestions though they are outside questionnaire are still to my mind pertinent.

The teachers in Government and semi-Government high schools as well as students (provided they have attained the age of sixteen or above that) should be allowed to join the I. T. F.; so that the teacher in uniform with a batch of privates will not only encourage " Espirit de Corps " in their fellow students and teachers but will also increase the popularity of the force even amongst the ordinary people.

In the annual training camps liquor shops should not be opened.

Whenever on duty or in annual camps men, N. C. O.s and officers should receive pay and allowances, bonus, etc., as is given to members of the Auxiliary Forces. Semi-Government schools should pay their teachers. And the number of privates in a school should be taken into consideration when grants are given. Officers should receive staff-pay according to the scale of a British officer.

Horses, wherever possible, should be provided by the Government free of charge during the training period and arrangements with the Military Authorities should be made by the Provincial Government for the same.

Indian Territorial Force men should not be used as far as possible to pacify local riots or disturbances. Otherwise the privates will be viewed with suspicion by their own people and no gentleman will like to have such an odium on himself.

Advisory Committees :—

There should be District and Presidency Committees linked to the Central Committee. The formation of the committees should be as mentioned under :—

District Committee :—

2 Members from the Legislative Council belonging to the district.

1 Chief Civil Officer.

1 The Administrative Commandant of the Unit concerned.

1 The senior I. T. F. officer of the Unit concerned.

5 Total.

The Presidency Committee :—

2 Elected members of the Legislative Council elected from amongst the elected members by the Council.

2 Members nominated by the Government.

Administrative Commandant of the I. T. F. of the Presidency.

5 Total.

The Central Committee :—

4 Members elected by the Legislative Assembly from amongst the elected members.

3 Members nominated by the Government. The President should be elected.

7 Total.

This Committe should frame rules and regulations and fix the general policy of the I. T. Forces. The other two committees should be executive committees and should solve as far as possible local questions.

The instructional staff, clerical staff, and the Adjutant should be Indians. The link between the regular forces and the I. T. F. should be the Battalion Sergeant Major and the senior I. T. F. officer. The Adjutant should be an Indian Civil Officer. Thus the cost of supporting these Battalions will be proportionately lessened.

Statement by Major F. J. O. Hume-Wright, Adjutant, 11/7th Rajput Regiment.

With reference to your letter No. A.-29363/2-(A. T. F.), dated 4th August 1924, I have the honour to report as follows I have read carefully through the Questionnaire and studied the various proposals contained therein. I agree with all of them, but of my own knowledge and experience of this unit, I beg to submit the following alternative suggestions and amendments :—

A. 1.—This pay to accumulate and be paid to the man only when he comes for training. Suggested rates might be Rs. 2 per mensem up to two years service, Rs. 2-8 from 2 to 4 years service, Rs. 3 per mensem from 4 to 6 years service.

A. 5.—Suggested that the allowance be increased to Re. 1 per mensem, or Rs. 12 per annum and be called " Clothing Allowance ". This would have to cover the cost of washing men's kits, repairs and replacements due to unfair wear and tear and negligence, etc. This allowance would not be paid to men, but would be credited to their accounts and kept at Headquarters.

A.-7 and B.-4.—One Mufti suit, " White undress uniform ", as worn by Regular Units of the Indian Army, at a cost of not more than Rs. 22 should be provided for every Non-Commissioned Officer and man who completes his Recruits Course and first annual training. With this white undress uniform, he should be allowed to take one set of his Regimental Buttons, Shoulder Badges and Pugree Badge. After this initial issue, the man will be required to keep up his Mufti suit from his Clothing Allowance or from his accumulated pay as in A. 1 above.

B. 3.—Strongly recommended, except in the case of Ex-Regular Indian Army, Indian Officers who have them already, *i.e.*, Swords and Belts (but not Binoculars). Revolvers might also be made a Government free issue, to be returned when a Territorial Officer resigns his Commission or is dismissed, etc. Swords, Belts and Binoculars might also come under this category.

C. 2, 3 and 4.—The following procedure is suggested :—

(*a*) Candidates for Commissions to be selected by a Committee composed of the Commandant, the Company Commander concerned and Senior Territorial Officer of the Unit at the end of Annual Training in accordance with para. C.4.

(*b*) The candidates names thus selected to be forwarded to the Provincial Advisory Committee.

(*c*) If approved by (*b*) then the names to be submitted to Local Government for their approval.

(*d*) Finally to District Commander for his approval and necessary action.

D. 3.—Suggested that the alternative (*b*) :—

that is Preliminary Training	...	...	56 days
Periodical Training	...	...	56 days

be adopted in preference to (*a*), as 28 days Periodical training is too short a time for any useful knowledge to be gained.

A. 9.—Yes. I think the suggestion of a Bonus at the end of a Territorial Force officers' training a very good thing.

C. 6.—Yes. I agree to it, but only as a last alternative. I prefer my own suggestion above. Failing this I prefer C. 2. 3 and 4.

As regards Supplementary Questionnaire, I am in favour of these alternatives also, except A.-8 and A.-9, which I do not consider would be at all suitable to this Unit.

Statement by Khan Bahadur M. A. Momin, District Magistrate, Nadia.

A. (1) I do not approve of any retaining fee for the members of the Indian Territorial Force. A small fee as suggested will not appeal to any class of people and will not increase the popularity of the force.

(2) Members should be paid for the days spent in their travelling to and from training centres.

(3) Members of the U. T. C should be paid travelling allowance at the same rate as members of the Indian Territorial Force.

(4) I. T. F. Officers should be in my opinion given a subsistence allowance of rupees 6 per day in addition to the allowance per mess already paid. Where no mess is maintained officers should get an allowance of Rs. 8 a day. They should get no pay.

(5) The annual allowance for the upkeep and repair for clothing should be increased to Re. 1 per head.

(6) Yes.

(7) Yes.

B. (1) I don't think it is necessary to increase the period of probation for officers from two to three years.

(2) *A and B.*—Officers' clubs would certainly increase the popularity of the force, but I do not think the small number of officers now in the force justifies any expenditure on this head.

(3) Yes.

(4) Yes.

(5) Yes.

(6) Yes.

(7) Yes.

C. (1) The present system of appointment of officers is not popular. I would suggest (1) that half the number be recruited by promotion from the ranks, (2) and the other half by direct recruitment. Candidates for direct recruitment should be nominated in the first instance by the District Magistrate from among the land holding classes and other classes with local influence and high social status. Central advisory committee should be formed consisting of the administrative commandant of the unit, the Commissioner of the Division, district commander and three non-official gentlemen. The final selection should be made by the Advisory Committee from those nominated by the District Officers. Candidates recruited direct should go through the ranks and should not be given commissions unless they prove satisfactory.

(4) Yes.

D. (1) There should be no bar against Government servants entering the I. T. F. As a matter of fact the enrolment of Government servants will make the force more attractive. It will be setting a bad example to private employees if Government object to allow their employees to join.

(2) Yes.

(3) The existing period for training should be maintained.

(4) I prefer training of the I. T. F. Officers to be done with the officers of the regular Army or in any existing School for the training of such Officers. I do not consider it desirable to start any special School for I. T. F. Officers.

(5) Yes. A certain number of arms and rounds of ammunition by units can be conveniently kept at district headquarters in charge of the reserve arm police.

(6) Yes.

(7) Yes.

(8) Yes.

(9) This is very desirable.

(10) Yes.

(11) Yes.

(12) Yes.

(13) I deprecate any sort of division in the I. T. F. Any such separation as suggested would seriously affect the popularity of the force.

(14) Yes.

(15) I entirely approve of this resolution.

E. Section 5 of the I. T. F. Act should be amended to allow an officer without re-enrolment for so long and up to such as may be decided upon.

(*a*) The age limit in my opinion should be 45.

(*b*) Resignations should be accepted any time after five years' service.

(*c*) Government will have power to terminate commission and discharge.

2. As in para. 2 of Annexure II.

3. The rules suggested in Annexure III regarding enrolment, appointment and transfer appear reasonable.

4. The amendment to rule 11 (3) is necessary.

The change suggested in Annexure IV may be adopted.

5. The amendment proposed in Annexure V may be adopted.

6. Rule 17 should certainly be amended as suggested in Annexure VI. This amendment however will not be necessary if my suggestion regarding the substitution of daily subsistence allowance in place of pay be accepted.

7. I am in favour of increasing the number of members of the Advisory Committee by inclusion of District Officers.

Supplementary questions.

A. 8 and 9. As already mentioned I don't recommend any pay for I. T. F. Officers, but they should get subsistence allowance and mess allowance when in training or duty.

10. Yes.

11. Yes. They should also get railway fare.

12. No. Not necessary.

13. No.

14. Yes.

15. I agree.

B. 8. Yes.

C. I have already given my suggestion above.

D. 16. No.

17. Yes.

18. Yes.

19. Yes.

To facilitate recruitment I suggest that where in any particular district the number of recruits is enough to form a battalion the preliminary and annual training camps should be held within that district at convenient centre. This will attract attention and tend to increase the popularity of the force. I would also give authority to the District Officer to mobilise this force in case of emergency and use them in the same way as armed police. They could be given substantial subsistence allowance when on such duty. Their utilisation as a different force will give them the idea of responsibility and increase their efficiency. In time it may be possible to substantially reduce the number of armed reserve police of the district.

Statement by Panchanan Barma, Secretary, Kshatriya Samity (Bengal).

A.—Pay and Allowances.

(1) Yes, that is good. The payment of retaining fee for the non-training period will bind the members of the force to and remind them of their office constantly; while the proportionate increase every two years will urge them to go to the training field regularly and voluntarily. The retaining fee and the periodical increase will be regarded as an honour and inducement.

(2) Yes, it is a good suggestion. The road and subsistence allowance now paid for travelling to and from their training centre is very small and quite insufficient for meeting the expenses of their journey. In my opinion the members of the force should be regarded as being in the service for the full period they are in due course out of their home for training and should get pay and regular rations for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centre. But if both pay and rations cannot be given for some reason and other, I would like to have their road and subsistence allowance so increased as not to be less than their pay and is reasonably sufficient to meet all their expenses.

(3) Does travelling allowance include subsistence allowance? If increased travelling allowance mean raising the class in the Railway train in which to travel, I think there should be no increase.

(4) Yes; the officers should have some convenience and comfort.

(5) Yes; the annual allowance for the upkeep and repair of clothing (0/8/0 per man) should be increased. At present the members of the force are allowed to have clothing during the training period only. Even during the period annas eight is not too much for the purpose. And if the periodical training is increased to 56 days or they are allowed to take their mufti clothings home they will have to incur more expenses.

(6) Yes; travelling and subsistence allowance should be paid to recruits at the same rates as allowed in the Regular Army. There should be no difference of such rates to be allowed to corresponding ranks in the regular army and the I. T. F. force.

Are not the rates allowed in the regular army those as mentioned in the supplementary question item No. A-14?

(7) Yes; and these mufti clothes should be made in a style similar to the uniform; they should be allowed to take these to their home from the training centre (*vide* reply to item B-4).

B.—Popularity of the Force.

(1) Yes; that is good. The officer may get one more chance. Accident may prevent a promising officer from appearing in a retention examination. It will be pity if he be not allowed some more reasonable chance.

(2) (*a*) Yes; officers' club at training centre of the provincial unit or at District centre of the district unit if there are district units, would cultivate good social feeling and that of comradeship and create a liking and disposition for military life and so will draw able and intelligent men to be members of the force.

(*b*) Yes; it is as a matter of course.

(3) Yes; I. T. F. officers should be given a free issue of swords, binoculars and annual clothing allowance but they should be required to keep them in proper order. It will (*a*) be an insignia of the offices they respectively hold, (*b*) be an honour and inspiration to these officers themselves, (*c*) raise them in the estimation of others and (*d*) induce others to join the force.

Annual Clothing Allowance.

The officers should be required to have their clothings made in the same fashion as their uniform or should be supplied out of the store. I mean the clothing that they are to have with the clothing allowance money. To keep these their clothings in good order and in repair some allowance should also be made.

(4) I. T. F. N. C. officers and men should be given a free issue of mufti clothing to take to their home after training. My reasons are the same as those for giving free issue of swords and binoculars to I. T. F. officers. To keep their clothing in good order and repair some allowance should be given.

The officers and men should during their non-training period bear their distinguishing insignia with them. If N. C. officers can be given the free issue of something corresponding to the sword and binoculars of the officers every care should be taken to give it.

(5) Yes; such territorial weeks will give to the people some idea as to what the I. T. force is and induce people to join to it.

Such weeks will also give the members of the force good occasions for cultivating feeling of comradeship and desire to excel others of their rank. It will be sort of training also.

(6) Yes; I. T. F. units should be given provincial names and even District or Tribal names. That will excite competition and a province or a district or a tribe, as the case may be, will have ambition to have some unit of its own; and the units known by different names will try to excel other units in efficiency. A province or a district or a tribe will also eagerly like to see its unit excel others and do everything in its power to secure efficiency.

(7) Yes; the scale of rations should be varied to suit members of each unit and this should be done by liberal scale of equivalents. There should be left no doubt what the kinds and quantities of rations should be for any particular unit. Any doubt in this respect is very likely to create great inconvenience and disorder.

I would urge one thing here. When the Territorial force first met in the Training Camp in Calcutta Field in 1923, I saw myself that the provisions supplied were wanting in kind and also in quantity. The rations supplied then had to be supplemented by voluntary presents made by liberal minded people. I think and urge that the kind and quantity of rations should be suitable and sufficient food for the members of each unit without outside help. I saw also the kitchen arrangement was very irregular and bad; at first there were no kitchen arrangement at all and the recruits had to suffer a great deal on this account. There was also no regard for the religious scruples of the persons who joined the camp. I, therefore, urge that the kind and quantity of rations should be suitable and sufficient for the members of each unit and kitchen arrangement should be made with due regard to the religious scruples of the members.

C.—Method of Selecting Candidates for Commissions in the I. T. F.

(1) I can't say anything as I do not know exactly what the present system is.

(2) To the three members mentioned in the question there should be added one or two non-official members, from amongst the men who take much interest in the military training of the district. His advices will be of great help to the Board, as also he being easily approachable by the people will be in a position to induce them to join the force and of help to them in coming before the Board.

(3) Yes; it is good. The advisory committee is composed of official and non-official members and their joint deliberation is likely to secure selection of candidates suitable in every respect.

(4) This may be laid down as a general rule, but some exceptions must be made, that is, out of a certain number of commissions to be given a certain number of direct commissions (say one out of four) must be given. These nominations should be made with due regard to :—

(i) the power of command,

(i *a*) resolute character and even temper,

(ii) physical fitness,

(ii *a*) power to bear fatigue,

(iii) aptitude for or inclination towards military training,

(iv) previous records of service or conduct if any,

(v) local influence,

(vi) social status.

In selecting candidates from amongst the ranks, regard must be had to all the items mentioned above, but much stress should not be given to the items Nos. (v) and (vi). Much stress in these two items may sometimes prevent really fit and deserving persons from rising; while giving commissions to persons otherwise fit and deserving, without much regard for these two items will be an encouragement to persons not having much local influence and high social status. This will secure efficiency of the force as also popularity.

In cases of candidates for direct commission some testing arrangement may be made.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. Government servants should not generally be permitted to enrol; but those with respect to whom Government thinks that the discharge of the liabilities undertaken by enrolment will not much interfere with their usual duties should be permitted to enrol. My idea is that no man who has an earnest desire to get military training for the defence of the country should not be prevented from getting it.

2. Yes; Advisory Committee should be increased to five or more members and constituted not only for provinces but also for districts. The committee should include as its members some non-officials who take interest in the military training of the district. This will secure the representation of all sides of view in the committee. The Provincial Advisory Committee will deal with such matters as are calculated to join and unite all the districts.

3. I prefer the alternative (*b*). Periodical training for 28 days in a year will not suffice to secure efficiency. During the non-training periods of eleven months, almost all the training obtained in 28 days will be forgotten and it will take sometime before the members may bring themselves up to that standard of training which they got in the previous year. So there will be little or no time to add to or deepen their former training. And so the training will remain superficial only. For these reasons I am of opinion that the period for periodical training should be fifty-six days in the year.

4. Yes; that is good.

5. Yes; a very good suggestion. My reasons are the same as those I adduced with respect to territorial weeks.

(Answers to question Nos. 2 and 5 of Section B).

6. Yes.

7. Yes.

8. Yes : it is a very good suggestion.

9. Yes : it is good. They should get renewed training.

10. Yes.

11. Yes.

12. Yes : my reasons are the same as those I adduced for giving provincial, district or tribal names to units. (Q. No. 6 Sec. B).

13. Yes : it will remove some scruples from the mind of many.

14. Yes : but why not for other places?

15. I think the suggestions are good.

E.—RECOMMENDED AMENDMENTS TO THE I. T. F. ACT AND RULES.

1. Yes; the I. T. F. Act and rules on the question of discharge of officers of the Indian Territorial force should be made clear. And it will be done if legislation is undertaken on the line suggested in para. 4 of the Annexure 1 and Subsidiary Rules (or Regulation) be issued on the line suggested in para. 6 of the same Annexure.

This is quite desirable. But should the commission held by such an officer terminate before the expiry of the period of his enrolment he will remain an enrolled person as pointed out in the 2nd paragraph of para. 5 of the same

annexure. Here if he remains, or it is desirable to retain him, a subsidiary order should be provided and added (*e*) for the extension of the period or renewal of the commission should such extension or renewal be desired :—

The provisions (*a*), (*b*), (*c*) and (*d*) relate only to age limit, acceptance or resignation of commission, termination of it and discharge from the I. T. F. But some provision should be made for retention of an officer after the termination of the commission up to the term of enrolment.

2. The section should be made clearer.

3. The rules proposed in annexure III seem to make the questions of appointment, transfer and enrolment clear.

4. This should be done; it is necessary.

5. Yes, this is necessary.

6. Yes; this is necessary.

7. Yes, the amendments should be made.

Supplementary Questions.

A.—

8. The pay of the I. T. F. officers must not be abolished and their ranks made purely honorary.

My reasons are :—

(1) This will make the officers ranks a monopoly of the rich and dilettante ones.

(2) The poor but meritorious and deserving men will be kept back, as they will not be able to spare much or any money to meet their necessary expenses.

(3) The consequences will be :—

(*a*) loss of some efficiency of the Force,

(*b*) creation of a military aristocracy more or less based on money and not on military merit and

(*c*) discontent in the Force.

9. Certainly I. T. F. officers would and should aspire and ought to get King's commission. But I cannot understand what the pay or the rate of pay has to do with the grant of honorary King's commission—the commission being honorary, *i.e.*, without any pay.

10. Yes; a band will add to the honour and heighten the military feeling of the members. This will make them feel also that they are in the regular army.

11. Yes; annas two per mile as road allowance will go a great extent towards meeting their travelling expenses by road. This I think is in addition to subsistence allowance.

12. The idea of remission of land revenue to the members of the force seems to me to be quite fanciful. All the members will not have lands for which they pay revenue. Almost all the members are expected to be tenants under private persons, who even pay or may not pay land revenue. Some of the members may not have holding of land at all or may have lands revenue-free or rent free.

Besides there will be great practical difficulties in granting remissions, even in cases where a member pays revenue. It will be impracticable to make remissions in cases where a member holds lands under private individuals who may or may not pay revenue. In cases where a member holds no land or lands for which he does not pay any revenue or rent there is nothing to remit.

13. A bonus after completion of the full annual training is a good idea. But what will be the amount of the bounty? and will it be varied within certain limits according to the degree in which a member acquits himself of the training duties?

I would prefer the Item A-1 (*Vide* my answer to Item A-1).

14. I cannot say anything particular as I do not know what are the authorised allowances mentioned here. (*Vide* my answer to Item No. A-2 and 11).

15. (i) This seems to me to be good. But why such alteration in cases of officers and not in cases of other ranks?

(ii) What class of warrants is given now and what mileage? I think the class should not be raised.

Here too I repeat why so much anxious cares for the officers' convenience while other ranks are left where they are?

B.—

8. Yes; it is a very good suggestion. It will be a good propaganda work and make the people familiar with the rules and remove ignorant apprehensions. All the rules and orders referring to rations also should be embodied therein.

C.—5. Yes; it is good.

6. (i) Officers and N. C. O.'s of the regular army should not be required to be enrolled as sepoys. But some exceptions to the enrolment as sepoys preparatory to being a candidate for a commission should be made in favour of others also. I have given my reasons in my reply to Item No. C-4.

(ii) This relates to procedure for applying for commission. The application for commission may be submitted to the Advisory Committee or to the Administrative Commandant or any other authority; but the selection of the candidates should be made as in Item No. C-3.

(iii) *Aptitude for service.*—Here the word "service" is used in place of "training" as in Item 4 (iii) Military training should not be thought as an academical one and I think training and service should be regarded as the same; but if some one wishes to get himself trained to be ready for defence of the country without intending to enter into regular military service I think he should not be barred.

IV. Please see my reply to Item No. C-4.

Here the item "education" is added. I think so much of education only is needed as he can express himself for military purposes. Too much preference to the superior educational qualification may lead to the disregard of true military qualifications. I say that regard should be had to military qualification first and then regard may be given to educational qualifications.

D. (XVI) The preliminary period of training should not be six months.

XIX. Yes; that is good.

Statement by Captain (Local Major) W. A. J. Hinds, Adjutant, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

Questions are answered only with reference to the Parsi Battalion in Bombay which differs in many respects from other Territorial Force Battalions.

A.—Questions 1, 2 and 3 do not apply.

4. *Messing Allowance—Officers.*—Yes, a Messing Allowance is very necessary.

Parsi officers live in Mess as British officers and with the same standard of comfort and feeding whilst drawing pay as Indian officers. This cannot be done in Camp near Bombay for less than Rs. 8 per day.

Their pay per diem amounts to :—

Jamedars ... ... Rs. 2-8-0 } Officers are therefore largely out
Subedars ... ... Rs. 4-10-0 } of pocket on their Annual Camp.

Although any Messing Allowance if sanctioned will only go a small way towards decreasing this expense it would be greatly appreciated.

5. *Upkeep and repair of clothing.*—I have not found any increase on this allowance necessary.

Questions 6 and 7 do not apply to my battalion.

B.—*Popularity of the Force.*—The causes of unpopularity of the Force in the Parsi Community cannot be removed by the alteration of details. I do not think it is possible to popularise the Territorial Force amongst the Parsis whilst having regard for the purposes for which it was created.

The Parsis are prepared to train as volunteers for local defence, but are not prepared to make themselves an efficient 2nd line reserve for the Regular Army. They are unwilling to accept the status of Indian Soldiers or the liability for service outside their own area.

The general opinion of the Parsi Community appears to be that :—

(*a*) their standard of education,

(*b*) their standard of living,

(*c*) their business pursuits and sedentary habits,

(*d*) the small size of their Community,

(*e*) their poor physique

render them unsuited to the Territorial Force and all that they have some "right" to be received into the Auxiliary Force on the same footing as the Europeans. I understand that a deputation from the Parsi Community has attended with the object of their laying their views on this subject before the Committee.

Owing however to the above influences the men have almost entirely ceased to attend parades during the past year, averages of attendances having dwindled from 47·3, 1922 to 9·4 at the present time.

Officers retention examination.—I do not advocate any increase in the time limit for passing the Retention examination.

An officer on probation who desires to make himself efficient has plenty of time to do so in two years. A man who is not sufficiently keen to qualify in that time will probably not qualify in three. None of the officers of this Battalion has had any difficulty in qualifying in two years. The standard of education of the candidates is however probably higher than that of other T. F. Units.

2. *Officers' Clubs.*—I do not think this would be of any use in Bombay where the Parsi Officers already belong to one or more Clubs. I have tried the experiment of running an Officers' Mess all the year round in Bombay with an Officers' Reading Room at Headquarters, and Mess Dinners once a month.

The Reading Room is little used except for Meetings, etc., but the monthly Mess Dinners have been of great advantage in producing "camaraderie" amongst the Officers.

B.—A small grant in aid of the Officers' Mess would be a great help for provision of furniture, books, etc.

3. *Provision of Swords and Binoculars.*—Yes. Very necessary.

These articles cannot be bought out of Rs. 300 Kit Allowance admissible under regulations.

4. Of no value for this unit.

5. *Territorial Force weeks.*—There are so many Sporting Competitions already in existence in Bombay for which the men can enter both in their private and Territorial Force capacity, that I doubt if a Territorial Force Week in Bombay would prove much of a draw.

7. *Scale rations.*—Yes, this is very necessary for the Parsis, who although they asked for and were granted "British Rations" as a special concession, really require certain articles of both the British and Indian scales :—

(*e.g.*) From British Rations—Bread and Meat.

From Indian Rations—Rice, Masala, Ghi, etc.

C.—1 to 4. *Selection of Officers.*—I consider that there is only one satisfactory method of selecting candidates for Commissions, *i.e.*, that each man should be enrolled into the Ranks as a private and be selected therefrom as detailed in para. C.4 of Questionnaire. The local influence and social status of the candidate being decided by the Advisory Committee the other qualifications by his Commanding Officer. This appears to be the only fair method of deciding between rival candidates. Any other method leaves unsuccessful candidates dissatisfied and is also liable to abuse, if family influence and not keenness or suitability in other respects be permitted to become the deciding factor.

D.—2. *Advisory Committee.*—Considerable difficulty has been experienced in the past in working with the provincial Advisory Committee owing to :—

(*a*) The large area for which constituted.

(*b*) Absence of members when required.

I consider that the best arrangement would be for Advisory Committees to be increased to at least five members, and constituted for Districts instead of Provinces. I do not consider that a Territorial Force Officer is either necessary or desirable on the Advisory Committee.

3. *Period of Training.*—Does not apply to my Unit.

4. *T. F. Officers Central School.*—Impracticble for Officers of the Parsi Battalion. Attachment to a local Unit which does not interfere with business is the most that can be done in this way.

D.—5. *Rifles.*—The Battalion already keeps its own Rifles all the year round.

6. *Beds and Mosquito nets.*—Would be very nice if they could be made available, but not a necessity.

7. Not necessary for my battalion owing to the fact that it has a British Instructional Staff.

8. Not practicable for Parsis of Bombay. Business ties would not permit them to attend.

9. Not practicable for the Parsis of Bombay for business reasons.

10, 11, 12. Do not apply to this Unit.

13. *Local Service.*—I am of opinion that the Parsi Battalions in Bombay would make a useful Unit for local defence when properly trained and disciplined and it is likely that it would be well supported by the Parsi Community for this purpose, provided that the anomaly of having Parsis in both Auxiliary and Territorial Force Units in Bombay can be done away with.

The difference in status between the Parsis in the Auxiliary Force and those in the Territorial Force has been a continual cause of trouble since the formation of the Parsi Battalion.

E. and M.—14. *Motor Transport Companies.*—Constitution of Electrical and Mechanical and Motor Transport Companies for Bombay and Calcutta?

I can express no opinion except as regards the Parsis who I do not think will support any Unit having Territorial Force obligations for service.

E.—1. *Enrolment and Discharge—Officers.*—The Provisional decision contained in Annexure 1 appears to meet the needs of the case in every way, *i.e.*, that an Officer be deemed to be enrolled so long as he holds a Commission.

Provision of authority for the discharge or otherwise removal of Officers from the Force is most desirable. Without coming within the terms of the I. A. Act an Officer may prove himself unsatisfactory, undesirable or inefficient after obtaining his Commission and from his position do an immense amount of harm.

E.—2. No remarks.

E.—3. *Annexure III.—Transfers.*—The transfer of Parsis except as between the two Parsi battalions would not be practicable owing to differences in constitution of these two Units, *i.e.*, Clothing rations, accommodation, method of training, etc.

E.—4. *Annexure IV.*—Provisions for transfers between the U. T. C. and provincial battalions is necessary, particularly in Bombay where large numbers of Parsi Youths pass through the University.

Note.—I do not think that any of the proposals in the supplementary questionnaire would have any particular effect on the Parsis in view of my remarks under "B" above.

Statement by Cap ain H. V. Gell, Adjutant, 11/9th Jat Regiment.

Reference your letter No. A./29363/2 (A. T. F.), dated 4th August 1924 and subsequent letters No. A./29363/10 (A. T. F.), dated 11th August 1924 and No. A./29363/23 A. T. F., dated 25th September 1924, I forward herewith my views *vide* the questionnaire forwarded with the first mentioned letter. There is nothing in my statement which I wish to be kept confidential.

REFERENCE QUESTIONNAIRE.

A.—Pay and allowances.

Question 1.—I think this would do more than anything else to add to the popularity of the Force and should certainly be adopted if possible.

Question 2.—Personnel might be paid according to rank for days spent in travelling in addition to getting free conveyance and road allowance in which case subsistence allowance could be dropped.

Question 4.—I do not think messing allowance is necessary in addition to mess allowance if rations are drawn. If rations are not drawn, the ordinary daily allowance in lieu should be allowed.

Question 5.—For the present I consider the allowance is enough, but it might have to be increased later as clothing becomes older.

Question 6.—Present rates are suitable with the exception of road allowance which might be increased to As. 4 per 15 miles instead of As. 2.

Question 7.—I think this unnecessary.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

Question 1.—I am very much in favour of the time limit being increased to 3 years for officers given direct commissions, but consider it should remain at 2 years for those commissioned from the ranks.

Question 2.—I think clubs would be little used except perhaps by officers resident at the training centre, comparatively few in number.

Question 3.—Officers should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars. The present outfit allowance given to an officer on appointment is considered ample as far as uniform, etc., is concerned but a small annual allowance might be given to officers after 3 years service as such for renewals to uniform, etc.

Question 4.—This would mean great expense and is not considered practicable. I think men should certainly have something to take to their homes to show that they belong to a Territorial Unit. It has been a frequent complaint that nothing can be taken away even for this purpose, but I think something in the form of an I. T. F. badge issued free to each man, as was suggested some time ago, would meet requirements.

Question 5.—Yes, in the form of inter-unit competitions and provided travelling expenses were paid. Otherwise I think it would be difficult to get the men to come.

Question 6.—Yes. This battalion might be "11th/9th Jat Regiment (The Meerut and Rohilkhand Territorial Battalion)."

Question 7.—Yes. This would cause much satisfaction, I think. A free issue of fresh vegetables during training would be much appreciated.

C.—Method of selecting candidates for commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

Question 1.—I consider that suggestion in para. 4 of this heading is much the best.

Question 4.—I think this is the most likely method of obtaining efficient officers. In addition their names, when put up for commissions, should be

submitted through the same channels as under the present system. By this method men of good qualifications who are content to join in the ranks in the first instance and work their way up would not be at a disadvantage by having direct commissioned officers with no training put in over their heads. Exception should, of course, be made as regards ex-regular Indian Officers.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

Question 1.—The question of Government servants being spared from their civil duties has been a difficult one all along and might be still more so were the Force embodied for service. At the same time if they are excluded, much valuable material would be lost to the Force.

Question 2.—Considered that Advisory Committees of the same number of members as at present might be constituted for Districts with advantage.

Question 3.—Suggestion (*a*) considered the more practicable and would be an improvement on the present system but it is anticipated that it would not be easy for many to be spared from their civil occupations for as long as 3 months for training.

Question 4.—Considered that a central school on the lines indicated would be of material benefit to I. T. F. officers but the length of the course might be 2 months for the reasons given in the latter part of answer to Question 3 above. If funds do not permit of this, I think the alternative suggestion of attachment to the Training Battalion would be nearly as beneficial and it would probably be easier for officers to attend courses at the Training Battalion than in some other place.

Question 5.—Yes.

Question 6.—Beds should be provided. As training usually takes place in the cold weather mosquito curtains are not considered necessary at present. They would be if the Force were embodied for any length of time.

Question 7.—4 days before training is considered sufficient. 7 days after training essential.

Question 8.—Yes.

Question 9.—Yes.

Question 10.—Yes.

Question 11.—

Question 12.—

Question 13.—Considered that this could only be done in large centres where sufficient men could be obtained locally. In the majority of the provincial battalions men are enrolled from places which are widely separated which would make it very difficult to carry out training on the same system as the Auxiliary Force. Also as the I. T. F. is intended as a 2nd line to the regular I. A. it is understood that something more than purely local service is required of it.

Question 14.—

Question 15.—(U. T. C.).

E.—Recommended amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules.

Question 1.—Considered that legislation as suggested in para. 4 of Annexure I should be introduced, also subsidiary orders as in paras. 5 and 6 of the Annexure and that an age limit of 52 for officers rather than the completion of so many years service should be fixed to determine how long an officer should serve.

Question 2.—Reference Annexure II. The words "to him" in line 9 of section 11, I. T. F. Act, should be omitted.

Question 3.—The rules suggested in Annexure III meet the case.

Question 4.—The rules suggested in Annexure IV meet the case.

Question 5.—The proposed amendment of Rule 12 makes clear the discharging authority.

Question 6.—Considered that the proviso proposed *vide* Annexure VI should be added to Rule 17 (regarding leave during training).

Question 7.—

An additional question is that under the present regulations for promotion of I. T. F. officers, they are to be promoted according to the rules in force for the promotion of British officers of the regular Indian Army. (Annexure I to I. A. O. No. 282 of 1924). This is understood to mean that they will obtain their promotion on the same time scale as British officers do? I. T. F. establishments as published in A. I. (I.) 715 of 1924 allow for 23 I. T. F. officers at present, 13 of whom are graded as Subadars (and Hony. Lieuts.) and 10 as Jemadars (and Hony. 2nd-Lieuts.). As there is no higher rank than Subadar (and Hony. Lieut.) for I. T. F. officers a time will come, if promotions are made on the time scale, when all the officers will be Subadars and Hony. Lieuts. and it will not be possible to maintain the proportion of Jemadars and Subadars as laid down in the establishments.

It is, therefore, suggested that promotions of I. T. F. officers should be made according to vacancies, in the same way as promotions of regular army Indian officers are made, and not according to a time scale.

SUPPLEMENTARY QUESTIONNAIRE.

A.

Question 8.—I do not think this would be at all popular amongst Territorial Officers. The question of not getting any military pay might not deter those who are in receipt of a higher rate of pay in their civil occupations from joining but it is considered that it would be a deterrent to ex-regular Indian officers joining and, by virtue of their previous training, these form a very useful adjunct to the officering of the I. T. F.

Question 9.—I do not consider that the pay of I. T. F. officers should exceed that of regular army Indian officers who have had much service and experience in the regular army, especially as if the I. T. F. is embodied for service with the regular army at any time, differences in the pay of officers might lead to difficulties.

I. T. F. officers, however, who command companies of their Territorial Battalion should be given an extra allowance as company commanders.

Question 10.—It is suggested that before a band allowance is authorised units should obtain and enrol sufficient ex-army or other trained bandsmen to make it likely that a band will be a success. Unless more or less trained bandsmen are obtained in the first instance it is unlikely that a band could be maintained under the present regulations regarding training of I. T. F. units and even were the bandsmen forthcoming further facilities than the ordinary period of annual training for practice would be necessary to make it a success.

Question 11.—Suggested that the rates of road allowance to personnel of the I. T. F. should be as follows :—

Officers.—As at present, *viz.*, As. 2 per mile.

N. C. Os.—As. 8 per 15 miles instead of As. 2 per 15 miles.

Men.—As. 4 per 15 miles.

The above rates are not considered excessive. Many N. C. Os. and men are accustomed to receiving higher rates of road allowance in their civil occupations and the above suggested rates are considered a fair average for all ranks.

Question 12.—I am in favour of the retaining fee suggested in question 1 of this heading rather than this suggestion.

Question 13.—The retaining fee considered more satisfactory.

Question 14.—See answers to Questions A.-2 and 11 above.

Question 15.—(U. T. C.).

Suggestion.—That something might be done to show recognition of the help given by Indian gentlemen in obtaining recruits for the I. T. F. and in making its meaning and objects known, and otherwise taking an active interest in the force, in cases where this help has been given. It is suggested that such recognition would be an encouragement to those who have already helped, to continue to do so and to others, and this might result in the objects, etc., of the Force being more widely known and add to the popularity of the Force.

B.

Question 8.—This would certainly be a help in making the conditions of service, etc., in the I. T. F. more widely known.

C.

Question 5.—See answer to Question 4 under this heading. I think that after their first year's preliminary and periodical training in the ranks prospective candidates for commissions who are considered suitable should be recommended for commissions under the conditions suggested in answer to question 4 consideration being given at the same time to senior N. C. Os. who have done more than one training. This recommendation would be for appointment to a commission on probation. After appointment on probation, I think no further qualifications or recommendations for confirmation in his commission, other than his passing the retention examination, are necessary for an I. T. F. officer.

Question 6.—See answers to questions 4 and 5 under this heading.

D.

Question 16.—No man in civil employ would be likely to be able to leave his civil employment for 6 months' continuous training. The suggestions in question 3 under this heading are considered more practicable.

Question 17.—This would be a great advantage as it would ensure having the same instructional staff every training whereby instructors would get to know their men and *vice versa*, and would help continuity in the training from year to year. It would also avoid any loss of time at the beginning of annual trainings in getting instructors acquainted with the duties they have to carry out which, considering the shortness of the annual training, would be a great asset.

Question 18.—The Platoon Commanders courses, started this year, seem to be much the same as the period of attachment to the Training battalion suggested in the second half of question 4 under this heading. These courses, either at the Training battalion or at Battalion Headquarters if the latter are not in the same station as the Training battalion, might be continued, if a central school is not considered practicable, with advantage. It is suggested that platoon commanders who undergo the course one year might attend a physical training, weapon training, etc., school the next year. (Selected officers only to attend such schools). The difficulty is for many officers to be away from their civil occupations for many months training at a time. An officer has to attend each year for his 28 days periodical training and many are finding it difficult to attend for the additional 2 months course this year. It is, therefore, unlikely that many would be able to attend a further course in the year at a P. T., weapon training, etc., school. It is anticipated that there would be difficulties in the way of officers attending extra 2 months courses every year for the reasons given above and that if this is the intention of this suggestion (18), it might be easier for them to obtain permission to attend every other year.

Question 19.—Such attachment to a regular unit before promotion to Naik and Havildar would help materially to obtain efficiency in N. C. Os., but if such attachment were made a necessary qualification for promoting good men who are unable to be spared from their civil occupations to undergo such extra training might be handicapped through no fault of their own.

The majority of N. C. Os. would probably be able to attend for a period of extra instruction as indicated in question 9 under this heading and this might be made a necessary qualification for promotion in non-commissioned ranks.

It is not intended by this suggestion that N. C. Os. who are able to do so should not undergo extra instruction with a regular unit as this would be most beneficial.

Statement by Honorary Lieutenant P. V. Bapat, M.A., 1st (Bombay) Bn., U. T. C.

I.—Preamble.

"The constitution of the Indian Territorial Force under an Act passed in 1920," says an official book on the evolution of the Army in India, "was primarily the outcome of the political conditions introduced in India by the Montagu-Chelmsford Reforms of 1920." "The Force" the book further continues, "is intended to cater amongst other things, for the military aspirations of those classes of the population to whom military service has not hitherto been a hereditary profession."

If the above statement is admitted, it will have to be recognised that officers and men seeking admission to the I. T. F. could not possibly be the men, dominated by the mercenary motives in joining the Force, but, men, who are actuated by some higher motives of patriotism and love of mother-country and men who realise the importance of military training. The object of passing the I. T. F. Act will not be fully achieved if the men of the middle classes—preferably the educated people of the middle classes—will not be willing to join in large numbers. If the conditions of service in the I. T. F. are not inviting enough, or if the status and position of officers and men joining the Force is thought by many people to be humiliating, when compared with the honourable position held in Civil life, by the people for whose military aspirations the Force is intended to cater, then it must be granted that there is something wrong in the constitution itself. If the Provincial Battalions of the I. T. F. are not at full strength, it means that the very constitution requires radical change.

What are the facts about the present condition of the Indian Territorial Force?

II.—Analysis of the present conditions.

1. People who join the I. T. F. are not necessarily from the same place and they can not, therefore, be brought together save in Camps of exercise. They have no practice in drill or shooting throughout the eleven months of the year and when they come to camps of exercise, after sleeping, for eleven months, over what they learned in the first year, they have necessarily to spend some time more in going over what they learned in their preliminary training. In the first year of their training they have to spend 56 days—28 days preliminary training and 28 days annual training in camp,—and in the following years 28 days annual training. Very few people from the middle classes join, if they join at all. The present period of four weeks is found to be rather too long. People in Govt. service have, therefore, very few chances to be spared for full four weeks. People of the gentry, *i.e.*, pleaders, merchants, teachers, contractors, Govt. officials, servants in municipal and local board offices and business firms, doctors, engineers, and men of other independent professions, find it very inconvenient to be away from their profession for a full period of one month and they, naturally, therefore demur to join on account of this long enforced absence from their civil duties.

2. The living of the middle class people—especially the educated and cultured middle class people—is higher than that of the lower classes from whom recruits for the Indian army are generally obtained and consequently the pays, allowances, or rations given to the people of the Indian Army are found to be inadequate and unattractive.

3. The rank and status of an Indian Sepoy, Havildar, or Jamadar is not attractive and is thought to be too low below the social rank of the Middle class people who are expected to join the Force. These terms, as they are used to connote the servants of the menial establishment of offices and business firms, carry a certain status of social inferiority, and people whose social status and condition is good enough to enable them even to employ in their service such sepoys, Naiks, Havaldars or Jamadars, are, not unnaturally, unwilling to be branded, so to say, with the titles of Naiks or Havaldars.

4. Another important feature that is brought to my notice by people who served in the old Indian Defence Force, is about instructors. The instructors of the Indian Army, who are also selected as instructors for the I. T. F. have little educational qualifications, if any, and can not be expected to get rid of their crude notions of imparting instruction to the young recruits. Military training is a science which requires the right sort of instructors. People who

have got some power of correct expression and who by their aptitude can make an impression on the taught. The educated middle class people are naturally disappointed when they fail to get the right type of instructor.

5. There are no other branches of service like Cavalry, Artillery, engineers, as in the case of the Auxiliary Force, although the Act does not prohibit the establishment of those branches.

6. There are no rifle clubs for the members of the I. T. F., no shooting matches, no sports and game competitions between different platoons and companies that would keep up *esprit de corps* and stimulate healthy rivalry.

7. When we turn to the case of Officers of the I. T. F. we find that there are lots of things which require immediate improvement and without which the Force can not be expected to be efficient. There are no arrangements made to give them training in regular army schools, in physical training and weapon training and signalling courses. No provision has been made to attach officers of the I. T. F. to regular units for a short period of continuous instruction.

RACIAL DISTINCTION.

8. The Indian officers of the I. T. F. receive two kinds of commissions—(i) Viceroy's commission to enable them to command the Indian Army; and (ii) Honorary King's commission, which seems to have been invented merely as a toy or a plaything to satisfy the childish fancy of the educated Indians. The A. F. Officers have only one Commission—King's Commission that enables them to command His Majesty's Land forces, and thus the distinction is still observed in one form or another. It is also considered as doubtful whether the Honorary King's commission enables them to be entitled to a salute from a British soldier. If even this is deemed to be doubtful, much more would it be considered doubtful whether a senior officer of the I. T. F. would be enabled by virtue of the Honorary King's Commission to take rank above a junior officer of the King's commission. If this sort of distinction is still to be observed, it may be asked where was the necessity of creating this third category of officers, which can neither be identified with the officers of Viceroy's commission nor with officers of King's commission.

The present conditions of the I. T. F. can not be expected to improve unless the prospects of the men seeking admission to the Force are improved, and are made attractive enough for the educated middle class people. They can not be expected to be content with the mere pittance that is given to the people of the Indian Army. They can not but see and feel the racial distinction that is observed in the treatment that is accorded to the people of the two different classes. Men of the A. F. are given second class conveyance warrants, while the patriotic men who join the I. T. F. are entitled to no more than what is given to the soldiers of the Indian Army.

How can the ingenious device of creating a double commission in the case of officers satisfy the roused political consciousness of the educated Indians who, by virtue of the Reforms Act, are entrusted with the highest official posts in the civil line. Does not the History of the Indian Army tell us of many instances when it was not thought derogatory to the dignity of a British soldier to serve under an Indian Officer, much less to pay the usual compliment due to an officer? Then where is the necessity now of keeping up some distinction in the military line? The tag of inferiority in the double commission should be immediately done away with. We are told that this is a provisional arrangement. But we are not assured when this provisional arrangement is to end. Four years have already rolled by. No Indian, consistent with his self-respect, can tolerate the status of inferiority, and that too in his own land, which is based upon race or colour. The educated Indian officer must be made to think that his educational qualifications make him much more than a Subhedar or a Subhedar-Major, who cannot be given any higher rank or entrusted with any administrative work for lack of education. Absolute equality between officers of the I. T. F. and A. F. alone would ensure the popularity of the Force. At least it must be made clear that the distinction is not based on race.

For this purpose the first thing that can be done is to throw the A. F. and I. T. F. Acts into melting pots and weld a new act out of them which will provide for military defence by the non-regular forces in India. This Act should provide for the establishment of two sections of the non-regular forces, the distinction between the sections being based on educational qualification and not a race-qualification.

III.—CONCRETE PROPOSALS.

(a) (i) *Drastic change.*

There should be two different sections of the non-regular forces, one to be organised and trained at important town centres throughout the year, admission to which may be restricted to men of certain educational qualifications only, (say the entrance examination of an Indian University or its equivalent). It may include both Europeans and Anglo-Indians as well as Indians. This section of the non-regulars may be treated exactly on the same basis as the present Auxiliary Force, in matters of pay, allowances, and conditions of service. It should as well consist of three different classes—(i) Active and two classes of the reserve, as in the present Auxiliary Force. The Europeans and Anglo-Indians may be enrolled in separate units.

The other section mainly consisting of rural population should be organised and trained on the lines of the present provincial battalions subject to the improvements suggested below.

(ii) *In its absence alternative proposal.*

This may be considered as a very drastic proposal, but some time or other we shall have to face it. If that were found to be unpractical in the near future, I have to suggest that for the sake of fulfilling the purpose of the Act, namely to cater for the military aspirations of the people who had no hereditary military profession, the I. T. F. Act should be amended so as to constitute (i) forces for the Urban area, to be organised and trained on the lines of the Auxiliary Force, admission to which may be restricted to men who have passed, say, the entrance examination of an Indian University or its equivalent, as well as (ii) the forces from the rural area to be organised and trained on the lines of the present provincial Battalions. Thus military centres should be established at important district towns like Poona, Satara, Sholapur, Nasik, Dharwar, etc., and then it would be possible for many people to take advantage of the military training, without being much disturbed in their civil duties. The training being continued throughout the year, it would be possible to reduce the period of annual training to 16 days as in the case of the Auxiliary Force.

Other branches of service should be instituted like cavalry, artillery at an early date and it should be made possible for people who served in one branch to be admitted to another, for a shorter period of service.

MEASURES TO POPULARISE THE FORCE.

(b) (i) *Suggestions to popularise the Force.*

1. I. T. F. units should be given provincial or district names, as, 110 Satara Maratha Battalion, or, as, 105 Satara Brahmin Battalion.

2. "Territorial weeks" should be organised for sports and inter-platoon or inter-company matches. Rifle-clubs should be started at convenient centres, shooting competitions should be held, and facilities should be given by military authorities to the members of the I. T. F. to attend and take part in these meetings. The gentry and nobility should be invited to witness these shows and performances and thus people should be induced to take interest and pride in the I. T. F. units of their districts.

3. Lecturing tours by experienced officers and N. C. O's. and by educated men who realize the importance of military training may be organised to explain the conditions of military service to people and that the vernacular literature over the same subject giving an outline of the I. T. F. Act, rules and regulations and conditions of service should be freely distributed to popularise the scheme.

4. Free licences of arms should be given on a liberal scale to members of the I. T. F. and to ex-officers and N. C. O's., for self-protection or for protection of the town or village, and if necessary the Arms Act may be amended.

5. I. T. F. advisory committees may be formed for districts instead of provinces, and they should consist of 5 members, including the local Territorial officer.

6. In camps of exercise mess clubs may be organised and managed by a committee of officers and N. C. O's., and that the Committee may at their option receive *money* instead of rations, provided of course that the cost of rations is not exceeded.

7. A *bonus* equivalent to their pay of 16 days should be given to members of the I. T. F. including the members of the U. T. C., as is given to the members of the Auxiliary Force, on completion of their musketry course. That will ensure stricter regularity and higher efficiency.

8. A daily allowance of four annas may also be given to members of the I. T. F. while they are embodied in camp, as is given to the members of the A. F.

9. Medical treatment should be provided at Government cost to members of the I. T. F., for injuries received while undergoing training or while embodied in camp.

10. Beds and mosquito curtains should be provided for each man, if recommended by local military authorities.

11. I. T. F. N. C. O's. and men should be given a free issue of mufti clothing.

12. The present conditions of service also require certain modifications to be made attractive. The period of service of 6 years should profitably be reduced to 4 years and after that there should be no fresh agreement of another period of four years. Thereafter one may be left free to leave the Force any time, except when there are chances of war.

Measures for the general improvement of the Force.

(ii) Suggestions for the general improvement of the Force.

1. Government servants should not be prohibited by statute to enrol themselves in the provincial Battalions of the I. T. F. The necessary permission of the Superior officer beforehand is enough.

2. Three different classes of the I. T. F. should be established as in the A. F. (i) Active class and (II and III) two classes of reserve, so that all available man-power may be utilised.

3. Different branches of service like cavalry, artillery should be instituted and men from one branch should be liable to be admitted to another for a shorter period of service.

4. Provision should be made for I. T. F. officers and N. C. O's. at Army Schools for Physical Training, weapon training and signalling courses. (B) In addition to this, provision should be made to attach officers and N. C. O's., at their own request, to units of regular Army. (C) Special care should be taken to select instructors for the I. T. F. and, if possible, they should be secured or obtained on loan from experienced Warrant Officers or N. C. O's. of the U. T. C.

5. The rifle clubs to be organised for the benefit of the I. T. F. members and a certain number of arms and ammunition should be kept at convenient centres like important district towns. The rifle meetings should be organised by the local I. T. F. officer in consultation with the advisory committee.

6. I. T. F. medical corps should be established and I. T. F. medical officers should be attached to provincial units.

7. The recommendations passed by the Universities conference should be accepted and acted upon.

8. It is not advisable to increase the existing training period either of the preliminary training or of the annual training, taking into consideration the fact that the people are somewhere already engaged in their civil duties. On the contrary in the case of people coming from the urban areas, the period of the annual training may be reduced to 16 days, so that it would enable the gentry to join the I. T. F., the annual training being taken adjoining some holidays like the Christmas, and the loss incurred in this way being compensated by an increase in their training throughout the year.

9. If necessary at least 16 N. C. O's. may be called up 10 days before the training commences.

10. It does not seem necessary to keep a permanent staff of regular Indian officers.

11. From the draft regulations it appears that the Company Commander is always to be a British officer. Thus a bar seems to have been laid in the progress of an Indian Officer, who may not, it appears, expect to rise higher than a subaltern. No such restriction should be laid in the way of an Indian Officer. A man of capacity should be given opportunities to show his ability and rise to any higher post.

METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE I. T. F.

(iii) Commissioned Officers.

1. Under present circumstances the present system of selecting candidates seems to be the only satisfactory method. An Officer may be directly *selected* with due regard to the (i) power of command, (ii) physical fitness, (iii) aptitude for military training, (iv) education, (v) previous record of service (if any), (vi) local influence, and (vii) social status. But before he is confirmed in his appointment, he must have undergone every training that a sepoy is expected to undergo. (*b*) This should not, however, stand in the way of a suitable candidate from among the ranks.

2. If a candidate for a commission is an ex-officer or an N. C. O. of the regular army or A. F. or I. T. F., he should not be required to be enrolled as a private.

3. The age limit prescribed for candidates to commissioned ranks in the I. T. F. should not be insisted in the case of ex-officers of U. T. C. or Provincial Battalions of the I. T. F. of not less than three years approved service as in the case of ex-officers of the regular army.

4. An officer should not be required to be enrolled after the completion of his service but he should continue to be a member of the I. T. F. as long as he holds the Commission.

5. An officer of the U. T. C. may under regulations be transferred at his wish to provincial Battalions without being required to resign his Commission in the U. T. C. and then again apply for a fresh commission in the I. T. F.

6. The age limit to which an officer may serve, be fixed at 52 or even later on if he carries out his duties to the satisfaction of the military authorities.

PAY AND ALLOWANCES.

(iv) Pay and Allowances.

1. It may be said at the outset that there are very few chances of the scheme being popular unless the pay and prospects of the members are considerably increased.

2. Members should be given a bonus on the lines of the A. F.

3. Road allowance should be given to privates at the rate of 2 annas a mile and to officers at the rate of 8 annas a mile.

4. Officers should be given First class warrants by rail or steamer and by road a mileage allowance of 8 annas a mile. Other ranks should be given second class warrants as in the case of the A. F.

5. Members of the Force in the Urban area section of the I. T. F. as proposed above, should be treated exactly on the same level as members of A. F. in matters of pay and allowances.

6. A daily allowance of 4 annas per day should be given to members of the I T. F. including the U. T. C. while embodied in camp.

7. All Officers of the I. T. F. should be entitled to the same pay and allowances as are given to the officers of the corresponding ranks in the Auxiliary Force.

(v) Amendments.

1. Amendments to the Act or rules or additions to rules referred to in para. E. of the Questionnaire p. 2, and in annexures 1-6 be approved, subject to this condition that when a discharge to a person has been recommended by the Advisory Committee, it should be speedily granted.

2. In line 5 under the heading "Escorts and guards of honour" on p. 7 of the draft regulations of the I. T. F., the words "in uniform" be inserted between—

(i) ..... procession or ceremony", and "or form a guard of honour ..... etc."
and between

(ii) ... guard of honour or escort" and "except when ordered or allowed ... ".

Statement by Hony. Lieut. Malik Muzaffar Khan, 11/13th F. F. Rifles.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. My long experience of the people who contribute a large quota of men for the Indian Territorial Force and a careful study of their feelings lead me to believe that a retaining fee is necessary to attract people from fighting classes and I would vote for the sliding scale of it as suggested.

2. Personally I would like to see the present road and subsistence allowance increased. This will save the enquiries which would otherwise be necessary to determine the proper length of transit period and similar other matters.

3. I would vote in favour of the suggestion.

4. This will certainly be a relief to the officers.

5. I would endorse the suggestion.

6. A welcome suggestion to encourage recruits. This will enhance the value of the service.

7. Ditto ditto ditto.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. Yes, I think so.

2. (*a*) A good suggestion which has my hearty support.

(*b*) Certainly.

3. Yes.

4. Yes.

5. Yes, it will produce a good stimulating effect.

6. Appropriate and suitable.

7. I agree.

C.—Method of selecting candidates for Commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

1. Yes, it is satisfactory.

2. The Chief Civil Officer of the District is always the Deputy Commissioner. His approval and the approval of the Senior Indian Territorial Force Officer is necessary even at present. Administrative Commandant is a welcome addition but he will have to go round and visit districts at intervals. His travelling will entail extra expenditure and matters will sometimes be delayed for want of a meeting of the Board.

3. Advisory Committee may select candidates but there should be one advisory committee for each Civil Division. Central Provincial Committees may not be expected to know much about individual Divisions.

4. A reasonable suggestion to select candidates of the right stamp.

I would suggest one thing more as (vii) "Belongs to fighting classes". Only men belonging to the fighting classes should be taken in the force.

D.—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

1. Certainly not.

2. Quite so.

3. In view of the fact that Indian Territorial Force is not a show but has to serve the purpose of a second line of army, it is necessary that its training should be carried out as follows :—

Preliminary training	for 4 months.
Periodical training	for 2 months.

4. A good suggestion to secure efficiency but I would suggest 60 days length of the course.

5. It is likely to promote the object in view.

6. I endorse the suggestion.

7. Certainly desirable.

8. A practicable and useful suggestion.

9. Such a step will be helpful to train men.

10. I think this proposal essential.

11. I agree.

12.

13. A really useful suggestion conducive to improvement.

14. I think it useful.

15. I agree.

E.—Recommended amendments to the Indian Territorial Force Act and Rules.

1 and 2. Reasonable. The old ranks such as Subedar and Jamadars should however change to Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants as soon as officers join Indian Territorial Force. There is always much coveting for this change.

3. No remarks.

4, 5 and 6. No objection.

7. No remarks.

I would also suggest that the rate of pay for a Territorial Officer should be the pre-war rate of pay of a British Officer. Undoubtedly most of the officers join the Indian Territorial Force for *izat* but people of this country not being considerably patriotic want *izat* along with money.

Territorial Officers should be entitled to use Form "E".

Statement by Hony. Lieut. Malik Muzaffar Khan, 11/13th F. F. Rifles.

In continuation of my letter No. M.-2, dated 29th October 1924, I have the honour to submit my views seriatim as follows on the suggestions contained in the Supplementary Questionnaire :—

A. 8. The proposal to abolish pay will attract very few candidates and will minimize the value of the Force in the public estimation.

9. This is a step which will popularize the force and enhance its value.

10. Yes, this should be done.

11. A suitable rate for men.

12. This will not compensate people of the fighting classes who have lost their landed property and depend on Military service only.

13. I would not vote for it, especially as it will be overtaxing patience of men.

14. I am not in favour of this proposal especially as some of the other privileges which the regular army enjoys are not permissible in the case of the members of Indian Territorial Force.

15. I agree.

B. 8. Certainly very desirable.

C. 5. I agree.

6. (i) I would suggest his enrolment as a probationer commissioned officer from the very beginning.

(ii) and (iii) I agree.

D. 16. I would suggest 4 months.

17. Yes.

18. Yes.

19. I agree.

Statement by Captain J. J. Waite, Adjutant, 11/14th Punjab Regiment.

ANSWERS.

A. 1. At present far too many people, for one excuse or another, drop out of the Battalion. To encourage them to stay the whole period, and, if possible, a second period; the following should be paid :—

	Rs.
At end of 2nd consecutive period of training	10
3rd	20
4th	30
5th	40
6th	50

for second contract Rs. 50 a year throughout. If training missed with permission, increment does not increase but is not forfeited. Otherwise sepoy goes back to zero. Besides a great increase in efficiency there would be a great saving in the recruiting, training, clothing expenses, etc., if we did not have to enlist large number of new men every year to replace wastage.

This should be started with back effect as regards calculation of increment but not as regards payments, *i.e.*, people finishing their 4th period to this coming camp should draw Rs. 30.

Ex-soldiers with their 4 years agreement might start at Rs. 20 and draw Rs. 20, Rs. 30, Rs. 40 and for a second period Rs. 50.

2. Yes, a day's pay for time spent travelling.

3. As far as 9th Delhi University T. Corps is concerned no increase of T. A. is necessary as parades are held in the vicinity of the different Colleges.

4. No Mess is at present maintained in this unit as the Officers do not want one.

5. Suggests that an annual allowance for the upkeep of repairs of Clothing should be given at Rs. 500 annually during the period of annual training, similar to musketry prize and Training Grant instead of present system of recovering the amount on contingent bill as laid down in A. I. (I.) No. 115 of 1923; and any unexpended portion of the allowance *credited to the following year's allotment* as clothing will be in greater need of repair year after year and the balance accumulated during the first year and 2nd year of issue, would be of great assistance in later years to keep same in a serviceable condition.

6. Yes.

7. Soldiers must go home properly clothed, regimental puggrie and fringe and decent national clothing. Recruits to be once issued with proper Mufti free and thereafter compelled to pay for it. Rs. 2 annual upkeep allowance of mufti should be sanctioned.

B. 1. Yes.

2. Officers are very few, not needed.

A territorial club with branches where needed in the District to keep the men together and continue the games and shooting. Occasional sports and shooting meetings, etc., would be held. Lectures, instruction, etc., might even be started on subjects of interest and utility if the club took on. The Club could admit, on suitable payment, other members besides Territorials if not of mily. age or eligible for enlistment, and suitable honorary members.

Government would help the club and the District Territorial Association would do the rest. The management would be joint Territorial and Association members. As for gear, if regimental gear goes to the club, it will never come back, but the regiment can pass on superfluous gear at its discretion.

It is just possible that in this way we could spread the love of games to the villages, to take the place of litigation, etc.

3. I am of opinion that the Officers should be given free issue of swords and binoculars and annual clothing allowance of Rs. 50 as the present allowance is not sufficient to enable officers to be smart in appearance.

4. See A. 7 above.

5. See B. 2 above.

6. Certainly and Districts should certainly be given this honour as a reward for keenness already displayed and to encourage them to take a pride in the efficiency of their Battalions.

7. Rations are satisfactory and it will not do to encourage them to be dainty.

C. 1, 2, 3. Present system satisfactory, whereby Regimental Authorities give commissions in consultation with District Authorities.

4. No direct commission or else people will become too proud to go into the ranks. We want to make the Battalion a corps *d'élite* where the sons of the local gentry will be knocked into shape and they must all go through the mill. Direct Commissions should be absolutely forbidden and it should be a matter of pride among the local gentry that they and their sons are recruits, etc., as in England. Direct Commissions will absolutely ruin the Battalion.

D. 1. Yes. Government servants should not be permitted to enrol as very few of them turn out for training.

2. The Advisory Committee, as far as this recruiting area is concerned, is of no assistance and any matters regarding Training, recruiting, etc., I consult the Deputy Commissioners of the District concerned, who have their own informal Advisory Committee and they have taken a very keen interest in the welfare of this Battalion and kept me well supplied with recruits, also funds, etc., amounting to Rs. 5,000 for the purpose of sports and prize, etc.

3. Suggests that the training period should be as follows :—

Preliminary Training	...	...	...	one month.
Periodical Training	...	...	...	two months.

4. Yes. This would be an excellent scheme.

5. I don't think this scheme feasible as responsibility of arms, etc., being kept at a convenient centre would be a worry and cause of unnecessary amount of expense regarding the inspection and repair of same.

6. Suggests that Charpoys should be provided same as regular army and mosquito nets are not necessary, as far as this unit is concerned as the training is carried out in cold weather.

7. Most essential that Company Comdrs. should be present 7 days before and 7 days after the training period for taking and handing over Clothing, Equipment, Books, etc.

8. Yes. This would be an excellent scheme. I think it would be of great assistance to all units, if possible, to allot vacancies at the different Schools of Instructions for the Indian Officers and N. C. O.'s.

The experience of this unit has been, that owing to two Territorial Battalions being in the same Brigade it is practically impossible to get any thing like the authorised Instructional Staff, the result being that sometimes the instruction given by our own N. C. O.'s is a bit ancient and out of date.

9. Yes. It is very necessary as these N. C. O.'s could be put through a short course of instruction by those N. C. O.'s who have been to a course of instruction as provided for in para. 8 above and kept up to date of the present day instructional method.

10. Where possible, it would be an excellent scheme.

11.	*	*	*	*	*
12.	*	*	*	*	*
13.	*	*	*	*	*
14.	*	*	*	*	*
15. (1 to 8)	*	*	*	*	*
E.—1.	*	*	*	*	*
2.	*	*	*	*	*
3.	*	*	*	*	*
4.	*	*	*	*	*
5.	*	*	*	*	*
6.	*	*	*	*	*

7. Advisory Committee should be for Battalion recruiting area only, not provincial, as no Provincial Committee can really speak for indivdual areas, *i.e.*, each Battalion should have its own committee, if a formal committee is wanted at all.

SUPPLEMENTARY ANSWERS.

A 8. The Officers of this unit could not afford this as it would be a great hardship to them.

9. The present rate of pay is quite sufficient.

10. Band is a waste of money. No Band can be of the least use if only trained for the short period of Territorial Units.

11. Yes. When called up for training or any duty connected with the unit.

12. * * * * *

13. See A. 1.

14. * * * * *

B.—8. Yes.

C.—5-6. All too elaborate.

6. (1) There should be no such thing as candidates and no one should be enlisted on the understanding he was going to be pushed into a commission. All enlistments should be as Sepoys only and promotion made as previously suggested. Once privileged recruits are taken no gentleman's son will enlist as a plain sepoy. If a privileged recruit is a failure and can not be promoted, he will try and get out of the regiment and will have a grievance and the regiment will be dis-credited. All should enlist on level terms.

D. 16. Practically impossible. As far as this unit is concerned the most of the members are Zamindars and have to depend on the cultivation of their crops for their livelihood.

17. It is quite impracticable for the Territorial Battalion to appoint its own staff and then attach them to the Training Battalion in the off season. They would not be the Training Battalion's own officers; they would take no particular interest in them and unless they were suitable for their needs they would be put on routine duties and spend the year loafing and be worse than useless next training season.

This staff should be seconded from regular units to the territorials and then attached to the Territorial Battalion during the non-training season. We should then get a permanent staff available for our wants. At present we never get the same Indian Officers or British Officers or Non-Commissioned Officers from year to year or even for the whole of one training period. Nor do we get a full staff so that we are asked to train men under an impossible handicap.

The training staff, Branch and Head should all come from the same unit, so that they may train on exactly the same principle and know each other. At present our Indian Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers come from the unit in one Brigade, and this Brigade has two Territorial units and all the duties connected with Delhi; it is quite impossible to give us either a full staff or a picked staff.

Our Indian Staff must come from the same training Battalion, from which the Company Commanders come, and must be seconded in the same way.

18. The present scheme on foot regarding Platoon Commanders and Havildars' Course should be continued if possible as this will greatly help the efficiency of the unit and provide better instructors for Training of the Battalion; also where possible vacancies at the different Schools of Instruction should be allotted.

19. This is not necessary as the Non-Commissioned Officers for promotion could be included in the N. C. O's. Course, and if they qualify, they should be promoted.

PROPOSALS.

Under "B".

1. It should be possible during the off seasons to mobilise such portion of the Battalion as the District Commander may approve, for ceremonial purposes, *i.e.*, at the visit of Viceroy, Commander-in-Chief, Governor, etc. etc.; it should be possible to obtain permission to produce a Guard of Honour of appropriate strength, and the District Commander should be authorised to sanction the necessary expenditure and all other necessary arrangements. This would do a very great deal to popularise the force and draw public attention to it, and would help greatly to smarten up the men themselves.

Statement by Major J. St. Aubyn King, Adjutant, 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. The 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers is composed exclusively of Parsis, and is permitted to train throughout the year. The members of the Battalion are not generally speaking poor, and I do not think that a retaining fee would affect them, at the same time these particular Parsis are not rich.

2. The present road allowance I consider sufficient, but where a man may have to travel for four hours or more, in such cases as travelling by rail to shoot on the range, I would recommend that a subsistence allowance of annas 8 per diem be granted.

4. The Battalion is stationed at the following places :—

Poona,
Bombay,
Bulsar,
Navsari,
Surat,
Broach,
Ahmedabad.

Consequently no Officers' Mess can be maintained, some of the Officers are rich, but the majority are in quite moderate circumstances. During Camp all Officers' Mess appointments have to be hired, also Messing is expensive in the Bombay Presidency, therefore I would recommend that an allowance of Rs. 2 per diem be granted to I. T. F. Officers during this period.

5. The annual allowance of annas 8 for the repair and upkeep of clothing is not sufficient where a man is keen and attends parades regularly, I would recommend that the allowance be increased to Rs. 1-8-0 for every man who has completed the statutory period of training and has attended Camp, or that a tailor be employed during Camp and given an allowance for each article mended.

6. Recruits should, I consider, receive road and subsistence allowance at the same rates as allowed in the Regular Indian Army.

7. The granting of Rs. 22 for Mufti clothing to recruits would of course be popular, but many Parsis have enlisted, drawn their clothing and never appeared on parade, therefore should the above allowance be granted I would suggest that it be given to the individual after one year's approved service.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. I consider that the period in which I. T. F. Officers have to pass their examination might be extended to three years. The Parsis are not a warlike race and have only lately started to consider Military matters, and though they have a certain intelligence they do not, at present, easily assimilate Military ideas.

2. The Parsis have Clubs for themselves in nearly every place where there is a Parsi community, and owing to the Battalion being so dispersed I do not consider that clubs would be useful except in Bombay where a Club might be formed with great advantage at the Headquarters of the 11th Battalion.

3. A free issue of swords and binoculars should, I consider, be made to Officers during the time that they remain in the I. T. F., should an Officer however fail to pass his retention examination, the above should be handed back to Government. I doubt whether an annual clothing allowance would make any difference to Parsi Officers, who can afford the upkeep.

4. The question of a free issue of mufti clothing has been answered in my A.-7 above.

5. Parsis have several Branches of the Parsi Physical Culture League in which the leaders take an interest. The members of this battalion are all employed in clerical avocations, and find difficulty in obtaining leave to attend parades on week days, and I doubt whether many would attend a meeting in Bombay from outstations. I experienced great difficulty in making the men attend the Annual Camp in 1923.

6. I think that Provincial names would be popular, the members of this Battalion frequently refer to themselves as the Parsi Pioneers.

7. The 11th and 12th Battalions of the 2nd Bombay Pioneers have been granted the British scale of rations while in Camp, but it was found that the men really wanted Parsi food, which is more like Indian than British, on the other hand the Parsis are very insistent of having everything "British" as opposed to "Indian" I would suggest that a mixture of British and Indian rations would meet the case.

C.—Selection of Candidates for Commissions.

The selection of Candidates for Commissions among the Parsis is not easy. The Parsis are much divided among themselves into parties, so that a man is not recommended by them for a commission for his Military qualities but the particular section of the Community to which he belongs. I consider that the only method of selecting such candidates would be by examination and the approval of the Administrative Commandant. The Parsis not being a Military race, should all pass through the ranks before being granted commissions owing to party factions it is almost impossible to find a Parsi of real influence, directly a Parsi reaches a position of eminence, there is always some faction that endeavours to lessen his position, consequently I do not recommend "direct" commissions.

D.—Improvement of the Force Generally.

1. Government servants should not be permitted to join the I. T. F., as in times of emergency they would not be available for duty with the Force.

2. I consider that the system of Advisory Committee might be extended with advantage in this Presidency. I would suggest that there be an Advisory Committee in each Civil District and should consist of the Deputy Commissioner or Collector. The Administrative Commandant, Parsi gentlemen selected by the Civil Authorities, and the Senior Parsi Officer of the Unit residing in that District.

3. The statutory Training might be increased with great advantage during the first year to 56 days, the subsequent periodical training to be 28 days.

4. Owing to the nature of their civil avocations it would be practically impossible for Parsi Officers to attend a School for three months or even to be attached to a Regular Unit for 60 days.

5. The Parsis are keener on shooting than any other Branch of Military knowledge and every endeavour is made to encourage them. Armouries are situated in Poona, Bombay, Surat and Ahmedabad.

6. The Parsis, as a rule, do not live an outdoor life, consequently beds would be very popular in Camp, but Mosquito Curtains would not be necessary if the sites are chosen carefully.

7. As stated above their Civil avocations would be an obstacle to Parsi Officers attending Camp before and after the actual period of the Camp.

8. Attendances at Army courses would be impossible for the reasons stated in (7).

9. I am afraid that for the same reasons as above it would be impossible to induce N. C. Os. to be present for a longer period than that of the actual Camp.

10. For the next five years or until such time as the I. T. F. Medical Officers were really conversant with the duties of a Military Medical Officer in Camp, it would be necessary to have Regular Medical Officers present.

13. The Parsis are not keen on Foreign Service, in fact they maintain that they only joined the I. T. F. as they understood that they would only be used for "Home Defence". There would certainly be some hope of raising enthusiasm among the Parsis if a Unit for "local Defence only" were substituted for the present battalions. But I do not recommend that a Unit be called Auxiliary Force.

14. An Electrical Unit might possibly be raised, but I am not certain about this.

As regards a Motor Transport Company, there are not many members of the 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers who own Motor Cars. The kind of Parsi who owns Motor Cars, *i.e.*, the rich man's son does not join the Territorial Force, consequently I do not think there is much hope of success in raising a Motor Transport Company at present, but if this "Local Defence" Unit proved a success it might be tried.

E.—Amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules.

1. If the Officers of a Parsi Unit were always promoted from the Ranks they would necessarily have to be enrolled before they received their Commissions. Until such time as the Parsis really assimilate Military ideals and ideas, I think they should, on being granted commissions from the Ranks, be enrolled as Officers.

3. Parsis would only be enrolled for a Parsi Unit of the I. T. F and for no other, under the present circumstances where there are only two Units, transfers do sometimes take place.

4. The authorities for discharging Officers and men as shown under Annexure V, should make the matter quite clear.

6. The 12-2nd Parsi Pioneers are permitted to train all the year round, and receive pay on completion of their statutory Training, very few Parsis ask for leave.

Supplementary Questionnaire.

A. 8. Very few of the Parsi Officers are men of means and I doubt if they could support the expenses of Mess in Camp without their pay.

9. I do not consider that the I. T. F. should be given any further advantage over that very deserving person, the Indian Officer of the Indian Army.

10. I would recommend that the grant of a band allowance in any Unit which can shew a good promise of being able to keep a band. The 12-2nd Bombay Pioneers have entirely failed to hold out any such promise, though the Parsi Community in some places have helped with Instruments.

11. The road allowance to approved candidates for enrolment or for men attending parades from their places of residence should I think be two annas per mile. This is the rate now in force for enrolled men.

12. The question of remission of land revenue might be placed in abeyance, as regards the Parsis, until such time as they realized their responsibilities in the Territorial Force.

13. A bonus might be granted to those men who had completed the period of their statutory Training in a satisfactory manner.

B. 8. I think that a great deal of good would be done if an outline of the I. T. F. Act and Rules and all orders referring to Pay and Allowances be disseminated in the Vernacular, but it should be pointed out that what has been issued is "only an outline".

C. 5. In a Parsi Battalion the Parsi Officers have not enough Military knowledge themselves to judge anybody else but there is no objection to a general report as to the suitability of an I. T. F. Officer being signed by the Commanding Officer and the Senior I. T. F. Officers.

Statement by Mr. G. K. Nariman (Bombay).

My views are governed by the conviction first, that it is as essential to give to our boys and youth an efficient course of training in physical culture and use of fire arms as to make book learning available to them; and, secondly, that with regard to the said training no distinction whatever should be observed between the sons of white and coloured races in India.

It seems to me that while the authorities may be expected to smooth the way for our younger generation to take to military discipline enabling them to constitute "an efficient second line to the army", the candidates themselves should, through the heads of institutions where they are schooling, endeavour to meet the authorities half way in bringing about the desired consummation.

My statement primarily bears on the Parsi Community though I hope the observations made have a general application. A very efficient means, indeed the only one both feasible and popular, to remove all present and possible future defects in the development and physical training calculated to make citizen-soldiers of the rising generation, is to amalgamate the Indian Territorial Forces especially the Parsi Battalion with the existing Indian Auxiliary Forces For deep and practical study of the problem has brought home to many of us the unfortunate fact that owing to the political and other circumstances and the peculiar atmosphere generated after the war, any improvement in the status of the Indians as such would hardly remove the heart-burning which must exist so long as a differentiation between the white and the coloured either actually exists or plausible grounds are there to suspect its existence. I believe the gravamen of our complaint is succinctly embodied in the most pregnant remark of Sir P. S. Sivaswamy Aiyer :

> "There is an inviduous and galling distinction in the treatment accorded to the officers of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces.....
> .....I can understand the difficulties referred to in the Press Communiqué, but they will not convince any Indian that this device of dual commission is anything but a most unsatisfactory and irritating makeshift." ("*Times of India*", August 14th, 1924.)

In view of the above, it becomes unnecessary to answer the questionnaire in detail. I would, however, submit :

1. The Popularity of the forces may be increased by a periodical publication, monthly or quarterly, calling the attention of the Indian youth to the efforts made by their confreres in foreign countries affording comparison or contrast, with the efficiency or otherwise of the continental training and the neglect of it in certain countries of Asia and Africa.

2. In the method of selecting candidates for Commission in the Indian Territorial Force, unquestioned preference must be given to any candidate whose father or near relative has rendered conspicuous service during the war. My own relatives who staked their all in the war have been practically ruined in body. Such,—and there are only too many of them—ought not, for the fair name of Britain, to remain dependent on wealthy merchants whom the war alone has made what they are.

Statement by Mr. R. G. Pradhan, B.A., LL.B, M.L.C. (Bombay).

I beg to submit the following statement of my views on the subject matter of the inquiry to be made by the Auxiliary and Territorial Force Committee :—

This Committee has been appointed in pursuance of a resolution passed by the Legislative Assembly in February 1924. That resolution runs as follows :—

"That this Assembly recommends to the Governor-General-in-Council that a committee including members of the Legislature be immediately appointed to investigate and report on what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force so as to constitute it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army, and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India including the Indian Auxiliary Force."

It will be seen from this resolution that the objects of the inquiry is two-fold: (1) the expansion and improvement of the Indian Territorial Force, so as to make it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army and (2) the removal of all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in this country. Both these objects are important, but it is obvious, the first is by far the more important. In a way, the second is but a means to the realization of the first, for the improvement of the Indian Territorial Force depends partly on the removal of racial distinctions between that Force and the Indian Auxiliary Force.

I wish to premise at the outset that, in my opinion, though the inquiry is important in itself, it is not so wide as to cover the whole problem of India's defence, and that, therefore, the results of the inquiry, however good they may be, cannot be such as to afford a satisfactory and full solution of the problem.

The problem of India's defence is bound up with the political problem, and may be briefly expressed thus: India wishes to attain full responsible Government, both provincial and national, popularity called *Swarâj*. She, however, realizes that the attainment of *Swarâj* connotes national self-sufficiency in defence. She must be able to preserve and maintain internal security, and to defend herself against foreign aggression; and this she must be able to do without any foreign or extraneous aid. Her own responsibility for the preservation and maintenance of internal security is absolute; it must not, and cannot, be shared with any other member of the British Commonwealth. In case of foreign aggression, she has a right, as a member of the British Commonwealth, to look for such military and naval assistance, as other members can afford, and are willing to render; nevertheless, the responsibility of defending her frontiers must, in the main, rest on herself. Such being the conditions of *Swarâj*, it follows that India must become a self-sufficient military and naval nation. Such is the problem of India's defence, and before I proceed to deal with the specific questions which are referred to the Committee, I must express my firm conviction that the problem cannot be satisfactorily and fully solved, except by the adoption of the following measures, *viz.* :—

(1) Formation and maintenance of an adequate Indian Navy.

(2) Complete Indianization of the army in all its branches.

(3) Introduction of compulsory military training for all male Indians between the ages of 18 and 30.

I attach the greatest importance to all these measures, and I shall answer the objection that may be raised on the ground of expenditure by saying that, though I am myself an advocate of economy and retrenchment, whenever and wherever desirable and feasible, I strongly hold the view that no expenditure should be spared that may be necessary for the realization of these three objects, and thereby making India thoroughly organised and equipped for national self-defence. The complete Indianization of the army will, of course, lead to material reduction of the present military expenditure, but on the other hand, the formation of a navy and the introduction of compulsory military training will entail new expenditure, and the net result will, no doubt, be some increase in the total amount of expenditure on defence. But I feel not the slightest doubt that, having regard to the vast importance of the issues involved, the taxpayer will not grudge the additional expenditure that may be found necessary.

In my opinion, the importance of the third measure which I have proposed *viz.*, the introduction of compulsory military training is so great and far-reaching, that it will not, in the least, be affected by any quickening of the pace of Indianizing the army. And, therefore, I hold that compulsory military training should be introduced, whether the policy of the Government with regard to the Indianization of the army continues to be as illiberal as it is at present, or undergoes a change for the better.

If I am asked to suggest any definite scheme of compulsory military training, I shall refer to the scheme prepared by the National Service League, for England. It will be remembered that the National Service League framed proposals for the introduction of compulsory military training in England, and that a Bill had actually been introduced in the House of Lords to give effect to those proposals. The text of the Bill is published as an appendix to a book on " Compulsory Service " written by General Sir Ian Hamilton. Those proposals are, in my opinion, thoroughly sound and may well be adopted *mutatis mutandis*, in this country.

Having made my position clear, as regards the general problem of India's defence, I shall now proceed to deal with the specific questions which form the subject-matter of the Committee's inquiry.

The first question is : what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force so as to make it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army.

In approaching this question, the purposes for which the Territorial Force is created must be borne in mind. Those purposes are : (1) the creation or revival of the martial spirit among all classes of the Indian people, or, in other words, as the author of " the Army in India " has put it, " to cater for the military aspirations of those classes of the population to whom military service has not hitherto been a hereditary profession " ; and (2) creation of a second line to, and a source of reinforcement for, the regular army.

The object is, and should be, to reach the higher castes among the Hindus and generally all those classes which practically lie outside the range of recruitment to the regular army. The task before the Government and the responsible leaders of the people is to awaken and foster martial spirit among them to take steps to open out military careers for promising youths among them, and thus to enable the Indian people to participate in the defence of their country.

Two conclusions inevitably follow from the very nature of this object, *viz.*, (1) the mere formation of the infantry arm is not enough, other army services and, in particular the cavalry and artillery branches of the Territorial Force, must also be created ; and (2) the conditions laid down for enrolment must be fairly attractive, though not unduly liberal.

I wish to elaborate the latter point a little. The Territorial Force is not a mercenary, but a citizen, army. Presumably, therefore, it will be— as it ought to be—inspired by patriotic motives ; and those who join it may be relied upon not to demand overliberal terms, at the cost of the general taxpayer. At the same time, it will not be wise to ignore human nature, and presume too much on " the enthusiasm of emotional patriotism ". While, therefore, I do not approve of the idea of paying the members of the Territorial Force at the same rates at which the members of the Auxiliary Force are paid, the present system, according to which they are paid at the regular army rates, should be modified, so as to make it more in harmony with the requirements and status of the classes from which the Territorial Force is designed, in the main, to be recruited.

But though I do not propose that members of the Territorial Force should be paid at the same rates, as members of the Auxiliary Force, no distinction should be made between them, as regards payment of bonus and allowances.

The suggestions mentioned in the Questionnaire (A—Pay and Allowances) are, for the most part, worthy of favourable consideration. But I do not at all approve of the suggestion mentioned in the supplementary questionnaire that land revenue should be remitted to enrolled men of the Territorial Force.

The present strength of the Territorial Force is limited to 20,000 men. This should at once be raised to 50,000 men, and the aim should be to raise a force of at least 100,000 men in the course of the next few years.

The question of making the Territorial Force an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army raises the question of the training to be given to the Force. Speaking on the resolution referred to above, which has led to the appointment of this Committee, Mr. Burdon pointed out that the function of the second line was to be partially trained in peace, and after a further period of intensive training at the outbreak of war, to join the active army as a part of it. He further pointed out that the Territorial soldier would need six months' further training before he was fit to join the regular force, and that, therefore, the Territorial Force could not be part of the active army on the outbreak of war. If this view is correct, it means that the training imparted to the Territorial Force is inadequate; in that case, it must be improved, and I, therefore, approve of the suggestion mentioned in the *questionnaire* (D.—3) that the period of training should be increased.

A disadvantage under which the Territorial Force is labouring at present in the Bombay Presidency is that there is only one training camp which is situated at Belgaon, and, in consequence, all the Territorial soldiers recruited from distant parts of the Presidency have to go there. This disadvantage should be removed by the institution of additional convenient central camps.

Advisory Committees.

I approve of the suggestion that the Indian Territorial Force Committee should be increased to five or more members, and should include a local Territorial Force officer in addition to the Military member. The Government of Bombay have taken a right step in forming District branches of the Provincial Committee. But, I am afraid, care is not taken to make these District Committees as representative and influential as they should be. Besides, as far as I know, very little work is being done by them. I, for one, attach great importance to these Committees, provided they are so constituted as to contain members who feel keen interest on the expansion and improvement of the Territorial Force, and will do their best to popularize it, and promote enrolment to it. They should not be mere advisory bodies, to be consulted when the Military member may be inclined to do so; but they should be invested with the specific function of carrying on propaganda with a view to promoting recruitment to the Force. I am firmly convinced that, with such propaganda, and with the improvements I have suggested above, no difficulty will be experienced in training an adequate Territorial Force, fully organized and trained so as to become an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army.

I now come to the question of removing racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India, including the Indian Auxiliary Force.

I must frankly say that having regard to the object for which the Auxiliary Force is constituted, I do not quite see the necessity for its constitution as a separate Force. The Force is avowedly intended for local service; section 18 of the Auxiliary Force Act provides that, *ordinarily*, the duty of the Force will be to act in support of the Civil Power, or to provide guards. Unless I am altogether mistaken, the Auxiliary Force is intended to be employed for the purpose of maintaining internal security. The idea seems to be that, in case of war, the regular Forces and also the Territorial Force will be dispatched to the Frontier and, if need be, even beyond the frontier. At such a time, there is a risk of internal trouble, to put down which, the Indians themselves cannot be trusted; and therefore a Force must be raised from among Europeans and Anglo-Indians, which will aid the civil powers in suppressing all internal trouble and disorder. If I am right in my understanding of the real purpose for which the Auxiliary Force is constituted, it is obvious, that it is intended to meet apprehended danger from the Indian people themselves, and is thus based upon distrust of them.

I concede that provision must be made for maintaining internal peace and security, and suppressing all Civil disorder. But I do not see why the task should be entrusted to a Force entirely composed of Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and why it should not be shared by Indians also, unless it be supposed that all Indians will join in creating trouble, or that Indians will refuse to assist the Civil power in putting down trouble raised by their own countrymen. In the event of either of these alternatives coming out true, it is doubtful whether even the regular Indian army, or the Territorial Force can be trusted.

The duties of the Auxiliary Force being such that they can be, and ought to be, performed by Europeans and Indians alike, I maintain that the Force should not be composed only of the former, but should be open to Indians as well with this distinction, however, that Indians between the ages of 18 and 31 should be eligible for enrolment only to the Territorial Force, and not to the Auxiliary Force.

An objection will be raised that it may not be found practicable to constitute one common Auxiliary Force for Indians and Europeans. I do not know what practical difficulties exist, and cannot think, assuming that they exist, that they will be found quite insurmountable. But in case expert opinion holds that these difficulties are too great to be got over, then I would approve of the proposal mentioned in the *questionnaire* that a section of the Indian Territorial Force should be formed with liabilities similar to those of the Auxiliary Force and trained on the same system.

The Auxiliary Force Act provides for the training of cadets, but no such provision is made by the Territorial Force Act, that provision should be made.

Officers of the I. T. Force.

I urge that the resolution passed by the Legislative Assembly in March 1921 to the effect that officers in the Territorial Force should have the rank of Second Lieutenant, Lieutenant or higher rank and that no distinction should be made between the Indian Territorial Force and the Indian Auxiliary Force in respect of the authority which signs the Commissions and that officers in these two Forces should take rank *inter se* according to dates of appointment, should be given effect to.

I approve, in general, of the draft regulations regarding 'officers', and of most of the suggestions made in the *questionnarie* under the heading—B—Popularity of the Force.

The University Corps.

With regard to the University Corps, I heartily approve of Dr. Paranjpye's proposal for the compulsory military training of undergraduates. I also approve of the resolution passed at the Universities Conference in May 1924 with the exception of part (6) of the resolution.

I would strongly appeal to the Committee to carefully consider Dr. Paranjpye's proposal.

I understand that payment to members of the University Corps is made at the end of the year. This causes inconvenience which should be removed by making payment immediately after a period of training.

Statement by Mr. K. C. De, C.I.E., I.C.S., (Bengal).

Q. A. 1. Members of the I. T. F. should be given a salary for the period of non-embodiment at Rs. 2 a month for the first two years, Rs. 2/8/0 for the next two years' and Rs. 3 for the last two years. Naiks to get Re. 1 per month extra and Havildars Rs. 2 per month extra.

Q. A. 2. Members of the I. T. F. should get Re. 1 per diem as subsistence allowance from the day they leave home to the day they arrive at camp, both days inclusive and at the same rate on their way back home. They should not get paid for the days of travel, before joining and after leaving camp.

Q. A. 3. The rate of T. A. given to members of the U. T. C. is now 4 annas a day. This is inadequate and should be raised to 8 annas so as to cover tram hire, etc.

Q. A. 4. The allowance per mess should be increased from Rs. 60 to Rs. 250 per annum. Messing allowance to individual members is not desirable.

Q. A. 5. This is a matter for the Commanding Officers. If they find 8 annas per man to be insufficient, they should ask for an increase.

Q. A. 6. Travelling and subsistence allowance to recruits should be at the same rates as allowed in the Regular Army.

Q. A. 7. Recruits should be allowed a mufti allowance of Rs. 22.

Q. B. 1. The time allowed to an Officer to pass his retention examination should be 3 years, until a central school is established as proposed in answer to D 4 when every Officer will be expected to qualify after a course of 3 months, but to backward men, a second chance should be given.

Q. B. 2. Officers' clubs are hardly necessary at the present state of the movement. When the force develops such clubs will be desirable.

Q. B. 3. The allowance of Rs. 300 is hardly of any assistance to the getting of the first outfit of an Officer, which costs something near Rs. 1,200. They should be given the sword and the binocular free. They should also get an annual clothing allowance to cover the cost of the summer khaki uniform at least.

Q. B. 4. N. C. O.'s and men of the I. T. F. should be given a free issue of mufti clothing to take home after training.

Q. B. 5. Territorial weeks and shooting competitions at convenient centres are very useful for recruiting.

Q. B. 6. I. T. F. units should be given provincial names.

Q. B. 7. The rations should be suitable to the physique and habits of the members of each unit. The details should be prescribed by the medical Officers of the unit. The cost may exceed the standard cost in a few cases but the difference will not be much.

Q. C. Candidates for commissions should be selected by the Advisory Committees who should consult the District Magistrate of his home District as regards the character, social position and antecedents of the candidate.

Ordinarily the selection should be confined to the ranks of the units or of the U. T. C. in the same province. But in exceptional cases territorial magnates of high social position and possessing influence, who can be expected to raise platoons in their own Districts may also be selected.

Q. D. 1. Government servants should be enrolled only if his superior Officer can allow him leave during embodiment of the unit throughout the period of enrolment.

Q. D. 2. The Advisory Committee should consist of five members :

President—an Indian, either an official of high rank or a non-official of high social position and influence.

A Military member—preferably the Commandant of the Unit.

The senior Officer (Indian) of the Territorial Unit.

Two non-official Indians of high social position or political importance.

If an unit has several training centres, there should be an Advisory Committee at each of these centres.

Q. D. 3. The period of I. T. F. training should be the same as at present, namely, preliminary training 56 days and annual training from the second year—28 days.

Q. D. 4. A central school for training Officers of the Territorial Force should be opened in connection with the Military school at Dehradun. The length of the course should be 3 months. The syllabus should be that required for the retention of examination. Further courses for advanced training or training in special Branches should be gradually added to the same school. Until the school is abolished training should be by attachment to British Regiments.

Q. D. 5. Rifle clubs are useful for keeping up training during the period of non-embodiment. For encouraging these certain number of rifles and ammunition should be allowed. These can be kept in the Distt. Police armouries.

Q. D. 6. Beds and mosquito curtains should be provided for N. C. O.'s and men whenever required by the medical authorities.

Q. D. 7. Company commanders should join camps a week before and leave a week after the training period begins.

Q. D. 8. I. T. F. Officers and N. C. O.'s should be trained at physical training and weapon training courses in army schools.

Q. D. 9. N. C. O.'s should join camp a week before the training period commences and undergo a course of instruction in drill.

Q. D. 10. Medical Officers should be attached to each unit during the training period.

Q. D. 11. Medical Officers should be attached to provincial units and not organised into a separate unit of their own.

Q. D. 12. The Bengali companies should be raised to a Bengal Battalion and separated from the Bihar and Orissa companies.

Q. D. 13. The Auxiliary Force should be thrown open to Indians. Each unit of the force should have a separate Indian Section, composed of the higher class of Indians who would not join the Territorials. They should have the same emoluments, privileges, responsibility and training as the corresponding European Section. The European and Indian Sections may be combined wherever it is found that religious and social customs and personal habits are not in the way of a joint mess. This will remove a great cause of dissatisfaction among the Indians.

Statement by Principal Rathnaswamy, M.Sc., Pachaiyappa's College Madras.

Question No.	Reply.
A—1	Not for U. T. C.
A—2, 3, 4 and 5	Yes.
A—6 and 7	Not for the U. T. C.
B—1, 2 and 3	Yes.
B—4	Not for the U. T. C.
A—8	Yes.
A—10	Yes.
A—12	Yes and favourably.
A—13, 14 and 15	Yes.
B—8	Yes.
C—6	Yes.
B—5, 6 and 7	Yes.
C—3	Yes.
C—4	No, this would discourage recruiting from the Bhadralog.
D—2	I am in favour of Provincial Advisory Committees as being superior to District Committees.
D—5 and 6	Yes.
D—7	Rather a strain on U. T. C. officers.
D—8	Yes.
D—9	A week would be enough.
D—10, 13, 15	Yes.

General.—As for general suggestions I should like to make this one. I find that in the Madras Presidency the formation of Territorial Battalions is not evenly distributed throughout the country. While Malabar, Trichinopoly, and the University have a battalion each (I believe Malabar has two) the city of Madras, the central and Northern Districts of the Presidency have none at all. I think this unevenness ought to be remedied as soon as possible if the *Territorial* idea is to be realised in fact. When I asked a question about this in the local council I was told that the limit of numbers allowed for Madras had been reached and further expansion lay with the Military authorities and the Government of India. I would also suggest that the spirit of cast should be completely kept out of these Territorial Battalions. While provision in men's and officers' messes should be made for vegetarians, vegetarians and non-vegetarians should dine together in a common mess. It would be therefore opposed to the formation of Mohammedan or Parsis, or Indian Christians, Anglo-Indian Battalions. The Territorial Force must be composed of Territorial Battalions and not communal, or racial, or religious battalions.

Statement by Mr. Sidney Loo-Nee, Bar.-at-Law (Burrma).

B.—POPULARITY OF THE FORCE.

6. "Provincial names" should also include "Burma" Provincial names.

C.—METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE I. T. FORCE.

2. It will be well if one or two members of the Board belongs or belong to the native unofficial class.

3. There should be a native element in the composition of the "Advisory Committee".

4. This rule should be relaxed in the case of some exceptional men in some cases. See Questionnaire D. 8 and Annexure I. 2. Last paragraph.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

2. *Vide* C. 3 *supra.*

8. *Vide* C. 4 *supra.*

14. This should be amended to read :—

"Electrical . . . . for Calcutta, Bombay and Rangoon respectively."

Supplementary Questionnaire.

D.—17. Here it should be provided that in and for Burma the words "Burman officer" should be substituted for "Indian officer".

Statement by Hony. Lieut. S. C. Ghosh Mullick (Bengal).

A. 1.

1. Members of the I. T. F. should be given a salary for the period of non-embodiment at Rs. 2 a month for the first two years, Rs. 2-8-0 for the next two years and Rs. 3 for the last two years, Naiks to get Re. 1 per month extra and Havildars Rs. 2 per month extra.

A. 2.

2. Members of the I. T. F. should get Re. 1 per diem as subsistence allowance from the day they leave their home to the day they arrive at camp, both days inclusive and at the same rate on their way back home. They are not to get paid for the period spent in travelling to and from their training centre.

A. 3.

3. The rate of the travelling allowance sanctioned for members of the U. T. C. is 6 annas a day.

A. 4.

4. The allowance per mess should be increased to Rs. 250 per annum. Messing allowance to individual members is discouraged.

A. 5.

5. This is a matter for the Commanding Officers, if they find 8 annas per man to be insufficient, they are to ask for an increase.

A. 6.

6. Travelling and subsistence allowance to recruits should be at the same rate as allowed in the Regular Army.

A. 7.

7. Recruits should be allowed a mufti allowance of Rs. 22.

B. 1.

8. The time allowed to an officer to pass his retention examination should be 3 years, until a central school is established as proposed in answer to D.-4, when every officer will be expected to qualify after a course of 3 months, but to backward men, a second chance should be given.

B. 2.

9. Officer's clubs are hardly necessary at the present state of the movement. When the Force develops such clubs will be desirable.

B. 3.

10. The allowance of Rs. 300 is hardly of any assistance to the getting of the first outfit of an officer, which costs something near Rs. 800. They should be given the sword and the binocular free. They should also get an annual clothing allowance to cover the cost of the summer uniform at least.

B. 4.

11. N. C. O's. and men of the I. T. F. should be given a free issue of mufti clothing to take to their home after training.

B. 5.

12. Territorial weeks and shooting competitions at convenient centres are very useful for recruiting.

B. 6.

13. I. T. F. units should be given provincial names.

B. 7.

14. The rations should be suitable to the physique and habit of the members of each unit. The data should be prescribed by the medical officers of the unit. The cost may exceed the standard cost in a few cases but the difference will not be much.

C.

15. Candidates for commissions should be selected by the Advisory Committee who should consult the District Magistrate of their home district as regards the character, social position and antecedents of the candidate.

Ordinarily the selection should be confined to the ranks of the units or of the U. T. C. in the same province. But in exceptional cases territorial magnates of high social position and possessing influence, who can be expected to raise platoons in their own districts may also be selected.

D. 1.

16. Government servants should be enrolled only if his superior officer can allow him leave during embodiment of the unit throughout the period of enrolment.

D. 2.

17. The Advisory Committee should consist of five members—

President—an Indian, either an official of high rank or a non-official of high social position and influence.

A military member—preferably the commandant of the unit.

The senior officer (Indian) of the Territorial unit.

Two non-official Indians of high social position or political importance.

If a unit has several training centres, there should be an Advisory Committee at each of these centres.

D. 3.

18. The period of I. T. F. training should not be altered and should be the same as at present, namely preliminary training 56 days and annual training from the second year 28 days.

D. 4.

19. A central school for training officers of the Territorial Force should be opened in connection with the Military school at Dehra-Dun. The length of the course should be 3 months. The syllabus should be that required for the retention examination. Further courses for advanced training or training in special branches should be gradually added to the same school. Until the school is established training should be by attachment preferably to British Regiments for 60 days.

D. 5.

20. Rifle clubs are useful for keeping up training during the period of non-embodiment. For encouraging these certain number of rifles and ammunitions should be allowed. These can be kept in the armouries where there are regular units in the absence of which in the District police armouries.

21. Beds and mosquito curtains should be provided for N. C. O's. and men when recommended by the local medical authorities.

D. 7.

22. Company commanders should report themselves at the unit Headquarter a week before and leave a week after the training period.

D. 8.

23. I. T. F. officers and N. C. O's. should be trained at physical training and weapon training courses in army schools.

D. 9.

24. At least 16 I. T. F. N. C. O's. per Battalion should join camp a week before the training period and undergo a course of instruction in drill.

D. 10.

25. Medical officers should be attached to each unit during the training period.

D. 11.

26. Medical officers should be attached to provincial units and not organised into units of their own.

D. 12.

27. The Bengalee companies of the 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment should be raised to a Bengalee Battalion, and separated from the Behar and Orissa Companies.

D. 13.

28. The Auxiliary Force should be thrown open to Indians. Each unit of the force should have a separate Indian section. They should have the same emoluments, responsibilities and training as the corresponding European section. The

European and Indian sections may be combined wherever it is found that religious and social customs are not in the way of a joint mess. This will remove a great cause of dissatisfaction among the Indians.

D. 14.

29. Calcutta and Bombay should have Electrical and Mechanical and Motor Transport companies, respectively.

Supplementary Questionnaire.

A. 8.

30. If the Territorial Force is to form an integral part of the Indian Army and is to form the second line of defence then the question of abolishing all pay for the I. T. F. officers should not be encouraged. I. T. F. officers should be paid and the rank not an honorary one.

A. 9.

31. I. T. F. officers should get the same pay as allowed for British officers on the Indian establishment.

A. 10.

32. The Band allowance should be sanctioned for I. T. F. units similar to that laid down for A. F. I. units.

A. 11.

33. The road allowance to approved applicants for enrolment and to the enrolled men of the I. T. F. when embodied for training or service should be 2 annas per mile.

A. 15.

34. Travelling allowance for U. T. C. officers proceeding to and from the place of daily parade should be sanctioned at the rate of 12 annas per mile the scheduled rate for Taxis in Calcutta, with the proviso that when the distance travelled in a single direction is less than one mile no allowance is admissible. When proceeding to and from the training camp officers should get 1st class warrants by rail or river and by road mileage allowance at 8 annas a mile.

C. 5.

35. The recommendation of the Officer Commanding will be quite sufficient to confirm an officer in the I. T. F.

D. 19.

36. Lance-Naiks and Naiks before promotion to Naik and Havildar respectively should be attached, with their consent, to a regular battalion, active or training, for a period not exceeding 2 months. The number allowed to be so attached should not exceed the number of vacancies existing at the time in the ranks of Naik and Havildar respectively, and the selection should be made in consultation with commanders of their respective companies due regard being paid to their ability and aptitude for military training.

A few more suggestions on points not mentioned in the questionnaire.

37. The N. C. O's. and men of the U. T. C. should be allowed to join the provincial units in the corresponding ranks. For these the preliminary training of 56 days may be reduced to 28 days at the discretion of the Officer Commanding the unit.

38. U. T. C. Officers are not allowed to draw pay or allowances under any circumstance. This is hardly justifiable. As regards allowances, however, they should stand on an equal footing with the I. T. F. Officers.

39. The annual camp of exercise for U. T. C. should be held at a healthy station well away from their Head Quarters, and increased camp allowances should be sanctioned.

40. Cavalry and artillery units as well as Light horse units should be encouraged. For the present to start with at least a squadron of Light Cavalry may be sanctioned for each province.

42. I. T. F. officers should be allowed to get their transfer to a Regular unit if they so desire as under the Indianisation scheme.

Statement by Lieut. the Rev. T. D. Sully, 3rd (United Provinces) Bn. U. T. C.

In the following note I shall deal solely with the position of the University Training Corps, I. T. F., as although I have held a commission in the Agra Volunteer Rifles, the Indian Defence Force (European Section), and now in the Auxiliary Force; the University Training Corps has been my main interest and it is about it that I am at all competent to express an opinion. Reference are to the headings of the Questionnaire :

A. 5, etc. There should be no question of pay in the Univ. T. C., but T. A. and allowances should be sufficient to cover expenses. Members of the U. T. C. are sensitive to any distinctions or differences made between their scale and mode of travelling, equipment, etc., and that of the Aux. Force and other branches of the service. It is rather a petty annoyance to have to collect small sums for caps, button sticks, etc., which might have been included in the normal uniform and equipment issued.

B. 7 & D. 15. In view both of the very mixed character of U. T. C. Bns., and the standard of living of the Student class, some special allowance seems necessary in the way of rations. Much may be done by the co-operation of university authorities, and I should support the suggestion (5) of the Universities Conference. The success of the annual camps will contribute very much to the popularity and efficiency of the U. T. C.

C. 2. The position of commissioned officers in the U. T. C. units is a peculiar one. In some quarters, it seems, the mistake was made at first of giving commissions directly to students in the Corps. The commissions should certainly be given to members of the staffs of universities and colleges, and so far as possible to those who are permanent and occupying a fairly senior position. It would no doubt, in some cases, be a good thing to hold out the prospect of a member of the Corps, who, as a student, had done good work and secured Non-commissioned rank, securing a position in his old Corps as commissioned officer as he passes on to the staff of the institution. But, under present conditions, a graduate has to begin by securing temporary and subordinate posts, and may move from one institution to another for some time before he finally settles down to a permanent post. The recommendation of the Vice-Chancellor or Principal should always be secured.

D. I should certainly support the first suggestion of the Universities Commission. Such special certificates of proficiency should go along with a general certificate of a student's service in the corps, to be given him on leaving the University; and a student should not ordinarily obtain such a certificate if he leaves the Corps before the end of his University course.

D. If the U. T. C. is to succeed, whether as providing some military training or as ultimately becoming an Officer's Training Corps for the I. T. F. and Indian arm, it is of the first importance to secure continuous training for some 5 or 6 years at least.

The I. T. F. Act was drafted before the recent reorganisation of the educational system in the U. P., and in Section 2 there is no doubt that "Students of .... a University, etc., was intended to include students from the Matriculation examination upwards. In view of the changes that have followed the Act setting up a Board of High School and Intermediate Education, the I. T. F. Act definition needs redrafting.

For at Lucknow and Allahabad, for instance, the Intermediate institutions are not affiliated to a University in any way, and hence for the two years of the Intermediate course such students are not eligible for membership of the "University Corps." On passing from the Intermediate college to the University, the majority of them will have only a two years course before them, and in this period it will never be possible to do much more than complete a recruit's course of training. Only a small proportion will be able to lengthen their course by either failing in their examinations or by going on to post-graduate courses.

At Agra and Aligarh, on the other hand, the intermediate students are still members of a college affiliated to a University and can therefore be enrolled in the University Corps. In this case they have before them, if enrolled in the first year, a course of at least 4 years training. There can be no doubt, I think, that recruits should in all cases be secured for the U. T. C. in the 1st year Intermediate class (or the XIth class as it is called in some institutions). It would be sufficient to add to the present clause under section 2 of the Act the words, "or the Intermediate classes of any institution recognised by a Board of High School and Intermediate Education."

At present, in the United Provinces, the U. T. C. has not got beyond the stage of squad drill without arms, and neither its popularity or its utility will be very great until it is seen that it is really intended to go further than this.

If on the one hand recruits are obtained who will put in 4 years serious training, facilities should be provided for that training to be given. This involves the provision of armouries and a sufficient staff of qualified instructors for all centres of training. With such advance it should be possible for the U.T.C. detachments to co-operate with the Aux. Force and I. T. F. units in their locality in joint field days, lectures, rifle meetings, etc.

Officers commanding detachments of the U. T. C. should be furnished with full particulars of the openings and conditions of admission to the other branches of the I. T. F. and the Indian army, so that they may be able to hold out to the best men in their detachments the possibility of a career in the military profession, or at least of longer service in the I. T. F. after they pass out of college.

Statement by Mr. Hormusjee Muncherjee, Vakil (Bombay).

The question before the Committee of reorganisation of the Indian Territorial Force is but a feature of the larger question of the military administration of India and based on the same considerations which demand reforms in the army administration of India. We propose however at present to limit our observations strictly to the scope of the inquiry before this Committee.

That the policy of Government has hitherto been one of acute distrust is manifest from the entire history of military administration in India. Even the existing disabilities of Indians, their studied exclusion from the scientific branches of the fighting services, and from all the higher posts of command can but point to only one conclusion. We take it however that the national awakening of India and its urgent cry for army reform on the one hand and the signal and devoted services rendered by the Indian army in the various theatres of war, services which have been officially recognised as a matter of splendid history, have rendered the Government prepared to consider and concede to their legitimate length the demands of India.

The goal of full responsible Government involves the necessary corollary that India shall be able to undertake her own defence. India is well forward on the march towards Dominion status, and though the ability for self-defence need not be just coincident in point of time with or delay the grant of Home Rule, still the larger and quicker the stride towards self-dependence in defence the better for India. The more so in view of the urgent and repeated warning from official quarters (*e.g., vide* "Defence of India") that in future in wars like the last war, the absolute continuity of British protection can never be guaranteed, and that India's ultimate goal should be to be able to defend herself against all comers by herself. It is with this object constantly in view that we propose to place one suggestion before the committee.

The terms of the reference to this committee pre-suppose an acceptance of the propositions that there is need for improvement and expansion of the Indian Territorial Force and that racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces should be removed. We take it therefore that the scope of the present investigation is limited to a consideration of the measures which should be taken for effecting such improvement and expansion and abolishing such racial distinctions.

Of course almost every suggestion for improvement of the Indian Territorial Force could be met by an objection that it would cause disaffection amongst the Regular Indian Troops unless a similar improvement and amelioration were made in the condition of the latter. It would be proper to anticipate and meet so omnibus an objection to all improvement, at the very outset. In the first place the question of the Regular Indian army is not before this committee, and their recommendations must proceed independently of any such objection. In the next place there is a corresponding need of reform in the Regular Army and the question will no doubt in due course be duly considered by those competent to do so. In any event the backward state of one branch of the army is certainly no argument against a recommendation for the advancement of another branch.

We shall deal with the subject under the heads in which the Questionnaire is classified. The Questionnaire itself is disjointed incomplete and superficial and hardly in any case touches the seat of the affection.

Finally, as Government have in the Memorandum regarding the organisation of the Indian Territorial Force, invited reasonable complaints and grievances which the Local Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committee may desire to bring to its notice, we shall take this opportunity to ventilate the legitimate grievances of the Parsee Pioneer Battalions of Bombay and emphasise the hardships and anomalies caused by the fact that legislation is much behind the times.

Removal of racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular Military Forces including the Auxiliary Force.

The non-regulars in India consist of the Auxiliary Force and the Territorial Force. The former has been constituted under the Auxiliary Force of India Act for the benefit of Europeans and Anglo-Indians and is ordinarily not liable to perform military service beyond the limits of the prescribed military area in which the corps or unit may be located. The Territorial Force is constituted

under the Indian Territorial Force Act and consists of Indians only, liable to perform military service in any part of India and even beyond the limits of India under a general or special order of the Governor-General-in-Council. There are differences and distinctions in the two Acts and the rules thereunder which are *prima facie* attributable to the different rules for which the two forces purport to be constituted: we mean the limitation of liability to local service only in the Auxiliary Force on the one hand and the larger obligations to perform military service in the Territorial Force on the other. These we shall for the present leave alone and confine ourselves to the distinctions which are merely racial and as such must be removed. As already stated Indians are as a class excluded from enrolment in the Auxiliary Force. The Auxiliary Force has most of the arms of the regular army, whilst the Territorial Force consists barely of the Infantry. Members of the Auxiliary Force are eligible to King's Commissions. No substantive King's Commissions can be granted to Officers of the Territorial Force. Members of the Territorial Force have pay, allowance, ration, accommodation, etc., on the Indian (which in military parlance has acquired the significance of 'inferior') scale and Indian (interior) rank and status. Members of the Auxiliary Force have all these on British scale and have British rank. What's in a name, is a smiling platitude often suavely levelled against the objection to Indian rank. It may as well be remembered that it cuts both ways and besides British military policy has in public opinion branded Indian ranks with the hallmark of sterling interiority, which offends the sentiments of those that possess them. On embodiment for service or training the Indian Army Act applies to the Territorial Force and the Army Act of England to the Auxiliary Force. The difference in the Acts may easily be pointed out if necessary. Assuming that there was no difference in substance, the distinction would be all the more invidious.

These racial distinctions ought to be removed. Proceeding upon the supposition we have already laid down above, that the necessity of removing racial distinctions is admitted, we refrain from entering into any arguments for and against such removal, or any disquisition on the relative intrinsic merits of troops Indian and British. If any sanction is still needed beyond the sanction of disinterested reasoning, we invite attention to the series of resolutions passed by the first Indian Legislative Assembly in the year 1921, with the concurrence of the Government of India and H. E. the Commander-in-Chief. The subject of Army administration and reform in India was before the Assembly. Amongst other things the House resolved that the King Emperor's Indian subjects should be freely admitted to all arms of His Majesty's military naval and air forces in India, the ancillary services and *the Auxiliary Forces* and that every encouragement should be given to Indians, including the educated middle classes, subject to the prescribed standard of fitness to enter the commissioned ranks of the army, and that not less than 25 per cent. of the King's Commissions granted every year, should be given to His Majesty's Indian subjects to start with. It is deplorable that so moderate and well-considered a recommendation of the Assembly should not have been acted upon at all, or certainly not in a generous spirit. If England is sincere in its protestations to raise India to Dominion status, then why not?

We suggest that the Auxiliary Forces Act and the Indian Territorial Force Act should be amended on the following lines :—

(1) All British subjects should be made eligible for enrolment in the Auxiliary Force, India. All British subjects should be made eligible for enrolment in the Indian Territorial Force.

(2) Both Forces should have full British rank, travelling allowance, accommodation including hospital accommodation, etc. Questions as to clothing, uniform and ration should be left to the decision of the Advisory Committee to be determined as to each unit raised having regard to the wishes of its members and its personnel.

(The matter of pay and allowances is dealt with under a separate heading).

(3) On embodiment for training on military service the Army Act should apply to either Force.

(4) The period of service in the Indian Territorial Force should be reduced from six years to four years and enrolled persons should be classified on lines similar to sections 11 and 12 of the Auxiliary Force Act. This will provide an initial reserve of men over a particular age

to be fixed. Provision may be made for re-enrolment on the termination of a member's term of service, in the active class at such member's option and if he be then under the prescribed age limit for such class, otherwise in the class of Reserves for a further period of two years. This would result in a continually supplemented body of trained Territorial Reservists to support the active class when required.

(5) The conditions of discharge in both the Acts are unfitted to a Volunteer Force and should be amended on the lines of the British Territorial and Reserve Force Act, section 9, which except when a proclamation calling out the Reserve on service is in force, entitles a man to be discharged before the end of his current term of service on giving 3 months written notice to the Officer Commanding, and paying a prescribed amount not exceeding £5 for the use of the 'Association' and duly returning all clothing and equipment.

(6) The constitution of the Advisory Committee should be amended and an administration of either Force decentralised consistently with considerations of military efficiency. It will be conceded that Volunteer non-regular forces need not be and never are subjected to the rigid discipline of Regular troops. The functions of the Advisory Committee so formed should be clearly defined and laid down and should be calculated to curb the military dispotism in matter purely administrative of officers steeped with the rigid notions of the Regulars which however necessary for the discipline of the Regular Army, are entirely misplaced in a citizen force. This will certainly prevent the recurrence of the recent Ahmedabad incident or the even more recent attempt of the Southern Command to force the hands of the Parsee Pioneers in Bombay.

This question is touched by items D-2 and E-7 of the Questionnarie. We agree with the suggestions in item D-2 but propose that the Advisory Committee should comprise more than five members and half the number of members should be appointed by Government nomination and the other half by some sort of popular representation, *e.g.*, nomination by public local bodies like the Municipality, Universities, etc., or by the local Legislative Council.

We have an obvious example worth following as a precedent in the County Associations established under the English Territorial and Reserve Force Act and the powers and duties assigned to such association under section 2 of the said Act. The powers and duties of the Advisory Committee should be similar to those of the County Associations. We refrain from encumbering this statement with any quotations from the English Act. The question of the personnel of every unit and corps to be raised under the Acts, *i.e.*, whether for instance there should be class companies or units, etc., may be conveniently left to the decision of the Advisory Committee, to be determined in each case with due regard to conditions of society on the one hand and military efficiency on the other.

(7) Punishments for offences in both the Forces should be revised and in no case should the punishment exceed the punishment for the corresponding offence as laid down in the British Territorial and Reserve Forces Act.

(8) All Commissioned Officers, in both Forces should receive full substantive King's Commissions. There is obvious necessity to do away with the practice of granting dual commissions, which if they involve no difference in status, perpetuate a distinction which is all the more invidious.

It will be a question for the consideration of those familiar with the working of military administration whether from the standpoint of economy in administration it would be advisable to repeal both the Indian Territorial Force and Auxiliary Force of India Acts and frame one consolidated new Act with provision in it for the raising of corps and units with liabilities restricted to local service only.

The further consideration may arise that though the conditions of service in the Indian Territorial Force would be more onerous than under the Auxiliary Force, there would be no compensating allurements to attract and ensure enrolment in the Territorial Force. These, if necessary could easily be provided in

the shape of retaining fee, travelling allowances, remission of land revenue, bonus or one or other of the various ways set out in the Questionnaire itself.

Item D-13 and the items under heading E of the Questionnaire are relevant D-13 as will be seen falls far short of the amendments required. We agree with items E-1 and E-6. In view of what has preceded the other items under E do not arise.

Popularity of the Force.

That the actual strength of the Force falls far short of even the prescribed limit of 20,000 men is cogent indication of the unpopularity of the Force. Nor is it a surprise that it is unpopular. All the considerations which call for the reforms above detailed, weigh against enrolment under existing conditions. Leaders of Indian opinion advise against enrolment so long as racial distinctions between the two Forces exist. Mr. Bepinchundra Pal emphasised this in the last Legislative Assembly.

The placing of the Force on a footing of equality with the British Territorial Troops, the popular constitution of the Advisory Committee, lessening of the period of service, a rendering easy the conditions of discharge aforesaid are all measures which in our opinion will not fail to render the Force immensely popular.

We expect an animated response from Indians, if the call be sufficiently wholehearted. Should however the response fall short of expectation, the obvious reason is to be found in the vicious military policy pursued throughout the entire length of British rule in India and its necessary baneful influence of stunning the military capacity of the people of India. It may then be the problem of the hour to revive what was hitherto sought to be killed. We only hope the evil effect of this past policy are not deep-seated.

We agree entirely with the suggestions in items B-2, 3, 5, 6 and 8 of the Questionnaire. Rifle clubs as suggested in item D-5, proper provision and facility for all sorts of sports, and for medical inspection, advice and treatment for physical fitness should add to the popularity and usefulness of the Force.

Method of selecting candidates for Commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

We are unable to bring to bear upon the subject any experience which can distinguish the relative values in actual practice of alternative schemes. We offer a few considerations based on experience in the Parsee Pioneers of Bombay.

We are not aware of any systematic method hitherto prevailing of selecting candidates for commission. The selection is in the hands of the Officer Commanding and if any examination or test is prescribed or laid down (of which we are not aware) it was in the case of the Parsee Battalion at least more form than substance. The test if any was certainly not competitive. Furthermore the selection proceeded as a rule from the Parsee Company of the Auxiliary Force India and the selected men began to officer the Parsee Battalion without any further or additional training for officership. The results were obviously unsatisfactory.

The factors to be considered in any systematic test for eligibility for commission would be proficiency, physical fitness, military possibilities, education and character.

The English system is nomination by the Presidents of County Associations. A system of selection by nomination has obvious advantages but at the same time it often lends itself to abuse.

We suggest that an independent permanent Board of Examiners be appointed who should fix curricula of training for examinations in one or more grades. Such examinations should be periodical and conducted on lines of the War Office examinations in England and certificates granted to successful candidates. The selection for commissions should then be made on lines suggested by item C-6 of the Questionnaire, but only out of holders of such certificates.

If as provided by Government, commissions are to be freely issued to Indians, it is imperative that adequate facilities should be provided for the training of officers. Indianization of the army is the problem of the hour. If the army is to be Indianised and 30 per cent. of the number of King's commissions in each year is thrown open to Indians with an annual increase of 5 per cent. to the rate of Indian recruitment, the number of candidates required for the 1st year would be

about 50 and an even increasing number in subsequent years. So much for the Regular Army. As will be hereafter shown the Territorial Force needs considerable expansion and quite an equal if not a larger number of Indian Officers will be needed for the Territorial Force. It is therefore a necessary corollary that adequate facilities should be provided for the education and training of Indians for all branches of the army.

Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the Role for which it has been constituted.

The question arises as to what should be the numerical strength of the second line of defence. The first line troops in India aggregate approximately 1,40,000 Indian Ranks and 66,000 British. It is for military experts to express an opinion as to the required strength of the second line of defence having due regard to the strength of the first line, and to the nature and possibility of invasion, the strength and character of a possible enemy and the condition of the country, etc. In any event it is obvious that the existing limit of 20,000 on the Territorial Force is much too inadequate and that there is room for a very large expansion. Britain before the War had a second line twice the strength numerically of the first line, and now equal to the first line.

To make India self-dependent in the matter of her defence, she must have an adequate second line of defence.

The present actual strength of the Territorial Force is about 9,000 and consists only of Infantry. The British Territorial Force has annexed to it all the ancillary services. To make the Indian Territorial Force an adequate second line, it must possess the requisite numerical strength and be duly equipped with all the ancillary services identical with that of the Regular Army.

Pay and Allowance.

We are all acutely conscious that the expenditure on the defence of the country exhausts about 2/3 of the net expenditure of the Central Government. That there should be any substantial addition to the military budget would be certainly undesirable.

It is impossible however to maintain any difference in pay between members of the Auxiliary Force on the one hand and the Territorial Force on the other, the social conditions and status of members of the latter Force being in no case inferior to those of the former.

The only other alternative to an increased budget would be the one so repeatedly suggested, *i.e.*, decrease in the number of British Regular units forming the First line. How far this can be done consistently with military efficiency of the troops is a matter for the military experts. The Indian has no doubt long looked with suspicion on the maintenance of so large a British Force out of the Indian exchequer, and after the exhibition of their mettle given by Indian troops in the last War, we have no doubt the Indian will refuse to believe that military efficacy of the troops will diminish by substituting the necessary number of British units by as many or more Indian Regular or Territorial units. It would only be remembered that a British unit costs more than four times as much as an Indian unit and that a Territorial unit about 1/8th as much as a Regular unit. A proportion between first and second line troops can easily be fixed so as to avoid any additional burden on the finances of the country. The proposals for the replacement of the British Units by Indian do not originate in any anti-British sentiment and should only be carried into effect consistently with the proper safeguard of the security of the country. The immense strain on the Indian Exchequer and the corresponding starving of the civil administration amply justify the measure. If India is to be dependent on itself for its defence why should not Indians man their own defences?

The Case of the Parsee Pioneer Battalion in Bombay.

Reference may be invited to two articles appearing under the heading ' A Parsi Military Betrayal ' in the ' Kaiser-i-Hind ', a weekly Parsi journal in Bombay.

Even so far back as in the year 1799, *i.e.*, 125 years ago, the Parsis had formed 6 strong companies officered by respectable members of their own community ready to be employed in any situation that circumstances might render expedient (see The Bombay Volunteer Rifles by Mr. Samuel T. Sheppard and Asiatic Annual Register, 1799). Skipping the intermediate history of the Volunteering among

Parsis, in May 1861, after Colonel Robertson had asked how Government would be likely to entertain a proposal for a Parsi Company, the local Government informed the Military Department that at least 50 Parsis were ready to enrol themselves. In reply the Military Department stated that " the Governor-General-in-Council had no objection to the admission of Parsis or of any other Native Indian subjects of the Queen to the Volunteer Corps. If any natives, whether Parsis or others, should desire to take their place amongst the European members of a Volunteer Corps understanding sufficiently the English language adopting the uniform of the Corps and being willing and able to share in its duties, the Governor-General-in-Council would be glad to see them enrolled in it ". At that time, Parsis dressed in the uniform of the Corps were already attending the Parades at the Town Hall and they must have been largely responsible for the great increase in strength of the Corps. (Bombay Volunteer Rifles by Mr. Samuel Sheppard, page 31). There is a great deal of other historical facts which go to show that for a very long period of over a century the Parsis enjoyed the same rights and privileges and had equal status with European members of any Volunteer Corps. The admission of Parsis into the Poona Volunteer Rifles has now become a matter of history. January 30 of 1890 saw them enrolled and so they are over 34 years in existence (see the Parsis in India by Mr. M. M. Murzban). Never have the Parsis ceased to enjoy equality of status and rights with European members of Volunteer Corps. Even at the present day Parsi members of the A. F. I. in Bombay, Poona, Karachi, Quetta, Allahabad and in other places throughout India, enjoy the same equality and rights.

Conscious of their history and antecedents, the Parsees joined up in their hundreds when Col. Lavie, Director of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces in India, exhorted them from the platform and in the press to have a Battalion for the safety of their community and the protection of their houses and temples, and publicly and repeatedly represented that the Battalion had the same rights and privileges as a British Territorial unit. Colonel Lavie was never contradicted and his position entitled him to be believed. It was represented that the battalion would be for purely local service and attendance at training camps would be optional. The former representation is justified by Order 14 of the Standing Orders of the Battalion.

> " 14. Members of the Parsi Battalion will only be required to learn such military matters as are likely to come within the scope of duties if called out in aid of the civil Powers."

This Order is on all fours with Regulation 92 framed for the Auxiliary Force.

> " 92. The training of all ranks for the effective performance of such local duties as they might be required to undertake."

To distinguish the Battalion from Territorial Battalion it was named " The Parsee Battalion ".

In most cases the enrolment forms signed by the men are those issued under the Auxiliary Force Act. The Battalion made splendid progress and this was testified to by Sir George Lloyd, the then Governor of Bombay at a special parade at which he received the salute from the Parsee Battalion. At a late stage the Authorities concerned seemed to realise their legal disability. The Battalion was officially reduced to the level of a Territorial Battalion in Law. The men and the whole community protested and attendance at parades dwindled down to almost nothing. The Military Authorities seemed to realise the injustice of the situation and endeavoured to concede certain privileges. We annex copy of circular dated 17th July 1923 issued by Major Gilbert, the then O. C. the Battalion. It speaks for itself. The Parsis continued dissatisfied.

In December of 1923 an attempt was made to force the hands of the men. The Battalion was embodied for annual camp for compulsory training and it was threatened that absence would be punished under Military law.

In February a fresh attempt was made and the members were required to sign the certificates within a specified period. Copy of the said certificate is annexed as Ex. B hereto. This measure raised an angry protest. Meetings of influential Parsis were called and resulted in the interpolations of Mr. Dumasia, M L. A., in the Legislative Assembly. The action of the Southern Command was only stayed under Orders from H. E. the Commander-in-Chief.

The Parsis demand that the pledge given to them by Col. Lavie be vindicated. A footing of equality with British Territorial Troops would be the only condition on which the Parsis would accept military service. Hitherto they have had such equality and they decline to accept any degrading conditions.

The action of the Military Authorities themselves the representations made and promises held out when the Battalion was formed and the subsequent attempt to concede *qua* privileges what was demanded *qua* rights, is sufficient indication that the Military Authorities themselves feel the injustice of a legislation which is certainly far behind the times and shuts out an advanced community from military service except under impossible conditions.

The Parsees are a small community and to jeopardise their existence in a fighting force is unstatesmanlike. They can only be utilized for local defence in the Auxiliary Force.

We therefore suggest it is imperative that the Parsee Battalion should find an existence in the Auxiliary Force.

EXHIBIT "A".

Headquarters, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers,
4, Council Road,
Bombay, 17th July 1923.

The Officers Commanding,
A. B. C. and D. Coys.,
11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

Memorandum.

As there may be some misconception regarding the Parsi Pioneers, I would like to point out that they have certain advantages over all other Battalions of the Territorial Force in India.

(1) They wear the same Uniform as British Troops, whereas all other Territorial Regiments are dressed as Indian Soldiers.

(2) When necessary the Parsi Pioneers have been granted the special concession of the same food, clothing and accommodation as British Troops, this latter includes Hospital accommodation, this concession is not granted to other Territorial Units.

(3) The Parsi Pioneers have British Warrant and Non-commissioned Officers as Instructors, whereas all other Territorial Units, except the University Training Corps, have Indian Instructors.

(4) The officers of the 11/2 Bombay Pioneers are treated by me in the same way as I would deal with British Officers.

(5) The officers of this Unit have their own Mess and entertain British officers in the same manner as Parsi officers have been invited into British Messes.

(6) The non-commissioned officers and men are called Sergeants, Corporals and Privates.

(7) The training is carried out on the lines of the Auxiliary Force throughout the year in their own Stations, whereas the other Territorial Units are embodied for 28 days training in a Central Camp yearly.

(8) Conveyance allowance at the same rate as the Auxiliary Force is allowed for journeys to and from the place of parade.

(9) The Parsi Pioneers wear helmet colours, Cap badge and buttons of their own selected designs quite distinct from any other Units of the Territorial Force.

(10) The other units are compelled to wear the Universal buttons as issued from the Army Clothing Factories.

(11) It will therefore be seen that this Unit enjoys many advantages over the remainder of the Territorial Force.

(Sd.) WINIFRED H. GILBURT, *Major*,
Commanding 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

Dated Bombay, 19th July 1923.

Memo. No. 22.

Copy to Lt. Surveyor for information.

Sd.

Capt.,
O. C. "D." Co.

EXHIBIT "B".

Headquarters, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers,
5, Wallace Street,
Bombay, 11th February 1924.

To

It has come to notice that misapprehension apparently exists among personnel of the 11th Bn., 2nd Bombay Pioneers (Parsis), regarding their liabilities under the Indian Territorial Force Act.

(ii) A Form is enclosed for your signature certifying that you are aware of and understand your liabilities under the Indian Territorial Force Act and are willing to serve on in the Indian Territorial Force till the completion of your original engagement as laid down in the Act, *e.g.*, for a period of six years from the date of your attestation.

(iii) Please note that the Form must be returned within one month.

W. A. G. HINDS, *Major*,
Adjutant,
Commanding 11th Bn., 2nd Bombay Pioneers.

CERTIFICATE.

I, Number Rank Name
hereby declare that I fully understand my liabilities for service and training as a soldier of the Indian Territorial Force as laid down in the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, and that I am desirous of completing my engagement.

(Signed)

Place
Date

Statement by Lieutenant (local Captain) Hissam-ud-din Khan, Bahadur, I.D.S.M., Adjutant, 11-12th F. F. Rifles.

Terms of Reference :—

(i) Pay and Allowances.

(ii) Popularity of the Force.

(iii) Methods of selecting candidates for Commission.

(iv) Improvement of the Force generally having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

Before I give my views on the improvement and the popularity of the Force. it will not be out of place, if I state that the following will really go far towards ensuring this Force an efficient second line to the Regular Army, and earn much more popularity than it has at present. With the present Pay and Allowances. period of training, and if no more improvements and attractions are given, the ambitions of men to come forward for joining this Force will gradually die out. At present people think that the Force has just been given a trial and anticipate much of improvement in it.

(i) Pay and Allowances.

1. Experience has shown that it is absolutely necessary to provide some "retaining fee" in the non-training period for members of this Force. See reasons under heading (ii) Popularity of the Force. The grant of this retaining fee would, in my opinion, ensure that a man, once having joined this Force, would complete his full engagement. He would then definitely regard himself as a Government man, who was having a job that was worth for him. At present when they go after disembodiment they are to a certain extent disheartened and find themselves compelled to search some regular employment.

The grant of this fee would also seem necessary in view of the scarcity of living.

2. I recommend that Honorary Lieutenants and Honorary 2nd Lieutenants should get Rs. 200 and 250, respectively, per mensem, and an increment of Rs. 50 each, after passing the retention examination. Further a retaining fee as suggested in paragraph 1 above, as in the training period these Officers get out of pocket, and in their villages have sometimes to entertain and help financially their platoons.

3. Rs. 100 Outfit Allowance is paid on first appointment and Rs. 200 on confirmation. It is suggested that this Allowance should be Rs. 150 on first appointment and Rs. 150 on confirmation.

4. Either Mess Allowance should be increased or authority should be provided to the Commanding Officer to expend money out of Camp Grant in this connection, as in the present state of affairs they cannot afford to keep their position leave alone the maintenance of the Mess. In Regular Army, Messes get monthly subscriptions and sometimes donations, from all the Officers which accumulate to their credit, and moreover they are long established.

5. See paragraphs 6 and 7 under heading (ii) Popularity of the Force.

6. I. T. F. Officers in view of their possessing the Honorary King's Commission should be given permission to travel on Form E during the training period.

7. All ranks of the Indian Territorial Force should be eligible to count previous military service towards pension, G. C., and G. S. Pay during the period of embodiment.

8. Pension rules should be established for this Force.

9. All ranks below the rank of an Officer should get retaining fee in the non-training period, see also paragraph 1 above, and also under heading (ii) Popularity of the Force.

10. The following permanent staff should be authorised :—

1 Q. M. Havildar, 2 N. C. Os., and 15 Sepoys over the Battalions' Stores. Or, these men should either be retained after the training period; these will be much preferred than the present caretakers especially in this Frontier Province.

11. Dhobis and Barbers should be authorised in the Peace Establishment.

12. The Adjutant should likewise other attached British Officers get Detention Allowance during the period of embodiment.

13. When the Adjutant is not Commanding. he has to perform the duties of Quartermaster as well in addition to his own.

Suggest the Allowance of the latter appointment should be admissible to the former.

14. I. T. F. Officers should get T. A. for rail journeys, and also Detention Allowance when sent on duty.

15. The present system of obtaining temporary clerks in the training period is not satisfactory, as they have to be taught every year and cannot be relied upon. It is therefore suggested that 4 Company Clerks and 1 Quartermaster Clerk, and 1 Assistant Clerk should be attached with the Training Battalion of the Group.

16. The permanent wholetime Civilian Clerk should be given the Commissioned rank of Jemadar with same pay and allowances as in the case of Regular Army, so as to have proper hold on him as regards discipline, etc. In the meantime when the above is consideration the pay of the wholetime Civilian Clerk should be graded at Rs. 90—10—150 with retrospective effect from the date of his joining the Territorial Battalion, as he gets no other allowances or privileges, except the consolidated pay of Rs. 90 p. m., whereas he performs the same duties of a Jemadar Head Clerk and also with less number of assistants in the training period.

17. See paragraph 6 under heading (iv) Improvement of the Force generally, etc., etc.

18. I have not thoroughly studied the Auxiliary Force Regulations, but if there are any concessions and privileges enjoyed by that Force, the same, I suggest, be extended to the Indian Territorial Force to remove racial distinctions, etc.

(ii) Popularity of the Force.

1. As the Force stands at present, people in this Province generally name it " Thaggitorial ".

2. This Force has been constituted on the analogy of the Militia at Home, and the conditions of service, etc., prevalent in the Territorial Army at Home, have been given a trial in India, but the local conditions differ, which stand in the way of popularity of the Force. At Home people are richer than Indians, besides the citizens at Home consist mostly of fighting classes, while in India the citizens are mostly businesslike men and not the fighting classes. The Villagers in India do, of course, compose the fighting class. but then they are poorer. The latter if at all take up service in this Force are not respectfully looked upon by their families and citizens.

They do not join the Indian Territorial Force to serve as if in the National Army or to take part in the defence of the country, but they join it when they cannot find another or better job than this. It is fact that a man joins any service either for pay or for " Izzat ". In case of this Force, the former for a Sepoy is Rs. 14/7/0 per annum with free rations for 28 days, which being not much attractive stands in way of popularity of the Force amongst the Zemindar classes, the latter, *i.e.*, " Izzat " (Honorary King's Commission which they are granted for purposes of precedence) is, of course, the sole attraction for the learned and those coming from high families, this, therefore, surely popularises the Force amongst the educated classes.

3. Their taking up service in the I. T. F. creates for them further difficulties, as when they want any temporary job, they have to give out that they are liable to be called for 28 days training in a year, and also labour under an obligation to be embodied any time and for unlimited period, for service in case of emergency; this in most cases gets them a negative answer to temporary jobs. To

solve this it is suggested that the Civil and local Military Departments should give preference to Territorials over local men in giving temporary jobs such as peons, chowkidars, workmen over railway constructions, etc., and in ranks of Local Levy Corps (only in case of this Province).

4. A small band with a bandmaster, 2 N. C. Os., and 13 men should be provided for these Battalions, so as to make this Force popular.

5. I think chuplies should be given as a free issue to the men after two training years, and a new issue then sanctioned.

6. At present there is no advancement for members of the I. T. F.; in my opinion a promotion should be made from the ranks to Jemadar Adjutant, and Jemadar Quartermaster, to rise up to Subedars in each case. The present Assistant Adjutant and the Assistant Quartermaster could then be dispensed with.

Further the Platoon Commanders and Company Officers should rise up to Captains, etc., as in case of Auxiliary Force.

7. The words of Jemadar and Subedar should be abolished from before their names, as this creates lot of unpopularity for the Officers in the eyes of their men and public.

8. Members of this Force should be given authority to purchase articles of clothing, etc., on payment.

9. Authority should be given for men of this Force to transfer to the Regular Army, but if Regular Army wishes to take any Territorials they should first ask the Commanding Officer of the Territorial Battalion and have him struck off the strength of that Battalion.

10. The Territorial Officers should be recognised by authorities in Darbars, Civil and Military functions.

11. Para. 55 of the Auxiliary Force Regulations, India, should be extended to I. T. F.

12. Charpoys should be authorised for Units of the I. T. F.

13. Permanent and pucca accommodation should be provided for Provincial Battalions of the Indian Territorial Force, as follows :—

(*a*) Store room for clothing and equipment.

(*b*) Quarter Guard attached with the Store rooms.

(*c*) Cells attached to the Quarter Guard.

(*d*) Store room for musketry appliances.

(*e*) Store room for rations.

(*f*) Bells of Arms required in the training period, as it is not safe keeping rifles under canvas, especially in this Province.

(*g*) Cook Houses.

(*h*) Pucca floor for 5 B. Os. attached in the training period who have to live under canvas.

(*i*) Bungalow for a Field Officer.

(*j*) Accommodation on a married scale for 1 Clerk.

(*k*) Accommodation on a married scale for 1 Q. M. Havildar.

(*l*) Accommodation for 5 caretakers, or 15 men and 3 N. C. Os.

(*m*) Wash Houses.

(iii) METHODS OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSION.

1. Candidates for Commission should, as far as possible, with very few exceptions, be educated. Although an adequate knowledge of English is extremely desirable, but this cannot be feasible especially in the case of this Province. This knowledge will also help them in getting themselves through the retention and subsequent promotion examinations.

2. Aspirants for Commission should bring their own complete Platoons to serve under them. Those should necessarily be their own villagers over whom they hold influence and control. This results in much efficiency of the Battalion, quick embodiment for service in time of war, and prompt information of all casualties occurring in the non-training period.

3. Aspirants for Commission must be coming from high families, should be men of real social status, should be financially well off, and must be taken necessarily through the Commanding Officer of the Territorial Battalion.

(iv) IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. The Regular Army should, in my opinion, be divided into (*a*) the Colours, and (*b*) the A Reserve, which will mean increasing the length of service to be completed with the Colours and A Reserve, *i.e.*, 15 years. The B Reserve should it is suggested be left for the I. T. F. exclusively.

2. Reasons for giving preference to I. T. F. over B Reserve :—

By the time a soldier reaches the B Reserve, *i.e.*, after passing through the Colours and the A Reserve, gets older, takes less interest. becomes weak in discipline and *esprit de corps*, and physically, while a member of the I. T. F. is young, takes keen interest, increases in discipline and *esprit de corps*, and physically.

3. Complete Battalions should be raised of all the classes that normally enlist in the Regular Army.

4. 28 days in a year in which are included 4 Sundays and the first two days for assembly and issuing kit, etc., and the last two days in taking back, checking, kit, etc., paying out, and dispersal, leaves 20 days actual training. In this short period the recruit or soldier learns very little of even the elementary military training, fires a short musketry course, which he is apt to forget when he comes next year. To remedy this would appear to fix the training as two months for trained soldiers and three months for recruits instead of 28 days and 56 days. With the present limited training these Battalions cannot be relied upon to stand as an efficient second line to the Regular Army. These Battalions should therefore, in my opinion, be used as drafts to gain efficiency.

These Battalions, of course, with more training and improvements will stand as Regiments to form an efficient second line to the Regular Army.

5. Discipline, training, musketry, and powers of the C. O. should be exactly the same as those of the Regular Army.

6. District Commanders should be given authority to sanction sometimes certain concessions that are given to the Regular, in the case of I. T. F. Units, when not especially provided anywhere else. This sometimes creates difficulties in the way of success and strict compliance of the short programmes.

7. The permanent Adjutant in Territorial Battalions should, in future, be a Field Officer, so that he may command during embodiment, also because the new temporary Commanding Officer may not sometimes concur and quite agree with the ideas of the permanent Adjutant who had been organising it for the eleven months, besides the temporary Commanding Officer stays with the Battalion for such a short time that it is impossible for him to know every thing about the Officers and men, and by the time he comes to know something about them the Battalion is dispersed.

8. In the first two training years a regular Platoon should be attached for guard, rifle and sentry duties, etc., until men become trained in these specific duties.

9. The present Advisory Committee has 2 non-official members who never assemble and therefore it is impossible for them to know anything about the interior of the Battalion.

This Committee should therefore have nothing to do with promotions, degradations, and resignation, etc. Supposing the member is out of India all matters have to wait.

10. Officers, N. C. Os., and Followers should come up every year both for periodical and preliminary training, the former two to command the new recruits and the latter to cook, etc., for them.

11. Commanding Officer and Company Commanders should be detained for 1 days afterwards for completely handing over clothing, equipment, records and other documents, etc.

12. The Advisory Committee should once after the training period hold committee with the Adjutant to discuss and remedy any difficulties experienced in the last training period.

13. Permission to extend service beyond 4 and 6 years at present laid down should be given to really efficient men and old soldiers, and these men should get after 15 years a pension.

14. All I. T. F. Officers should undergo 10 months preliminary training with the Training Battalion on completion of their first periodical training, and be entitled to full pay and allowances during this period.

15. When an I. T. F. Officer has completed his 10 months training with the Training Battalion, and has passed his retention examination, he should be given opportunities of attending courses of instruction as for the Regular Army.

16. 10 N. C. Os. per I. T. F. Battalion not below the rank of Naick should be sent to the Training Battalion of their Group for instruction for three months prior to the embodiment of their Battalion, and should receive the pay of rank during such period.

17. The Territorial Camp should be designated as a "Standing Camp" and not temporary Camp to admit of sufficient tentage, etc., being obtained.

18. Instructional Staff should be necessarily from the Active Battalions of the Group and not Pensioners.

Statement by Rai Bahadur Chaudhri Amar Singh, O.B.E., (United Provinces).

I offer my consenting nod to the several questions detailed below and have to submit suggestions regarding others.

(A) Questions No. 2, 4, 5, 6, 7. (C) 2, 3.

(B) Questions No. 1, 3, 6, 7. (D) 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 13.

The following are the suggestions to the questions noted below :—

A. 1.—In my opinion only the non-commissioned officers of the I. T. F. should be given an allowance equal to the amounts formerly granted to the reservists.

A. 3.—The statement is not clear.

B. 2 (a).—I agree to it, provided it does not go against military regulations.

(*b*) Half of the required allowance should be paid by the Government and the rest should be subscribed by the members of the club.

B. 4.—Provided they give assurance as to their keeping of them tact and unspoiled. If they fail to do so, the defaulters should be required to pay half of its price.

B. 5.—Yes, but half of it should be raised by subscription amongst its members and the remaining half may be paid by the Government.

C. 1.—I propose an amendment to the method of recruitment that commission should not be granted unless the candidates are duly recommended by District Magistrate or Commissioners or recruiting officers or any other communal society that has been loyal to the crown.

C. 4.—Direct recruitment to commissioned offices should also be encouraged and candidates of this class should work on probation till they give entire satisfaction as regards the discharge of their official duties. It is for the reason that gentlemen of status will not be coming forth without this temptation.

D. 1.—An exception to those Government servants whose predecessors have incessantly been serving sincerely under British flag is absolutely essential.

D. 2.—Yes, but the personnel of the proposed district advisory Committee should contain District Magistrate without exception.

12. Such questions should be decided by the Medical expert concerned.

Personal Suggestions.

In my opinion King's Honorary Commissions should be granted to distinguished gentlemen of districts and to those as well who claim to have a family reputation for military services. All such officers will abide by the enactments to govern I. T. F. and would have their liabilities parallel to those who are holding these commissions in active service and they would take oath like officers in active service. They too will undergo training. They should if necessary be allowed mess allowance and be given liberty to join either English or Indian messes. They should also be provided with unit uniforms free of cost. They should be entitled for exemption from Arms Act and Darbar. These officers will be held responsible to raise as many recruits as would be required by separate units, and their promotions should depend on their work and recommendation of their officers. They might be enrolled even upto the age of 50 years provided they are found fit for service by medical experts.

By adopting this procedure, persons of high standing and social status will be tempted and I. T. F. will be considerably strengthened by their acquisition.

Statement by Mr. M. N. Katrak, (Bombay).

In general, Indians are not admitted to the Auxiliary Force. The Commissions, pay and the status of this force are on the model of those of the British Army. The Military liability consists of local defence only. This force is governed by the Auxiliary Force Act, 1920 (XLIX of 1920).

In the case of the Indian Territorial Force, the members have the status of Indian soldiers. The Commissions are Dominion Commissions with Honorary King's Commission. The military liabilities extend beyond the frontiers of India. It is the 2nd line of defence to the Indian army. This force is governed by the Act No. XLVIII of 1920 passed by the Indian Legislative Council.

Owing to the difference of pay, Military status and liabilities between those two units the Indians of higher social status and educational attainments are not attracted to the Indian Territorial Force which alone is open for them.

It is to remedy this state of affairs that the following scheme is prepared in the hope that the defence of the country may become a popular creed with all classes of Indians.

I propose that a certain number of Indians, i.e., those of higher social standing and educational attainments should be given a military status exactly equal to that enjoyed by the members at present in the Auxiliary Force. The Indians who cannot be admitted into that category should be men belonging to the agricultural class, ex-soldiers of the Indian Army or persons who can be expected to be satisfied with pay and pension on the Indian Scale.

But the class of Indians whose scale of living is high, who have educational attainments, good earning capacity and a certain social status cannot be expected to be satisfied with pay, status, etc., of the Territorial Force. Hence they should be admitted into the new class to be created.

For this purpose the I. T. F. should be divided into two classes—the "A" class and "B" class.

"A" Class of the Indian Territorial Force.

This class consist of

1. Ex-soldiers, agricultural people, and men of similar strata of society.

2. This class will be trained as a second line of defence to the Regular Indian Army.

3. Their liability to service will be as specified in the Indian Territorial Force Act now in force.

4. Their pay, pension, etc., will be as at present.

5. In short the Indian Territorial Force Act will apply in all its details to this class.

"B" Class of the Indian Territorial Force.

1. It will consist of Indians whose social status is superior to the man of the "A" Class (I. T. F.). Certain standards of earning capacity, education, social status, etc., should be fixed for the purpose of selecting men for this class.

2. They will be on a footing of perfect equality with the present Auxiliary Force members as regards their ranks, commissions, privileges, liabilities of services, etc., etc.

3. To this class will be added the present Indian members of the Auxiliary Force—leaving the Auxiliary Force completely to the Europeans. It is essential for the success of the scheme that there should be absolutely no difference between this European Auxiliary Force and the "B" Class of the I. T. F.

4. This class that is I. T. F. "B" will receive no pay or any kind of allowance during peace time. Only when called out for active service they will be paid and pensioned as per the Auxiliary Force scale. This non-payment during peace time will also apply to the Auxiliary Force.

5. In short there will be absolutely no difference between the Auxiliary Force and the Indian Territorial Force ("B") Class except in name.

It will simplify matters considerably if while selecting recruits for the "B" Class I. T. F. some regard is paid to their monetary condition and the nature

of their occupation, the object being to discourage from joining the force those who are likely to suffer, or later on bring excuses that their employment would not allow them to put in the minimum efforts fixed by the Military Authorities of their units.

The Auxiliary Force.

This Force will remain as it is at present but all the Indian elements contained therein will be transferred to the " B " Class I. T. F.

The following changes in the A. F. I. Act will be found desirable to bring that force in line with the B. Class I. T. F.

(1) The liability for service will be exactly the same as laid down for the Indian Territorial Force (see I. T. F. Act pp. 9 and 10) but with a proviso that the normal primary roll of the Auxiliary force (and "B" Class of the I. T. F.) will be the local defence as laid down in the A. F. I. Act (pp. 18, 19, 20). In cases of emergency only, by an order of the Governor General in Council this class and "B" Class I. T. F. will be called upon to do the active service beyond their local limits and even beyond the limits of India.

(2) The members of A. F. I. like those of "B" Class I. T. F. will not be paid during peace time but only when called out for active service.

The training and liabilities of the "A" Class I. T. F. will be such that it will become the second line of defence while those of "B" Class I. T. F. will make them (A.F.I. and "B" Class) the third line of defence. But in case of emergency all distinctions of the liabilities to service will disappear.

It will be found necessary to restrict the numbers of the "B" Class I. T. F. as it will be the "A" Class I. T. F. that will be counted upon normally to fight for the defence of the country.

Non-payment in peace time of the "B" Class I. T. F. and the A. F. I. will contribute materially to economy. It might appear that people who do not at all need to be paid are paid out and the money wasted.

If further economy is required it will pay to inquire whether during mobilization for active service will certain portion of the "B" class I. T. F. or A. F. I. need and care to be paid.

It may be desirable to change the name of both the forces and the whole combination designated by one name with the two classes as proposed above. Or it might be possible to amalgamate "B" Class I. T. F. with the A. F. I. under the name of "The Auxiliary Force, India," leaving the "A" Class I. T. F. alone to form the Indian Territorial Force proper.

In this proposed scheme I have avoided proposing a change with the status of the present Auxiliary Force as it is practically wholly composed of Europeans who are nearly all veterans of the great war and who constitute an excellent material at the disposition of the government for the defence of the Empire.

As at present the facilities they enjoy for training should be continued to be given to them as they have already gone through the scientific war training of the late war. Few of them need to be paid in peace time, hence non-payment will not dishearten the members of that force. Since number of the A. F. I. will be increased by the incorporation of the "B" Class of the I. T. F. this force will be disproportionately larger than the "A" Class I. T. F. As this "A" Class alone will not suffice to do the work of the second line of defence of the country, the A. F. I. and the "B" Class in *emergency* will necessarily be expected to support the "A" class. Even now it is inconceivable that the A. F. I. will not be required to serve beyond their limits in the eventuality of the present I. T. F. being found to be too weak for the defence of the country.

The "B" Class I. T. F. Indians are raised to the status of the British European soldiers as it is this class of Indians only which feel actually the distinction and if this class is satisfied, I believe, the country will have no further cause to be aggrieved in this matter.

Statement by Mr. K. Chengappa, B.A., M.L.C., (Coorg).

QUESTIONNAIRE.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. I am not in favour of granting any retaining fee to the members of the Indian Territorial Force in view of the other improvements that I have suggested below.

2. The present road and subsistence allowances are indeed very low. Most of the members are out of pocket during their journeys. I know several instances where members who had to spend more than Rs. 3 per day in the shape of conveyance charges, etc., exclusive of cost of food have been receiving an allowance of about As. 12 only. The road and subsistence allowances should be paid at the rates allowed to the members of the Auxiliary Force.

3. I do not know the rate of travelling allowance given to the members of U. T. C. and in their case also, the point that their legitimate expenses should be met needs consideration.

4. I am not in favour of the grant of a separate messing allowance to Indian Territorial Force Officers, though I am fully aware of the fact that all these Officers are very much out of pocket during the training period. Lip patriotism does not go very far and any movement resulting in financial loss to the members taking part in it cannot have a bright future. The Indian Territorial Force Officers are expected to maintain their dignity and live on equal terms with their Co-British Officers, and this is only possible if they are paid at the rates allowed to corresponding ranks in the Auxiliary Force.

5. The annual allowance for the upkeep and repair of clothing (8 As. per man) is very low indeed. The charges for washing alone require more than this sum. The rate may with reason be raised to Re. 1 per man.

6. I am not aware of the rate of travelling and subsistence allowances paid to the recruits of the Auxiliary Force. The recruits in both cases should be treated similarly.

7. I don't think this is necessary.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. The retention examination is by no means easy and I support the proposal to increase the period within which an Indian Territorial Force Officer should pass his examination from 2 to 3 years.

2-*a*. There is no doubt that Officers' clubs at the training centre would increase the popularity of the Force. The Officers must have some recreation after the day's hard work. Unless the spirit of the Officers is maintained the efficiency of the Force will suffer.

2-*b*. The club should be furnished and maintained at Government cost, the Officers being required to pay a nominal monthly subscription of Rs. 2 during the period of training.

3. If Indian Territorial Force Officers are to be allowed the same rates of pay as those drawn by corresponding ranks in the Auxiliary Force, I see no reason why they should be given a free issue of swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance. If, on the other hand the Indian Territorial Force Officers are not placed on the same level as the Auxiliary Force Officers in the matter of pay they may be given a free issue of swords and binoculars and an annual clothing allowance of Rs. 100.

4. I recommend that Indian Territorial Force Non-Commissioned Officers and men should be paid at the rates allowed to the members of the Auxiliary Force, and if that is done, there is no need to give them a free issue of mufti clothing to take to their homes after training. If, however, this suggestion cannot be acted upon, they may be given a free issue of mufti clothing.

5. I strongly support the suggestion to have Territorial weeks for sports and shooting competition. This will, in addition to increasing the popularity of the Force, stimulate enthusiasm and healthy rivalry.

6. The suggestion that Indian Territorial Force units should be given provincial names is certainly sound. For instance, there is not much meaning in calling Coorg Territorial Battalion as the 14/3rd Battalion, Madras Regiment.

7. This is a sound suggestion and may be acted upon.

C.—METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

1. I should suggest some improvements in the present system. The suggestion that candidates should before appointment on probation be approved in writing by a Board composed of (1) the Chief Civil Officer of the District, (2) the Administrative Commandant of the Unit concerned, (3) the Senior Indian Territorial Force Officer of the Unit concerned, is indeed sound. Before the Board arrives at a decision it should have the opinion of the Advisory Committee in regard to the local influence and social status of the candidates.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. I do not see much force in the argument that Government servants should not be permitted to enrol in provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force, if the Chief Civil Officer of the District or the Local Government can easily make arrangements to discharge their duties when they are called up. It cannot be disputed that several Government servants are men of high social standing and possess considerable local influence. This is, at any rate the case in Coorg. It is a known fact that the Coorg Battalion known as 14/3rd Battalion, Madras Regiment, could not have been a success but for the presence of the Civil Officers.

2. I support the suggestion to increase the number of members in the Advisory Committee to 5. It is very essential to have a Local Territorial Force Officer in the Committee in addition to a Military member.

3. I am in favour of the suggestion to have 56 days' preliminary training and 56 days' periodical training. As matters stand at present, there are not more than 18 working days out of 28 days, with the result that the Officers have to overwork the men to get through the programme. The strain has damped enthusiasm of several enthusiasts in the force and it is highly desirable that the men should not be overworked. This at any rate has been my experience.

4. I support the suggestion.

5. This is an excellent suggestion.

6. I strongly support the suggestion.

7. The suggestion may be approved as there is a lot of work to be done both before and after the training period.

8. This is very necessary.

9. This is also very necessary.

10. Indian Territorial Force Medical Officers should certainly be attached to each provincial unit during the training period. By Medical Officers I mean not unexperienced Sub-Assistant Surgeons but at least Assistant Surgeons of some experience.

11. This may be done.

12. I have no remarks to offer.

13. This is a valuable suggestion indeed and I strongly support it.

14 & 15. I have no remarks to offer.

E.—RECOMMENDED AMENDMENTS TO THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE ACT AND RULES.

1. *Section 5.*—There is no doubt that section 5 of the Act and Rule 11 produce inconvenient results. There is not much force in the condition that an Officer should cease to be an Officer before he completes the age of 41, neither

is there much meaning in asking an Officer who wishes to stay on to re-enrol after he has completed his term of enrolment. It is a known fact that several Officers will have sufficient strength and energy to continue in Office till they attain the age of 50 or 52. I am therefore in favour of the addition of a proviso to section 5 (1) of the act on the lines indicated in the Annexure 1 and the issue of subsidiary orders or regulations to provide for the age limit except in cases of resignation of Commission, etc.

2. *Section 11 (1) of the Indian Territorial Force Act.*—The section would be quite clear if the words "To him" in line 9 were omitted.

3. I have no remarks.

4. This may be done.

5. I have no remarks to offer.

6. I have no remarks.

From my answers to the Questionnaire it will be clear that my object is to put the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces on the same footing so far as pay and allowances are concerned. It may be contended that any claim which goes beyond what is allowed to the Regular Indian Army is extravagant and cannot therefore be conceded. This contention may be answered by the fact that the Territorial Force, at any rate, the Coorg Battalion, is drawn from a class of agriculturists, every one of whom is a landlord and has the means to live an easy life, and not from a class who have made army their profession. Unless they are in a position to spend their life comfortably during the training period or when called up for a campaign, without being compelled to resort to their private purse, I feel convinced that they will not have much attraction for the force.

I recommend that in cases of disability, whether of injury or sickness, when such disabilities are contracted in, and by, the performance of military duty, Officers and men of the Territorial Force may be granted the same concessions as are extended to the members of the Auxiliary Force in paragraphs 130 to 139, and 159, of the Regulations for the Auxiliary Force.

It has been proposed to amend Rule 17 of the Indian Territorial Force Rules by adding a proviso that an enrolled person shall not be entitled to any pay and allowance, for any day or days he may be absent on leave during the period of training. This amendment is certainly desirable. On the other hand I consider that it will produce excellent results if non-commissioned officers and men who do the full training during the year are allowed some bonus. This is done in the case of members of the Auxiliary Force under para. 162 of the Auxiliary Force Regulations.

The powers and duties of the Territorial Force Advisory Committees are, to my mind, somewhat restricted. They must have enlarged powers in the matter of dealing with applications for discharges from enrolled persons. I recommend that they may be given the same powers and duties as are exercised by the Auxiliary Force Advisory Committees.

Statement by Hony. 2nd-Lieut. Syed Ali-bin-Hamid, 11-9th Jat Regiment.

A.—Pay and Allowances.

1. The idea underlying the suggestion of giving a retaining fee to the members of the I. T. F. for the non-training period is plausible, but the fee suggested is not likely to be much appreciated by every member of the Force. In the case of N. C. Os. and men, it is true that the monthly payment would serve to keep alive to their minds their close tie with the Force. As for the officers I would like to suggest that the concession to travel during the non-training period, with the form " E " Ry. warrant would be more acceptable and encouraging.

2. It is, I think, not desirable to pay the members of the I. T. F. for the days spent in travelling to and from their training centres. The present road and subsistence allowances being inadequate I recommend that the rates allowed for the regular army as proposed in para. 14 should be authorised for the N. C. Os. and men of the I. T. F. Provincial Units. In case of officers the rates of such allowances should be in accordance with the Indian Army order recently made applicable to the Indian Officers holding Hony. King's Commissions.

3. I fully appreciate the proposal of giving increased travelling allowances to members of the U. T. C. when proceeding to and from their place of parade or camp.

4. The present messing allowance allowed to the I. T. F. Officers is very inadequate and therefore in the units in which an I. T. F. officers' mess is maintained officers should be given an additional messing allowance on the same scale as is allowed to B. Os. or the Auxiliary Force Officers.

5. For the upkeep and repairs of clothing the annual allowance should be increased.

6. The proposal to pay the I. T. F. recruits travelling and subsistence allowance at the same rates as allowed in the regular Army is a sound one.

7. Recruits should, in my opinion, be given an allowance for mufti clothing but the rate of Rs. 22 appears to me an excessive one and it may be reduced to Rs. 10.

8, 9. The question of pay of I. T. F. officers is as important as it is difficult to solve. Its solution is sure to affect the efficiency of the Force as well as its popularity and the Indian sentiment at large. It is conceived to be difficult because it ushers in the all important problem of the racial distinction. There can be no question that the present pay given to I. T. F. officers is inadequate. It is not in keeping with their dignity and position. A number of I. T. F. officers including myself would certainly prefer to work Honorarily rather than consent to be paid at the present rates. The suggestion of making the I. T. F. officers rank purely Hony. is an ideal one but it involves a considerable difficulty. The annual temporary residence at and shifting to and from the training centres and employment of extra establishment in addition to that he leaves at home occasions extraordinary expenses to an I. T. F. officer. We cannot expect every officer to be in a position to meet such expenses by his private means. The I. T. F. Provincial Units are at present officered by a fairly large number of ex-Military N. C. Os. and officers and the proposal of abolishing of all pay is not likely to be welcomed by them. I. T. F. officers must be provided with means sufficient to cover the extraordinary expenses they have to undergo. The present pay being quite insufficient, it is suggested that it should be raised, to a level compatible with the grant to them of Hony. King's Commissions. This will not only save the officers from their present difficult position but will carry the popularity of the Force very far.

10. For the efficiency and popularity of the Force a band allowance should invariably be allowed for I. T. F. units similar to that laid down for A. F. (I.) Units.

11. No. Please see No. 2.

12. The proposal of remission of land revenue to enrolled men of the I. T. F. is not practicable because the recruitment to the Force is not confined to the land revenue paying class.

13. I do not like the idea of giving a bonus on the lines of the Home Militia bounty, but prefer the payment of a retaining fee (*vide* No. 1).

14. Dealt with in para. 2.

15. I recommend the suggestion.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

1. The period of two years in which an I. T. F. officer is, at present, required to pass his retention examination is quite sufficient. An extension is unnecessary specially when it is proposed to make provision for the attendance of I. T. F. officers at the physical training, weapon training and signalling courses at Army schools.

2. (*a*) Certainly I. T. F. officers' clubs should be formed at the training centres of each Provincial Unit.

(*b*) Of course.

3. I agree to the proposal of giving the I. T. F. officers a free issue of swords, binoculars and an annual clothing allowance. Revolver being a part of an officer's equipment should also be supplied free of charge.

4. Instead of giving a free issue of mufti clothing to N. C. Os. and men I would like to recommend an alternative to the effect that a set of uniform consisting of a frock, a short, a pugree with fringe, and a pair of pattis be given to them (free of charge) to take to their homes after training. This may be used by them on ceremonial occasions as a symbol of their Force. This will undoubtedly serve the purpose of popularising the Force, proclaiming its existence and encouraging recruitment.

5. "Territorial weeks" for sports and shooting competition are sure to increase the popularity of the Force.

6. No. I do not propose giving the I. T. F. Units Provincial names.

7. The whole question of the rations needs a re-handling. The rations allowed at present are inadequate. It is one of the serious grievances of the members of the Force and demands a speedy and adequate redress.

8. A useful suggestion indeed.

C.—Method of selecting candidates for commissions in the Indian Territorial Force.

1. The present system is not satisfactory.

2, 3, 4, 5, 6. The alternative mentioned in para. 6 (*b*) seems to me reasonable, but with the following changes :—

I. A candidate, with no exception to an ex-military man should be enrolled as a sepoy and carry out his preliminary and first year's periodical training in the ranks before he submits his application for a commission.

II. Such candidates and N. C. Os. of the Unit should submit their applications to the Administrative Commandant for approval by a board consisting of :—

(1) The Administrative Commandant of the unit.

(2) The two Senior Territorial officers of the unit.

The applications will then be considered by such board with due regard to :—

(1) Power of command.

(2) Physical fitness.

(3) Aptitude for military training.

(4) Education.

(5) Previous record of service (if any) of the candidate.

In the cases of so approved candidates the Administrative Commandant will consult the Chief Civil Officers of the Districts concerned and their Advisory Committee, with reference to :—

(6) Local influence.

(7) Social status.

These applications should then be submitted with the recommendations of the Selection Board and the Local Civil Officer and his Advisory Committee to the G. O. C. District who will submit the applications of the candidates approved by him to the Local Government for concurrence before submission to Army Headquarters.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. The Government servants should, in my opinion, be given opportunities to serve in the Territorial Force. Their enrolment should prove an incentive to the masses.

2. I. T. F. Advisory Committees should be increased to 5 members and should be constituted for districts instead of provinces. They should invariably include a local I. T. F. officer in addition to the military member.

3. The period of training should continue as at present.

Preliminary training	...	...	...	2 months.
Periodical training	...	...	...	28 days.

Any extension in this period would seriously disturb the occupations of the members who ordinarily cannot, without detriment to their interests, spare themselves from home for a longer period. It would discourage recruitment.

4. It is desirable that a central school be organised for all officers of the Territorial Force. The length of course should not be more than 2 months. If however, funds do not permit the Platoon Commanders course started this year should be continued and in addition provision should be made for the attendance of I. T. F. officers at the Physical training, weapon training and signalling courses at Army Schools.

5. Yes. This would increase the efficiency of the Force.

6. Yes.

7. Yes.

8. Yes. This would add to the efficiency of the Force.

9. Yes.

10. Yes.

11. Yes.

12. —

13. The formation of a section of I. T. F. with liabilities similar to those of the Auxiliary Force (India) would dissuade people from joining the Provincial Units with greater reponsibilities. This is likely to diminish the strength of the rest of the Force. The present Force can, under section 9 (2) (*a*) of the Indian Territorial Force Act of 1920, be utilised for local services.

14. Yes.

15. The resolution passed at the Universities' Conference on the 24th May last be given effect to.

16. No. Please see my views expressed in (D) para. 3.

17. Yes. The proposal would do well, provided the Indian officers attached to the I. T. F. Units work purely as instructional staff and are allowed to have no hand in the administration of the platoons they are attached to.

18. Please see (D) para. 4.

19. Yes. It is absolutely necessary in the interest of the Force.

E.—AMENDMENT TO THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL ACT AND RULES.

1. I agree to the proposed addition of the following proviso to section 5 (1) of the I. T. F. Act—

> "That a person who has been commissioned as an officer shall be deemed to be enrolled for so long as he holds a commission."

To para. 6 (*a*) of Annexure No. 1, I would suggest a modification to the effect that the word "Commissioned" before the word "service" be omitted, so that all the past service rendered in any capacity in any branch of His Majesty's Indian Land Forces may count towards the completion of 32 years' service in the Territorial Force.

2. I recommend the proposed amendment of section 11 (1) of the I. T. F. Act, so as to make it clearer that an I. T. F. officer when doing duty as such is an officer within the meaning of section 7 (2) of the Indian Army Act.

3. I have read the Annexure No. III and have nothing to say against the rules proposed to be prescribed in accordance with sections 6 (1) and 7 (1) of the I. T. F. Act.

I would at this occasion beg to submit that rule 11 (2) (*a*) deserves an amendment because it includes many petty offences of trifling nature punishable with imprisonment.

For instance a sentence of fine inflicted under section 323, I. P. C., for slapping a servant or a coolie will make a member and even an officer of the Indian Territorial Force liable to be discharged as the offence is punishable with imprisonment, also.

4. I therefore propose that rule 11 (2) (*a*) be amended as follows or in the like manner—

> "That he has been convicted by a Criminal or Military Court and sentenced to transportation or imprisonment."

5. I agree to the proposal of recasting rule 12 but the authority to authorise discharge of a commissioned officer under sub-rule (1) and clause D of sub-rule (2) of rule 11 should be the Governor General-in-Council and not the G. O. C. District.

6. I consider that rule 17 needs an amendment in order to have a uniform practice in the matters of leave and pay and have no objection to the proposed amendment.

7. I would recommend the constitution of Advisory Committees for districts instead of Provinces.

In the end I would draw the attention of the Committee to a point not less important than any discussed above. It is difficult to appreciate the idea of dual commission which is a special feature of the present system. Will the Committee consider the possibility of the grant of a pacca commission or of one granted to the officers of the Indian Reserve or of a commission similar to that granted to the A. F. officers.

Statement by Dr. Kaikhosru Kersasp Dadachanji, late Captain I.M.S.—Bombay.

FOREWORD.

For a good many years, we have advocated the military training of all Parsee youths, realising the risks to which a small community is exposed in times of trouble, and to that end, have recommended the formation of Parsee Cadet Corps, Rifle Clubs, and Volunteer Battalions, for communal self-defence, and also for rendering timely help to the Government and the Public, if called upon to do so, in any emergency. We have thus for long tried to educate, guide and represent Parsee public opinion on the subject of Voluntary Military Training. Recently we have been favoured with an invitation to offer our views on the subject, and also to represent Parsee public opinion before the Committee on Reorganisation of the I. T. F., as may be seen from the following.

At the end of last June, the Editor of the *Kaiser-i-Hind*, was kind enough to forward to us a letter he had received from Sir Jamsedji Jijibhoy, Bart., the Head of the Parsee Community of Bombay, and President, the Provincial Advisory Committee, I. T. F., Bombay District, saying that: "I have much pleasure in informing you that the Advisory Committee have resolved to submit the name of your Special Military Correspondent Dr. Kaikhushroo Kersasp Dadachanji, to give evidence before the Indian Territorial Force Reorganisation Committee.

"The Advisory Committee of the Parsee Battalion propose to submit a representation, setting forth their views before the Reorganisation Committee. Before doing so, however, the Committee is anxious to have your views as well as those of Dr. Dadachanji, and I shall feel obliged if you could put your views down in writing, and send them to me at your early convenience. I enclose herewith a copy of the letter which I have received from Government, on the question, and I have to draw your particular attention to para. 2 (v), *viz.*, "improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted. I need hardly add that the role for which it has been constituted is to supply a Second Line of Defence in case of emergency." In accordance with the desire expressed by Sir Jamsedji Jijibhoy in the said letter, we have put down our views in writing. It would be as well to explain here the basis for the views expressed by us. Having read the debates in the Legislative Assembly on the subject, as also the criticism of our public journals, we could come to but one conclusion, *viz.*, the whole subject was enveloped in a fog of words, which indicated muddled thinking. We prefer to follow the exact method of science and logic, in dealing with this subject of national importance, *e.g.*, practical suggestions are wanted for the Improvement of the I. T. Force, under four Heads, prescribed by the Committee on Reorganisation.

From the scientific and logical point of view, one cannot consider the improvement of the Second Line, *i.e.*, the I. T. F. except in relation to the First Line, *i.e.*, the Regular Army; nor can one make suggestions for the improvement of the Second Line without considering their effect on the First Line, as both the Lines are so closely inter-related. We have therefore followed the scientific method of considering the two inter-related Lines together. Further, we do not assume, as the Government of India seems to do, that there is no need for improvement of the First Line, because such an assumption cannot be justified by the logic of facts.

We have considered the subject under the four Heads above mentioned, and discussed these, at length, under several sub-headings. Under (I)—Pay and Allowance, we have suggested the approximation of the Pay and Allowance of Indian Ranks to that of British Ranks. Under (II)—Popularity of the Force (page 207), the subject is considered under 14 sub-headings. The attention of the Committee is particularly drawn to the humiliating conditions of Service in the I. T. F., compared with those of the British T. F., and to the significant contrast between the two. A comparison has also been made between the relevant Sections of the India Army Act 1911, and the I. T. F. Act 1920, and Rules under both the Acts, and the British Army Act and the Territorial and Reserve

Forces Acts, and the need for making necessary alterations in the former, and correspondingly in the I. A. F. Act, emphasised. Some of the obsessions of the military experts of the Government of India have been laid bare, and the fallacy of their arbitrary classification of Indians into martial and non-martial classes has been exposed. Attention is drawn to a practical lesson in militarisation of all classes of the Nation, taught by modern Japan, and its application to India.

Under (III)—Methods of selecting Candidates for Commission (page 221), the present system of selection of Officers and Non-Com.'s is condemned as productive of inefficiency and unpopularity of the I. T. F. Suggestions have been made for the selection of candidates for Commission by Provincial Military Boards of Examiners, and also for the establishment in India of Military Schools and Colleges for the training of an Indian Officers' Training Corps. Attention is also drawn to the Regulations, under which both University candidates and Officers in the Territorial Army can obtain Commissions in the Regular British Army, as the outcome of the Report of the Haldane Committee, issued by the War Office, London. It is shown that, even in England, the Army is no longer a preserve for the aristocrat, but is now open to the democrat. If India is to be prepared for Self-Defence, an I. T. O. C., of 40,000 will be required (see Table on page 228).

Under (IV)—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted, (page 226), the question is considered under three sub-headings. Because an efficient Second Line should be (A) adequate in numbers to support and supplement the Regular Army; (B) organized and trained on a Divisional basis, and provided with a complete Divisional Staff, like the Regular Army; (C) provided with equipment and armament, identical with that of the Regular Army. Under (A) we have shown the absolute inadequacy of the I. T. F. for which a limit of 20,000 has been arbitrarily fixed, and the need for raising the limit to 300,000. The attention of the Committee on Territorial Reorganization is particularly drawn to the Table of Comparative Strength of the Army in England and in India (page 228). In the third column of the Table, a tentative proposal is made for reorganizing the Armed Forces of the Indian Empire, from which it will be seen that, if adopted, every 10 years will see an addition of 1,712,500 men trained to Arms, thus rendering India competent for Self-Defence, without British aid. As to relative cost, 1 British Battalion costs as much as 4 Indian Regular Battalions, and 32 I. Territorial Battalions (page 233). Proper emphasis is laid on the *unmistakable warnings given by the Government of India, and its military experts, that Britain may not be able to help India in future wars, as she used to in the past, and so on the need for preparing India for Self-Defence, within a period of 10 years.* Further, the fallacy of the Military Experts has been exposed, *viz.*, " that India cannot be fitted for Self-Defence, she is not within three generations (*i.e.*, ninety years) of it." In contrast with this opinion of the Government, is that of the representatives of the people, who have expressed the hope, in some of the Resolutions passed by the Indian Legislative Assembly, that India may be prepared for Self-Defence, within 10 to 20 years. Thus the contrast between the two points of view is quite glaring. We may point out that, like time and tide, wars wait for no man; they wait neither to satisfy the political expediencies of Governments, nor the well-spun theories of Military Experts, but break out any day, without warning, like a thief in the night. Hence, we have suggested, as the solution of the problem, a ten years' Programme of Reorganisation of all the Armed Forces of India. We believe that the motive, underlying the appointment of the Committee on Reorganisation of the I. T. F., is rooted in the healthy aspirations of all classes of Indians, for being prepared for shouldering the burden of National Self-Defence. Hence, we suggest to the Committee that the problem of Reorganisation of the I. T. F. be considered *only as a part* of the problem of Indian Self-Defence.

Under (B) we have suggested that the I. T. F. should be trained on a Divisional basis, and that all Arms of the Service should be open to members of the I. T. F. and I. A. F., and that all essential Ancillary Services should be completely organised for the I. T. F., on the scale of the Regular Army. Under (C) we have suggested that the I. T. F. should be provided with equipment and armament, identical with that of the Regular Army, to enable it to act as an efficient Second Line. Men without munitions, or munitions without men are equally useless, and so, Indianization of the Military Services should be accompanied by *Indianization of the Military Industries, and thus provide employment for a million and a half of Indians.*

Finally, we have brought to the notice of the Government, and the Committee, "the reasonable complaints and grievances of the (Parsee) 11th and 12th Battalions, 2nd Bombay Pioneers, I. T. F." and have suggested the transfer of both the Battalions from the I. T. F. to the I. A. F. We wish to emphasise the fact, that we have not asked for any special preferential treatment for the Parsees, apart from our Indian fellow-subjects, for, in these democratic days, it would not do, nor is there any need, to ask for any such preference. Our democratic suggestion is for the (D) removal of all Racial Distinctions, and the omission of the word 'European', wherever it occurs in the Auxiliary Forces Act, 1920, and also the omission of the words 'not being a European British subject' from § 5 (I) of the Indian Territorial Forces Act, 1920. Thus eliminating "all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India, including the Indian Auxiliary Force," and so removing the root of racial bitterness between European and Indian subjects of the Empire, as also the unpopularity of the I. T. F., arising out of such humiliating distinctions. We hope that the Government will observe the solemn pledge given to the Parsees by its authorized agent, who acted as the Director, I. A. and T. Forces, Bombay District, and thus vindicate the eternal principles of justice and equity. We need not remind the Government of the services rendered by the Parsee Community during the last War, in the contribution of men, munitions and money, out of all proportion to its small numbers. And we appeal to its sense of justice and fair-play to remove the grievances of the Parsee Battalions, by sanctioning their transfer from the I. T. F. to the I. A. F., for reasons explained at length in the Appendix; and we hope that the Committee on Reorganisation of the I. T. F. will see the justice of our claim, and take the necessary steps for its vindication.

We were favoured with a copy of the Questionnaire by the Secretary, the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Committee, in September last, some time after we had sent our Suggestions for printing. We believe that, having expressed at length our independent views on the question, and also seeing that, some of the Suggestions in the Questionnaire coincide with ours, it would be superfluous for us to send a detailed reply to it. Moreover, on certain questions of principle, as will be noticed, we hold views which do not correspond with those expressed in the Questionnaire, which we believe, is based on a very narrow interpretation of motives, which led to the appointment of the Committee on Reorganisation.

I concur with the striking and original suggestions presented here so ably by Dr. Kaikhushru K. Dadachanji, who has been contributing Special Articles on Military subjects to my journal, for the last many years.

ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN, J.P.,
Editor and Proprietor, the "Kaiser-i-Hind".

CONTENTS.

	Page.
Foreword	198—200
I—Pay and Allowance	203
II—Popularity of the Force	207
1. Pay of Rank, Allowance, etc.	207
2. Formation of Provincial County Associations	207
3. Formation of Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs	210
4. Period of Service in the Force	212
5. Conditions of Resignation and Discharge	213
6. Methods of Discipline	214
7. Extraordinary powers of C. O.'s	215
8. Grant of King's Substantive Commissions, and *abolition* of the Ranks of Jamadar and Subadar	215
9. Admission of Indians to *All Arms of the Service*	218
10. A change in mentality of the military authorities required. A lesson in militarisation of all classes	218
11. Slavish conditions of Service in the U.T.C. Establish an University Territorial Corps Association	220
12. Establish a Central or Imperial Territorial Association	221
13. Provision of Clubs, Sports, Games	221
14. A thorough Revision of the India Army Act, 1911 and the I. T. F. Act, 1920, and Rules under both the Acts	221
III—Methods of Selecting Candidates for Commission	221
Present System condemned	221
Provincial Military Boards of Examiners	222
Establish Provincial Military Schools and Colleges	222
Indian O. T. C., to be organised in two Divisions—(A) Junior, (B) Senior	223
Report of Haldane Committee on Commissions for Territorial Officers and University Candidates, and its application to India	225
IV—Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the Role for which it has been constituted	226
(A) Adequacy of numbers—300,000	226
Table of Comparative and Proposed Strength of the Army, in England and in India	228
Armed Strength of Potential Enemies	229
The defence of India, without British Aid	230
India's War Contribution of a million and a quarter Volunteers	231
Can India be prepared for Self-Defence in ten years?	232

PAGE.

(B) I. T. F. to be organised and trained on a Divisional basis. All essential Ancillary Services to be organised on the Regular's scale . . . 233

(C) Equipment and Armament, to be same as for the Regular Army. Indianisation of Military *Industries* 233

(D) Removal of all Racial Distinctions 234

Formation of Class Companies or Battalions 235

Grievances of the Parsee Pioneer Battalions 235

APPENDIX . . . . . 236—251

SOME PRACTICAL SUGGESTIONS FOR THE IMPROVEMENT OF THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

We proceed to make the following practical suggestions for the improvement of the Force, under the heads noted below :—

(i) Pay and Allowance.

(ii) Popularity of the Force.

(iii) Methods of selecting candidates for Commission.

(iv) Improvement of the Force generally, having regard to the role for which it has been constituted.

I.—Pay and Allowance.

We believe it is now about time that the Government and its Military Advisers should realise that as every man is worthy of his hire, so is the soldier worthy of his pay. The Indian martial races have long been exploited very cheaply, and paid a Killing-Wage instead of a Living-Wage. The Pay and Allowance of an Indian Sepoy was fixed during an age, when all the necessaries of life were dirt cheap, and a sepoy could maintain his family, if not in comfort, at least in straitened circumstances. What may have sufficed in 1824, is hopelessly inadequate in 1924. The price of a Rupee in 1824 was 16 annas, while its value in 1924 has so far depreciated, that it hardly comes up to 4 annas, and in many cases, even 2 annas.

The Esher Committee urges that the pay of Indian Non-Coms. and Sepoys should be raised.

The Government is no doubt aware of the discontent of all ranks of the Indian Army, as regards Pay and Allowances. "The Report of the Army in India Committee, 1919-1920" states distinctly that §69 "All witnesses belonging to the Indian Army,—British and Indian,—whom we have seen, urged that the pay of the Indian Non-Commissioned Officers and Men should be raised."

Under § 76, the Committee state that "We think it desirable, even at the risk of repetition, to recapitulate briefly the main considerations, which tell in favour of an increase of Pay. These are :—

(*a*) That the Indian Army expects a substantial increase, and that it would be impolitic to disappoint this expectation, especially at a time like the present, when political agitators aim at undermining the Army's loyalty.

(*b*) That the general rise in cost of living renders the present scale of pay insufficient, to enable the sepoy to support a wife and family, or other dependents.

(*c*) That the industrial and agricultural development of India offers other and more lucrative employment to youths of the martial classes, and that this competition will adversely affect recruitment for the Army, unless better terms are offered."

§ 77. "After the most earnest consideration, we have formed the conclusion that it is necessary, in order to secure the contentment of the Indian Army, to improve the terms of service of Indian other ranks, and our specific recommendations will be found in Appendix I. (Item 6.)"

Why has the Govt. suppressed the Specific Recommendations of the Esher Committee?

We are surprised that the specific recommendations referred to above in section 77, have been deliberately withheld, and not published, by the Government of India, for reasons best known to itself. We consider it very strange that one of the most important items in the Report should be thus dealt with by the Government, and the public prevented from learning the specific recommendations of the Army in India Committee, with regard to the improvement of the pay, allowance and terms of service of Indian other ranks. We have no doubt that, if these specific recommendations had been published, they would have undoubtedly been of help to the present Committee, appointed to investigate and report upon the re-organization of the Indian Territorial Force. We hope that the Indian Legislative Assembly will induce or compel the Government to publish these specific recommendations.

Contrast between British and Indian Pay of Rank, below that of British Commissioned Officers.

In the absence of the specific recommendations mentioned above, we present below a Comparative Table of British and Indian Pay of Rank, to show up the contrast of " unequal pay for equal work."

British Commissioned Officers.

(Identical pay in Indian and British Forces.)

	Rs.	a.	p.
Lieutenant Colonel	1,250	0	0
Major, after 5 years' service in that rank ...	1,050	0	0
Major	850	0	0
Captain, after 15 years' commissioned service ...	850	0	0
Captain	750	0	0
Lieutenant, after 7 years' commissioned service ...	550	0	0
Lieutenant	574	0	0
2nd Lieutenant, after 2 years' commissioned service	475	0	0
2nd Lieutenant	425	0	0

British Pay of Rank.				*Indian Pay of Rank.*			
Warrant Officer.				*Indian Commissioned Officers.*			
	Rs.	A.	P.		Rs.		
Regimental Sergt.-Major .	315	0	0	Subedar-Major . . .	200		
				Subedar	150—160		
				Jamadar	75—100		
Non-Com.				*Non-Com.*			
	Rs.	A.	P.		s.	A.	P.
Sergeant	158	0	0	Havildar	25	0	0
Lance-Sergeant . . .	124	0	0	Lance-Havildar . .	23	8	0
Corporal	113	0	0	Naik	22	0	0
Lance-Corporal . . .	96	0	0	Lance-Naik . . .	18	0	0
Private	62	0	0	*Sepoy*	16	0	0
Reservist . . .	22	0	0	*Reservist*	5	0	0

Comment on the above is superfluous. It is not a comparison, but a contrast between the two colored sides of the Indian Army. To avoid any false criticism, we have to state here, that the above figures have been borrowed from " The Pay and Allowance Regulations of the Army in India " (Part I, 1923.)

Not only is the contrast glaring between the British and the Indian Pay of Rank, the more surprising fact is this that, according to the " Royal Warrant for the Army," the pay of the British Private, per day, on enlistment, is 2/9*d.*, whilst, the increment of his pay, *after 2 years of service*, is 9*d.*, *i.e.*, a total of 3/6*d.* per day. It means that a British Private gets, after 2 years' service in the Army, *an increment* of nine annas per day, whilst the Indian Sepoy, for his whole term of service does not get even a pay of 9 annas per day. The same contrast will be found as regards the pay of the Reservists. The British Private is paid as a Reservist, 12 annas per day, whilst the Indian Sepoy gets about 3 annas a day, as a Reservist!

We have often heard the economists' slogan " Equal Pay for Equal Work " but in the Indian Army, it appears that the slogan is " Unequal pay for Equal Work ", in the proportion of 1 : 4. One can say without hesitation that the Indian Sepoy and his family are starved, whilst the British Private and his family are well fed and looked after, on their respective pay of rank.

Major Portion of our Military Budget of 70 crores benefits only the ring of Army Contractors and their families.

The Military Authorities know quite well that the Indian Sepoy is forced, by his straitened circumstances, to sell a *part of his free ration* in order to send cash to his family, and thus is forced to a vicarious sacrifice, and starve himself, owing

to the killing-wage paid by the Government of India, which is spending on the Indian Army, 70 crores of rupees a year,—the greater proportion of which sum goes to the enrichment of the ring of Army Contractors and their families! We believe, that the time has arrived now for the Members of the Legislative Assembly to take up a strong attitude on this subject, and to compel the Government of India to revise the scale of pay of Indian other ranks; and so far as possible, to approximate it to the pay of the British other ranks.

Some suggestions for Military Economy.

We are not here concerned with the consideration of the Military Budget, and particularly as to how the additional money required for raising the pay of other Indian ranks to the British level should be found. To avoid being considered irresponsible arm-chair critics, we can suggest from experience that, if the Military Stores Department be put under economic business management, instead of the present extravagant unbusinesslike military management, at least 4 to 5 crores of rupees, going to waste every year on the Stores, can be spared and utilized for a better purpose than that of benefitting the Army Contractors. We believe it is no secret that annual bonfires are made of condemned—which should not have been purchased in the first instance—Military Stores worth lacs of rupees; and the selling of Surplus Stores at ruinous reductions, and repurchasing the same at fancy prices, show where economy can be practised, if the Military Authorities were induced to practise and had the will to do so. For, where there is a will there is a way. But so far, the Military have repressed their will!

We wish to insist on the fact that the greatest commanders of all times and of all ages have realized the fact that, in war, men count far more than machines, and a well-paid and contented small army is of more military value than a large, ill-paid and discontented army. It is unfortunate that in the Annual Military Budgets these two items, viz., men and machines, and their costs, are not shown separately, otherwise the contrast would be illuminating!

Another item on which reduction can be made in the Annual Military Budget is that of military Home Charges.

With the gradual Indianisation of the Army, and reduction of British Troops the Home Charges will automatically decline. We do not know how far this policy of reducing the British Army in India is likely to proceed. If India is really to be granted Dominion Status, it naturally follows that India will have soon to provide an Indian Army of defence and offence, and the British Troops will be gradually replaced by Indian Troops, just as the self-governing Dominions like Canada, Australia, etc., have done. And if gradually the British Troops are reduced to a vanishing margin, the Home Charges will be correspondingly reduced, thus affording the much needed money for the raising of pay of Indian other ranks.

Another matter to which we beg to draw the attention of the Members of the Committee, is to the "Report of the Lee Commission" on the well-paid Services. The Commission has reported that poorly paid Civil officers on **Rs. 1,500** or more a month are starving, and being moved to tears by their woes, has recommended a rise in their fat pay. We should like to know how a poor Sepoy on **Rs. 15** a month can flourish, whilst the poor officer on **Rs. 1,500** a month can starve! It is about time, such cant were put an end to.

We believe that owing to the starvation wages of the Sepoy, some of our finest fighting-races are being deprived of their legitimate increase in numbers, and where formerly large families used to be the rule, much smaller families are found to-day.

The blame for this decrease in the number of martial races must lie on the head of the Military Authorities. The Members of the Committee need not be frightened by the spectre of increased taxation being necessary to meet the proposed increase in the pay of the Indian Sepoy, for, as we have shown above, economies can certainly be made in the wasteful Stores Department, and the money thus saved transferred to this item of increased pay of Indian other ranks, and thus indirectly, help in the growth of the population of our martial races.

If one were to make some general remarks as to the inadequacy of **Rs. 16** a month for an adult Sepoy and his family, one may say that a decent beggar in the city of Bombay would be ashamed of himself, if he did not earn much more than the Sepoy's pay per month!

If the Military Authorities expect that educated Indians are going to join the I. T. F. on such degrading terms of pay, they are quite mistaken.

To state that the experiment of the I. T. F. is a failure is mere hypocrisy. No educated Indian, with any sense of self-respect, can be expected to join the I. T. F. on such degrading terms of Pay and Allowance. The Military Authorities themselves are responsible for the failure of the experiment. They have deliberately fixed the pay and allowance very low, and as we shall see further on, the terms of service in the I. T. F. are also not conducive to Indian self-respect. If the Military Authorities and the Government of India honestly desire to make this experiment of I. T. F. a success, the obvious thing for them to do is to make the terms of pay and service in the I. T. F., sufficiently attractive for the right class of men, *i.e.*, same as those of the Indian Auxiliary Force. And if the experiment then fails, under those circumstances, it would supply a real justification for the Government to call this experiment a failure. We cannot therefore so far agree with the verdict of the Government as to the so-called failure of the Territorial Movement, for the reasons advanced above, realising that the Government itself has furnished the conditions of inevitable failure.

We have hitherto proposed the approximation of the (1) Pay of the Indian Army to that of the British Army in India. And further, we would propose that the (2) Allowances and (3) Pensions of the Indian Army be raised to the scale of the British Army. A Sepoy's pension, after many years service, amounts to **Rs. 5** a month. And to expect an adult Indian to live on such a miserable sum—which would not satisfy the wants even of a small boy—is to expect the impossible! The same criticism applies to (4) Good Service and Good Conduct Pay. And the Esher Committee has made specific suggestions for increase in §78.

As to (5) Family-Pensions, the Esher Committee in section 79 states that " we consider that the present rates of family pension for Sepoys are inadequate. We recommend the abolition of the lower rate; and think that there should be one flat rate for all other ranks, *plus* an allowance for each child on the same principles as for Indian Officers."

Finally, we will refer to the question of (6) Injury-Pensions. The Esher Committee's Report makes the following statement in §91 :

" It has been represented to us that the regulations governing the grant of Injury Pensions, produce discontent, and in some cases, actual hardship. The reference to Army Regulation, India, Vol. I, para. 1058, etc., will show, we think, that they are too limited in scope and lack elasticity. A comparison between these Regulations, and those contained in the Royal Warrant dated 6th December 1919, for the Pensions of Soldiers disabled in the Great War, confirms this view. The Committee has made its recommendations for readjusting the scale of Injury-Pensions in section 93, to which attention is invited.

It must be clearly understood that as the role of the Indian Territorial Force is to serve as a second line to the Regular Indian Army, it may be urged that the second line troops cannot be paid on a higher scale than the first line troops. Our contention is that the first line troops are badly and unjustly paid on an out-of-date scale, and that it is necessary to raise the scale of the Regular Indian Army to that of the Regular British Army, and thus abolish the racial as well as economic distinctions between the two classes of soldiers. We do not believe in any racial distinctions, and we believe that, unless the distinctions are now abolished, the Indian Territorial Force will continue to be a failure, and that the responsibility of such failure must rest on the Government and its Military Advisers, who are in a position to make or mar the future of the I. T. F.

In old days, the greatest attraction for the Soldiers of fortune were the spoils of War. In these days, the Government grabs everything, and leaves only grumbling to the fighters! Some substitute needed.

We believe, much more need not be added to this plea for the approximation of the scales of Pay, Allowance and Pensions of the Indian and British Armies. And we hope that the honourable profession of Arms will be paid honourable rates of pay, instead of the present humiliating rates. We may add that, in the days of yore, the sepoys had the opportunity and the privilege of supplementing their small pay, by the spoils of war. But, in these degenerate days, the Government grabs everything, and the sepoys get nothing! For example, after the last War, the British Empire grabbed the spoils of war, in the shape of millions of miles of enemy territory, which the sepoys helped to win. And the British Government kept the lot, and left only grumbling to the sepoys, as their share of

the spoils of war. We believe this was one of the greatest attractions of the martial career in the past. Hence the Government ought to find some substitute for this, the greatest of attractions of soldiers of fortune. We know that grants of land were made to a small number of distinguished sepoys of the last war, but the majority were disbanded, and granted destitution for their great services. Same was the case in England where Earl Haig has been trying to get employment for officers and soldiers for the last 6 years with some belated success.

To popularise both the first and second line troops raise their pay, etc., simultaneously, and thus remove the economic racial distinction between the Indian and European armies.

In conclusion, we may state without fear of contradiction, that the Indian sepoy is as good as any soldier in the world. That up till now, his military traditions of 'Izzat' have been very cheaply exploited, and that his services ought to be paid on the universally recognized standard of 'Equal Pay for Equal Work'. And Rs. 15 per month is a starvation or a killing-wage, and that the present scale of pay of sepoys should be raised to the level of the British soldiers. We should not consider the raising of the pay as a measure of generosity, but as one of justice.

Finally, we hope that this plea for justice will be properly considered by the Committee of the Indian Legislative Assembly, who should insist on the suggested increase of Pay of the Regular Indian Army, so that no excuse could be brought forward by the Military Authorities that the Second Line Troops cannot be paid higher than the First Line Troops! If the Committee are determined to popularize the Indian Territorial Force, the first step necessary is to remove the racial distinction in the Pay, Allowance and Prospects of the Indian Sepoy and the British Soldier. We hope that the Committee will not rest satisfied with the removal of mere sentimental distinction, but insist on the removal of this intolerable economic racial distinction.

II.—Popularity of the Force.

We now come to a consideration of the practical suggestions for the improvement of the Force under the second heading. Naturally, the popularity of every Force must depend on the conditions of service, and contentment resulting from such conditions. We have already shown above that the conditions of service in the Indian Territorial Force as regards (1) Pay, Allowance and Prospects are not only unattractive, but are in a sense degrading to the economic conscience of any self-respecting person.

1.—First and most essential condition for popularising the Force is to raise the Pay, etc., of the Indian Army to the level of the British.

Hence, the obvious necessity of raising the pay, etc., of the Indian ranks to the level of the British, to popularise the Force. We have also quoted the recommendations of the Esher Committee to emphasise the importance of the same. We may add that for people earning Rs. 1,500 a month, to preach patriotism to those earning Rs. 15 a month, and asking them to rest satisfied with their miserable lot, is sheer bunkum. A sepoy is worth his pay, just as any other person in this world. That the man who offers his life for his country deserves and ought to be paid in proportion to the value of his services to the State. We believe that justice and public morality alike demand the increase of pay, etc., of the ranks of the Indian Army—both Regular and Territorial. To increase the popularity and contentment of both, the first and most essential condition is the increase of pay and prospects of the Indian Army to the level of the British Army in India. A part of the huge Indian Army Budget should be deviated from the pockets of the ring of unworthy and grasping Army Contractors to those of the worthy and self-sacrificing sepoys.

2.—Abolition of Provincial Advisory Committees, and Establishment of Provincial Territorial Associations in India, for the popularisation of the I. T. F.—Formation of County Associations in England.—Separation of Command and Administration, and reasons for same.

Our second suggestion for popularising the I. T. F. is for the abolition of Provincial Advisory Committees, nominated by the local Governments, and the establishment of Provincial Territorial Associations, on the lines of County T. Associations in England, with modifications adapted to local circumstances.

In England, County Associations have been established for the purpose of raising and administering the Territorial Army, whose duty it is in conjunction with the Army Council, to recruit, organise and equip this Force, and make the necessary provision for ranges, buildings, camping grounds, etc., required.

The general principle on which the Territorial Force is organised, is the assimilation of its form and composition to those of the Regular Army, so far as is consistent with the civil character and occupation of its members. The provinces of Command and Administration, however, are kept rigidly distinct, and for the purposes of the latter, it has a special machinery of its own. An explanation of this division of powers may be found in the fact that, Command and Training to be efficient must be centralized, the administration of citizen forces raised on a voluntary basis can only be efficient if it is decentralised. Unity of command and, to some extent, unity of training are essential to success in the field, but diversity and elasticity in administration are no less essential to the encouragement of local effort, and the development of local resources in time of peace.

Numbers of Member of a County Association. Employers and Workmen to be represented.

Subject to the numbers of qualified persons available, and to the statutory provision, that the military members must form not less than half of the whole Association, an Association may be composed of any such number of persons, as may be provided in the scheme.

Among the numbers may be included, if thought desirable, representatives of interests of employers and workmen.

Comparison of Local Advisory Committees, and County Associations of England.

Recommendation for establishment of Provincial Territorial Associations of 12 members, half nominated, and half elected.

If a comparison be made between this English system of establishment of county Associations, and of the Advisory Committees of the I. T. F., as laid down in the I. T. F. Act, and the Rules under the Act, it will be seen that these latter are composed of three members only—two non-official and one military.

As a matter of practice, it is the military member who rules the roost. If the I. T. F. is to be made really popular, it is necessary that the composition of the Advisory Committees under the I. T. F. Act should be altered, both in numbers and in the qualifications of the members. As it is, the three members of the Provincial Advisory Committee are nominated by the local Government of each Province, and as our people have lost all faith in Government nomination, the following suggestions are made for the appointment of Advisory Committees in the future :—

I—The Committee, or Provincial Territorial Association (as it may be better renamed) should consist of at least a dozen members, half of whom should be military members nominated by the Government, whilst the other half should be elected by the Local Legislative Council; so that men of light and leading and public popularity may be enabled to take a share, as real representatives of the people, in the administration of the I. T. F.

II—Powers and Duties of Local Advisory Committees and of English County Associations, compared and contrasted.

It would be helpful first to examine the powers and duties of English County Associations, and later, to compare same with those of the local Advisory Committees of the I. T. F.

Powers and Duties of County Associations—No power of command or training over any part of His Majesty's Military Forces can be exercised by an Association, but, apart from this express exception, it has by statute an *unlimited range* of possible duties in connection with the organisation and administration of those Forces, including the Regulars and Reserves. For these purposes, any powers residing in the Crown, and any powers or duties conferred or imposed on the Army Council or a Secretary of State, by Act of Parliament or otherwise, may, so far as concerned with organization and administration, be conferred upon a County Association, either from time to time or permanently.

Regulations may also direct the manner in which Associations are to exercise the powers and perform the duties assigned to them, and may provide generally for effectively carrying into operation, the part of the Act dealing with Associations.

General Duties of County Association.

The Act lays down three general duties, which are incumbent on every Association, and also enumerates certain particulars, powers and duties, which may be assigned to it, by Orders of His Majesty or Regulations of the Army Council.

The three general duties, imposed under the T. and R. F. Act, are—

(*a*) To learn and conform to the plan of the Army Council for the organization of the Territorial Force within the County.

(*b*) To ascertain the military resources and capability of the County.

(*c*) To tender advice and assistance to the military authorities, which are defined in the Act, as under :

General Duties under T. & R. F. Act Sec. 2—(1).

(1) It shall be the duty of an Association when constituted, (*a*) to make itself acquainted with and conform to the plan of the Army Council for the organisation of the Territorial Force within the county, and (*b*) to ascertain the military resources and capabilities of the county, and (*c*) to render advice and assistance to the Army Council and to such officers as the Army Council may direct; and an Association shall have, exercise, and discharge such powers and duties connected with the organisation and administration of His Majesty's Military Forces, as may for the time being be transferred or assigned to it, by order of His Majesty signified under the hand of a Secretary of State or, subject thereto, by regulations under this Act, but an Association shall not have any powers of command or training over any part of His Majesty's Military Forces.

In addition to the General Duties, the following Particular Duties are imposed upon the County Associations, and are so defined in the T. R. F. Act, Sec. 2—(2).

T. & R. F. Act Sec. 2—(2).

(2) The powers and duties so transferred or assigned may include any powers conferred on or vested in His Majesty, and any powers or duties conferred or imposed on the Army Council or a Secretary of State, by statute or otherwise, and in particular respecting the following matters :—

(*a*) The organisation of the units of the Territorial Force and their administration (including maintenance) at all times, other than when they are called out for training or actual military service, or when embodied.

(*b*) The recruiting for the Territorial Force both in peace and in war, and defining the limits of recruiting areas.

(*c*) The provision and maintenance of rifle ranges, buildings, magazines, and sites of camps for the Territorial Force.

(*d*) Facilitating the provision of areas to be used for manœuvres.

(*e*) Arranging with employers of labour as to holidays for training, and ascertaining the times of training best suited to the circumstances of civil life.

(*f*) Establishing or assisting cadet battalions and corps and also rifle clubs, provided that no financial assistance out of money voted by Parliament shall be given by an association in respect of any person, in a battalion, or corps in a school, in receipt of a parliamentary grant, until such person has attained the age of sixteen.

(*g*) The provision of horses for the peace requirements of the Territorial Force.

(*h*) Providing accommodation for the safe custody of arms and equipment.

(*i*) The supply of the requirements on mobilisation of the units of the Territorial Force within the county, in so far as those requirements are directed by the Army Council to be met locally, such requirements where practicable to be embodied in regulations, which shall be issued to County Associations from time to time, and on the first occasion, not later than the first day of January one thousand nine hundred and nine.

(*j*) The payment of separation and other allowances to the families of men of the Territorial Force, when embodied or called out on actual military service.

(*k*) The registration, in conjunction with the Military authorities, of horses for any of His Majesty's Forces.

(*l*) The care of reservists and discharged soldiers.

Contrast between powers and duties of English County Associations and I. T. F. Advisory Committees.—Establish a Provincial Territorial Association in Bombay.

Comparing the General Duties and Special Duties of the County Associations with those of the local Advisory Committees, as laid down in the Rules under the I. T. F. Act, part VI, section 30, the evident contrast between both ought to convince the Committee on Reorganization, that the object of the Government in appointing such committees is to have 'mere automatons' who should register the recommendations, however undesirable they may be, of the Officer Commanding the District, or of the Officer Commanding the local Battalion. One fails to see the necessity of such an Advisory Committee, as in practice, it merely registers the advice of the O. C. If the object of the Committee on Reorganization is to alter this farcical arrangement, and to make the Territorial Force really popular with both the classes and masses, it is necessary that it should recommend the formation of Territorial County Associations on lines similar to those of England, but adapted to the peculiar conditions of our country. It would be superfluous here to go into the details of such recommendations, relating to their organization.

In short, one may state that, to popularise the Territorial Force, first democratise and popularize the Advisory Committees of the Force, so that the public may be induced to believe that the Force is their own National Force, organized for their own benefit, and not merely a mercenary force, organized by the Government for its own sinister purposes, as seems to be the general impression in the public mind of to-day. To this end establish Provincial Territorial Associations.

Absurdity and futility of powers bestowed upon the Advisory Committees under the I. T. F. Act.—An apt illustration.

To show the absurdity and futility of the so-called powers bestowed upon the Advisory Committees, under the I. T. F. Act and Rules under the Act, one may take up Sec. 30 (*a*) under which applications for discharge may be disposed of by the Committee. Both Sec. 13 (*c*) and Sec. 30 (*a*), are so badly worded, that they are in a sense meaningless.

Sec. 13 (2)—The Commanding Officer may either grant such application, or forward it with his own recommendation thereon to the Advisory Committee, constituted for the Province in which the corps or unit is located.

Sec. 30 (*a*)—The Advisory Committee may make recommendations to the O. C. the District (*a*) on applications forwarded to it by the Officer Commanding a corps or unit, under sub-rule (2) of rule 13.

Under Sec. 13 (2), in the first place, the C. O. makes recommendations to the Advisory Committee, and subsequently under Sec. 30 (*a*) the Advisory Committee makes recommendations to the C. O. the District! It sounds very gilbertian, that such an absurd section should be allowed to exist in the badly-worded I. T. F. Act. Supposing that the C. O and the Advisory Committee are at loggerheads, what happens to the application for Discharge or Resignation? Why should such an important matter be left to the discretion, or rather the caprice of the C. O., or the Advisory Committee which generally agrees with the C. O.? This matter of Resignation from the I. T. F. will be again considered under a separate heading. But it is one illustration of the lack of power of the Advisory Committees in the matter, and the absurdity of the badly drafted Act. The English Act is sensible, and gives definite instructions for dealing with this subject.

3.—To popularise military service and training among Indians, establish Cadet Corps for School children, and Rifle Clubs for youths and adults, which will act as Reservoirs and Feeders for Regular and Territorial Forces, and also help to improve the musketry training of all interested Indians. Mere Government distrust of Indian subjects cannot improve their military capacity or training!

In the preceding suggestions for the formation of County Associations, we have seen that in England they have to carry out the following important duty :—

(*f*) Establishing or assisting cadet battalions and corps, and also rifle clubs, provided that no financial assistance out of money voted by Parliament shall be given by an association in respect of any person in a battalion, or corps or a school, in receipt of a parliamentary grant, until such person has attained the age of sixteen.

We believe that the policy hitherto followed by the Indian Government of excluding Indian subjects of His Majesty from participating in any sort of military training outside of the Regular and recently raised Territorial Forces, *e.g.*, by the formation of Cadet Corps or Rifle Clubs—permission for which has been so far reserved for Europeans only,—is dictated by the distrust of the Indian subjects, and considered by the latter as humiliating and degrading to their self-respect. The Government and the military authorities must realise that, if India is to be granted Dominion Status, sooner or later, she will certainly demand the rights and privileges accruing from such status. One of the most important rights will be that of military training of her sons for self-defence, and defence against aggression. The object of establishing Cadet Corps and of Rifle Clubs, in England and other European countries, is to act as reservoirs and feeders for the Regular and Territorial Armies, and also help to improve the Musketry Training of members of such armies, as well as members of the general public, who may be precluded by circumstances from joining the Army.

Perverse policy of Government distrust of Indian subjects, responsible for the lack of interest and apathy of the Indian nation in military matters. Further, present system of education responsible for physical deterioration and degeneration of the literate classes. Therefore introduce necessary reforms in the Educational System—physical training, medical inspection, supervision and treatment of children, as a preliminary to military training in cadet corps, etc.

The general apathy and indifference of the Indian public and lack of all interest in military matters can be explained by the perverse policy of the Government, which has deliberately precluded Indians of all classes, with the exception only of the martial races required for the purposes of the Regular Indian Army, from taking any intelligent interest in the military affairs of the nation. The Government has, till recently, ignored all active or passive co-operation of the Indian public in all military matters. To expect that any nation under such conditions would suddenly change its nature and traditions, and co-operate with Government in raising the large Territorial Army, under humiliating conditions of service is to expect the impossible. It would be just as absurd to expect the Indians to take any active interest in the Navy, or in the Air Force, as in the Army, for the obvious reason that all intelligent Indians have been excluded from participating in the military affairs of the country for nearly a century or more. In this respect, both the literate classes and the illiterate masses of India are smarting under the same grievance.

In England, France, or pre-war Germany, boys from the age of 10, 12, or 14 could, if they wished, join the School Cadet Corps or the Church Brigades, and thus at a plastic age be initiated into the mysteries and glories of Mars! Teach the young idea how to shoot, and when the boy comes to the age of discretion, he will very likely join the Territorial or the Regular Army, through the spirit of patriotism, kindled by the early association.

Any one who understands the psychology of childhood, will agree with us that such early impressions on the minds of growing children leave indelible marks for a life-time; and once the growing youth of the nation takes an interest in military training, it is very likely to continue for a life-time. We believe that, to make military training compulsory for the under-graduates of the University is to begin at the wrong end, *in the wrong way*. The present system of Indian education is responsible for the physical, mental and moral degeneration of the educated classes; and the sorry samples of physical wrecks—thousands of whom appear for the Matriculation Examination, every year,—are absolute witness to the destructive function of Indian education. We may quote only one example, out of many. For example, the Calcutta University wanted to raise a Territorial University Corps. An official communiqué was issued some time back, from which we find that, out of nearly 800 recruits, only about 150 were found 'just satisfactory' for admission into the Force! It shows what a stupid and senseless

system of education, such as that established in India, can do to destroy and ruin the physique of children and youths, subjected to its senseless, mechanical grinding. Take again the reports of the medical examination of the undergraduates of the Calcutta University, or of the Municipal Schools of Bombay, or of the Parsee school children of Bombay. And they all tell the same tale of the physical deterioration and degeneration of Indian children and youths, attending schools and colleges. Personally we have drawn the attention of the local authorities and of the local Government to the savagery of the present educational system, but without avail. The local Government has not funds enough for providing efficient medical inspection, supervision and treatment for the physical development of our children and youths. But it can easily spare crores of rupees for the so-called 'Development' of Bombay. We consider such neglect of humanity absolutely criminal on the part of the Government. Every civilized country has established a School Medical Service. The fact that the Central and Provincial Governments of India have utterly neglected on false and untenable economic grounds, the establishment of such School Medical Service in this country is witness to the fact that the Government does not care for the physical improvement of its subjects. We can see no difference between such criminal neglect of a civilized Government and the criminal infanticide by savage races! Both plead poverty as an excuse for the crime. But the Government of Bombay has no excuse whatever. For common sense suggests that the development of citizens should take precedence of the development of a city. Hence we believe, the charge is proved that the Government is doubly responsible for the physical ruin, and for the apathy and lack of interest in the military affairs of the Indian nation as a whole. Because the present educational policy of the Government renders the children and youths physically defective and so militarily ineffective, and secondly by excluding Indians from a fair share in the military affairs of the country, has deprived them of all interest in same. Hence the Government itself is responsible for the failure and unpopularity of the Indian Territorial Force. We would therefore make the following suggestions :—

(*a*) That School and College Medical Services should be established for the Medical Inspection, Supervision and Treatment of all students, from the day of admission to the day of departure, from all Schools and Colleges.

(*b*) That authorities of Schools and Colleges should be encouraged to form Cadet Corps or Rifle Clubs, and to that end, the necessary legislation should be included in the new Territorial Forces Act. There should be no compulsion on any one, in this matter of choice.

(*c*) Aside from Schools and Colleges, those members of the public, precluded from joining the Army, owing to age or other circumstances, who may not attend or may have left such educational institutions, and particularly members of all minor communities should be given the rights, under specified conditions, to establish their own Cadet Corps or Rifle Clubs.

4.—Period of service should be reduced from six to four years, which would increase the number of new recruits by 50 per cent., every four years. A Territorial Reserve should be established for those willing to join, after 4 years of service in the I. T. F., for a further period of 4 years. In England, the Territorial Army has its own Reserve at its back.

We do not know who was the military genius who proposed the terms of service in the Indian Territorial Force; and particularly, on what grounds he invented such humiliating terms. We can say, without much hesitation, after a comparison of the terms of service in the Indian T. F. and the British T. F., that the terms of service for the I. T. F. are meant for slaves, and those in the B. T. F. for freemen.

As a matter of fact, the I. T. F. is supposed to be a Volunteer Force, but, in practice, the terms of service are like those of a Conscript Force, and even much worse at that. In the French and German Armies, conscription was for periods varying from 18 months to three years at the most; while in the I. T. F. it is for six years. In the B. T. F. it is for four years, and the same is the case with the Indian Auxiliary Force. We see no reason why the period for the I T. F. should be fixed at six years. We suggest that the period should be reduced to four years only. We find that a similar suggestion is made by the Esher Committee. Our objections to the length of service are two-fold.

In the first place, it is too much to expect a volunteer to offer his services for such a long period as six years, during which time, his circumstances may change, and unforeseen occasions arise, which may render it necessary for him to leave the Force, but owing to the preposterous conditions of Discharge, he is prevented from obtaining same. In the next place, it appears that it is a clever device for preventing a large number of Indians from joining the Force. By shortening the period from six to four years, the number of new recruits can be increased by 50 per cent. every four years, and the number of Territorial Reservists also can be correspondingly increased. We suggest that the period of service in the I. T. F. be reduced from six to four years, and that instead of allowing those discharged, after finishing their term of four years, to rejoin the I. T. F., they ought to be given the option of joining the I. T. F. Reserve for 4 years.

We find that no provision has been made in the direction of having a sufficient Reserve at the back of the I. T. F. We believe that the whole scheme of the I. T. F. as it stands is a practical and very expensive joke on the public; and that it should be thoroughly revised, in the light of experience of the last war, and of Territorial Forces in other countries. We hope to deal with this subject under the heading of "Efficiency of the I. T. F." later on.

5.—Conditions of Resignation and Discharge laid down in the I. T. F. Act and the Rules under the Act are unworthy of freemen, and fit for slaves only. They need alteration on the lines of the British T. Forces Act.

Next to the question of the period of service in the I. T. F., the most important is that of Voluntary Discharge from the Force. We have said above that the I. T. F. being a Volunteer Force, it should be treated as such and not as a Conscript Force of unwilling recruits. For instance, comparing the rules of discharge for the I. T. F. with those for the British T. F., we again find the distinction of slave and freeman between the two. The English freeman is entitled according to the B. T. F. Act, to a free and voluntary discharge on giving three months' notice to the O. C., and paying £5. In many cases, the payment is dispensed with. While his fellow citizen in the I. T. F. is treated like a slave, and is not allowed to resign from the Force, except on the recommendation of the O. C., or the local Advisory Committee. So that practically, like a slave, he is subject to the freaks and frowns of the latter. We wish to draw the attention of the Committee to the grave scandal of the Ahmedabad Company of the Parsee Pioneers, which happened in 1923. The military martinets and the local Advisory Committee, instead of accepting the resignations of the Privates and N. C. O.'s of the local Company, bullied them with pains and penalties, and threatened them with capital punishment for not obeying their illegal orders! Such a contretemps would be impossible in a self-governing country like England, where the superior officers would have been duly punished and cashiered out of the Force for exceeding their authority! But, here in this slave driven country, with the arbitrary and oppressive powers given by the I. T. F. Act, such a scandal did happen, with the expected result. The eyes of the majority of all ranks of the Parsee Pioneers, and their friends, parents and guardians were fully opened, and they realised that they were mere slaves in the hands of the military octopus, without any rights and privileges of volunteers, and weighed down with all the duties and obligations of helpless slaves, and deprived of all the privileges of freemen, offering their voluntary services for the defence of the country. We hope that the military advisers of the Government have learnt a lesson from this unfortunate episode. We further hope that the Committee on Reorganisation will realise that the I. T. F. Act requires a thorough revision; and the removal of all sections obnoxious to our sense of national self-respect, otherwise its labours will be in vain, and the I. T. F. will continue to be as unpopular as ever.

The following alterations in the conditions of Discharge from the I. T. F. should be adopted.

T. & R. F. Act § 9 (3).

Any man of the Territorial Force shall, except when a proclamation ordering the Army Reserve to be called out on permanent service is in force, be entitled

to be discharged before the end of his current term of service, on complying with the following conditions :

(I) Giving to his Commanding Officers three months' notice in writing, or such less notice as may be prescribed, of his desire to be discharged; and

(II) Paying for the use of the association for the county for which he was enlisted such sum as may be prescribed not exceeding five pounds; and

(III) Delivering up in good order, fair wear and tear only excepted, all arms, clothing, and accoutrements, being public property, issued to him, or, in cases where for any good and sufficient cause, the delivery of the property aforesaid is impossible, on paying the value thereof :

Provided that it shall be lawful for the association for the county or for any officer authorised by the association, in any case in which it appears that the reasons for which the discharge is claimed, are of sufficient urgency or weight, to dispense either wholly or in part with all or any of the above conditions.

6.—Sections dealing with discipline in the I. T. F. fit for slaves, and not for freemen; hence, should be altered on the lines of the British T. F. Act.

(4) The sections of the I. T. F. Act dealing with discipline are fit for slaves, and just as absurd as the one about discharge. Take for instance, the Ahmedabad Company of Parsee Pioneers, ordered to attend the Annual Training at Tithal, last year. The O. C. of the Company threatened the absentees with capital punishment! That such a savage penalty should be prescribed for such a venial offence, undoubtedly proves the brutal mentality of the framers of the I. T. F. Act, and their resolve to show the Indians, that even if they volunteer their services, they will be treated as no better than helpless slaves of old, whose lives were at the mercy of their masters, who could chop off their heads at their own sweet will! We know that slavery was abolished a century back, but we find a survival of the slave-owning mentality, amongst the Military Officers of the Government of India. If it be said that we are making carping criticisms, and that discipline cannot be maintained without the prescription of such inhuman punishments, we suggest to them the perusal of the British B. T. R. F. Act, under which the rigour of the ordinary military law of the land is softened, in its application to the Terriers.

" If any man of the B. T. F. fails to attend for preliminary or annual training, or the prescribed number of drills, he is liable to be tried by a Court of Summary Jurisdiction, and pay a fine not exceeding £5." (T. & R. F. Act § 21.)

Even the meanest intelligence can note the evident difference between a British freeman and an Indian slave of the Territorial Force, as the former gets off with a fine of £5, whilst the latter loses his head for the same offence! We are almost certain that no self-respecting Indians, least of all, members of the Indian Legislative Assembly, now that their attention is drawn to the brutality of the I. T. F. Act, will allow a continuation of the same, but will insist on a radical alteration of all the brutal and slavish sections of the Act, including the above. Attention is here drawn to the definition of the T. F., and men of the T. F., in the T. R. F. Act, as under.

Men of the T. F. citizen-soldiers. Punishments deterrent only. New standard of military value.

Territorial Force.—This is the title assigned by statute, and there is no authority for the use of the expression "Territorial Army," or of any other. The rank and file, including non-commissioned officers, are throughout the Act referred to as " men of the Territorial Force ". They become " soldiers " only when subject to military law [*cf.* Army Act, s. 190 (6)]. They are " persons in the military service of the Crown " for the purposes of the Workmen's Compensation Act (6 Edward VII, c. 58, s. 9).

Adaptibility to civilian conditions of the T. F. is to be observed in the penal provisions applied to the British T. F. The individual man is subject to military law, whenever performing any military duty, and is also liable to penalties, generally of less severity, for certain offences peculiar to the Territorial Force. But this portion of the law is less rigid in its practical application than would

at first sight appear from the phraseology of its enactment. It is subject to considerable relaxation in proper cases, and its general purpose may be described as "deterrent" rather than punitive. Hence the B. T. F. Act is much more sensible than the stupid and inhuman I. T. F. Act. Further, a new and improved "standard of military value" appropriate to membership in a citizen force is applied to the British T. F. For example, in the past, military efficiency consisted in compliance with the letter of the Regulations and the mechanical performance of same. Under the Regulations for the T. F., certain training requirements are indicated, and, for the sake of uniformity, must so far as possible be duly carried out. Efficiency, however, no longer depends on their technical performance, but on the judgment of the Divisional Commander, that the necessary "standard of military value" has been attained by each individual member of a unit. Efficiency, in fact, has been interpreted, not in terms of past performance under peace conditions, but of "potential value in time of war".

We believe that so far, the local Battalions of the I. T. F. may have complied with the letter of their regulations, but their efficiency, in terms of "potential value in time of war," is not hard to judge from their performance to-day! Without keenness and enthusiasm, there can be no military efficiency. And in the absence of contentment and justice, there can be no enthusiasm. Hence, to improve the military efficiency, the contentment of the men should be looked after, and justice done to them, by equalising the status of the Indians and the Europeans, in the new I. T. F., to promote military efficiency of the whole I. T. F.

7.—Curtailment of extraordinary powers of the Officer Commanding, as regards discipline, control and selections and nominations for promotion of officers and men of the unit under his Command.

We are convinced that the extraordinary powers of discipline, control and selection and nominations for promotion granted to the Officers Commanding should be definitely curtailed. A study of the India Army Act (Act VIII of 1911), to which the men of the I. T. F. are subject, in accordance with the provisions of the I. T. F. Act, will make it apparent that extraordinary powers with regard to abovementioned matters have been conferred on the C. O.'s.

It is taken for granted, that a battalion or a company is the private property of the C. O.; that he is the slave-owner endowed with all the arbitrary and brutal powers of the slave-owners of old. If it be suggested that the C. O.'s of Battalions, etc., in the Indian Army, should be endowed with such powers, and that in the absence of same, discipline cannot be maintained, we can say that we do not believe in such absurd nonsense. The days are dead and gone when such absurd ideas would have been accepted. In these days of Dominion Status, "Swaraj", and what not, it would be an insult to our self-respect and intelligence, to suggest that Indians cannot or will not behave properly, and observe discipline, in the absence of such arbitrary powers of the C. O.'s. We believe that, such unnecessary and arbitrary powers of the C. O.'s cause grave discontent and inefficiency, and that they should be thoroughly revised, and curtailed in accordance with the altered notions of self-government and self-respect of these times. We beg to draw the attention of the members of the Committee to the following remark in the Manual of "Indian Military Law" published by the Government of India, wherein the Government itself acknowledges that "no person should be permanently subjected to *an exceptional and severe code*, like that contained in the Indian Army Act, etc., etc." We feel justified in suggesting that no person in the I. T. F. be subjected to such a savage and severe code, like the Indian Army Act. As a matter of fact, we would suggest to the Committee, that it might recommend the revision of the I. A. Act, in accordance with the changed and changing ideas of these days. We have no time to enter into details, but those acquainted with military laws of England and other European countries can easily suggest the necessary modifications in the India Army Act.

8.—Abolition of the inferior and humiliating Designations and Ranks of Jamadar, Subedar, etc., and also of Viceroy's Commissions, from the I. T. F., as well as from the Regular Army. Substitute Warrants for inferior ranks, and Substantive King's Commissions for superior ranks of Indian Officers, as in the British Army.

We consider that the designations and ranks of Indian Officers, *viz.*, Jamadar, Subedar, etc., are a badge of inferiority, and as such humiliating to the self-respect of all right-minded persons.

So, the time has arrived for the abolition of these Indian Officers' ranks, both from the Infantry and the Cavalry, and consequently of the Second Class Commissions granted by the Viceroy. There are obvious reasons for such a suggestion. In the comparative list of pay, we have shown above that Indian Officers holding the Viceroy's Commission, in spite of their holding a higher rank and status in the Indian Army than the Warrant Officer of the British Army, are paid much less. Even the pay of a non-commissioned officer like a Sergeant in the British Army, is higher than that of a Subedar, and of a Corporal higher than that of a commissioned Jamadar! In spite of the fact that in the Indian Army, the Indian Officers holding the Viceroy's Commission rank much higher than the non-commissioned officers of the same Army, they are paid at a rate which does not correspond with their status and position in the Indian Army; and thus the invidious *racial distinction* is maintained of a higher pay for a lower rank in the British Army, and of a lower pay for a higher rank in the Indian Army! We do not believe that there is any other army in the world, where such racial distinctions exist between the emoluments of different ranks of the armies of the same nation!

It has been suggested that the granting of Honorary King's Commissions to Indian Officers holding Viceroy's Commissions can get over this difficulty of racial distinction! We fail to see how the granting of Honorary King's Commissions can raise the pay, status, and position of Indian Officers holding the Viceroy's Commission. If anything, we believe that the grant of Honorary King's Commissions merely adds to the chagrin of those on whom they are conferred. It does not remove, but exaggerates the distinction between the holders of Substantive and Honorary Commissions, because the definite distinctions between the two are self-evident. As shown above, the pay of an Indian Officer with an Honorary King's Commission is less than that of a Warrant officer or an N. C. O. in the British Army.

We know that the rates of pay of rank for British Commissioned Officers of the Indian Army have been made applicable to Indian Officers, granted Honorary Commissions. But, even there, it is laid down that "they will *not* however be entitled to Command pay, or additional regimental pay". So that a definite distinction is preserved between the holders of Substantive and Honorary Commissions. We presume that when the question of Pensions arises, there is bound to be trouble.

As regards those Indian Officers not granted Honorary King's Commissions, the previous criticism holds good, that in spite of holding higher ranks, they are paid at lower rates than W. O.'s and N. C. O.'s of the British Army. Thus, the distinction between Indian Officers granted Honorary King's Commissions, and those not granted same is accentuated, and is a source of bitter discontent and grievance in the army.

We fail to see why such an evidently unjust decision has been taken by the H. Q. It will lead to more trouble and discontent in the army, to grant Honorary King's Commissions to some lucky individuals only, and leaving others in the lurch! The decision is based on a false notion of expediency, but being in itself unjust, it should be rescinded as early as possible. If a Jamadar or Subedar is fit to hold an Honorary Commission, and in addition is fit to command a platoon or company, by virtue of holding the Viceroy's Indian Commission, it is unjust, unfair, and inexpedient to withhold from him the grant of Substantive King's Commission.

Further, if—as we are informed in a communiqué issued by the Southern Command—"the Territorial Officers receiving dual commissions possess *the same rank and precedence* as are enjoyed by British Officers holding King's Commissions," we can arrive only at one conclusion, *viz.*, that such an invidious distinction must be the outcome of stupidity, or of racial arrogance.

Finally, we should suggest that all Indian Officers, who are good enough to be granted Honorary King's Commissions, should be granted Substantive King's Commissions. Those Indian Officers, who are not good enough for same, should be granted Warrants, as in the British Army. Thus the abolition of

Viceroy's Commissions will remove all heart-burning. Indian Warrant Officers may be called for the sake of nomenclature, Havildar-Majors instead of Sergeant-Majors, but their rank and status should be clearly defined as that of Warrant Officers and not of Indian Commissioned Officers, as all Voceroy's Commissions would be abolished.

To raise the executive authority and status of Indian Commissioned Officers and to give them a chance of promotion to the highest ranks in the Army, abolition of the grades of Indian Officers from both the Indian Army and the Indian Territorial Force, is strongly recommended. The genuine Indianization of the Army will be thus accelerated. There are 12 British plus *20 Indian Commissioned Officers per Battalion, and these 20 Indians should be granted Substantive British Commissions, which they deserve.*

In the Indian Army, the Indian Officer, Jamadar or Subedar, commands a platoon, or a company when necessary, and as such he has the same executive authority as a Lieutenant or Captain in the British Army. Hence the distinction between the corresponding ranks of the two armies is very suggestive. While Platoon-Commanders in both armies, *have the same executive authority, their* rank, pay and status are *quite distinct.* Whilst an *Indian Platoon-Commander* can never hope to rise much higher,—save perhaps in very *exceptional circumstances,*—the Platoon-Commander in the British Army is destined from the first to a regular promotion to the highest ranks in the Army. If Indian Officers are good enough to command platoons, or companies, they ought to be good enough for higher commands. The average number of British Officers and Indian Officers in an Indian Battalion are 12 British and 20 Indian, the former of whom can get promotion up to the highest ranks, whilst the latter have a limited status and power of command, and no hope of promotion, beyond the rank of a Subedar-Major in the Infantry.

We should like to know, from the Military Authorities, who have established this anomalous and clumsy method of granting Honorary King's Commissions to Indian Officers, whether their object is merely to make an *appearance* of granting the same for the sake of soothing the clamour of Indians for Substantive Commissions! It would be ridiculous to grant the Officer holding the rank, *e.g.*, of Subedar, the Honorary rank of a Lieut.-Colonel or Colonel, as it would merely tend to lower the value of Honorary King's Commission, in the eyes of the Army. We believe, it is a very miserable make shift and ought to be abandoned in the interests of all concerned. As the Committee on Reorganization of the I. T. F. is empowered to make recommendations with regard to all ranks of the I. T. F., we hope that, by recommending the removal of the inferior ranks of the Indian Officers from the I. T. F., it would help in the abolition of some ranks from the whole Indian Army in time; and thus help in the *genuine Indianization* of both the Regular and the Territorial Forces. We believe the abolition of the I. S. M. D. from the Medical Department of the Army was based on similar grounds of abolishing the distinction of racial I. T. F. We have to draw the attention of the Committee to the fact that, at present, Officers holding the Viceroy's and the Honorary King's Commissions inferiority. Such a recommendation will certainly add to the popularity of the in the I. T. F. are thoroughly discontented with their *inferior* status and position. We would draw the attention of the Committee to the remarks relative to this subject, in " The Army in India and its Evolution " (1924) : " Accordingly, the promotion of the Viceroy's Commissioned Officers *does not afford the solution of the problem of Indianizing the higher ranks of the Army,* which is satisfactory either to the individual or to the Service." As the I. T. F. is a clean slate, we would repeat our suggestion that the ranks of Indian Officers should be abolished in the I. T. F., and the same Substantive King's Commissions should be granted to all Officers of the I. T. F. on the same terms and conditions as are granted to the Officers of the British T. F., and the Officers of the Indian Auxiliary Force and of the I. A. R. O. We believe, that is the only just solution that will remove the unpopularity and the discontent now existing in the higher ranks of the I. T. F.

Abolition of all racial distinctions, particularly with reference to the admission of Indians into All Arms of the Service, which will serve as an acid test of the Sincerity of the Government about genuine Indianization of the Army.

We shall now deal with the abolition of all racial distinctions between the Indian and European sections of the Regular, Territorial and Auxiliary Forces.

We have thus far shown the definite existence of galling racial distinctions in regard to the following items, between Indian and European subjects of His Majesty :

1. Pay of Rank, Allowance, etc.
2. Formation of County Associations, in place of Advisory Committees.
3. Formation of Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs.
4. Period of Service in the Force.
5. Conditions of Resignation and Discharge.
6. Methods of Discipline.
7. Extraordinary powers of C. O.'s.
8. Grant of King's Substantive Commissions.

9. We now come to one of the most galling racial distinctions, *viz.*, the practical exclusion of all Indian subjects of His Majesty from the Artillery, the Air Force, and most of the Technical Services. Practically the admission of Indians is limited to the Infantry and the Cavalry. The distinction is no doubt based on Government's absolute distrust of the Indian Nation. The British rulers must now forsake their age-long sentiment of distrust. Once that India is granted the status of a self-governing Dominion, it cannot be denied, on any just and reasonable grounds, the right of self-defence; for there is no alternative. If India is granted the right of self-defence, it will demand full control of the Army in India, both British and Indian, relying on the universal custom of every constitution, that the Military is always subject to the Civil power. Hence, we suggest that all Arms of the Service be thrown open for the admission of Indians. If the Territorial Army is genuinely meant to be a Second Line Army, it follows that the Second Line should have, in its composition, all Arms of the Service, of which the First Line is constituted. It would further add to the popularity of the I. T. F., for Indians gifted with varying capacities would have the choice of joining any arm of the Service for which they may have a natural bent, and feel peculiarly gifted. We may assert, without fear of contradiction, that however opposed the British War Office may be to this natural claim and right of the Indians for admission into all sections of their National Army, the Government of India will have in the end to yield to Indian public opinion, as expressed in the Indian Legislatures. Hence, it would be much more dignified for the military authorities to recognize coming portents, and in good time, yield gracefully to the demand for Indianization of the Army.

To conclude, we recommend the removal of all racial distinctions between the two armies. We do not wish to enter here into the question of military fitness of Indians, for there would have been no Indian Empire without the help of Indian Sepoys, who showed their mettle in 1914, during the last Great War, by serving the British Empire at a critical juncture, and thus saved practically the major part of the civilized world from destruction. If in the past, a Sivaji or Scindia or Gaekwar or Akbar or Tipoo Sultan was fit to rule and command armies in the field, and to build up empires and kingdoms, his descendants and tribesmen cannot be unfit to command a company or a battalion, in times of peace or war, in these days.

10. A change in the mentality of the military authorities responsible for the organization of the I. T. F. is quite essential for its success. A further change in the military obsession of dividing the nation into 'military' and 'non-military' is also essential, for its success. A practical lesson taught by modern Japan, and its application to India.

Finally, we have to suggest a change in the mentality of the military authorities, responsible for the organization of the I. T. F. We believe that no sound movement can be reared on the basis of mutual distrust, for in the end, distrust begets distrust; whilst generous trust begets gratitude and confidence. We particularly wish to draw the attention of the Committee to the remarks of "The Army in India Committee" with reference to the I. T. F. (Part VI, Sec. 12).

"Sec. 12. In forming our conclusions, we have been impressed by the fact that the highest military authorities in India accept the principle of a national defence force, and are of the opinion that it is to be encouraged. They have told us however that we must not shut our eyes to the practical difficulties. They

add :—' Not only have we to bear in mind *the risks that we run* in organizing a force that may be used against us in one way or another, but we have to create or revive the necessary military qualities in a collection of different races, who are striving under our control to evolve a common nationality, and with the ideal of national participation in the defence of their country ..... *We do not want to run more risks than is necessary*; we do not want to interfere unduly with religious or local customs and ideals, and we do not want the country generally to get tired of what is admittedly an experiment, before the desired result is attained.' "

It sounds like " To be, or not to be!," which is a condition of suspense, in which nothing practical can be accomplished. We can see no reasons why India should get tired, and why the raising of I. T. F. should be considered an experiment. It is merely one of the fruits of distrustful military mentality, and a mirage of suspicious minds.

If, as we have shown before, genuine attempts be made to popularize the I. T. F., one may await the result with equanimity, for Indians have already shown that they are quite capable of making the greatest secrifices in the service of their country. Hence we may expect that, they would, under favourable circumstances, be ready to join the I. T. F. in great numbers, to make the so-called ' experiment ' a definite success.

Another obsession of the military mind, and arbitrary classification of Indians into martial and non-martial classes.

Another obsession of the military mind, in addition to that of distrust of the Indians, is the arbitrary classification of Indians into, ' martial ' and ' non-martial ' races.

Whilst no doubt there are certain races whose hereditary profession is that of arms, there are others who can be converted into ' citizen-soldiers ', such as are to be found everywhere in European countries.

One practical method, we have already shown before, and that is to teach the young idea how to shoot during the plastic period of its life in schools and colleges. The young barbarian, thus inoculated with the poison of militarism, as is done in savage Europe of to-day, will grow up into a howling militarist, with the passing of years. This process will, no doubt, take some time. As it is, there are millions of young men who would like to join a genuine National Army in the service of their country. We have reason to believe that by popularizing the I. T. F. in its various aspects referred to before, an efficient Second Line Army can be raised and maintained.

A practical lesson in militarisation of all classes of the Nation, taught by modern Japan, and its application to India.

Until the abolition of fedalism, the soldiers of Japan were to be found only in one class of the people—the Samurai,—and on them alone fell the task of defending the Empire whenever necessary. Traders, farmers, and labourers were alike considered *unworthy and unfit* to bear arms. The new Government soon saw that no army *confined to one class alone* could ever be a *national force*, and one of its earliest steps was to subject all classes *alike* to the obligations of military service. A national army was substituted for a class one. Military colleges, training depôts, and fully equipped arsenals were gradually established, and the Satsuma rebellion showed beyond all doubt the early success, which attended the new system, and that the fighting instinct was no more wanting in the Japanese people as a whole, than it had been in the old hereditary military castes. *The raw material was found in all*, and only required working up. The military spirit was inculcated in all schools of every grade, and it has been a common sight for years past, to see regiments of small boys marching, during the holiday time, in military array, in the mountains of Japan, with miniature rifles, knapsacks, and blankets, under the command of retired non-commissioned officers, and practising drill and evolutions precisely as real soldiers. When these youths subsequently join the colours, under the conscription law, they do so already fortified with a very considerable appreciation of the duties of and the spirit which should actuate a soldier.

We do not advocate conscription for Indians, as it is not necessary. We only suggest that no obstruction should be permitted in the path of voluntary militarisation of all classes of Indians, willing and fit to serve in the volunteer national Armies—Regular, Territorial, and Auxiliary, and their Accessories, *viz.*, cadet corps, rifle clubs, and communal volunteer corps or associations.

11. Slavish conditions of Service in the U. T. C. should be altered. Excessive powers of the O. C.—*re* Discharge, etc.—need to be curtailed. U. T. Associations to be established in all provinces.

We have already dealt with the conditions of Service in the I. T. F., and shown them to be degrading and subversive of self-respect, and an examination of the conditions of service for the University Training Corps further confirms the same view. That under-graduates of any University, who are going to be the future leaders of Indian thought, should be expected to serve under such conditions of slavery proves, if any proof were needed, that the framers of the I. T. F. Act seem to attach no importance to the feelings and sentiments of Indians. Further the U. T. C. is made subject to the savage India Army Act, 1911. Hence we propose that the Rules applicable to the U. T. C. should also be thoroughly revised and liberalised. We shall give only one instance of how the possession of the arbitrary power of the O. C. creates a despotic desire for using it. Under Sec. 21 of the "Rules, for U. T. C., under the I. T. F. Act 1920," the O. C. can deal summarily with an offence under Sec. 19, and inflict punishment prescribed under Sec. 21(*a*) *e.g.*, dismissal of the offender from the U. T. C. Practically the O. C. is given the summary power of dismissal, from which there is no appeal. The O. C. of the Bombay University Corps for example put down on the Notice Boards of the local Colleges, a number of names of students, dismissed by him week by week. The total of three months, July to September 1923, came to 272. Some of these dismissed students requested a proper investigation of their so-called 'offence'; and also a statement of offence. But the O. C. declined to give any reason or to undertake investigation. Among those dismissed were many who, by reason of sickness, etc., were prevented from appearing at the place of parade at the time fixed, and brought the fact to the notice of the O. C. But the latter declined to revise his unjust decision of dismissal. On the one hand, we are told that Indians do not join the I. T. F., whilst on the other, we find that under the Act, the O. C. is given the arbitrary power of dismissal, by which he can discourage and discharge those willing to continue in the Force! The blame must rest on the Act, which confers such extraordinary powers on the O. C., and leaves no right of redress or appeal to those under his charge; hence the Act requires revision.

Conflict between the arbitrary power of dismissal of the O. C., and the proposed introduction of Compulsion in the Bombay University.

It appears from the papers, that a proposition was before the Bombay Senate for Compulsory Military Training of all Under-graduates. Supposing such a proposal were passed, under the existing Rules of I. T. F. Act, the students would be in a very anomalous position. The University will demand a certificate of attendance at parades, such certificate it would be impossible for those students to receive, who may have been arbitrarily dismissed by the O. C. Naturally, if a student is dismissed on some trifling ground by the O. C., he will not be able to procure any certificate of attendance, and he will have to suffer in his academic career by the misuse of the despotic power of the O. C. Practically he would thus be debarred from proceeding for any University Examination, and his University career, thereby, prematurely ended. Such an intolerable injustice cannot be permitted in any free country, when we know that even in conscript countries, the Universities do not lay down such oppressive conditions for candidates. This is a very real grievance, and it ought to be remedied by restricting the power of dismissal of the O. C. to certain well-defined causes, after due investigation, and by allowing an appeal to higher authority, if the O. C.'s decision is challenged. It would be against the best interests of liberal education and culture to enforce Conscription or Militarism on Conscientious Objectors and others, unwilling to join the U. T. C.

A suggestion for establishing an University Territorial Corps Association to popularise the U. T. C. in every Province.

We suggest that, for popularizing the University Corps of the I. T. F., an University Territorial Corps Association for each province should be established, consisting of 8 to 12 members, half of whom should be military members nominated by Government, and the other half elected by the Senate, the past and present Graduates and Under-graduates of the University. We believe the past and present representatives of the University would understand the requirements, feelings and sentiments of those willing to join the U. T. C., and so would be able to attract a large number of recruits, and would also act as a check on the arbitrary and despotic use of power by the O. C.

At present, there is no Association or Committee to guide the Under-graduates, and to induce them to join the U. T. C. Such University T. C. Associations of different Provinces might hold Annual Conferences for exchange of views and co-ordination of effort.

12. Recommendations for the Establishment of a Central or Imperial Territorial Association, elected jointly by the Central Government, Indian Legislative Assembly, and the Council of State.

We have to make another suggestion for the popularization of the I. T. Force. We have already suggested the formation of (A) Provincial Territorial Associations, and (B) University Territorial Corps Associations. We now suggest the formation of (C) a Central or Imperial Territorial Association of 12 members : 4 of them to be military members nominated by the Government, 4 elected by the Council of State, and 4 elected by the Legislative Assembly. Such a Central T. Association would be in a position to guide and co-ordinate the activities of the Provincial and University Territorial Associations. Besides passing pious resolutions, both the Council of State and the Indian Legislative Assembly will thereby be enabled to take a practical interest in the I. T. F. and will afford the acid test of sincerity of their genuine interest in the I. T. F. The House of Commons appoints Standing Committees to supervise the various activities of the State; and membership of such a proposed Association would confer immense benefit, by the gain of practical knowledge and experience, thus acquired by the members of the Association, It would thus be in a position to guide, supervise and co-ordinate the activities of the Provincial and University Territorial Associations, and suggest necessary changes for popularising the I. T. F.

13. Provision of Clubs, Sports, Games, etc., to be arranged by the Provincial Territorial Associations.

It is now well recognized that for maintaining the efficiency of soldiers, it is necessary to make a sufficient provision of funds for establishing clubs, and for sports, games, amusements, etc., to help them to keep fit for service, and to prevent them from wasting their energy and leisure in undesirable channels. The Provincial Territorial Associations, proposed before, should be authorised to make the necessary arrangements for thus popularising the I. T. F.

14. A thorough Revision of the India Army Act, 1911, and the I. T. F. Act, 1920, and Rules under both the Acts.

A final suggestion is here made for a thorough revision of the I. T. F. Acts, 1920, and the Rules under the Act, and also of the relevant sections of the India Army Act, 1911, which as they stand, are not conducive to the self-respect of Indians, as explained in detail before. Hence to popularize the I. T. F., a thorough revision of both Acts is needed.

III.—Methods of Selecting Candidates for Commission.

Present system of selection of Officers and Non-Com.'s condemned, as productive of inefficiency and unpopularity of the I. T. F.

So far as we know, at present, there seems to be no recognized method of selecting candidates for Commission. Take for instance the appointment of Officers of the local Parsee Pioneer Battalions. We used to read in the Standing Orders of the Battalions, published in some of the local papers, that a Private was suddenly converted into a Second Lieutenant by the ukase of the O. C. After an interval, varying from days to weeks, the Second Lieutenant was suddenly converted into a First Lieutenant, and in some cases even without such conversion, was changed into a Captain and made a Company Commander! We believe that outside the stage, such a rapid promotion from Private to Captain is unheard-of, except perhaps in Monte Carlo or other big States like that! Nobody has been able to explain to us on what grounds of merit, or capacity, or previous distinguished military service, these flash-light appointments were made! This sort of irregular, arbitrary and inexplicable selection and nomination of Officers of the local I. A. F. and T. F. Battalions has produced much heart-burning and discontent in the rank and file and grave inefficiency. The selection and nomination of the N. C. O.'s has been just as arbitrary, and has been a source of grievance in the Battalions. Naturally, the popularity and efficiency of the I. T. F. are bound to suffer owing to such arbitrary standards

of selection and nomination of Officers and N. C. O.'s. We have, in a previous recommendation, referred to the question of curtailing the extraordinary powers bestowed on O. C.'s by the I. T. F. Act. And this is one more reason for same.

First appointments as Officers in the British T. F. recommended by the President of the County Association. Such a system not suited to India.

Let us see how they manage these things in the British Territorial Force.

Subject to directions by His Majesty, first appointments to the lowest rank of Officer, in any unit of the Territorial Force are given to persons recommended by the President of the Association for the County, provided that :—

(*a*) The recommendation is made within thirty days after the receipt of notice of the vacancy from the Commanding Officer of the unit.

(*b*) The candidate has the qualifications required by regulations.

(*c*) The candidate is approved by His Majesty.

Provincial Military Boards of Examiners proposed, for the selection and examination of Cadets. Prescription of Mental as well as Physical Tests of efficiency.

We believe that such a system may be quite suited to the English genius, but it will not do in India. To leave the power of first appointments of the lowest ranks of Officers in the gift of the President of the County Association practically means that these appointments are dependent on the President's patronage, and not solely on merit. And so, families of candidates with influence with the President can always secure such appointments for their nominees. Thus injustice and inefficiency and unpopularity are likely to be perpetuated by such method of nomination in this country. We have already shown that the system of nomination in the local Territorial Battalions is bad in the extreme. Hence, we suggest that the better plan would be as follows.

The Provincial Territorial Associations, as proposed before, should have power jointly with the Military Advisers of the Local Governments, to appoint Provincial Military Boards of Examiners. The Military Boards of Examiners should be responsible for the examination of all candidates for Certificates "A" and "B", as explained later on. The Board should have the power of selecting candidates after a thorough investigation of their qualities and qualifications, and also their status and standing in the locality from which they come.

Besides the usual tests as regards physique, education, etc., for testing the fitness of candidates for Commission, it is essential that, with the advance in knowledge of Mental Tests of fitness, such tests should now be introduced throughout the Army, for all selections, nominations and promotions of Non-Com.'s and Commissioned Officers. We believe that during the last War, the only army which selected its candidates, after putting them through scientific mental tests, was the American. So thoroughly were these mental tests carried out by the psychological experts, that they were able to fit the right man in the right place, and not as was the case in European Armies, the wrong man in the right place. The American Army had, through the instrumentality of such rigid mental tests, a corps of first class Officers, who put the troops under their charge through Intensive Training, and were able to achieve results within three months, such as took the European Armies six months or more to achieve.

Military Schools and Colleges, affiliated to Local Universities, should be established in every Province for imparting Military Training in Vernacular languages, to 15,000 Officers of the Regular and Territorial Armies.

We would suggest that every Province should have sufficient training facilities for the number of Officers and Non-Com.'s required by its quota of the I.T.F. At present there are no Military Schools and Colleges of the type required for training of officers and Non-Com.'s for the Army in India. In fact, the present system of trying to Indianise even the Regular Indian Army by sending a few Indian Cadets to the United Kingdom for Military Training is evidently absurd.

India is a huge country, containing a population six times as large as the United Kingdom, and her Annual Military Budget amounts to 70 crores of Rupees, which, at the official Rs. 10 exchange, amounts to £70,000,000, whilst the expenditure of the United Kingdom on the Army during 1923-1924 was £64,916,000, *i.e.*, in spite of spending more than the United Kingdom, India has no single Military College, where her sons can be trained in the science and art of war! It is now time that such absurdity should be put an end to. Self-governing Oriental Nations like Japan, China, Turkey, Persia, etc., and also self-governing Dominions of the British Empire, like Australia, Canada, New Zealand, have established in their own countries National Military Schools and Colleges in which Military training for all Arms of the Service, including the Air Force, is imparted in the National Vernacular Language of the country.

In these days of Nationalism and Swaraj, we can see every reason why Military Schools and Colleges should be established where training should be imparted in the Vernacular Language, *e.g.*, Urdu, or Hindi; and English taught as an optional subject.

If the Japanese and other Asiatics can translate Military Works in their vernaculars, we in India can do the same. If Indianization is to proceed at a rapid rate, it is absolutely necessary to establish Military Schools and Colleges for training N. C. O.'s and Officers in military subjects, in vernacular languages.

Some witnesses before the Indian Reforms Enquiry Committee have opined that the Army should be Indianised within 20 years. According to the present method of sending a few candidates to Sandhurst, the process of Indianization may take 2,000 years!

Indianization of the Army means military training of 5,000 Officers for the Regular Indian Army, and 10,000 Officers for the I. T. F., and many more thousands of Non-Com.'s.

The meaning and implication of the term Indianisation is hardly realised by either the Indian Government, or its Military Advisers, or the Indian public. Take for instance, the question of the number of British Commissioned Officers, required for the Indian Regular Army. They number about 5,000. If to this number, we add the possible future requirements of a proposed I. T. F. Force of 300,000, 10,000 more Officers would be required, making a grand total of 15,000 Officers, for complete Indianisation of both the Regular and Territorial Indian Armies. Hence, the scheme of sending a few boys to Sandhurst annually is a farce, and highly objectionable at that, as it leads to de-Indianisation or Anglicization of the boys, and is an entirely inadequate, unsatisfactory and expensive and futile method. To train 15,000 Indian Officers, Military Schools and Colleges affiliated, if possible, to the Local Universities, should be established in different Provinces of India. It would help in allaying unemployment among educated Indians, and is the only practicable method of training thousands of Officers, on a large scale, for both the Regular, and future Territorial Armies of India.

Establishment of Officers' Training Corps in India, based on the British model.

(A) Junior Division of the I. O. T. C., for secondary schools.

In England, the O. T. C. is divided into two Divisions, the Junior and the Senior.

Units of the Junior Divisions of the O. T. C. exist at all public schools. Joining is quite voluntary and Masters of the schools act as officers in the Corps. Instruction is given in such subjects as drill, musketry, field training and elementary tactics.

Cadets are eligible to take the War Office examination for certificate "A," and it is from those who have so qualified, that N. C. O.'s are chosen.

A cadet who has obtained certificate "A," receives additional marks, if he enters for the competitive examination for Woolwich or Sandhurst, and those who enter civil life, are eligible for direct appointment to Commissions in the Territorial Army or its Reserve.

We believe that an O. T. C. for India should be organised in two divisions, the Junior and the Senior, on the model of the British O. T. C., with suitable modifications, so that there can always be a reservoir of supply for the thousands of N. C. O.'s and Officers, required for the Indian Regular and Territorial Armies.

We have already suggested that authorities of Schools and Colleges should be encouraged to form Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs, and that there should be no compulsion in this matter of choice. As there are no so-called Public Schools in India we would suggest that students of secondary schools which have organized their own Cadet Corps, should be given the same opportunity as Public School boys in England, of competing for examination for certificate "A," to be organized by the Provincial Military Boards suggested before, on the model of the War Office Examination, but modified to suit Indian conditions.

(B) Senior Division of the I. O. T. C. for Colleges, in place of the present U. T. C., proposed.

In England, the Senior Division of the O. T. C. exists at the different Universities and contingents are organised not only into infantry, (as is the case with Junior Division,) but also into Field Ambulances, Field Artillery and sections of the Signal Service. Senior cadets are eligible to take the War Office examination "B," provided they are already in possession of "A," and have at least twelve months' service in the Senior Division. Those who pass receive an ante-date, if they are subsequently appointed to a Commission in the Territorial Force, and receive extra marks, at the examination for entrance to the R. A. M. C. and A. A. V. C. An extra grant is made to contingents, for each cadet in possession of certificate "B". Cadets of the Senior Division receive a free issue of uniform.

We would suggest that (B) Senior Division of the O. T. C. be organized on the British model, and the present University Territorial Corps be renamed the "I. O. T. C., Senior Division."

Present System of Education converts A1, fit into C3 and D4 hopelessly unfit human wrecks. Hence establish school and college medical inspection and physical and Military Training in Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs.

We have shown before that the present system of Education in India renders the children and youth physically defective and so militarily inefficient, as a matter of fact, it converts A1 or physically and mentally fit children attending Schools, into C3 candidates for the Matriculation Examination, who later deteriorate, and become D4 or hopeless physical wrecks, the under-graduates of the University, many of whom die prematurely between ages 21—30.

It is evidently absurd, to expect that such physically unfit under-graduates and graduates of the University can ever make physically fit Officers and N. C. O.'s for the Indian Army, and the present organization of the U. T. C. is really based on such absurdity. It is really strange that both the Military Authorities and some Indian Leaders, who swallow such absurdities of the Military Experts, have failed to realise the essential unsoundness of their position in organizing the U. T. C.

If we must have really efficient Officers, we must begin their physical development and culture at the age of 10 or 12. The history of all Military nations of the past and in the present tells the same tale.

"If you want good Soldiers and Officers, catch them young." That is the only sound principle of Military Efficiency, recognized throughout the ages. The Goorkha, the Afghan, the Sikh, the Pathan and the Rajput, all follow the same sensible principle.

War Office Scheme for reserving 10 per cent. of Commissions in the Regular Army for Territorial Officers. To popularize the I. T. F., introduce a similar scheme in the Indian Army.

We take this opportunity of drawing the attention of the I. T. F. Reform Committee to the report of the Haldane Committee appointed by the British

Parliament. The Haldane Committee has suggested that 10 per cent. of vacancies in the Regular Army be reserved for competition between the candidates from the Territorial Army, and lays down certain conditions.

We believe that it is a good model to be copied for popularizing the I. T. F. in India, as also for promoting camaraderie between the Regular and Territorial Officers.

Report of the Haldane Committee—New War Office Regulations for Commissions for Territorial Officers and University candidates.

Copies of the regulations under which both University candidates and Officers in the Territorial Army can obtain Commissions in the Regular Army as the outcome of the report of the Haldane Committee, have now been issued by the War Office.

Qualifications of Territorial Officers for 10 per cent. Regular Commissions.

Ten per cent. of the vacancies in the Cavalry, Infantry, Tank Corps, and Army Service Corps, are in future to be offered annually for competition between candidates from the Territorial Army who are between the ages of twenty-one and twenty-five, and unmarried. The qualifications are (1) two years' service and two annual trainings; (2) attendance at the compulsory course prescribed for Territorial Officers during their first three years of service; (3) attachment (for a month?) to the regular unit in which commission is wanted and a certificate from the C. O.; (4) subsequent attachment to a regular unit, so that with (2) and (3) a period of six weeks may be made up; (5) the possession of certificate "A." O. T. C. So far so good. Now comes the rub. The candidate has to obtain 50 per cent. in the aggregate, 40 per cent. in the total marks given in a competitive examination of the subjects for the final term examination of Sandhurst Cadets, without the benefit of the eighteen months' instructions given at that establishment. This examination covers the usual military subjects (tactics, artillery, field, engineering, hygiene, map reading and field sketching organisation and military training and military law), besides history, English, and geography. There is a medical examination for successful candidates, with the right to appeal under certain conditions, and the standard is "good mental and bodily health, and freedom from any physical defect likely to interfere with the efficient performance of military duty."

The Expenses of Sandhurst or University Avoided.

One or two observations at once suggest themselves. There is no antedating, as shown below, for University candidates, and the difficulty in mastering the Sandhurst subjects without any instruction is serious. On the other hand, the expenses of Sandhurst or University are avoided, and the door through the Territorial Army is opened up to a later age, for those who may have made up their minds too late to go up for Sandhurst, or have failed in the entrance examination.

Inducement given to the Universities.

The inducement given to Universities to establish—at their own expense—courses of military study is that their candidates will be senior in the Army to others of the same grade. This applies at present to Oxford, Cambridge, London, Edinburgh, and Manchester in Britain; to McGill, Montreal; and Sydney. Other recognised Universities are St. Andrews, Glasgow, Aberdeen, Durham, Wales, Birmingham, Liverpool, Leads, Belfast, Bristol, and Dublin (Trinity College). The lack of recognised Universities in the Dominions (other than Dublin) is conspicuous.

Qualifications for a University candidate for Regular Commissions.

The general qualifications for a University candidate are: Age 21-24 years, unmarried, approved by the Army Council, and "of good conduct and character". The academic qualifications are three years' residence and certain special qualifications for specialist services, first or second class honours (grade 1), or third.

class honours or equivalent, according to the University (grade II), or a pass degree (grade III). The military qualifications are: certificate "B," membership of the O. T. C., and six weeks' attachment to a regular unit, with satisfactory certificate therefrom. As far as can be made out, the absence of certificate "B" entails the loss of three months' seniority, and not being a member of the O.T.C., the loss of an additional three months.

The grades are important. Men of grade I get an ante-date to the 20th birthday, grade II to 20½ years of age, and grade III to the 21st birthday, so University candidates will score heavily over Territorials, and the age advantage of Sandhurst over University will be wiped out. A nomination board (containing a representative of the General Staff) at each University will put the nominees from that University in order of merit. The recognised Universities will be put on a roster, moving up the roster every six months, those with courses of military study being in a separate list, group I at the top. Names will be taken successively in order of merit from each University list in succession in group I, and nominations from Universities without military instruction will then be considered. The conspicuous point about all this is that there is no open competition between candidates. Their prospects are left largely in the hands of the University authorities.

Three open doors to the Army. The Army no longer a preserve for the aristocrat, but now open to the democrat.

The whole scheme of entrance to the Army now stands thus: A candidate can get in (1) through Woolwich or Sandhurst. If he fails, he can get into any branch of the service, (2) through a University up to the age of twenty-four, with an ante-date giving him same seniority as if he had passed. Or he can get into the Cavalry, Infantry, Tanks, or R. A. S. C., up to the age of twenty-five, (3) through the Territorial Army without ante-date. The doors into the Army have now, in all conscience, been opened widely enough. Let us hope that there will soon be a queue waiting to enter.

IV.—Improvement of the Force Generally, having regard to the Role for which it has been Constituted.

Three main principles of efficiency of a Second Line Army. (A) An efficient Second Line Army should be adequate in numbers, to support and supplement the Regular Army. Hence an I. T. F. of 300,000, and an I. T. F. Reserve of 150,000, should be enrolled every four years. The Regular Army of 138,000 has a small actual Reserve of 8,900! and an actual Second Line of 8,500 I. T. F. only!

The terms of the Resolution, according to which the Committee on Territorial Reorganization has been appointed, are "To investigate and report on what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force, so as to constitute it an efficient Second Line of Reserve to the Regular Army, and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular Military Forces in India, including the Indian Auxiliary Force; and also on the numbers which might be enlisted in the Territorial Force". It will thus be seen that the Resolution is comprehensive and so requires equally comprehensive consideration. To begin with, certain principles may be laid down to guide us as to what should constitute an efficient Second Line of Reserve to the Regular Army. These principles may be laid down as follows. An efficient Second Line should be:

(*a*) adequate in numbers, to support and supplement the Regular Army;

(*b*) organized and trained on a Divisional basis, and provided with a complete Divisional Staff, like the Regular Army;

(c) provided with equipment and armament, identical with that of the Regular Army.

(A) In the discussion on the Resolution, H. E. the Commander-in-Chief stated that the limit which had been imposed by the Secretary of State was 20,000 men, i.e., roughly one Division.

Remembering the first principle stated above, that an efficient Second Line should be adequate in numbers, we might state that the above limit imposed on the I. T. F. contradicts the very first principle of numerical efficiency, because nowhere in any army of the world is such a liliputian Second Line of 20,000 I. T. F. men on paper, and only 8,500 actually enrolled, considered efficient in numbers, to reinforce the First Line of 138,000 Regulars! Hence, if it is proposed to make the I. T. F. an efficient Second Line, the limit of 20,000 should be abolished, as leading to absolute inefficiency, and such a limit was not accepted by the Indian Legislative Assembly as will be seen from the terminal part of the Resolution quoted above. So the question arises, what is the minimum limit of numbers to be fixed to constitute the I. T. F. an efficient Second Line? For a reply, we ought to turn to the military experience of European nations, and particularly of England, as the organization of the Indian Army is based on the British model. Below is appended a Table showing at a glance, the comparative composition of the Military Forces of England and of India, and the proposed changes in the latter. An explanation of the Table follows.

The proportion of British to Indian is 1 : 2½ in the Regular Army; and of British or Anglo-Indian in the I. A. F. to Indian in the I. T. F. is 8 : 1.

This proportion is fixed arbitrarily, and is liable to alteration, according to circumstances. In the Table the numbers are for 1923-24, *i.e.*, during the year when severe economics had to be practised, whilst the normal pre-war standard of England is given in brackets, as in 1914.

It will thus be noticed that the normal numerical standard laid down in England for the Territorial Second Line Army is nearly double that of the Regular First Line Army. Compared to which, the actual strength of the I. T. F. in India, is only 8,500 relative to the Regular Indian Army of 138,000; *i.e.*, the strength of the Second Line is only one-sixteenth of the First! On the face of it, it is absurd to expect the I. T. F. to act as an efficient Second Line. Hence, it is suggested that, as shown in the Table, the Second Line should be, at least, 300,000 strong, with a Territorial Reserve of 150,000, if it is to act as an efficient reserve to the First Line. This increase in strength of the I. T. F. would automatically lead to the reduction of the strength of the Regular Army, *viz.*, by 38,000 Indian Ranks, and 26,000 British Ranks, as explained in detail later. Thus allowing of a saving in military expenditure, and relieving the burden on the country, to the extent of 9 crores of rupees, *e.g.*, 6½ crores for the 26,000 British Ranks, and about 2½ crores for the 38,000 Indian Ranks, according to the figures given in the Inchcape Committee's Report. In the same Report, §5, we are informed that "the authorised strength of the Regular Reserve is 34,000 Infantry, but actual strength is only 8,900, owing to considerable difficulty having been experienced in obtaining the required numbers".

"We have suggested to the Commander-in-Chief that an increase in the Reserve Pay would probably attract more men, and that, in addition, consideration should be given to the inclusion of a term of service with the reserve in every man's attestation on enrolment. This proposal has been considered by the military authorities, and it is suggested that *the terms of enlistment* should be altered to include five years' service with the colours, and ten years with the reserve if required; the pay of reservists to be increased to Rs. 7 per mensem for the first five years in the reserve, and Rs. 4 for the last five years, the total colour *plus* reserve service of 15 years, to count for pension at Rs. 3 per month."

We believe that the above recommendation of the Inchcape Committee is one more proof of the failure of the military authorities and of the Committee to realise the fact, that no self-respecting adult sepoy could be expected in these days of high prices, to be satisfied with a miserable pittance of Rs. 7—4—3, per mensem, as suggested by the Committee.

As we have already shown before, the British private is paid, as a reservist, 12 annas per day, and no one has made such an absurd suggestion, as the Inchcape Committee that the more experienced a reservist grows with age and experience, he should be paid less! In the end, the Government will have to pay a decent pay to the Reservists, *viz.*, same as the British Private, if it wants a large number of sepoys, to continue as Reservists in the Army; otherwise they

are bound to secure more profitable occupations, and will have nothing to do with the Army. Surely, the military authorities need a good legislative shake, to provide an adequate Regular Reserve.

TABLE OF COMPARATIVE STRENGTH OF THE ARMY

in England, 1923-24. (and in 1914. In Brackets.)	Nos.	*in India, 1923-24.*	Nos.	PROPOSED STRENGTH OF THE ARMY *in India in 1928.*	Nos.
First Line.		*First Line.*		*First Line.*	
I Regular Army	160,300	I (*a*) Indian Ranks.	138,219	I (*a*) Indian ranks	100,000
(Do. in 1914,	171,536)	(*b*) British ranks.	66,106	(*b*) British ranks.	40,000
II Army Reserve	84,000	II Indian Reserve—Actual	8,900	II Indian Reserve	100,000
(Do. in 1914,	145,347)	Authorised	30,000	Indian Reserve Officers	3,500
III Militia (Special Reserve).		III	?	III	?
(In 1914,	63,933)				
IV Supplementary Reserve.	23,000	IV	?	IV	?
(or War-emergency Reserve).					
Second Line.		*Second Line.*		*Second Line.*	
V Territorial Army	142,593	V Territorial Army—Actual	8,500	V Territorial Army	300,000
(Do. In 1914,	315,000)	Authorised	20,000	Territorial Army Officers	10,000
VI Territorial Reserve	?	VI Territorial Reserve	?	VI Territorial Reserve	150,000
Territorial Reserve Officers	4,000			Territorial Reserve Officers	5,000
VII O. T. C.	35,055	VII U. T. C.	1,500	VII O. T. C.	40,000
(Do. In 1914,	25,208)				
Third Line.		*Third Line.*		*Third Line.*	
VIII Home-Defence National Volunteers, etc.	?	VIII Auxiliary Force—Actual	60,000	VIII Auxiliary Force	75,000
(In 1914,	200,000)	(For Europeans & Anglo Indians).		(For all British Subjects.)	
		Authorised	36,804	Officers	2,500
Fourth Line.		*Fourth Line.*		*Fourth Line.*	
IX Cadet Corps, Rifle Clubs, etc., etc..	90,000, or more.	IX (For Europeans and Anglo-Indians)	?	IX Secondary Schools, Colleges, and minor communities, to be empowered to raise Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs.	
X *Fifth Line.*		X *Fifth Line.*		X *Fifth Line.*	
Whole manhood of the Nation, if a Conscription Act be passed, *e.g.*, during the last Great War, 5,000,000 forced conscripts of England served.		During the War 1914-18, India contributed a total of 1,457,000 men (free volunteers) of whom 943,000 served overseas. Casualties amounted to 106,594.		Every 10 years will see an addition of 200,000 Regulars + 200,000 Reserves; and 750,000 Territorials + 375,000 Reserves; and 187,500 Auxiliaries, *i.e.*, a total of men trained to arms,	1,712,500

Organization of the Armed Forces of England (and Continental Nations) in Five Lines, one behind the other in support, as shown in the above Tables.

It we look at the military organizations of different European countries, we generally find four classes of national military forces; at the back of which is the whole manhood of the nation, which may be called the Fifth Line.

(1) The First Line consists of the Standing or Regular Army of youths, absolutely fit for Active Service as in English, and Continental Armies, complete with its Reserves, who supply drafts, to replace losses, through resignation, sickness or casualties of War, as in England. In Continental Armies, the Reserve Troops consist of those who have completed their training in the Active Army, and are organized into Divisions, corresponding to those of the Active Army in the same districts, as those to which the Active Divisions belong, *e.g.*, in France.

(2) The Second Line Troops are generally composed of those who have already served in the First Line, and its Reserve for a certain number of years, as in Continental Armies, or of those who join the Territorial Force from the beginning, as in England. It constitutes the Territorial Force. It has also its own Territorial Reserve. Its functions are to replace the First Line at Home, and if necessary to volunteer for Service at the Front, and support or supplement the First Line; to repel local raids; and undertake Garrison and Guard Duties.

(3) The Third Line Troops consist of elderly men, who have been through the First Two Lines, and they constitute the Home-Defence Army. Their duties are mainly Garrison and Coast-Guard duties, and of helping the civil power, in times of emergency, if called upon to do so.

(4) The Fourth Line consists of Cadet Corps, Rifle Clubs, and other semi-official organizations, which constantly give preparatory or advanced musketry training and drill to all conditions of men, who desire to have it, and who may or may not belong to or join any of the Three Lines mentioned above.

(5) The Fifth Line consists of the whole manhood of the nation, if a Conscription Act be passed, as in the last War, during a national emergency.

Armed strength of potential enemies: I. Afghanistan—450,000 men. II. North-West Frontier—200,000 tribesmen. III. Russia—unknown millions. IV. Tibet. V. China—unknown millions. Aerial and Maritime strength of these and other potential enemies—not known. Whilst, VI. Potentialities of Lewisite gas, 'Death Ray' etc., are incalculable.

It may be questioned, on what basis the proposed strength of the Army in 1928 is constructed? In reply, we may state that India should always have at its disposal at least a million trained men, willing and ready to take up arms against aggression from the abovementioned restless neighbours on our Frontiers, or any other potential enemy.

If a small and poor State like Afghanistan can maintain 450,000 men and the pauper tribesmen of the North-West Frontier can maintain 200,000 men and be a standing menace to India, surely a rich and powerful Empire like India can maintain at least a million of her sons, trained to arms, and ready to counteract the menace whenever it happens to actualise. 'To preserve peace, be prepared for war,' is a well known military slogan of centuries, and if India under Swaraj be prepared beforehand for any emergency, our enemies will have no temptation to jump into a hopeless war! Further, the potentialities of Lewisite gas,—the *touch* of 2 or 3 drops of which kills instantaneously,—dropped from aeroplanes, and of 'Death Rays' and other electrical discoveries are incalculable. Hence, modern armies must be organized in millions, and not hundreds of thousands, as in the past, to replace the huge wastage of modern wars.

The Defence of India. Inadequate First Line of Regulars and Reserve and inefficient Second Line of Territorials. Government of India states "H. M.'s Government will help India in an emergency, if it is humanly possible to do so," but does not state what India should do to help herself, for self-defence, under such a possible emergency.

Looking at the problem of the defence of India, as a whole, we can find no basis for optimism in the present organization of the Indian Army. We have a small Regular Indian Army of 140,000 with its paper Reserve of 30,000, but an actual reserve of 8,900 only. There is a badly-organised and equipped, experimental Territorial Force of 8,500 to serve as a Second Line to the Regular Army! It is impossible for the I. T. F., owing to the smallness of its numbers, and its deficient organization and training to serve as an efficient Second Line Army, as at present constituted. Practically the defence of India by Indians is thus limited to 180,000 men, on paper,—a number entirely inadequate for the defence of a huge continent, seeing that in a modern war, millions are engaged on either side. Hence the first question is, whether India is really prepared for a Great War on an adequate scale, without the help of British Troops, who may be called away, and engaged elsewhere, during a grave national emergency. We believe the attention of the Committee on Reorganisation should be drawn to the fact of public warnings given both by the British Government of India, and the Chief of the General Staff in India, that in a future war, Britain may not be able to come to our help; and so India must be prepared to stand on her own feet. For instance, the Government of India state in the "Army in India and its Evolution" that "If India is exposed to attack, which her own resources cannot effectively repel, His Majesty's Government, *if it is humanly possible to do so*, will come to her assistance with the armed forces of the United Kingdom". The Government of India has failed in its duty by not suggesting to India, the necessary measures to be taken for meeting such a possible contingency.

Chief of the General Staff in India supports the statement that "In the future, in such wars as that of 1914-18, the absolute continuity of British protection can never be guaranteed. There then lies India's ultimate goal, to defend herself against all comers, by herself, possibly without British aid. She is not fitted for self-defence, she is not within three generations (i.e., *90 years*) *of it.*"

In the "Defence of India", dedicated to the Chief of the General Staff in India, and presumably written under his inspiration, we are given another warning that, "Should the task of her defence become too great, India will receive help from Imperial resources, but only as soon and for as long as they can be spared from other theatres. Should she ever perform her own task less than adequately, or even go so far as to abjure it, although that be a most unlikely contingency, she can count on none but herself to make good the deficiency". By which time, she may be crushed under the heels of a well-prepared and successful enemy!

The question naturally arises, whether the Government of India is prepared in these times of peace, with all adequate measures for removing the expected deficiency, being the responsible head of India? We receive a reply, further on, in the same book. "Self-defence is a first principle of national existence; in India without it, there can be neither consolidation, nor development within her frontiers, a cogent consideration at a time, when she is even now entering upon a new era of political and constitutional life, in the path towards Dominion Home Rule.

India's ultimate task may thus be a great one. In the future, in such wars as that of 1914-18, *the absolute continuity of British protection can never be guaranteed.* In that war Britain's naval supremacy was such as to render India immune from any invasion by sea, and the great issues both by sea and land were fought out many thousands of miles away.

May be, Britain will have to contend with Powers possessing navies far superior to those of the late Central Powers, may be British command of the sea will be temporarily insufficient to protect Indian waters. may be wars will be fought out *with weapons as yet undiscovered*, which greatly depreciate the value of sea command. There, then, lies *her ultimate goal*, to defend herself against all comers by herself, possibly for a long time without British aid, other than the small British garrison she now possesses. How far she now is from being fitted for that is not even a matter for conjecture, *she is not within three generations*

(*i.e.*, ninety years) *if it.* And until her own intelligentsia have studied well both the present and the ultimate problems which confront her, and her peoples have received some solid grounding in the wider aspects of those problems, so as to afford a measure of intelligent and sympathetic support to their representatives in authority, she can progress but little indeed on the road of preparation for her eventual duty ".

Thus, we are told that India is not within three generations of preparedness for self-defence, *i.e.*, India will require at least 90 years to be able to defend herself!

That is poor consolation for the patriots of India! It clearly means that in any great war of the future, in which Britain is engaged and unable to send reinforcements to India, our country will be at the mercy of any powerful invader. The mere fact of Indianising a few units of the Indian Army in 25 years is not likely to add to the fighting strength of India! Hence it is perfectly clear that if the Committee on Reorganization of the I. T. F. takes into consideration the problem of *Defence of India* as a whole, and the reorganization of the I. T. F. as *only a part* of the problem, then alone will it be in a position to gauge the adequacy of the numbers of I. T. F. required, to serve as an efficient Second Line to the Regular Army.

During the last war India supplied a million and quarter Volunteers, who helped to save the British Empire and the degenerate Western Civilization. Can we believe that, in times of peace, India cannot raise an I. T. F. of even 20,000? Must India take 50 years to be prepared for self-defence, without relying on British help in the future?

However high be the Military Authority, that makes such a statement, we are bound to challenge it on the grounds of commonsense and military experience of other countries. But, in the first place, we must deplore the mentality of the Military Authorities in India, who seem to imagine that educated Indians are so blissfully ignorant of military history, science and art, that they would be prepared to swallow such unpardonable bunkum coming from them. For we shall prove the absurdity of such statements from the mouth of their own mouth-piece, Mr " Arthur Vincent ", the author of " The Defence of India ". For instance, Mr. Arthur Vincent says that:

" What India did in the war is a matter of splendid history. None will forget the men of the Indian Contingent in France who brought *irreplaceable aid to our inadequate forces in 1914*, and who helped to stem the German rush by dying in hundreds where they stood. In Africa it was the Army of India, which bore more than half the brunt of our conflict with the flower of Germany's colonial troops; in Mesopotamia, in Egypt, Palestine and the Dardanelles it played its part; in fact India accomplished perhaps more than any other Dominion. *Each one of the million and a quarter men* she sent to the war would have been hard indeed to replace from elsewhere; and we may well ask ourselves what would have happened had there been no India, or had she been forced, *as she might be next time, to devote the efforts of every man and gun of her army to the close defence of her own soil.* In her material resources and products too, India was of solid value to us throughout the years of the war: next time, with her further development, she must be of far greater value still. By reason then of her loyal sons first of all, and of the less glorious but very important material aid she can offer, India is to-day a vital member of the Empire; and her defence against external aggression is a matter which touches closely each member of that Empire at Home and abroad."

Thus we have *self-contradictory statements* by the same author, in the same book. One can no doubt admire the audacity of a man, who dares to state that India saved the British Empire and the degenerate Western civilization during the critical years 1914-18, but that the same India is incapable of defending herself in the future! Who can believe such inconsistent nonsense? Further Mr. " Arthur Vincent " says that " Each one of a million and a quarter men the sent to the war were hard indeed to replace from elsewhere ", *i.e.* India could raise a million and a quarter men during the four years of a fierce war, but she cannot raise the same number of men for her self-defence, during the next ninety (!) years of profound peace? It is a ridiculous statement and unworthy of any man calling himself a military expert, and proves, if any proof were needed, the necessity of a change in mentality of our military experts.

Another absurd statement, which Mr. Vincent seems to have recognized, is the correction he has made, in the second impression of his book published in 1923, wherein he has substituted " many years " for " three generations ". In the end, Mr. Vincent himself states that for Indian self-defence, " Two chief needs there are for its solution, time and endeavour. Endeavour need not be questioned, it is there now, it will increase largely as the years go on, with every aid that Government can give. Time must tell however, and if *in fifty years*, the time has come, when India no longer needs men from Europe to lead her in the field, and to administer her army in times of peace, she will have progressed well indeed in the path of self-development ". Here we find that Mr. Vincent has come down from ninety years to fifty years. We expect that in a future edition, he will probably go on reducing the probationary period by half or more, for rendering India self-dependent for self-defence!

Can India be prepared for self-defence in 10 years, and dispense with British reinforcements? A reduction of 26 British and 38 Indian Regular Battalions, and an increase of 100 Battalions of the Indian Regulars and 100 of the Reserve, every five years, and of 300 I. T. F. Battalions; and 150 of the I. T. F. Reserve, every four years, will render India self-supporting and prepared for any emergency.

Mr. Arthur Vincent gives India 50 years for Indianization of the army of self-defence, but we believe, at the outset 10 years ought to suffice, if the Government of India be in earnest. For instance, 26 British Regular Battalions, which are at present a luxury in India, can be reduced at the rate of 2 Battalions per annum for the first four years, and 3 per annum for the next six years, and Indian Regular Battalions at the rate of 4 per annum, for the next 10 years. If the reorganized I. T. F. be recruited at the rate of 75,000 a year for a term of four years, the country will always have at its disposal 300,000 men of the I. T. F., during the first four years, if the limit of the I. T. F. be fixed temporarily at 300,000. So that within the next 10 years, 750,000 men of the I. T. F. will have received sufficient training, to replace during a war, 26,000 British and 38,000 Indian Ranks, reduced as above and also the whole Regular Army itself. So far as cost is concerned, a Territorial Battalion costs only about one-eighth of a Regular Battalion according to the British Military Budget. Hence, for the total cost of the reduced 26 British Battalions, which cost as much as 104 Indian Battalions, *plus* 38 Indian Battalions, equivalent to a total of 142 Battalions of the Line, India can have, for the same price, 8 times as many, *i.e.*, 1,136 Battalions of the Second Line. But in practice, 300 Battalions of the I. T. F., may be taken as sufficient; and an I. T. F. Reserve of 150,000 should be maintained.

The reserve of the Regular Indian Army would be automatically raised from the present authorized strength of 30,000 to the proposed strength of 100,000, because *the new terms of Service* for the Indian Regular Army are 5 years with the Colours and 10 years with the Reserve, thus doubling the strength of the Regular Army Reserve, every 5 years. Hence, with a much enlarged army of defence, India will be able to make a substantial saving on the Military Budget. Simultaneously with the saving on the Military Budget the process of Indianization of the whole Army will be accelerated, and Mr. Arthur Vincent's 50 years will be reduced to 10. If India is to be granted Dominion Status, she is bound to claim Dominion Rights over the Military Administration, just as over the Civil, as in every constitution, the Military Power is subordinate to the Civil.

So far as recruiting for the I. T. F. is concerned, if the suggestions as to pay, etc., for popularizing the I. T. F. made before by us be adopted, there ought to be no difficulty in finding 75,000 recruits a year, *i.e.*, 300,000 every four years, *plus* half the number, *i.e.*, 150,000 in the I. T. F. Reserve, seeing that India contributed 1,457,000 men during four years of the last war.

Further, if the suggestions previously made for organizing an Indian O. T. C. be adopted, there will always be 40,000 Indian members of the Indian O. T. C., trained to act as Officers of the enlarged Indian Army,—Regular and Territorial—during any emergency, when more volunteers will join up, if the conditions of service be made sufficiently attractive for them, as during the last war.

In 1907 Mr. Haldane, the War Minister of England, undertook the organization of the Regular Army, and the Volunteers as the Territorial Force of England; and by 1912, *i.e.*, in 5 years, when he resigned, the Army of the

British Empire was so thoroughly reorganized and prepared for war, that the British Expeditionary Force was in France in scheduled time in the war of 1914, and the Territorial Force equally well stood the test of war. England was lucky in having a Haldane, and not an Arthur Vincent who would have taken 50 years to perform the same miracle. Will India ever have such luck?

(B) *I. T. F., to be efficient, should be organized and trained on a Divisional basis, and be provided with a complete Divisional Staff, like the Regular Army. All Arms of the Service should be open to members of the I. T. F. and I. A. F.*

And all essential Ancillary Services should be completely organised for the I. T. F., on the scale of the Regular Army.

As we have seen before, the actual strength of the I. T. F. is about 8,500, scattered in different provinces. Hence it is positively impossible for it to be organized, and trained on a Divisional basis or to be provided with a complete Divisional Staff like the Regular Army. On the other hand, if as proposed, a minimum limit of 300,000 be fixed for the I. T. F., it can and ought to be organized, and trained on a Divisional basis, and be provided with a complete Divisional Staff like the Regular Army, based on the British model. Realizing that the system of Divisional Training in peace must be readily adaptable to war conditions, so as to permit of transition from peace to war with the least possible dislocation, the training of the I. T. F. should be so organized. To this end, periodical training and manœuvres with the Regular Army, and exchange of Regular and Territorial Officers and N. C. O.'s should be arranged. India is a vast and ideal training camp, equally well-suited for thousands or hundreds of thousands of men, for civilised warfare on plains and mountains, or for savage guerilla warfare anywhere.

All Arms of the Service, including the Air Force, should be open to members of the I. T. F., and all technical personnel should be organized on the same scale for the I. T. F., as for the Regular Army. An Army, in these days, consists not only of the Infantry, the Cavalry, the Artillery and the Air Force, but a host of Ancillary Services, such as the Medical, Ambulance, Engineering, Mechanical, Supply and Transport, Ordnance, Post, Telegraphs, Wireless, etc.; but so far nothing has been done to supply the I. T. F. with such essential Ancillary Services, in the absence of which it would be hopeless to expect the I. T. F. to serve as an efficient Second Line.

(C) *I. T. F., to be efficient, should be provided with equipment and armament, identical with that of the Regular Army, to act as an efficient Second Line. Men without munitions, or munitions without men are equally useless. Indianization of the Military Services should be accompanied by Indianization of the Military Industries, and thus provide employment for a million and a half of Indians.*

If the I. T. F. is to serve as an efficient Second Line, it necessarily follows that it should be provided with equipment and armament, identical with that of the Regular Army. Men without munitions and munitions without men are equally useless, either in peace or in war. Further, second-class rifles and guns are no good in any modern war. Hence it would not do to pass on the second-hand armament of the British Troops or of the Regular Army to the I. T. F. Nor would it do for a large army in India to rely for its supply on armament factories in England—thousands of miles away from India. During the last war factories for manufacturing munitions of peace in England had to be converted into factories for munitions of war. Hence, we believe that the terms of the Resolution, appointing the Territorial Reorganization Committee should have included a report upon the adequacy of the munition factories in India, for supplying sufficient munitions for an army of at least a million engaged in a great war, and somehow cut off from all supplies from England. Mr. Arthur Vincent seems to have forgotten this most important point in his book on the "Defence of India". He has been good enough to warn us that India will have to depend on herself, for supplying the men, *i.e.*, cannon-fodder; but he says nothing about the cannon or munitions! You can train a soldier in three months, but you cannot build a factory in as many years, realizing the industrial helplessness of India, and its absolute dependence on European countries, for the supply even of such every day articles as nails and needles. The question arises, what is the actual provision of munition factories in India? "The Army in India and its Evolution" states that "since 1911, there have been 7 main arsenals and 7 main factories, together with 4 or 5 small depôts." Will Mr. Arthur Vincent

or any other military expert explain, how India will be able to supply an army of a million in the field with sufficient munitions for 2 or 3 years? Hence, we would suggest to the Territorial Reorganization Committee, that it should consider this question of the munitions for the I. T. F. in addition to the men for the I. T. F., as there can be no efficiency of any army, without a sufficient and assured supply of modern equipment and armament.

It is well-known that, much of the industrial prosperity of England is due to the presence of a large number of armament firms, which supply the Army, the Navy, etc., and other Ancillary Services with munitions of war. Hundreds of thousands of English men and women are employed in such works. So, the I. T. F. Committee can help in providing employment for hundreds of thousands of Indian men and women in munition factories; and thus provide for the simultaneous Indianization of Military Services, and Indianization of Military Industries in India. It would thus indirectly, help in the problem of employing the unemployed Indians, in both the army and the army factories to the extent of a million or more, and thus help to reduce the poverty of the masses as well as the middle-classes of Indians. Thus national military efficiency will *pari passu* promote national industrial efficiency.

(D) *To remove all Racial Distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India, omit the words ' not being a European British subject ' in § 5, I. T. F. Act, and omit the word ' European ', wherever it occurs in the I. A. F. Act. Minor Communities have special claims to join the I. A. F. for local or home-defence only.*

Coming now to the question of the Indian Auxiliary Force which is meant to act as Local or Home-defence Force, *i.e.*, as the Third Line of Defence. According to the Resolution of the Indian Legislative Assembly, one of the duties of the Committee on Reorganization, is to " report upon the removal of all Racial Distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India." Hence, the proper method of removing such distinctions in the I. A. F., is to omit the word ' European ' wherever it occurs in the I. A. F. Act, thus enabling any British subject, whether European or Indian, to join the Force. Simultaneously in §5-1 of the I. T. F. Act 1920, the words " not being a European British subject " should be omitted, so that there would be no restriction on a European joining the I. T. F. or an Indian joining the I. A. F. The strength of the I. A. F. should be sanctioned at 75,000. According to the present racial distinctions maintained in the two Acts, no Indian can volunteer purely for Home Defence, whilst no European can volunteer for General Service, unless he joins the Regular Army. The only democratic method of removing racial distinctions is to permit the admission of all British subjects either to the I. T. F. or to the I. A. F., just as it is the practice of all civilized countries. We beg to draw the attention of the Territorial Reorganization Committee to minor communities, like the Parsee, which cannot possibly afford to supply cannon-fodder during a war of any magnitude, by joining the I. T. F., meant to be a Second Line Army. As we know, in a modern war, whole battalions are wiped off the face of the earth, during the volcanic fight of a few hours, and it would be sheer lunacy on the part of a small community to ask the flower of its manhood to serve as cannon-fodder, and thus commit communal suicide. Seeing that other big communities like the Hindu and the Moslem count their sons by millions, it is the duty of such large communities, to be prepared for national self-defence, and sacrifice a part of their manhood for the good of the whole nation.

Such a small community as the Parsee should be satisfied with performing the duty of Home Defence, and of communal self-defence. As it is, the Parsees have raised 2 Battalions of the I. T. F. from among their small numbers whilst the other large communities of the Bombay Presidency have failed to raise even a single Company, except the Marrathas of Poona. We have always fought for the rights of the Parsees, secured to them during the last half century, of joining the Volunteers on exactly the same terms as the Europeans. The justice of our claim has never been denied. We have fought for our rights during the last two years, and we hope that the Committee on Territorial Reorganization will recommend transfer of the two Parsee Battalions of the I. T. F. to the I. A. F., bearing in mind the reasons mentioned above by us. Otherwise, both the Parsee Battalions of the I. T. F. will melt away into nothing. If a Platoon or Company of the Parsees wish to stay on in the I. T. F., that will be their look-out, but so far as the Parsee community as a whole is concerned, it cannot afford to

supply 2 Battalions of cannon-fodder in the I. T. F. The Committee might recommend the formation of *Special Volunteer Corps* for minor communities, for their communal self-defence only, in times of internecine trouble; and also of Cadet Corps and Rifle Clubs, as suggested before. These latter would serve as the *Fourth Line of Defence.*

Formation of Class Companies, or Battalions recommended both the I. T. F. and the I. A. F. for promoting camaraderie, and popularising both the Force.

Though we are dead against racial distinctions in terms of service, so far as Class Companies or Battalions are concerned, such distinctions should be continued just as in the Regular Indian Army, so as to promote camaraderie among the members of every unit, *e.g.*, Maratha, Sikh, Rajput, Punjabi, etc., and Anglo-Indians and Europeans should have their separate units, either Companies or Battalions, both in the I. T. F. and in the I. A. F. But all racial distinctions should be abolished so far as the terms of service, re-pay, etc., in the two forces, are concerned. One special distinction, *i.e.*, of age for the I. T. F. which naturally would require fitter and younger men between 18 and 30, and for the I. A. F. between 18 and 40, should be maintained. Because, as we have suggested, the I. A. F. should be open to all Indian subjects, particularly those belonging to minor communities who may be willing to serve in Home Defence Units, between the ages of 18—40.

Particulars of the reasonable complaints and grievances of the Parsee Pioneer Battalions, I. T. F. Their just and equitable claims for transfer to the I. A. F., and the Government's duty of observing its solemn pledge.

In the memorandum, *re* the Reorganization of the I. T. F., it is stated that, "The Government of India would also be glad to be furnished with particulars of any reasonable complaints and grievances which the local Territorial Force Advisory Committee may desire to bring to notice."

We beg to draw the attention of the Government of India, as also of the Committee on Territorial Re-organization, to the particulars of the reasonable complaints and grievances of the Parsee Pioneer Battalions of Bombay I. T. F., as described fully in two articles under the heading of "A Parsee Military Betrayal," which appeared in the well-known and popular Parsee weekly, "the Kaiser-i-Hind" of Bombay. In dealing with the organization of the I. A. F., we have recommended the transfer of the Parsee Pioneer Battalions from the I. T. F. to the I. A. F., as the only proper, equitable and just solution of the grievances of the said Battalions.

As we have shown in the articles referred to above, the Parsee members of the Battalions were enrolled on the distinct understanding of their admission into the I. A. F., for limited local military service only, on the word of the Officer Commanding the Battalions. Hence the Government is bound to observe the solemn pledge given by its authorized agent, who also acted as the Director, I. A. F. and I. T. Forces, Bombay District, and thus vindicate the eternal principles of justice and equity.

APPENDIX.

Below are reproduced two articles from the "*Kaiser-i-Hind*", the leading representative organ of the Parsi Community, which furnish the particulars, desired by the Government of India, of reasonable complaints and grievances of the (Parsi) 11th and 12th Battalions, 2nd Bombay Pioneers, I. T. F.

A PARSI MILITARY BETRAYAL (I).

Our Fight for British Military Rights.

JUSTIFIED BY THE SIMLA COMMUNIQUE.

WHO IS RIGHT?—THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OR THE SOUTHERN COMMAND?

Important correspondence with Col. Lavie.

Nemesis has at last overtaken the calumniators of truth, with regard to the status, position and responsibilities of the Bombay Parsi Pioneer Battalions (Territorial), and they are now trying to wriggle out of the evil net of their own design, by making scapegoats of those, who in season and out of season have championed the cause of truth, justice and military rights of the Parsi community. This journal has for nearly a decade been advocating the military training of all Parsi youths, both for self-defence and for the defence of the King and country, in times of emergency. If any proof were needed, the columns of this journal for the last ten years bear ample testimony to the fact. During the world-war, it was this journal which led the Parsi community in the path of duty, and succeeded in raising nearly half a battalion of recruits who would have no doubt given a good account of themselves, in any field they might have been called upon to serve.

Next, when the Government of India passed the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Acts, we were the first and foremost to advocate the raising of Parsi Auxiliary Battalions, on the same terms and conditions, as enjoyed by the Parsi Auxiliary Company of the Bombay Battalion. It would thus be seen that we have consistently been the advocates of the military training of the Parsis for the last ten years, and we have also consistently insisted on all the British rights and privileges belonging to the Parsi community for the last fifty years. As is well known, Parsi Volunteers have been attached to British Regiments in Bombay, Poona, Karachi, and other centres, for the last half century.

In 1921, we were the first to advocate the recruiting of Parsi youths for the Auxiliary Battalion, but at the same time we gave a distinct warning to the Parsi community, that if under the misguidance of certain interested parties, Parsi youths were foolish enough to join any Territorial Battalion then proposed to be formed—the Parsis would lose all their British rights and privileges, as they would be subject to the Indian Territorial Forces Act, and not the Indian Auxiliary Forces Act. Repeatedly we warned the Parsi community that the hysterical propaganda carried on by a certain Parsi journal, whose monopoly is that of ignorance, abuse and lack of foresight, would assuredly lead to the inevitable end, *viz.*, the loss of all the British military rights and privileges, and degradation to the level of the Native Indian Army. Not only did that Parsi journal carry on an hysterical propaganda, based on falsehood and misrepresentations and unmerited abuse of this journal, but it reproduced from time to time, according to its own vain-glorious statements, *the authoritative guarantees* given by Lieut.-Col. Lavie, the O. C. of the P. P. Battalion, *that all British rights and privileges were definitely and irrevocably secured for ever for the Parsi community* through the powerful influence of Lieut.-Col. Lavie, in spite of the fact that, the P. P. B. was and is designated a Territorial Battalion. As it was our duty, we pointed out distinctly, that under the Acts passed by the Legislatures, not even the Commander-in-Chief of India was given either the authority or the privilege to grant Auxiliary, *i.e.*, British rights, to Territorial battalions, under any circumstances whatever, the reason for which is perfectly plain,—that every other Territorial Battalion would demand the same. For this statement of the true position of the P. P. B., we were abused and villified, and even threatened with a prosecution by Col. Lavie, as will be evident from the correspondence we publish below, for the information of the Parsi community, whose cause we have always championed and shall always champion without fear or favour, and without being intimidated by any threats from any quarter,

depending for our justification on the righteousness of our cause. Not only have we been showered with abuse, but our writer on military affairs has been maligned by certain malicious parties. He is too good a veteran fighter and a determined servant of the public, to be deterred from his duty by the most damnably scurrilous abuse of his malicious opponents, who, to gain the fleshpots of military favour, have betrayed and are still betraying the military rights and privileges, which the Parsi community has enjoyed for the last fifty years.

We have exposed till now all the falsehoods and frauds of our malicious detractors, and we are determined to follow that policy, *till we succeed in regaining for the community those military rights and privileges*, which have been bartered away by its betrayers, who pose as well-wishers, and act as enemies of the community.

We now reproduce below the correspondence that has passed between the Editor of this journal and Col. Lavie.

7th October 1922.

From

MR. ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN, J.P.,
Editor and Proprietor,
The "Kaiser-i-Hind".

To

LT.-COL. H. E. LAVIE, D.S.O.,
I. G., Auxiliary and Territorial Forces,
Bombay District.

DEAR SIR,

As you are aware my paper has always taken a keen interest in the question of military training of Parsi youths, for years together, and the prominent part it took in recruiting for the 1st and 2nd Parsi P. T. Battalions is too well known to the public to need any further reference. My paper has always been distinguished for its policy of independent criticism of men and measures, without fear or favour, and as such, my office has been inundated with a number of complaints—oral and written—from some of the members of the Battalions, for some time. I have thought fit to hold back these complaints from publication in order to give those concerned sufficient time, and a fair chance of removing all causes of complaint. Also in deference to the wishes of a deputation of certain members of the Advisory Committee and Officers of the Battalion, who specially called upon me, I withheld the publication of all such complaints, until I heard of a bomb having been thrown into the camp, with the result that a general feeling of dissatisfaction has again prevailed amongst them, by the issue of your order, that officers and men of the two battalions are now deprived of their British Commissions and Designations already granted to them, and instead, they are now granted only Native Commissions and Designations.

You have repeatedly stated from the platform, and in your interview with a representative of a Parsi journal, given the public to understand that all ranks of the Parsi Battalion were entitled to the same rights and privileges as the British Auxiliary Battalions. How then could one reconcile the new Order about depriving the Parsi Battalions of British designations and substituting Native ones, with the assurances and promises alleged to have been held out to them by you? I am informed, that bitter discontent now prevails amongst all ranks of the two Battalions, and I am afraid there will be an end to further recruiting for the Battalions, unless some satisfactory course is adopted to redress the grievance.

Another question is "Why have the military authorities adopted the strange method of enrolling Parsis in Territorial Battalions, and promising them auxiliary rights,—and withdrawing same at their pleasure—instead of adopting the more sensible course of enrolling Parsis in Auxiliary Battalions, knowing that an Auxiliary Company of Parsis has been in existence since 1920, and that Parsi Volunteers have been attached to British Regular and Volunteer Battalions for the last 50 years?"

Was the Advisory Committee ever given to understand, that the mere prefix of "Pioneers" added to the designations of Territorial Battalions entitled them to claim the terms of Auxiliary Battalions, and if so under which section of the Indian Territorial Forces Act?

Another question is, "Is it a fact that B. O.'s Commissions have been given to a number of persons, without their being made to pass through the tests, put down in Army Regulations, and if so why, and what were the guiding principles?"

There are many other questions awaiting explanation, but for the present these will suffice.

Finally, I hope that you will be so kind as to expedite a reply to the above, with a view to clear away the misunderstandings from the minds of the members of the Parsi community, for whom you have been evincing such deep and heartfelt interest.

Yours truly,

ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN, J.P.

Editor and Proprietor,
The "Kaiser-i-Hind".

Headquarters, Bombay District.
Bombay, 11th October 1922.

To

MR. ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN, J.P.,
Editor and Proprietor,
The "Kaiser-i-Hind".

DEAR SIR,

Reference your letter dated 7th October 1922.

Please note British rights have been accorded and not withdrawn from the Parsis, also the officers have been given Honorary King's Commissions which gives them the same status as other officers.

The reasons why Parsis cannot be enrolled in Auxiliary Forces is purely political, if the Parsis are enrolled in the Auxiliary Forces,—why not the other communities in India?

With reference to a scurrilous article signed Chestnut, I am forwarding this to the Government of Bombay with the purpose of having action taken, as it is against the interests of the service to have such harmful matter and false reports being published, and also holds the Battalion up to the ridicule of the public of India. The sooner members of the Battalion either leave the battalion or begin to soldier the better.

Yours faithfully,

H. E. LAVIE,
Lt.-Colonel.

Bombay, 11th October 1922.

To

The SECRETARY to the GOVERNMENT of BOMBAY.
Secretariat,
Bombay.

DEAR SIR,

Reference the attached correspondence.

I beg to point out that it is having a very detrimental effect on the members of the 1st and 2nd Parsee Pioneers.

They have been accorded with British rights as follows :—

British Clothing
,, Rations
,, Accommodation including hospital accommodation.

Authority Southern Command letter No. 25548-5-Terr., dated 11th January 1922. The Officers will be given Viceroy's and Honorary King's Commissions. The authority for this has not yet been received but the statement is official, and has been published as such both by the "Pioneer" and the "Times of India."

Can anything be done to put a stop to this and to make an example of 'Chestnut'?

H. E. LAVIE,
Lieut.-Colonel for Major,
General Commanding,
Bombay District

From
MR. ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN, J.P.,

To
LIEUT.-COL. H. E. LAVIE,
Inspector-General,
Auxiliary and Territorial Forces,
Bombay District.

DEAR SIR,

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated the 11th October, in reply to mine of 7th October 1922.

You point out that the "British rights have been accorded and not withdrawn from the Parsis". On reference to the enclosure with your letter, you distinctly define British rights, accorded to Parsis as :—

"British Clothing
,, Rations
,, Accommodation"

and nothing more. I beg to point out that nowhere in my letter have I suggested that these elementary rights have been withdrawn. Further I beg to point out that these rights are not exclusive British rights in any sense of the term. For, as you are aware, the Government of India has adopted the policy of upholding the inalienable rights of every community to its own social usages and customs, with reference to clothing, food and accommodation, etc. As you are aware the style of Parsi clothing, food, etc., approximates to those of Europeans, and not to those of Hindus and Mahomedans, and further, for the last fifty years the Parsis have enrolled as British Volunteers, they have been entitled to those inalienable rights of their community. So this disposes of your contention that these are exclusive British rights. Apart from these inalienable rights of the Parsis, what are the other real rights and privileges, which are the inalienable rights and privileges of all British troops, whether Regular or Auxiliary, accorded to the Parsis? Surely, *the Parsi Battalion being a Territorial Battalion is and will be subject only to the rules and regulations formed under the Indian Territorial Forces Act 1920, and so the only rights the Parsis will have will be under the Act,* which is the contention of our correspondent as well.

I beg to point out emphatically that in my letter of 7th October, I have distinctly stated that "Officers and men of the two Battalions are now deprived of their British Commissions and Designations, already granted to them, and are now granted only Native Commissions and Designations." As a distinguished

Military authority, you can see that what I meant was Substantive Commissions, and not Honorary. If, as your letter seems to assume, there is no distinction between Substantive and Honorary Commissions, why all this bother, and why have officers been deprived of their substantive British Commissions and Designations?

Your assertion is that "the officers have been given Honorary King's Commissions which gives them the same status as other officers". If that is so, why are their substantive Commissions only Native Officers' Commissions, which according to Indian Army Regulations, rank below the British Officers' Commissions? This is exactly the view, put forward by my correspondent.

So far as your opinion is concerned that the article by Chestnut is scurrilous and contains harmful matter and false reports, not all will agree with it. I for one honestly consider it to be a fair comment on a matter of public interest.

In your letter, you assert that "The reasons why Parsis cannot be enrolled in Auxiliary Forces, is purely political". But as I pointed out in my letter, the Auxiliary Company of Parsis already exists since 1920, and if in this case, the higher authorities had been properly informed, they would have certainly conceded the right of Parsis to join Auxiliary Forces on the basis of a long precedent of the last 50 years.

Finally, pray allow me to point out that your letter of 11th October practically ignores some of the questions which are agitating the minds of all ranks of the Parsi Battalions, and which my paper, as the representative organ of the Parsis, and as one keenly interested in the subject of military training for Parsis, for the last many years, consider as a duty to bring to your notice, for proper solution to soothe the ruffled feelings of those concerned. So I hope that you will be good enough to spare time to send categorical replies to the questions in my letter of the 7th October and oblige.

Yours truly,

ERACHSHAW R. HEERJIBEHEDIN.

Headquarters, Bombay District,
Bombay, 18th October 1922.

To

The Editor,
The "Kaiser-i-Hind",
Sassoon Building,
Elphinstone Circle, Fort.

Dear Sir,

Please note that I refuse to argue, write or express any remarks regarding the Parsi Units. Those men who wish to soldier can soldier, who do not can resign.

Everything in my power is being done and as I am doing my best for the Parsis every minute of the day,—I can do no more.

Yours faithfully,

H. E. LAVIE,
Lt.-Colonel,
Commandant, Auxiliary Force, Bombay.

From the above correspondence, the Parsi public will be able to judge for itself, that we have done our best according to our capacity to champion the Parsi cause against its betrayers, and that Col. Lavie has tried to evade giving a single definite reply, for the simple reason, as we suppose, that he was not in a position to do so, in spite of all the promises and guarantees that he had

given in public and in the special interview granted to a contemporary of ours, who has ruined the Parsi cause through his absolute ignorance of all military matters, and whose responsibility was all the greater as he was and is a member of the Advisory Committee of the P. P. B.

We hear that the self-complacence of the Advisory Committee has been utterly upset by the Communiqué issued by the Military Headquarters at Simla, and in which every word of what we had said with regard to the status and responsibilities of the P. P. B. has been justified, and for which we take natural pride in using our foresight and judgment, in place of short sight and hysteria of our maligners.

We are surprised that in a printed manual, called the Standing Orders of the P. P. B., the local military authorities stated distinctly that the military training for the P. P. B. is limited to what is required for aiding the Civil Power in times of emergency, which means in other words that the P. P. B. is meant for the purposes of internal security only, *i.e.*, is on the same basis as the Auxiliary Battalions, as stated by the Commander-in-Chief, during the recent debate in the Legislative Assembly, from which we had given an excerpt the other day. Now the question is :—Who is right? the Commander-in-Chief or the Southern Command, under whose direction the Standing Orders are issued by the local authorities. The C.-in-C. distinctly stated that the Territorial Battalions were the reserve of the Indian Army and meant for service wherever required, even outside the limits of India, and he made no exception whatever of the P. P. B. Therefore, we suggest to the Southern Command and the Publicity Officer of the local Government, to clear this evident contradiction between the highest and the local military authorities.

A PARSI MILITARY BETRAYAL (II).

What is the Sequel?

THE REMEDY—DISBAND THE PIONEERS (TERRITORIAL), AND RE-ENLIST IN THE AUXILIARY FORCE.

The Communal Cry—" Restore our British Rights and Status."

In our issue of 29th July, we dealt with the grave question of the Parsee Military Betrayal. Since then, our attention has been drawn to the Memorandum addressed to the Parsee Battalions by Major J. St. Aubyn King, in which the Major has tried in his own words to remove " some misconceptions which appeared to exist regarding the conditions of service in the 11th and 12th Battalions, 2nd Bombay Pioneers I. T. F." Having carefully considered the explanation given by the Major, we have to draw his attention to the fact that no such misconceptions have been fostered by us in our paper, and that the Memorandum merely repeats what we have already said as to the conditions of service in the P. P. Battalions. We need not repeat all the arguments put forward in our issue of July 29th, but we have to remind the Major once more, that if anybody has any misconceptions of service in the Battalions, it is not we, but the Major himself and the self-appointed self-seeking Advisory Committee, and Colonel Lavie, the late Inspector-General of I. T. F. and A. F. I., and the Southern Command, under whose authority the Standing Orders of the Battalions have been issued. So we shall try to remove these misconceptions, and put our case bluntly and clearly before the Military authorities and the public.

We have been the advocates of military service for more than a decade; we have claimed the right of our community to military training, as the lineal descendants of an ancient martial race of world-renown; and we have preached it as the duty of the Parsi community to be prepared for war, as the only means of preserving peace, and escaping communal annihilation; and finally as the citizens of the greatest Empire of to-day, we consider it a privilege to be prepared for rendering loyal and worthy service to the Government established by law, in times of trouble. Granting all these, let us say emphatically that we are dead against what we call the Parsee Military Betrayal in our issue of 29th July, for the following substantial reasons :—

In the first place, we have protested against the unrepresentative character of the self-seeking Advisory Committee which has brought the hopeful Parsi military movement to such a sad pass, within a year, according to our assured

prognostications. Secondly, we have protested against the *absolutely unreasonable, and, as we shall show, unstatesmanlike policy* of Colonel Lavie. Remembering that Parsis are only a small community with such limited numbers, it should have been obvious to any military man with even the least experience, that to expose the youth of such a small community to the undoubted and the assured risk of annihilation at the hands of the enemy on the field of war—particularly with the modern, scientific, destructive armaments of war,—it was absolutely unjustifiable on the part of Colonel Lavie to suggest that Parsi youths should be enrolled in Pioneer Battalions, and let us repeat expose them to an almost certain risk of annihilation. That the Southern Command should have acquiesced in this obviously ill-advised arrangement took away our breath, and *so we have been protesting, ever since the inception of these Battalions, against such a preparation for communal suicide*, on a scale unknown in the history of any small community like ours. We are not cowards and we are not against all reasonable risks involved in military service. But we know what happened in all previous wars, that the Pioneer Battalions bear the brunt of enemy attack and are practically annihilated. We have at our disposal, the figures of the last war, which are quite well-known to the Indian Military Authorities, so we need not reproduce them here.

Physical Disqualification of Middle-Class Parsis for enrolment in Pioneer Battalions.

Not only was Colonel Lavie not justified by the paucity of our numbers in enrolling our boys in *Pioneer* Battalions, but as a distinguished Military officer of many years' standing, he should have realised that the poor physique of the Parsee youths and the knowledge of their sedentary habits and the deteriorating influence of school and college life on the physique of Indian students—which is known to the Military as well as Civil authorities of Government, could not possibly justify a military authority in recruiting boys of such poor physique, sedentary habits and low stamina for *Pioneer* Battalions, which require the best physique, active habits and magnificent vitality, which are supposed to be the hall-mark of qualifications for Pioneers.

Our third objection to Colonel Lavie's unreasonable arrangement is against the enrolment of youths of an educated community belonging to the middle class as *mere Sepoys* of Territorial Battalions, who are held in low estimation by Indian public opinion. The sepoys' ranks are supposed to be filled in from the masses and not from the classes, and we consider it a degradation for Parsis to be reduced to the position of sepoys, after enjoying for 50 years the privileges and rights of British soldiers, who are held in higher estimation by Indian public opinion.

Personally we believe that the *conditions of service* in the I. T. F. cannot and do not preserve the self-respect of our educated, intelligent and progressive community. Not only so but we may venture to say that amongst the 75 Battalions of the British Army in India, there is not one which can boast of the same standard of education and of life as the P. P. Battalions. We see no reason why our cultured youths should be reduced to the level of illiterate sepoys, whose conditions of service are *naturally unsuited to our traditions and habits of life.*

Our fourth objection we have repeatedly put forward in our columns time and again, and we are sorry to say, that we have again to draw the attention of the higher authorities, to the misdirection of Colonel Lavie and misrepresentation of the conditions of service to the Parsi recruits.

In Standing Orders of the P. P. B. on page 4, section 4, sub-section 2, it is clearly stated that " If the C. O. is satisfied that the applicant (recruit) *understands the questions put to him, and consents to the conditions of service*, he shall sign a certificate to that effect on the said Form, and the applicant shall thereupon be deemed enrolled ".

We have been positively informed by many Parsi recruits, that Colonel Lavie himself as well as his subordinates, distinctly gave them to understand at the time of signing the Form of enrolment, that they were not going to be enrolled in Territorial Battalions, but in Auxiliary Battalions, and the forms actually supplied by the Colonel and his subordinates were Auxiliary Forms of Enrolment; not only so, but Colonel Lavie's own words and promises on the platform

and his interviews reproduced in his favourite journal—the "Jam-e-Jamshed," meant only one thing if anything at all—that *the conditions of service for the Parsee recruits were exactly the same as those of British Territorial Battalions*, and that it was only for the sake of formality, that the Parsi Battalions were called Territorial Battalions instead of Auxiliary. In our correspondence with Colonel Lavie, which we reproduced in our issue of 29th July last, Colonel Lavie takes a somersault, and tells us that "the reasons why Parsis cannot be enrolled in A. F. I., is purely political". Further, he showed absolute discourtesy to us in replying that "I refuse to argue, write or express any remarks regarding the Parsi Units". His refusal means that he was unable to give any explanation, and we therefore suggest to the higher military authorities at Simla and the Southern Command, to demand an explanation from Colonel Lavie as to his inexplicable attitude in refusing to give an explanation to a journal of our standing, when it is the declared policy of the Government to seek the help of independent journals, which are always loyal to the cause, and secondly to demand an explanation for putting before recruits *unauthorised conditions of service*, and taking their consent on such evident misrepresentations, which are public property in the shape of Colonel Lavie's own words reproduced in the "Jam-e-Jamshed". We want to say positively that we are not making any false charges against Colonel Lavie, but we have protested before and again protest against such misrepresentations of the conditions of service by a Commanding Officer in the position of Colonel Lavie; for it is quite certain, that Colonel Lavie *would not have obtained a single recruit*, if he had told the Parsi recruits that they were to be enrolled as sepoys, without the British rights of soldiers, which our community has enjoyed for the last 50 years, and that they were to be enrolled in a *Pioneer* Battalion, which was going to be exposed to the almost certain risk of annihilation at the very beginning of any war.

Summary and Conclusions. Disband the P. Pioneers (I. T. F.), and re-enlist in the Auxiliary Forces. Modify the Conditions of Service, to suit our limited numbers and capacity. Restore our British Rights and Status.

The only conclusion we can arrive at from the facts above-mentioned, is that, the only remedy for the existing dissatisfaction prevailing amongst all ranks of both the Parsi Battalions, as evident from general absence on parade, except of a dozen or two privates, is that the Battalions are getting quite disorganised, and are bound to break up in a short time. To anticipate such a certain eventuality, the only resource left to the military authorities is to disband both the Battalions, and re-enlist those members who are willing to do so, in ordinary Infantry Battalions of the Auxiliary Force. The talk of political reasons against such an arrangement is all nonsense. For we Parsis have enjoyed the right of Volunteering as British soldiers for the last fifty years, so that the long precedent, combined with the fact, that already there is in existence, a Parsi Company of the Auxiliary Force in Bombay, is a sufficient reason for enlisting Parsis in Auxiliary Battalions.

The efficiency and progress shown by the intelligent and smart Parsi recruits of the Pioneer Battalions, was testified to by H. E. the Governor of Bombay after a special parade, at which he was present to take the salute. So that the willingness and the military efficiency of Parsi youths are not, and never have been questioned. The record of our Parsi Volunteers for the last 50 years, and the record of war service of Parsis during the world-war are too well-known to need recapitulation here. If the Government and the Military Authorities desire our military services as volunteers which we are willing to offer, *the conditions of service must be those of the Auxiliary Forces modified to suit* (1) our limited numbers, (2) our physical disqualification as rough Pioneers (3) our inability to supply any further drafts in case of heavy casualties in war—these three reasons suggest that our services should be reserved for Home Defence —(4) our moderate stake in the country, compared to that of our sister communities; (5) our disinclination to serve in the humble capacity of sepoys of the I. T. F.—a humiliating status, which no educated and enlightened community could ever accept under any circumstances. Otherwise we can anticipate without much doubt, that the two Pioneer Battalions with their sadly dwindling ranks, will melt away into nothing, by following the advice of Colonel Lavie, who in his reply to us dated 18th October 1922, *gave them the option* of resigning at will, *e.g.*, "those men who wish to soldier can soldier, who do not *can resign*".

Note by the Secretary, Auxiliary and Territorial Force Committee.

With reference to pages 226, 227 and 228 of " Some suggestions for the Reorganisation of the Indian Territorial and Auxiliary Forces" by Dr. K. K. Dadachanji, the figures given for the Indian Territorial Force, and Auxiliary Force, India, are incorrect. At no time during 1923-24 were they as stated by the witness.

The correct figures on the 1st September 1923, *i.e.*, the middle of the year 1923-24, were :—

Indian Territorial Force.

Provincial units—	
Actual	11,009
Authorised	14,760
U. T. C. Units—	
Actual	3,655
Authorised	4,344
Total—	
Actual	14,664
Authorised	19,104

Auxiliary Force, India.

Actual	34,491
Authorised	36,804

It will thus be seen that the proportion given in the second paragraph on page 227 should be about $2\frac{1}{3}$: 1 and not 8 : 1.

Explanatory note by Dr. K. K. Dadachanji with regard to the figures given by him in pages 32-34 of his original statement.

With reference to the accuracy of the figures of the I. T. F. and I. A. F., please note that I could obtain no information from any official published source, including "The Army in India and its Evolution". So I had to rely on the "Times of India" and "the Indian Year Book" published by it. The figures given in the leaders of the "Times of India" of various dates were : I. T. F. actual strength 8,500; at page 226 I have quoted H. E. the Commander in Chief stating in the Indian Legislative Assembly that the limit which had been imposed by the Secretary of State was 20,000 men, hence my figures as to the authorised strength of the I. T. F. being 20,000 is correct. So also my figure of the authorised strength of the I. A. F. being 36,804 is correct. U. T. C. actual strength 1,500, I. A. F. actual strength 60 battalions, which I take to mean 60,000. The "Times of India" is believed to be supplied with official figures by the authorities.

I would like here to point out to the Committee that the figures given in the published official sources about the Regular Indian Army are also variable; *e.g.*, the "Army in India and its Evolution" and "The Report of the Inchcape Committee" give varying figures for the strength of the regular army and its Reserve. It is therefore quite impossible for a civilian like me to find out the accurate figures of the actual strength of the Regular and Territorial and Auxiliary Armies. Hence I regret if any unintentional inaccuracy has crept in, owing to lack of published official information.

As regards the figures relating to the strength of the British Army in 1914, and 1924, I have to state that the figures were borrowed from "Army Organization and Administration" by "An officer of the Line" Appendix* I and from "The Empire at War", and other official sources.

As regards the strength of the Army in India, the figures are taken from the "Army in India and its Evolution" Appendix VIII.

As regards the reserve of the Regular Army, the figures are taken from the "Report of the Inchcape Committee" page 17, last paragraph.

Whatever may be the actual numbers of the I. T. F. and I. A. F., the same cannot invalidate the force of the argument in favour of raising the strength of both the Forces, as per table at page 228.

I hope this explanation will be found satisfactory.

---

*Seton Praed & Co., London.

Statement by Rai Jadunath Mozoomdar, M.A., B.L., C.I.E., Jessore (Bengal).

The present political situation and the total absence of military tradition in Bengal renders recruitment extremely difficult. The masses here, Hindus or Mohammedans, do not understand the usefulness of the Territorial Force as a Second Line of Defence to the Regular Army. In the Punjab and some other place service in the army is regarded and sought as a means of livelihood, which is not the case in Bengal. The idea of defending the Empire in times of emergency at personal sacrifice has not yet dawned upon the minds of the masses either in Bengal or elsewhere. The educated middle classes have some idea, but the prospects of the Force are not attractive enough for them, and in order to make it popular and successful and in order to attract the middle classes, I beg to suggest that all distinctions between the Territorial and the Auxiliary Force should be done away with, and the Territorial Force should be put on an equal footing with the Auxiliary Force.

This is my suggestion. I do not expect the masses here or elsewhere to enlist in the Territorial Force in large numbers, but, I am very hopeful in regard to the middle classes, who are expected to come in large numbers if all racial distinctions are abolished.

My son 2nd Lieut. Kumar Adhikram Mazumdar, B.L., Deputy Magistrate and Deputy Collector, Jessore, who was Subedar-Major of the 49th Bengali Regiment and who is now a Second Lieutenant in the Bengal Wing of the Territorial Force, may be consulted as regards details, as he has considerable practical knowledge of the Force. I myself had been to the Training Camp on several occasions, and I can only say that the diet which I saw being given to the Force, was altogether unsuitable to the middle class Bengalis. I suggest supply of more milk, meat and vegetables and a better quality of rice and *dal*.

Statement by Mr. Sukhludu Bilash Roy, Secretary, Recruiting Committee, Chittagong.

PAY AND ALLOWANCES—

Suggestion No. 1.—I think that the retaining fee for the non-training period should be given at the rate of Rs. 5 per mensem and no increment is to be given in the following years. I think it will be attractive to the recruits of the good breeding.

Suggestion No. 2.—In my opinion it is better to increase the present road and subsistence allowance of the members of the I. T. F.

B.—POPULARITY OF THE FORCE.—Nothing to suggest now or modify the printed suggestions.

C.—METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE I. T. F.—(2) IV—Secretary of the Recruiting Committee of each district may be added.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE.—I approve of the suggestions and no alteration, in my opinion, is necessary.

E.—RECOMMENDED AMENDMENTS TO THE I. T. F. ACTS AND RULES.—*Nil.*

Statement by Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., I.T.F. Medical Corps, President, I.T.F. Advisory Committee (Bengal.)

A.—Pay and Allowances.

(1) Members belonging to higher grades in Indian Society will not favour a small subsidy, but the cultivating ryot classes from whom a large number of the recruits of the sepoy type is expected would welcome a small subsidy. Rs. 2 is too small. Recommendation for higher amount will depend on the knowledge of the number of men the subsidy will be granted to and the funds available in the province of Bengal for this purpose. I would suggest Rs. 5 per month.

(2) The method of paying travelling and subsistence allowance according to rate of pay is the one in vogue in Civil Government Offices while one is travelling to take up duties. The rate should be the same as for Government servants in Civil employ of the status to which the members of the I. T. F. belong. They should also be paid according to the rate of their salary for the days spent in travelling to and not from the training centre.

(3) Members of the U. T. C. should be paid at the same rate as members of the I. T. F. (this applies to the literate section, suggested by the Bengal Advisory Committee).

(4) Yes. The Officers holding His Excellency the Viceroy's commission should get the same rate of mess allowance as officers of the same rank in the Indian Army. Those holding His Majesty the King's Commission should get a mess allowance as the officers of the Indian Army or those of the A. F. I. Those holding a dual commission, namely, a Viceroy's commission from which they derive their power of command and an Honorary King's Commission from which they get their rank, such officers should get an allowance on the basis of amount paid to officers holding Viceroy's commission, *plus* that admissible to officers holding King's Commission of the same rank he is holding, divided by 2, provided the amount does not exceed the minimum admissible to an officer holding a King's Commission.

(5) Should be increased to Re. 1 per head.

(6) Yes. With the suggestions made in Nos. 2 and 4.

(7) Somewhere about half the amount would be sufficiently reasonable.

B.—Popularity of the Force.

(1) Yes.

(2) (*a*) and (*b*). Yes, but it is necessary that the Adjutant, D.A.D., A.T.F., A.D.M.S. and other British Officers of the Regular Army and members of the I.C.S., I.M.S., and I.E.S., etc., interested in the Territorial Force should be ex-officio members. In my opinion a leaven of British Officers is absolutely necessary to give the necessary tone and popularity to the Institution.

(3) The initial outfit allowance granted to officers ought to be sufficient to include swords. Free issue of binoculars and an annual clothing allowance should be given, only if the same is in vogue for officers of the same rank in the A. F. I.

(4) Is unnecessarily expensive.

(5) An excellent suggestion.

(6) Yes, Provincial and even Local such as Calcutta Technical Battalion, I. T. F.

(7) Very necessary not only because a higher standard is necessary for people under training and undergoing hardships to which they are not accustomed but also because in the Territorial Force the members generally belong to a higher social status than the sepoys in the Regular Army. A liberal scale of equivalents on the A. F. I. basis will do away with a lot of grievances. During the last two camps of exercise as Medical Officer-in-charge I have personal knowledge of the difficulties. A liberal allowance will do away with the necessity of our worrying the public year after year.

C.—METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

1. The present method of recruiting might be improved by a combination of suggestions contained in (2) and (3).

Greatest care should be exercised in granting commissioned ranks. I do not think more than 25 per cent. of total strength should be granted a commission promoted from the ranks. The usual 75 per cent. for direct appointment should be recruited from the literate and the land-holding classes who command local influence and possess by virtue of their profession or birth the power of command and initiative necessary for an officer and is expected to have social virtues and character necessary to elicit esteem and friendship of British Commissioned Officers. The candidate should produce a medical certificate of fitness for Military duties, and submit previous record of service, if any.

The District as well as the Divisional and Provincial Committees will be expected to give due weight to the points for consideration mentioned above as well as to the due representation of the Hindu and Moslem communities.

Candidates for direct appointment to commissioned ranks should be approved in writing by a Board consisting of the Magistrate of the District, one Mahommedan and one Hindu non-official member. This would be the District Committee. The recommendations of the District Committee would be dealt with by Divisional Committee of which the President would be the Commissioner of the division and the Board should include the Administrative Commander of the unit concerned, the senior I. T. F. officer of the unit, and a Hindu and Mahommedan non-official members. The names of candidates selected by different divisional committees of the province should be forwarded to the Provincial Advisory Committee who will make the selection of the proper number of candidates according to vacancies from the nominations of the divisional committees and recommend them to be taken in as cadets for undergoing training for the purpose of being granted commissioned ranks. These candidates when taken in as cadets should undergo training with the ranks during the annual camp of exercise, and the officer Commanding will observe the candidate's (1) power of command (2) physical fitness (3) aptitude for military training and recommend him as suitable or otherwise for the grant of commission.

It will thus be observed that here will be 3 filtration mediums before a candidate is admitted as a cadet for grant of direct commission. Not more than 25 per cent. of total appointments of officers should be by promotion from the ranks for approved and meritorious services. Government officers should be given commissioned ranks, as far as possible, equivalent to their ranks in Government service excepting under exceptional circumstances where the person belonging to the Provincial service may be granted a commissioned rank on account of war services or other meritorious work. A commissioned rank is always higher than that of a gazetted officer of the second class to which the Provincial service men belong.

D.—IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE FOR WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

(1) I consider the suggestion will be highly injurious to the Force. The prestige and popularity will both go down if Government servants are not permitted to enrol. As a matter of fact they should be encouraged to take part in the Territorial Force movement.

(2) In the number in the Provincial Advisory Committee may be increased to 5 and should include the Territorial Force Officer in addition to the military member. The District Committee should be a separate body chiefly concerned with recruiting and for selecting candidates for commissions, etc., and advising Government generally on the Territorial Force movements.

(3) Preliminary training of 56 days and periodical training of 28 days is sufficient and should not be increased.

(4) It is an excellent idea but the I. T. F. Officers should get that training along with officers of the Regular Army in the existing schools for training of such officers. Separate school for Territorial and Auxiliary Force Officers at this stage will be conducive to efficiency.

(5) Yes, this is a very good suggestion. Arms and ammunition might be kept in safety in the Armoury of existing U. T. C., A. F. or with the Reserve Armed Police at a District headquarters.

(6) Yes, it seems that for the damp and malarious climate of Bengal this should be the rule without especial medical recommendation. We should not attempt to harden the people too suddenly, it is misunderstood as an attempt to smother the movement.

(7) Yes.

(8) Yes.

(9) Yes.

(10) Yes.

(11) Yes.

(12) Yes.

(13) Yes, it is essential to divide the absolutely rustic or as it is called in Bengal "chasha" type from the "Bhadralog" class who are always anxious to be treated on the same basis as members of the A. F. I.

(14) Yes, on a sufficiently efficient but inexpensive scale.

(15) The recommendations of the University Conference should be given every consideration. The literate section who are always agitating for their rights should be the first to bear the responsibility of Government by undergoing a training which will teach them discipline and self-restraint and the power of maintaining peace and tranquility and repelling aggression. I would make entrance into the U. T. C. compulsory and provide feeders for it in the primary and secondary schools, only under exceptional circumstances exemption to be granted.

E.—Recommended amendments to the I. T. F. Act and Rules.

(1) Yes.

(2) Yes.

(3) Yes.

(4) Yes.

(5) Yes.

(6) Yes.

(7) Yes.

Supplementary questionnaire.

(8) No, those in opulent circumstances can always give away their pay for any useful purpose they choose as is done by many privates and officers of the A. F. I.

(9) On the basis of the pay of commissioned officer which I have explained in A (4).

(10) Yes.

(11) Yes on basis suggested in (2).

(12) Yes in Bengal the Permanent Settlement is in vogue the ryot recruit will not benefit by it. The retaining subsidy is more suitable.

(13) The suggestion is excellent. The attraction of handling a good sum of money before returning home is a good one, but an improvident person may squander it away.

(14) I do not know what difference this makes. The proposition appears quite sound.

(15) (i) Yes.

(*a*) Yes.

(*b*) Yes.

(ii) Yes.

(*a*) Yes.

(*b*) Yes.

B. (8) Yes.

C. (5) Yes. The recommendation should go to the G. O. C. through the Provincial Advisory Committee.

C. (6) (i) Yes.

(ii) Yes, but on the basis already suggested.

(iii) Yes.

D. (16) No. Unless a Bengali Regiment be inaugurated which I suggested in my Council speech during the Budget discussion this year.

(17) Yes.

(18) Yes.

(19) Yes, the principle is good but I wish to point out that the designations such as Naiks, Havildars and Jemadars, gives the impression of a man of the rank of the subordinate Police Constable in the minds of the Bengalis. They do not know the respect with which a jemadar is treated by a British officer. It is highly desirable that such designations as Sergeants, Corporals, etc., be introduced as they have been appreciated in U. T. C. This should be done at least in the literate section of the Territorial Force.

I desire also to bring to the notice of the committee that financial stringency hinders largely the popularity and development of the Territorial Force. It is suggested that a sufficient sum of money should be earmarked for expenditure by the Bengal wing. There should be a Central Committee with an Indian member of H. E. the Viceroy's Council as the President with a Military member as Secretary and 2 or 3 non-official members of the Assembly including one Mahommedan as a member and also one senior Territorial Officer Hindu one year, Moslem another year, irrespective of his being a non-official or a Government servant. This Committee to bring to the notice of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief important matters concerning the Territorial Force.

Statement by Major H. S. Cardew M. C. Adjutant, 11/18 Royal Garhwal Rifles.

Questionnaire.

Question No.	Reply.
A—1	Yes, I agree.
A—2	Not applicable.
A—4	Hardly applicable to Garhwalis.
A—5	I agree – annas 8 is not sufficient.
A—6	Yes. Travelling Allowance rates at present inadequate—see alternative suggestion.
A—7	Yes—A great inducement to recruiting.
A—8	No.
A—9	Yes, undoubtedly.
A—10	Yes, or a Pipe band maintained in the 11-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.
A—11	Yes; for both N. C. Os. and men.
A—12	No, retaining fee preferable in Garhwal.
A—13	No.
A—14	I would prefer 2 annas per mile for N. C. Os. and men.
B—1	No, not necessary.
B—2 (*a*)	No good in Garhwal.
B—3	Yes.
B—4	Yes, most certainly.
B—5	No good for Garhwalis.
B—7	Government rations preferred in 11-18th by the men.
B—8	Yes, there is a very urgent need for such a pamphlet.
C—2	See alternative.
C—6 (i)	This is already the system carried out in the 11-18th R. G. Rifles.
C—6 (ii) and (iii)	Ditto.
D—1	I agree.
D—3 (*a*)	I agree to this.
D—3 (*b*)	No (*a*) is better.
D—5	Not applicable to Garhwalis—and not feasible.
D—6 and 7	I agree.
D—8	I agree—but difficult to undertake.
D—9	Not feasible.
D—10	Quite sound.
D—16	Yes, or at least three months.

Questionnaire—contd.

Question No.	Reply.
D—17	Yes, urgently needed in 18th R. G. Rifles. Also a headquarters staff of one Territorial Force officer to do assistant Adjutant and Quartermaster, a nucleus of signallers, Lewis gunners and pipers, also 2 permanent clerks, one as at present authorised is inadequate—if he goes ill there is no one to do his work, he cannot get leave and it is impossible to get clerks just for the period of training.
D—18	Yes.
D—19	Very difficult and I don't think feasible in the 11-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.

Statement by Lieut. (local Captain) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, 5th (Madras) U. T. C.

1. Service after leaving Corps in camps on same lines as American "Citizen Training Camps." To be organised and run on University Training Corps framework.

2. Issue of boots on same conditions as clothing (*i.e.*, made to fit each man—comparison of prices, Boot Factory, Rs. 13-8-0 local made Rs. 9-8-0).

3. Provision of "D. P." Rifles for Arms drill and Musketry instruction to be kept in Colleges.

4. Allowance for cleaning materials.

5. Payment of Batta at 8 annas a day, when travelling.

6. Journeys to and from camp to be by mail train (*i.e.*, intermediate class ticket).

7. Issue of coats waterproof in lieu of great coats, former to be retained during whole year.

8. Arrangements for those who fail at intermediate and rejoin University after 8 months or a year. (About 25 per cent. in Madras).

9. Attendance at camp to count as College attendance.

10. Examination on lines of Cert. "A" and "B" to count towards entrance to Police and other services.

11. Band allowance (Rs. 50 a month).

12. Attachment of officers on first commission to regular units for one month. (B. I. units preferred.)

13. Payment of outfit allowance to Auxiliary Force, India, attached University Training Corps officers who served in the war.

14. Official encouragement to Police and other public bodies to take ex-University Training Corps men.

15. If increase of University Training Corps can be undertaken, suggest that each Indian Territorial Force Battalion should have one University Training Corps Company of four platoons from Colleges in its own recruiting area supervised by the Commandant of the Provincial Battalion but trained in camp with University Training Corps. Each Provincial Battalion to have one S. S. I. for this purpose. Existing Battalions to remain in centres large enough to maintain a Battalion.

Statementby Hony. 2nd-Lieut. A. N. Wadhawa, 11/15 Punjab Regiment.

(A) Pay and Allowances.

1. The retaining fee will attract more men from the hereditary fighting classes to join the force.

2. Practically every man can reach his home in twenty-four hours and I don't think pay is essential for the time spent in travel. For the homeward journey men have cooked ration with them issued on the last day of training. For the journey to training a subsistence allowance of eight annas a day should be given to each man for his food. As regards allowance travelling by road I consider no allowance is essential under five miles and journey by road over five miles two annas per mile be given to men for coming and going back for any duty in connection with the force.

3. Applies to University Training Corps.

4. As present, Indian Territorial Force Officers are from different classes and creeds and is very difficult to induce Officers to join the Mess, besides the present pay fixed for Indian Territorial Force Officers is not enough to join the mess, undoubtedly they who join are out of pocket considerably. I suggest that the daily messing allowance of Rupees 2 per day should be given to every Officer who feeds in the Mess, in addition to the messing allowance already sanctioned which will be entirely available for arranging an ante-room, Dining-Room, etc., required for the Mess.

5. The present allowance is quite sufficient.

6. I agree to it.

7. During the training period the Indian Territorial Force Soldiers have not much leisure hours to wear Mufti. I have seen most of the men going to the Bazar in their Uniform and are quite pleased. Unless ordered by the O. C. unit contrary to it I don't think such allowance is permissible.

8. I don't agree, many best stamp Indian Territorial Force Officers have very little or no private means.

9. The present Indian Territorial Force Officers' pay is not sufficient to keep up the King's Commissioned Officers' position and will never attract the best men, I consider that a rate of pay somewhere that of a Subedar Major including his allowance and a King's Commissioned Officer, should be given, say Rupees two hundred and fifty (Rs. 250) a month to commence with gradually increasing with an increment after six years' service. There are several Officers who in civil life are in business or who are in charge of Estates, these Officers will be hard up when mobilised for a long period of service, etc., on the present rate of pay.

10. In the short period of training it is very difficult to train a band.

11. See reply to item 2.

12. I consider that the Indian Territorial Force Officers and men should be exempted from the land revenue, paid to the Government after each harvest, this will attract more men from the cultivating class to join the force, thus even the force mobilised for a long period will not hinder in their civil life and it is just possible the expenses as regards pay, etc., may be lessened too.

13. The bonus should be given to Indian Territorial Force Officers and men, only on the recommendation of O. C. on a man's skill and zeal during the training period and chiefly the skill displayed in the annual Musketry Course.

I suggest Rs. 25 for the first class shot and Rs. 15 for Second class shot only. No bonus should be given who for any reason except *bona fide* Medical certificate or previous exemption does not appear on the due date fixed for training.

14. See reply to item 2.

15. Applies to University Training Corps only.

(B) POPULARITY OF THE FORCE.

1. The Indian Territorial Force Officers must qualify for retention examination before the completion of his 3rd annual training.

2. See reply to (A) 4. The Indian Territorial Force Officer's pay does not allow to join the club being a Honorary King's Commission, at present there are only two Officers who have joined the Jullunder Club being connected with the Maharaja's Family and can bear the expense. I think if a decent and comfortable ante-room is arranged in the camp it can meet all the requirements of a Club. The whole of the present Mess allowance if available for fixing up a good mess in the Camp it will meet the case. Purchasing furniture and storing it for ten or eleven months is not advisable as it is liable to a great loss and breakages.

3. The first free issue of Sword and Binocular, is desirable, as all Indian Territorial Force Officers would be similarly equipped, but it should not be the personal property till the period of agreement is over. As regards annual clothing allowance I think the present outfit allowance does an Officer very well for the first year of his service. A sum of money as upkeep allowance might be given on completion of every three years' service as an Officer.

4. I don't agree as the men will never bring the pair of Mufti clothing back for training when once given, to show an Indian Territorial Force Non-Commissioned Officer and men a Pugree and a fringe on payment will serve very well.

5. It is a very good idea if competitions could be arranged it should be at the end of the training in any province so as the training period be not wasted thus it gives a chance to each competitor to test their Rifles on the range during the training period before he goes for the competition.

6. A good plan, it will be a great help to civil authorities and will encourage enrolment.

7. The present scale of Ration meets requirements and I never had any complaint.

8. Very urgently required especially for information required as regards enrolment and pay, etc., the subordinate and low paid Officers of the Local Government are not well educated especially in the villages, correspondence in the simple language will do very well.

(C) METHOD OF SELECTING CANDIDATES FOR COMMISSIONS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

1. I think the present system of selecting Officers is not satisfactory, it simply depends upon recommendations and are approved by the higher Military Officers who know nothing about the applicant. A man's aptitude for military life should be seen. Of all the proposals in items 1-6, I think No. 6 is not practicable. In the Indian Territorial Force the Officers must enlist his own Non-Commissioned Officers and men so that he may understand and command them easily in such a short period of training. The selected Officers may be confirmed after passing the retention examination, and approved by the examination board in every respect in item 4.

(D) IMPROVEMENT OF THE FORCE GENERALLY, HAVING REGARD TO THE ROLE OF WHICH IT HAS BEEN CONSTITUTED.

1. I agree to it as most of the people are for the sake of their personal advancement and most of them have resigned because no improvement financially is noticeable during the training.

2. The advisory committee should be constituted for districts and the Territorial Officers should be one of the member at present I have never heard meeting of the advisory committee, I think because residing at distances from each other, the committee might be settling the matters by writing I cannot say, but I am sure this process must be taking a long time to settle the matter. The presence of a Territorial Officer is most essential as it will be a great assistance in settling various points to the Civilian members.

3. I think proposal (B) is most preferable as in 56 days training a recruit can acquire good training, during my three trainings no advance Military work has been taught as Battalion drill, Field work, etc., so that recruit may be efficient, 56 days training is most essential.

4. Very good scheme for Platoon commander's course, at present I know most of the Indian Territorial Force Officers have no military idea or experience, officers will learn much more under instructors who are well trained before, usually most of the time is spent in explaining and teaching different points to the Officers daily while on parade.

5. A very good practicable scheme.

6. For a short period of training I don't think mosquito curtains are essential but the beds I am in favour of. I noticed during last three trainings the men have complained several times simply because the training period is during the rainy season, the most of the sickness is due to sleeping on the wet ground. Number of tents supplied should be increased so as to give more room for beds.

7. Yes, most essential thing.

8. Certainly, training of the Indian Territorial Force Officers will increase their Military knowledge and will not be dependent on instructors of the regular Army.

9. A very good plan, I think that each Company Havildar-Major and Quarter Master Havildar should be called up along with others for training and to look after their Company men and ration beforehand as well.

10. A very sound advice, an Indian Territorial Force Medical Officer will take a great interest with his men.

11 & 12. No opinion to offer.

13. See reply to item 1.

14 & 15. No opinion to offer.

16. See reply to item 3. The unit has been in existence since three years it is too late to have such a long preliminary training period, very few recruits will be benefited now.

17. A permanent training staff is quite essential than to change every year. I prefer one Indian Officer per Company and one instructor per Platoon belonging to the same unit so as to give the uniform training.

The Indian Territorial Force Officers will avoid lots of work they should do themselves, and to keep their Command going if too many Indian Officers are attached.

18. I agree and in addition to it officers must attend courses at arms school, most especially in Musketry and physical training.

19. There should be some promotion test for Non-Commissioned Officers word and power of command education.

(E) Recommended amendments to Indian Territorial Force act and rules.

1. I agree to proposals in paragraph 4 annexure 1. Some legislation is very essential to allow an officer being discharged if his services are not useful.

2. I agree with the suggestions in annexure 2.

3. I cannot give any opinion.

4. I agree to such change.

5. No opinion to offer.

6. Owing to such short period of training leave should not be granted except Saturday afternoon to Monday morning, that too in most urgent cases as during this time cleaning of arms, web equipment and uniform is of great importance.

List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to appear to give evidence before the Committee.

Names.	Whether able to attend or not.
Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., Adjutant, 11-18th Royal Garhwal Rifles, Lansdowne.	Attended; also submitted written statement.
Lieutenant Sheikh Imtiaz Rasul Khan of Jehangirabad .	Unable to attend.
Honorary 2nd Lieutenant Haidar Khan, M.A., B.Sc., 3rd (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C., Muslim University, Aligarh.	Attended; also submitted written statement.
Major N. M. Grylls, Adjutant, 11-1st Punjab Regiment, Jhelum.	Attended.
Lieutenant (local Captain) Raja Sher Mohammad Khan, Adjutant, 11-13th F. F. Rifles, Campbellpore.	"
Honorary 2nd Lieutenant A. N. Wadhawa, 11-15th Punjab Regiment.	Attended; also submitted written statement.
Major E. B. Mangin, M.C., 10-2nd Bombay Pioneers (late Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment).	Attended.
Khan Bahadur Khwaja Mohammad Nur, M.L.C., President, Bihar and Orissa Advisory Committee.	"
Captain K. S. Caldwell, O. C. Patna U. T. C. . . .	"
Captain (local Major) W. A. J. Hinds, Adjutant, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers.	Attended; also submitted written statement.
Honorary Lieutenant (local Captain) J. C. Oonwala, 11-2nd Bombay Pioneers.	Attended.
Sir Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy, Bart., K.C.S.I.	Unable to attend.
Honorary Lieutenant S. P. Singha, 11-15th Punjab Regiment, Delhi.	Attended.
Major H. S. Stewart, D. A. D., A. and T. F., P. and A. District, Calcutta.	"
Major H. S. Suhrawardy, M.L.C., I. T. F. Medical Corps, (Calcutta.)	Attended; also submitted written statement.
Captain J. N. Banerjee, Bar.-at-law, Calcutta . .	Attended.
Sir P. C. Mitter, Kt., C.I.E.	Unable to attend.
Lieutenant P. W. McKie, Delhi Contingent A. F. (I.) (I. T. Department).	Attended.
Honorary 2nd Lieutenant Tikka Sahib Surindra Singh Bedi, 11-1st Punjab Regiment, Jhelum.	"
Colonel Craddock, D. S. O., M. C., Calcutta Scottish . .	"
Major W. J. Nance, Adjutant, 11-3rd Madras Regt. . .	"

List of official and non-official witnesses who were invited to appear to give evidence before the Committee—concld.

Names.	Whether able to attend or not.
Honorary 2nd Lieutenent The Raja of Kalikote, 11-3rd Madras Regt.	Attended.
Lieutenant (local Captai.) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, Madras, U. T. C.	Attended ; also submitted written statement.
Mr. F. L. Brayne, M.C., I.C.S., Deputy Commissioner, Gurgaon.	Attended ; also submitted written statement.
Mr. H. Nevill, C.I.E., O.B.E., V.D., I.C.S., District Magistrate, Agra.	Attended.
Mr. Pellakanda Mudappa, B.A., B.L., M.L.C., Coorg .	,,
Captain K. L. Fasken, 11-20th Burma Rifles . . .	,,
Kanwar Ganpati Singh of Karwa	,,
Honorary Lieutenant L. V. Po, 11-20th Burma Rifles . .	,,
Honorary Lieutenant Tin Tutt, 11-20th Burma Rifles .	Unable to attend.
Mr. K. C. De, Commissioner, Presidency Division, Bengal .	Attended ; also submitted written statement.
Hon'ble Mr. B. V. Jadhav, M.A., LL.B., Minister of Education, Bombay.	Unable to attend.
Lieutenant (local Captain) S. Hissam-ud-din Khan, Bahadur, I.D.S.M., Adjutant, 11-12th F. F. Regiment.	Unable to attend ; but submitted written statement.
Mr. C. D. M. Hindley, Chief Commissioner of Railways .	Attended.
Captain D. W. Reid, D.S.O., M.C., Adjutant, 11-4th Bombay Grenadiers, Ajmer.	Unable to attend.

Examination of Major H. S. Cardew, M.C., Adjutant, 11/18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.

November 11th, 1924.

The Chairman.—It is from the standpoint of Adjutant of the 11/18th Garhwalis that you will be giving us your evidence?

Witness.—Yes, Sir.

The Chairman.—Will you tell me if the Territorial Force is popular in your area?

Witness.—I am afraid it is not with the Garhwalis, because the Garhwali, as an inhabitant of his own country, is an agriculturist. This is the only type of man we can get; and he is the same type as we get as regular soldiers.

The Chairman.—There is no difference between them?

Witness.—No difference, though the territorial recruit may not be quite fit enough to get into the active battalions. Very often a man who is not taken in the active battalions comes for enrolment in the Territorials, and we take him if he is up to our standard, which is only slightly lower. If they could have pay for the whole year, I could raise a full battalion to-morrow. What they cannot understand is that they come in for one month and, when they go back to their villages they cannot get any work. In our villages, if there are brothers, the odd man can go and serve in the Territorials, but he prefers to go and get work elsewhere in India. I have just been up in Garhwal and, as far as I can see, the enthusiasm seems to be dying out. The men ask what they are to do for the rest of the year when their month's training is over. I say "you can do what you like, but you must come for your training," and their reply is "If we get a job and then come for training, we lose our job." It is only if they are on their beam ends that they will come to me as Territorials.

The Chairman.—If you are to make the Force popular in your district the only method apparently, from what you have said, is to guarantee the men employment the whole year round?

Witness.—Some pecuniary advantage of that sort. If employers of labour would say to them, you can go for your Territorial training and we will take you on as soon as it is over, it would be all right, but a great many of our Garhwalis are of the coolie class and work in the forest, or work as servants, not only in the U. P., but as far afield as Quetta and Karachi. Some of them are now beginning to spread into these distant places, and they cannot give up that employment and come in for their training.

The Chairman.—Does the enrolment of the Territorial Force in any way interfere with enlistment for the regular army?

Witness.—Not at present.

The Chairman.—Though they get the same kind of man?

Witness.—We get the same kind of man, but, if the active battalions have got their full number of recruits, they will not take some men who come to me.

The Chairman.—The active battalions can get what they want?

Witness.—Yes, because it is very good employment.

The Chairman.—Have you got any other suggestion to give us for increasing the popularity of the Force?

Witness.—Yes; talking with the Territorial officers and with the men also in Garhwal, I find that they rather expect some pecuniary advantage, even to the extent of a retaining fee of Rs. 2 a month. I believe I could get recruits if they got that. The only objection is that it may affect recruiting for the active battalions. But if they were given Rs. 2 a month, or even allowed to take home a certain amount of their clothing, it would have a good effect. I am speaking only of my own battalion, and not of others.

The Chairman.—Suppose you gave them a retaining fee, would that have any effect on the Army reservists who also get a retaining fee?

Witness.—I think it might affect active battalion recruiting, but it is a thing which perhaps could be tried.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be better to give them a bonus at the end of their training than to give them a retaining fee?

Witness.—No, I personally think the retaining fee would be better. The bonus would be lost sight of; they would think that it was part of their pay at the end of their training, whereas if they had Rs. 2 a month and they drew it half-yearly, it would really mean to them a retaining fee.

The Chairman.—Do you think any of your recruits of the right stamp are prevented from joining the Garhwali Territorial Force on account of their liability for general service?

Witness.—No. They are the same type of men,—the cultivating class,—as is recruited in our active battalions, and I could raise two battalions almost at once if it was permanent employment. They are perfectly willing to go anywhere and do anything. A certain number do not turn up for training because they do not get the notification or are afraid that employers of labour will sack them. From a military point of view, however, I think that they would go anywhere.

The Chairman.—As regards your Territorial officers, what are the motives, generally spreaking, which inspire your candidates to apply for commissions?

Witness.—I think the five officers I have got now have taken it on with a very keen idea of soldiering and in order to increase or raise their status both in their civil employ and also in their own country. Two of my officers are in civil employ as Deputy Collectors, and I think one of them is trying to get accepted as a permanent officer and leave his civil post. I have told him that that is impossible at present; but his whole idea, I think, is to raise his status by obtaining the rank of 2nd-Lieutenant.

The Chairman.—Do you consider the present method of selecting candidates for commissions is the best we can devise, or have you an improvement to suggest?

Witness.—I think the idea is as sound as any. That is to say a man comes in to the Garhwali battalion with a view to getting a direct commission. Some have not; they have simply come and joined as soldiers and, when I have found that they are educated men and have asked why they have joined as soldiers, they have told me that they hoped to get commissions. In those cases I generally write in to the Deputy Commissioner to find out exactly who they are, because I should not know the men from anybody else; he tells me what he knows about them and then I send on the application with a view to getting them commissions in the Territorial Force. But I am trying to get only people who are thoroughly educated and who have a position in the country, and whose influence can be felt. I have had very few cases of applications actually sent to me for commissions. In the first year there were only five, all of whom came to me and joined up as soldiers. Sir Havelock Hudson said he did not want any one who had not had one year's training as a soldier. So I took them as soldiers and formed my opinion from that.

The Chairman.—Do you first find out whether he is an officer who would be acceptable to the other officers?

Witness.—It has not come to that yet because they all came to me the same year. Of my five, two are Deputy Collectors. They are rather a trouble to me, in that their civil employ may affect their training. One is a school master who did a certain time at Sandhurst and was sent back, and one is an influential man in Garhwal. He is not so well educated as the others, but he has considerable influence amongst the ordinary inhabitants in getting recruits.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be desirable to put everybody who aspires to be an officer through the ranks?

Witness.—I think so; it is important to see that they get some actual soldiering. I have put all mine through the ranks.

The Chairman.—You have been in camp?

Witness.—I have done two trainings in camp.

The Chairman.—While you were in camp did you have any complaints about rations?

Witness.—Our men are of the same type as the men of the active battalions and the rations they get are infinitely preferable to what they get at home. A money allowance would not help them. They get a very fine Government ration, and in their one month's training the difference in the physique of the men is extraordinary. They fill out and become a different type of man, and then they go away and starve for the rest of the year.

The Chairman.—What medical arrangements are made as regards examination of recruits?

Witness.—The first year it was arranged that these people should be medically examined in the districts, but I found that an absolute failure. Since then orders have been issued that they must be medically examined by a commissioned officer. Previously it was done by sub-assistant surgeons in the districts. That system failed for more reasons than one. It was a question, I think, partly of a little bit of money wanted by certain people to pass them in, and the people who passed the test after having given largess were not the type required. Now, the Garhwalis all come into Lansdowne, where they are seen by me, sent down by me to the hospital to be examined there and if fit taken on.

The Chairman.—Have you a medical examination in camp?

Witness.—When they come down for training they have to undergo a medical examination to see that they have no contagious disease on them.

The Chairman.—Before and after camp?

Witness.—Not after camp. During camp they are attached to one of the hospitals and get medical treatment there. When we concentrate they are medically examined by the doctor for contagious diseases, and new recruits are also sent down then for examination as regards their fitness for service.

The Chairman.—How many medical officers have you got and what is their training?

Witness.—None.

The Chairman.—How many officers have you got to examine the recruits, and who does it?

Witness.—In Lansdowne of course it is done in the Station Hospital. The O. C. Station Hospital tells off one of the doctors in Lansdowne to examine recruits.

The Chairman.—They are examined by a regular officer?

Witness.—By a regular I. M. S. Officer.

The Chairman.—I take it from what you have said that it is not possible in your district to tap any other class than those who join the regular army?

Witness.—No. The educated classes in Garhwal go in for employment as civil clerks, and try to get in as Government clerks somewhere; they won't enlist at all. As a matter of fact they could not for one thing, as they have got their clerkships and they would not have time to go in for the training. The actual type I get is the agriculturist who has got relations to do his work while he is away on training.

The Chairman.—Do the officers you get show by their work that they take a real interest in their profession and learn by private study?

Witness.—I can only speak of my first five. They have taken the thing seriously; in fact they have asked me whether it is not possible for them to go to England and do courses of training there. One or two, I think, have entered the Force by way of trying to get permanent commissions in the regular army, but I have told them that this is quite out of the question. They are, however keen on the work.

The Chairman.—Are they good at keeping their men in hand and in proper discipline?

Witness.—They are not sufficiently trained at present. They have got authority over their men, but it takes years to make an officer, and they have not quite got the "go" that is necessary. In time they will become quite good.

The Chairman.—They have got the desire but not the spirit?

Witness.—Yes, they have the idea, but they have not quite the spirit perhaps. One case I can quote is the officer who was for a time at Sandhurst. He has not quite the "go" required of an officer. I think personally that that was the reason why he was sent back from Sandhurst. He is all right in a Territorial regiment, but he has not really got the "go" even for that, although he has authority perhaps among his villagers and can keep the thing going.

The Chairman.—Would you impose an educational test for candidates who apply for Territorial Commissions?

Witness.—Yes, I would certainly insist on the school-leaving certificate. What I laid down for my candidates was that they must be able to speak and read and write English fluently. One has not time to instruct them in the higher arts of war in Hindustani; it is much easier to instruct in English. You do want as officers thoroughly educated people.

The Chairman.—If your officers were attached for some three months to regular forces, would that make them more efficient than they are?

Witness.—I think so. The only trouble about attaching people to other units is that nowadays units are too busy with their own work to have much time to attend to other people. We had one or two attached to our own battalion, and our people were very good in the way of trying to do all they could for them; but you have got to learn yourself. It is exactly the same as if I were attached to a unit. I should not get somebody mothering me the whole time, and I should have to pick up what I could. For these people it would be better to have a class of instruction. It is in that way that a man picks up instruction for himself to a very great extent, and if you had your classes of instruction cut and dried, I think it would be more beneficial.

The Chairman.—Have you got many educated men in your battalion?

Witness.—My officers are educated certainly. I should say that five per cent. of the rest were educated and the remainder uneducated. The former are educated up to the standard of the primary school certificate and can read and write Hindi. In fact they are practically all uneducated.

The Chairman.—Are your men drawn from many districts and do they come from far?

Witness.—My men come in from considerable distances. We have both Garhwal and Kumaon men. A Garhwali comes in sometimes from 10 to 14 marches from Lansdowne.

The Chairman.—If the Force is not sufficiently popular with the educated classes what changes and what remedies would you suggest?

Witness.—I do not think there are any changes which in themselves would attract the educated classes who all over India try to find employment as clerks. I do not think the educated classes among the Garhwalis are the best material to get hold of for the moment and I do not think any attraction except the pecuniary one will induce them to come in.

The Chairman.—Have you received any assistance in your recruiting from local political leaders?

Witness.—All the assistance I get is from the Deputy Commissioner and from a non-official advisory committee which has on it one or two big men in the districts; they assist me by spreading information.

The Chairman.—Does your experience lead you to believe that the territorial idea has made any appeal to the urban classes?

Witness.—We have not got any cities in Garhwal and Kumaon; but I do not think it has made any appeal from the patriotic point of view; the Garhwalis do not join from motives of patriotism; they join from the point of view of what they can get out of it.

The Chairman.—Would you say that your force was popular with the Garhwalis or with the Kumaonis?

Witness.—It is too early to say as yet, as they have not grasped the whole idea; but I have come to the conclusion that the fact that the training is only for a month and that the men have nothing else to do for the remaining eleven

months in the year has stood in the way of its popularity.. The recruits say they are willing to serve all the year round. I think they ought to get a better training allowance.

The Chairman.—Do you think that it is best to collect your recruits in batches?

Witness.—That period is gone, I do not get recruits in batches now; they come in singly and I have to get them medically examined as they come in. The trained men and the recruits come in at the same time. It would also be a help and would save us trouble if we had a resident medical officer; as it is we have to send the men down to the hospital every morning for examination. At one time we had an assistant surgeon with the unit; but it would be a good thing to have a medical officer who lived in the camp. The recruits who come to us are mostly agriculturists.

The Chairman.—Would you advocate dividing up your battalion?

Witness.—Undoubtedly. We have now the Garhwalis and Kumaonis combined, and I think it would be most advantageous if we had separate battalions; the districts are different and the ways of the people are totally different; if we had the camp at Lansdowne no Kumaonis would come at all, and if we had it at Almorah the Garhwalis will not come at all.

The Chairman.—Have you any other suggestions for popularising the Force?

Witness.—As regards the Officers, they wish to be paid and commissioned in the same way as officers in the Auxiliary Force; they wish to have the terms 'honorary' and 'Jemadar,' etc., done away with and they wish to be considered as Second Lieutenants; the term 'Jemadar' annoys them considerably.

The Chairman.—We know as a result of our tours round India that there is considerable doubt and a certain amount of discontent about this question of rank; the whole idea of the organisation is that the units in the Territorial Force should be organised on the same lines as the regular army; do you think it would be possible and suitable to have the same officer organisation in the Territorial Force as in a regular battalion?

Witness.—It is very hard to say, because I cannot see that they can have the same training as in the regular army; if they had, it would be a different story.

The Chairman.—Don't you think it will be possible to work up to that standard in time?

Witness.—Yes, in time; but it will take years to come.

The Chairman.—But is it not desirable to have the battalions of the territorial force organised exactly on the same lines as battalions in the regular army?

Witness.—I think so and believe that is the ultimate aim.

The Chairman.—Supposing that you had the two classes of Indian Officers, King's Commission and Viceroy's Commission, in your battalion, do you think there would be any jealousy between these two classes?

Witness.—Yes; there certainly would; I am in favour of not having any Indian officer class at all. I would not have any Subadars or Jemadars at all. I would only have what we have at home, second lieutenants and lieutenants, etc.

Mr. Burdon.—But is it not your opinion that the ultimate development of officers in the Indian Territorial Force and in the Indian Army should be on the same lines?

Witness.—I would not have two classes of officers. I do not think two classes of officers would work.

The Chairman.—Then you would have a platoon under a second lieutenant, a platoon under a lieutenant and possibly a platoon under a captain?

Witness.—Yes. Another point I have to raise is this. Officers with furlough to their credit would like to go to England for training. That shows they are very keen; in some cases they would be willing to pay their expenses, even if Government could not allow them passages for that purpose. They also wish to know if they cannot get the grant of Form E on leave journeys, in the same way as regular officers with Honorary Commissions. They wish to know whether they will be given opportunities for attending schools of instructions in musketry and such like. They want one Territorial Force officer to be appointed Assistant

Adjutant and Quartermaster and to remain permanently with the headquarters during the year. And finally they want training all the year round and not merely for 28 days in the year. They also want a grant-in-aid for starting an officer's mess, or rather an officers' club, where they can meet for discussions, games, etc. The officers might belong to different castes and might not care to feed together, but you do want a club where they could sit down and discuss things.

As regards the rank and file, they would like to have the whole of their kit given to them after, say, two years' service; that would assist them a good deal, and it would be a great incentive to recruiting; there is no reason why they should not be allowed to take their kit to their homes even if they have under two years service, provided they kept it in serviceable condition. As it is, at the end of the training period the men have spent their allowance in the bazaar and they have got no pecuniary result to show as the result of their training. This tends rather to discredit the Force. I advocate a clothing allowance for them. The next question concerns an increase in the travelling rates by road for Garhwali and Kumaoni men. Men come in from 8 to 10 marches, and they can only carry food for four or five. They have to buy their food from the banias on the way, and this costs them about eight annas per day; they get at present 6 annas and have to spend 2 annas a day out of their own pockets. I have suggested an allowance of 12 annas. Then they ask for an increase in the number of gun licenses; I think there are enough gun licenses in the district and on the whole I am against this; but in some parts of the districts in central Garhwal the game is completely out of hand and the panther feed on the inhabitants for want of something else to eat.

The Chairman.—Do you think that officers would like to have their training nearer their homes and continuously, like the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes, and for a longer period.

The Chairman.—What steps would you take to encourage the martial spirit among your Garhwalis?

Witness.—They have got it, I think, already. Even these territorials with their two months' training show up quite well and they are perfectly amenable to discipline.

There is one more point. The men would like to be paid for the whole month, not for 28 days; they want to get Rs. 16 for the whole period, not for 28 days at Rs. 16 per month, and further they do not want to have any cuttings from their pay. I advocate that. In addition I should like the period of training to be increased to two months for those who wish to stay after the first 28 days.

Examination of Captain Sher Mahommed Khan, Adjutant, 11/13th F. F. Rifles.

November 11th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You have come to give evidence from the point of view of an Adjutant of a Territorial Force unit?

Witness.—Yes, Sir. I am Adjutant of the 11/13th F. F. Rifles.

The Chairman.—Were you at Indore College?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Would you say that the Territorial Force generally is popular in your district?

Witness.—Yes, it is popular in Jhelum district where I live and in Campbellpur, where I get my recruits.

The Chairman.—You would say that the movement was popular in your district?

Witness.—I have had no difficulty in securing recruits.

The Chairman.—Have you any ideas to put forward for making the Territorial force more popular?

Witness.—Yes. I have got four ideas. The first is that the men should be given some sort of retaining fee if funds allow of it.

The Chairman.—Do you think that a retaining fee would be preferable to a bonus, that is a lump sum of money to be paid after completing their training?

Witness.—I prefer a retaining fee which should be paid after the men have finished their training. The fee should be paid along with their pay when the men are undergoing their training. My next idea is regarding the training of the officers, N. C. Os. and men. The present period prescribed for their training is hardly sufficient. If we give them about four months' training in the first year and about two months after that, it will make the men more efficient. If the Territorial Force is really meant to serve as a second line to the regular army, the men will not be of much use if they are not well trained. It is no use giving them only one or two months' training.

The Chairman.—Could you get the men out for that period?

Witness.—I think so, but not every year. All my officers are landlords. They have got their busy time in March and April. During these two months they cannot come, but in the winter I think they can come for that period in the first year, but not every year.

The Chairman.—Have you any other suggestions to put forward in order to make the Territorial force more popular?

Witness.—There is one point I want to mention. I have seen from experience that the officers are not satisfied with the commission, for two or three reasons. They say that they do not like the dual commission. I have explained to them the meaning and the difference between the King's Commission and the Viceroy's Commission, but still they are not satisfied. In the first year they said that they did not mind about the pay, but they wanted the *izzat*. They said that they ought only to have one sort of commission, either the Viceroy's Commission or the King's Commission. They want one or the other.

The Chairman.—Do you think the present method of selecting candidates for commissions is a good one?

Witness.—Yes, it is quite satisfactory.

The Chairman.—You don't think that all officers ought to go through the ranks?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think in a battalion all officers should have the same kind of commission, as you have in a British Unit, or do you think it would be possible to have some men holding the King's Commission and some holding the Viceroy's Commission?

Witness.—I have not thought over this question, but I do not think in the Territorial Force they should have the same commission as they have in the regular army.

Mr. Burdon.—Then you think that the honorary commission should be removed and everybody should be Subedars and Jemadars?

Witness.—Yes, but only in the beginning. When the men are sufficiently trained and when they are considered fit to hold the King's Commission, they should be given that commission.

Mr. Burdon.—Can you think of the time when possibly an Indian Lieut.-Col. commanding a Territorial Force unit could be given a King's Commission?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—What officers would you have subordinate to him?

Witness.—Company officers and platoon officers.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you tell me what medical arrangements you would suggest for your unit?

Witness.—We have not got any special medical arrangements for our unit. We send our men to the local Indian Station Hospital.

Dr. Mullick.—From what area do you get your recruits? From a number of districts?

Witness.—I recruit from three districts, which are not far apart.

Dr. Mullick.—Do they all come to this particular Hospital?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—At the expense of Government?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Who is the medical officer who first examines your recruits, and what is his status?

Witness.—We go to the nearest civil hospital, and generally our medical officers are Assistant Surgeons or Civil Surgeons.

Dr. Mullick.—You have no standard laid down. They may be Assistant Surgeons or Civil Surgeons?

Witness.—They should be Assistant Surgeons but not Sub-Assistant Surgeons.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you have a further examination when you assemble?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you find any difference between the first and the second examination? Are there any rejections?

Witness.—In the first year I found some, but not afterwards.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think it would be better to have Indian Medical Officers attached to special units?

Witness.—I think Assistant Surgeons should be taken into the Territorial Force just as we take medical officers into other units on the same footing. If we take in Assistant Surgeons who are anxious to volunteer and take commissions, we can have our own medical officers.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you give them any training?

Witness.—They are already Assistant Surgeons.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you give them any military training?

Witness.—I don't think it would be necessary, except in the matter of military discipline, saluting, and things of that sort.

Dr. Mullick.—Have you any Medical Officer in your camp?

Witness.—No, we have none at present. We go to the nearest Civil Surgeon or Assistant Surgeon.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think it would be better to attach special officers to your unit?

Witness.—Yes, they would be most handy if they were attached to our unit.

Dr. Mullick.—Are the class of men you get the same as those who join the regular army?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—You cannot tap any other source?

Witness.—I tried to tap other sources, but I could not get men.

Dr. Mullick.—Is it because of the regulations that the men do not readily come forward?

Witness.—There are no special regulations. I had an order to raise a Hindu platoon. I tried my best to get them, but I could not.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think there should be any further inducement or improvement to attract them?

Witness.—I could not say.

Dr. Mullick.—I see that your officers are not drawn from the ranks. Are the men agreeable to the terms of service?

Witneess.—Yes. All officers bring their own men. Our officers are all landlords and zemindars. They bring their own platoons.

Dr. Mullick.—With regard to the question that Mr. Burdon asked you, do you think that a time will ever come when you can do away with the term of Naik, Havildar or Jemadar? Do the men object to that?

Witness.—I don't think so.

Dr. Mullick.—They object to the differentiation between Jemadar and second Lieut. and so on?

Witness.—As a matter of fact in the first year they did not understand what a dual commission meant. Now they are all satisfied and they do not object.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do the officers recruited direct prove themselves quite fit to command their men in the field and in the lines?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do they show any special aptitude to learn their work?

Witness.—95 per cent. volunteered for extra training, and they were attached to regular battalions.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think that if they were put along with the regular Indian officers, they would work like the latter class of officers?

Witness.—I do not think they are fit now. They require more training.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—If a man were put through the ranks straight away, do you think he would be more efficient than an officer recruited direct?

Witness.—They might be, but I do not favour this idea, because if we put them through the ranks and then promoted them to be Indian officers—Jemadar and so on—I do not think we should get the best type of men. The best type won't come into the ranks.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think they can keep good discipline?

Witness.—As far as my officers are concerned, they are commanding platoons all right and they are leaders. In the army there are many things to learn. They need more training. They have to command platoons, and two or four months' training is not sufficient to make them platoon commanders.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—If all the officers are given proper training, do you think all will prove to be good officers after a certain period of training or will you have to eliminate some of them?

Witness.—I think they would all prove good officers if they were to be attached to a regular battalion.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think they should go through a course of preliminary training with some battalion?

Witness.—Yes, for at least six months, before coming for the first year's training.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Would you give them a commission first and then send them for training?

Witness.—We have got no authority to send them for training until they are gazetted.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Where would you like to have your Company Commanders from? From outside?

Witness.—I think it would be much better to get them after they had been trained.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would recruit your second in command and your company commanders from the same people as your other officers in course of time?

Witness.—That would take a long time.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Suppose men are wanted for active service after a year or two, where would you find them from?

Witness.—I should find men from the regular army.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Your idea is that the territorial force unit should be self-contained.

Witness.—Yes, eventually.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—If the Territorial officers are given the same status as that of officers holding the King's Commission, would the platoon commanders willingly obey them? You have got the platoon commanders and you want somebody higher as company commanders. If you put in Indians with the status of a King's Commissioned officer, would these platoon commanders willingly obey them or would they prefer British officers to Indian officers?

Witness.—I think they serve under us quite willingly. We Indians get the King's Commission. I served in my battalion as Subedar and Subedar-Major, and I found the men under me obeying me without any difficulty at all.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—In your experience is the Territorial Force quite popular?

Witness.—It is becoming popular.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—With regard to your suggestion for increasing the popularity of the Territorial Force, I think you mentioned the payment of a retaining fee; how much would you pay?

Witness.—I think Rs. 2 would be enough for the first two years. After that it might be increased.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—Would you go on paying it month by month?

Witness.—When they get their pay, we should pay them a lump sum of Rs. 16 *plus* Rs. 2 a month.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—Do you think the Territorial Force is sufficiently popular with the educated classes? Among the classes from whom your battalion is recruited are the men educated or uneducated?

Witness.—They are Zemindars, and are mostly uneducated. We do not succeed in attracting the educated classes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—Can you suggest any means of attracting the educated classes? What do you think are the reasons why the educated classes do not come forward?

Witness.—I cannot say.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that the dual commission was not liked at first. Is it liked now?

Witness.—We have had no complaint this year. Our men are more or less satisfied.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the dual commission, to what sort of people have you granted commissions in your battalion? Are they educated men?

Witness.—Not all of them; half of them are educated. All of them can read and write their own language and half of them can read and write English.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—Do you think it would add to the popularity of the Force if the dual commission was abolished and they were given King's Commissions?

Witness.—I do not think they should be given King's Commissions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—Do you think it will add to the popularity of the Territorial Force so far as the upper classes are concerned?

Witness.—Do you mean if you give them King's Commission? I do not know how you will give them King's Commissions, but of course, if they are given the King's Commission, every body will be pleased.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—As regards the officers you promote, would you promote all your officers from the ranks?

Witness.—My officers have all got direct commissions, and that is the system I prefer.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What is the composition of your battalion?

Witness.—They are all Pathans, and no Hindus.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now said that you were asked to raise a Hindu platoon?

Witness.—I tried to recruit men in Campbellpore, I approached the leading Hindus in Mianwali and Campbellpore districts, but they could not raise the men.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think a Hindu would have succeeded where you have failed?

Witness.—I don't think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You suggested that a training of 4 to 6 months should be given?

Witness.—Four months for the first year and then two months every year.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said that that would be possible in the first year but not afterwards!

Witness.—Yes, because all the officers and men are drawn from the Zemindar classes; they are all busy men, and can only come for two months in the year.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You do not suggest that officers should go through the ranks? You prefer to have direct commission?

Witness.—Yes. Because if we do not give them direct commissions, most people in the Punjab would object to going through the ranks. It is a case of *izzat.*

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You suggest that your battalion should have a Medical Officer of its own?

Witness.—Yes. If we can get the men, they will be very handy.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would accept an Assistant Surgeon or a Commissioned Officer?

Witness.—Either of them, but not a Sub-Assistant Surgeon.

Lieut.-Col. Gidney.—Would you accept an Assistant Surgeon or any private qualified man?

Witness.—Any private practitioner will meet our requirements, as long as he is fully qualified.

Dr. Hyder.—You would recommend the payment of a retaining fee instead of a bonus?

Witness.—I suggest that a retaining fee should be given, and the men should be paid the fee when they come for training.

Dr. Hyder.—Don't you think that you want to give them something to refresh their memories when you are not in touch with them? When they come for training you are in touch with them.

Witness.—Yes, but if we give them a retaining fee they will be reminded of their liabilities, and so the system of paying them a retaining fee is the better. Many of the men are not at home in the non-training period. Some of them join the regular army; some of the men serve in Bombay and Calcutta.

Dr. Hyder.—But how could you pay them when they are not at home? My point is this. They might not forget you and your Territorial Force if we reminded them of your existence.

Mr. Calvert.—Which are your districts?

Witness.—Campbellpur, Mianwali and Hazara.

Mr. Calvert.—There are no large towns?

Witness.—There are no very large towns.

Mr. Calvert.—And practically no Hindus?

Witness.—No, there are none.

Mr. Calvert.—Practically there are no agricultural Hindus at all?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—And there is no large educated class?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—Now, in the districts, isn't there a strong rural aristocracy, consisting of big tribal leaders?

Witness.—There are big landlords who are the heads of their tribes.

Mr. Calvert.—And if you want to train the heads of these tribes as officers you cannot very well put them through the mill. That, I presume, is one of the reasons why you prefer to take your officers direct?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—You could with proper propaganda probably raise far more men than you have got?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be possible in the Jhelum district to raise a Territorial Force cavalry regiment on the principle of the Yeomanry at home, the men of the district supplying their own horses?

Witness.—I don't think a cavalry regiment would be possible, because I don't think sufficient people could afford to keep horses for the extra 10 months when they are not training. Probably Shahpur could do it as their land is irrigated.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing the men were available, do you think it would be possible to train cavalry soldiers in the time at present allotted for territorial training?

Witness.—No. The infantry get two months preliminary and one month a year. Cavalry would need four months and two months. But I suggest that it would be best to give infantry four months and two months and cavalry six months and two months.

The Chairman.—Could you get men efficient in that time.

Witness.—The first year but not after that.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think you can train territorial cavalry after the first year with two months a year and keep them efficient?

Witness.—If they have a sufficient grounding the first year. I don't think four months is a sufficient grounding for cavalry.

Mr. Burdon.—But if you had six months training the first year, after that do you think two months a year would be sufficient for cavalry?

Witness.—No. I don't think it is sufficient. If we can get the money I think we ought to do more than two months.

Mr. Burdon.—You think that in order to make an efficient cavalry soldier you want more than two months' training a year.

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—What period do you think necessary?

Witness.—Three months a year, after a preliminary training of six months.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—What is the motive which ordinarily induces the men to join the Territorial Force. Is it desire for payment or patriotism?

Witness.—I don't think it is patriotism as yet—not in the Punjab, as far as I know.

The Chairman.—What makes them join?

Witness.—They take it up just to fight. They are all fighting classes. Those who have not been taken into the Regular Army go into the Territorial Force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyar.—They belong to the same classes from which the Regular Army is recruited.

Examination of Major N. M. Grylls, Adjutant, 11/1st Punjab Regiment.

November 11th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are Adjutant of the 11/1st Punjabis, and have come to give us your advice and evidence from that standpoint?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Is the Territorial Force popular in your district?

Witness.—As long as they cannot get anything better to do the class that is enlisted in the regular Indian Army will always come in, but I cannot get a single man from any other class. I find that every year I have to replace men who have taken service either in the Regular Army or the Police. I have had absolutely no response whatever in my part of the Punjab from classes which do not normally enlist in the Indian Army.

The Chairman.—That is to say, you get quite an adequate response from the martial classes and when they get the chance they go on to the Regular Army or the Police. But you get no response from the non-martial people.

Witness.—Absolutely none.

The Chairman.—Have you got any educated men in your unit?

Witness.—It depends on what you mean by educated.

The Chairman.—Any men of a fairly high standard of education and good social status.

Witness.—The officers are all, I think, of good social status, but their education is lacking in many cases. They could not, for instance, with a few exceptions, come here and talk English to this committee. The men are not educated; they are just the Punjabi Muhammadans whom we all know in the Regular Army.

The Chairman.—Generally speaking, do you think that by altering our policy to any extent we could make your Territorial Force more popular?

Witness.—Do you mean more popular for the non-martial classes?

The Chairman.—More popular for the class that you admit.

Witness.—Yes, I do; in one or two ways. I think that, for instance, it would be more popular, and you would get more men to stay with me and not go on, say, to the Regular Army, if there was a retaining fee on the same lines as there is in the Reserve.

The Chairman.—As an alternative to that, do you think it would be advisable to give them a bonus, or do you particularly advocate a retaining fee?

Witness.—I think in practice it would be the same thing. I would not suggest giving them the bonus until they had completed their training and came up again. The man would be paid it at the end of the training. He would then have 11 months going round doing nothing.

The Chairman.—Could you suggest any means by which we could make your Force popular among the non-martial class?

Witness.—I am afraid I cannot. I have done my best myself and I have had no response at all. I have had a certain number of applications to join the commissioned ranks, but absolutely none for the non-commissioned and private ranks. Not a single man has come forward. It is not for want of advertisement, I don't think. The civil authorities have been very good about that.

The Chairman.—As regards your commissioned ranks, do you think the present method of selecting candidates is satisfactory?

Witness.—Quite satisfactory, as far as I am concerned.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be sound if everybody enlisted in the ranks and you selected your officers from the ranks.

Witness.—No, I don't. I think it is necessary that the officers should be drawn from a class to whom the men look up in civil life, from those who are their natural leaders.

The Chairman.—But don't you think that, in order to make him a better officer you should insist on his going through the regular training?

Witness.—He could not get that training from me. I have got to do everything in 28 days, and I have no time to look after officers' training. I think the officers ought certainly to go through the mill from the bottom, but I suggest that they should do so with the regular training battalion.

The Chairman.—That is to say, you would select your officer and then you would put him through a course in the ranks of a regular battalion?

Witness.—Exactly. Just as we all did at Sandhurst or as any recruit does.

The Chairman.—When you are selecting your officers, do you think the present officers of the Territorial battalion should have a say in the selection?

Witness.—I don't see what it has got to do with them, until they become commanding officers. I think it is outside their province altogether.

The Chairman.—You don't think it would be possible to find out whether he would be acceptable to the battalion?

Witness.—I think the Commanding Officer is quite capable of seeing to that.

The Chairman.—The Commanding Officer's selection and consent is necessary.

Witness.—It is always subject to the approval of the civil authorities.

The Chairman.—But in practice you find out first if the candidate is suitable in all respects and then send his name up for a commission.

Witness.—I think it is outside the province of the Territorial officer until he rises to a higher rank than he has got at present.

Dr. Mullick.—What are your present medical arrangements?

Witness.—Merely a branch of the regular Indian Station Hospital.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you call all your recruits to the Station and examine them?

Witness.—As I go round the district, the local civil doctor will do the examination for me or the local military surgeon according to where I may happen to be recruiting.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you have them waiting till you get there?

Witness.—I make an appointment with the man who wishes to bring me a recruit at a certain place. I go round recruiting, and the officers that I have help me in getting the men. It is on that basis that the whole battalion is recruited.

Dr. Mullick.—Do I understand that your officers also go round recruiting?

Witness.—I go to their homes.

Dr. Mullick.—You have no such thing as a regular medical officer attached to your unit?

Witness.—Not to my unit. Nor to units of the regular army. They use the Indian Station Hospital. Medical officers do not belong to particular regiments as they used to before the war.

Dr. Mullick.—Would it facilitate work if you had recognised medical men of your own?

Witness.—I find no difficulty at all at present.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you get a good standard of physique?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Would it not be improved if you had a medical officer in each district?

Witness.—I don't think so. It is quite adequate at present.

Dr. Mullick.—During your training do you have a medical officer with you?

Witness.—No, nor do they in regular regiments. I don't think it is necessary. The medical officers come round inspecting my men at intervals in exactly the same way as they do with the men in the Regular Army.

Dr. Mullick.—But having regard to the object of the Indian Territorial Force, that is to say, to be a second line to the regular units do you think that a medical person would be helpful from the hygienic point of view and various other medical military points of view?

Witness.—I don't think we want it any more than we want it for the Regular Army.

Dr. Mullick.—My point is that the I. T. F. ought to have medical officers attached to its battalions.

Witness.—As was the practice before the war.

Dr. Mullick.—If you had an officer attached to your unit, would it help in time of need?

Witness.—I don't think it would help at all. If the unit was out in the field, it would get a medical officer.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Are the Indian officers of your battalion contented with their rank and pay?

Witness.—That is rather difficult to answer. I think they would like more pay, like most people. I have heard some of them say that as they have honorary royal commissions they should be paid more than their brother subedars, but that is a point I am very strongly opposed to.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But if they get paid for their honorary rank and they go as reinforcements to a regular battalion, you would be paying them more than their seniors, and there would be jealousy and friction?

Witness.—That is so.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Are those officers whom you have taken direct, showing up well?

Witness.—Yes, they are keen up to a point. The great difficulty I have with them is to get them to look after their men.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—They are not so good as the ordinary Indian Army officers?

Witness.—Certainly not. They look after themselves much more. I dare say it is the result of want of experience to a certain extent.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—I should think that it is due to their not having gone through the same mill.

Witness.—That is the experience they lack.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Don't you think it would be good for them to go through all the grades until they take command?

Witness.—You mean, that they should actually be sepoys?

Capt. Suraj Singh.—That is the case in the regular army, and it is necessary for them to have a proper grounding.

Witness.—Would you have these commissioned officers take a voluntary course in the regular army?

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Take them as officers and then send them for training to a regular unit.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What is the number of men in your battalion?

Witness.—The full strength—from memory—is 710 men and 23 officers.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What communities do they belong to,—to the Punjabi Muhammadan entirely?

Witness.—Yes, of the four districts, Rawalpindi, Jhelum, Shahpur and Gujrat.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You have got no men belonging to the Hindu or Sikh community?

Witness.—I have got one Sikh.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You have not been able to recruit Hindus because they have not come forward at all? Are those districts entirely Muhammadan?

Witness.—Very largely Muhammadan.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The Hindus are not what you call the martial class? Are there many Hindus in the rural population?

Witness.—Not many. There are a certain number in each village, but they are just the shopkeeper class.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What do you think of the proposal to recruit some of the officers from the University Training Corps?

Witness.—I don't know how it is going to be feasible. For one thing it depends on whether I have got any vacancy for them. Will they take anything else? Will they become N. C. Os.? It is a question of vacancies. We are full up with officers, and we find that the men go, but the officers don't.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are your officers well educated?

Witness.—I should say that a third of them talk English very well and that possibly half of them have a smattering of English. Only one has been through the University.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What are the classes from which your battalions are recruited?

Witness.—Exactly the same as for the regular army.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You advocate the payment of a retaining fee?

Witness.—I don't know that I advocate it altogether.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How often would you pay it?

Witness.—Once a year, not month by month.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How much would you pay as retaining fee and would you pay anything else?

Witness.—I would not pay anything else, Rs. 3 would be reasonable. Rs. 2 would be acceptable.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What would it amount to in the lump?

Witness.—Rs. 22 for 11 months.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you pay them anything more?

Witness.—Of course their pay for the month in full.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Then you would pay them 22 *plus* 16. Is there any object in calling it a retaining fee? Why not simply make a lump payment on the completion of each year's training?

Witness.—I see no object. There is no meaning in making it a retaining fee. It would possibly make the force more popular. But I don't know that I advocate it, because the idea of the Territorial Force to my mind is to show whether there is any patriotism.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But, suppose you give a man a month's pay and another month's pay, would not that serve the purpose? Rs. 16 *plus* 16? Would that serve the purpose equally well?

Witness.—Well, I think Rs. 2 a month is the minimum. I would suggest a little more than that.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said you had no response from the educated class. Do you know the reasons for that?

Witness.—I don't know at all. It is not for want of advertisement.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—No. I quite understand. You are in favour of the system of direct appointment to commissions?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now suggested that you were in favour of direct appointment for officers?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—The Indian officers in the Indian Army go through the mill in the ranks and when you were at Sandhurst you went through the regular training. Why do you advocate an opposite course for the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I don't. I say that they should certainly go through the mill in a regular training battalion, but their appointment should be direct.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do the men have any difficulty in coming for their medical examination to Jhelum?

Witness.—No, they are paid to come.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would it be better to get them in batches?

Witness.—I do get them in batches.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Does a medical officer go with you?

Witness.—Yes, it is exactly the same system as in the regular army.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I should like your opinion. You said that a retaining fee should be paid to keep your men and that such a fee would be a means of enhancing the popularity of the I. T. F. Well, would you advise a continuance of the period of training as it is, or would you increase the annual training? We have had one witness here who suggested that the training should be for four months and two months.

Witness.—That is a point on which I would lay stress.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—That brings you very near a quarter of the training which the regular forces do.

Witness.—That is another point on which I lay much stress.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—It would mean an increasing expenditure for the I. T. F.

Witness.—I must not be said to advocate the retaining fee.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said just now that it would make the force more popular.

Witness.—It would.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you get many men from the Rawalpindi district?

Witness.—I have got the strength of about a company.

Dr. Hyder.—If they could, would the men like to remain with you as full soldiers? Would they like to be with you the full twelve months?

Witness.—I think so; most of them, except those who have nobody in their homes to look after the crops.

Dr. Hyder.—How is it that there are no educated men in your battalion?

Witness.—I have really no explanation.

Dr. Hyder.—Is it not due to the fact that there are no educated people there at all?

Witness.—I should not have said that was the reason; it is the headquarters of two or three very big districts, and I should think you ought to be able to get the strength of three or four brigades.

Dr. Hyder.—In the villages?

Witness.—In the villages there are no educated people, but the educated people in the towns have made no response whatever.

Dr. Hyder.—They are averse to it?

Witness.—I do not know why they are averse, but I think they do not like the job. They have not responded in the least, at any rate.

Dr. Hyder.—Are these dual commissions satisfactory?

Witness.—I think they are most unsatisfactory.

Dr. Hyder.—Why?

Witness.—Because they put the officers in such an extraordinary position. On parade they are junior to every junior officer of the Indian Army; you blow the whistle to dismiss, and they become senior to them.

Dr. Hyder.—How do they become senior?

Witness.—They take precedence according to their rank off parade. On parade they are jemadars and subedars and junior to all regular officers of those ranks.

Dr. Hyder.—Do your man come to you because they like soldiering or because they wish to have the money.

Witness.—I do not suggest that they would come if there was no money, but they come because they like soldiering. 47 per cent. of my own battalion have already been demobilized from the regular army.

Mr. Calvert.—Is it not correct that two of your districts, Rawalpindi and Jhelum are the most martial districts in India?

Witness.—I think they have the best record in the war.

Mr. Calvert.—Normally the people are martial?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—The complaint is not that you cannot get recruits, but that the recruits would like to come for more than one month?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—You could get many recruits for the Territorial Force if you could keep them longer?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you also include Shahpur in your area?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you get many recruits from there?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you think the fact that they are prosperous there has anything to do with it?

Witness.—That has something to do with it; they were the most difficult in the war also.

Col. Llewhellin.—Do you advocate a longer period of training?

Witness.—That is the chief point necessary, in my opinion, to make the force a success. It is very essential to give all ranks, officers and non-commissioned officers and men more training. They get 28 days' work in a year, and in that time they have got to rush through every thing. As a result the standard of training is no better from one year to the next. There can be nothing progressive about it with the present periods of training, and the reason is that the men have had no real grounding. You can pick out the men who have been in the regular army with half an eye because they have had a grounding.

Col. Llewhellin.—What do you suggest as a minimum?

Witness.—As a minimum, four months.

Col. Llewhellin.—You think they would come for that period?

Witness.—I think they probably would. They could easily come for three. They could come for three and a half, but I would rather make it four.

Col. Llewhellin.—Would you have any cavalry?

Witness.—No; let us make the infantry a success first.

Mr. E. Burdon.—With your present system and facilities do you think you would find it possible to train Territorial Force officers to be competent to command a company?

Witness.—No, not at present.

The Chairman.—But as we must train our Territorial Force officers to command companies, what are we to do?

Witness.—The only thing is to give them more time at it. At the Platoon Commanders' Course at Jhelum I have the officers of two battalions, and the one thing I cannot teach them anything about is how to look after their men, because there are no men.

Mr. E. Burdon.—Then you advocate a longer period of training with special classes of instruction?

Witness.—Certainly. They should go to a weapon training school for instance. It would be a great thing to give them vacancies at that, or at a school for physical training or anything of that sort.

The Chairman.—As a general question, do you think the martial classes which you recruit for your Territorial battalion are satisfied with the present regulations except as regards the period of training which you have just mentioned?

Witness.—Perfectly satisfied. I think many of them come from those classes whose fathers have always served and they have a certain feeling of shame that they are only soldiers for 28 days instead of something which is really worth while.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be possible to raise a territorial cavalry regiment in Shahpur.

Witness.—I once discussed that with Colonel Sir Umar Hayat Khan, but I think it is very difficult for me to express an opinion.

The Chairman.—But with the influence of Umar Hayat Khan they might be raised?

Witness.—He would get a squadron anyhow.

Examination of Mr. Hyder Khan, M.A., B.Sc., Muslim University, Aligarh.

November 11th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you kindly tell the Committee your qualifications for giving evidence, so that they may know the point of view from which you give it.

Witness.—I am a 2nd Lieutenant in the Allahabad Battalion of the University Training Corps. This is my connection with the I. T. F. movement; otherwise I am a Professor teaching Science at the Muslim University at Aligarh.

The Chairman.—Then you are giving your evidence from the point of view of the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Would you say the U. T. C. is popular.

Witness.—It is fairly popular, but at Aligarh, it is not efficient. We got a little bit backward from want of instructors, and as yet our boys have never been able to realise that they have learnt any new art. They have just been marching up and down and forming fours and changing direction, and have not been issued with rifles or anything. As a result they have been rather ridiculed by the others. They say "You have been a year at this and this is all that you have been able to do." If we had our own armoury and instructor, it would be all right and the Corps would be very popular indeed. As it is we are given half an instructor. He stays three days with us and goes to Agra for three days. On the three days when he is not there, as none of us are really trained, our parades are rather ridiculous at times.

The Chairman.—You want a permanent staff?

Witness.—Yes, and an armoury; and rifles to be issued as soon as possible.

The Chairman.—And what else would you do to make your U. T. C. popular?

Witness.—The officer class has one grievance. At present they are gazetted as jemadars, and not as 2nd Lieutenants, which means when the question of payment comes, they are given only Rs. 2-8 a day. My idea was that you should get as officers people who are getting something like 20 to 25 rupees a day in their civil employment, and they would thus be fairly responsible officers. When such people find that all their day's work is worth only Rs. 2-8 they feel rather disgusted. As a result it is the Rs. 2-8 class which wants to enlist as officers and which applies for commissions instead of people trained in English universities like myself. That has been the cause of unpopularity amongst people of what I consider my own class at the university.

The Chairman.—They think they are inadequately paid?

Witness.—They think they are inadequately ranked. It is not a question of pay, but it is a question of rank. They are ranked with people who would be getting Rs. 2-8 a day.

The Chairman.—But who are these officers?

Witness.—At present I am the only one. There are two vacancies, and for these vacancies none of the people who have been educated at Cambridge for instance have come forward. They say they will not enter the Corps, because, if they do, they will be ranked as jemadars getting Rs. 2-8 a day instead of as 2nd-Lieutenant.

The Chairman.—You consider if they were given the rank and the pay of 2nd-Lieutenants that would be the attraction required?

Witness.—I think that attraction would certainly bring them in. We believe in calling a spade a spade. Call us jemadars and nothing else, but to call us 2nd-Lieutenants for one purpose, and jemadars for another is not suitable. For instance as Orderly Officer in Camp we are ranked as Honorary 2nd-Lieutenant, and for the purpose of our allowances we are ranked as jemadars. Why not call us jemadars and be done with it?

The Chairmen.—That is, you would prefer to have a definite rank, jemadar or 2nd-Lieutenant, one or the other?

Witness.—Yes. Then I should be able to choose whether I should like the rank, and whether I should join the movement or not. Personally speaking I am so keen about this movement that probably I should stick on as an ordinary sepoy.

The Chairman.—About the question of pay, if I remember correctly, you get no pay at all?

Witness.—We get no pay ourselves, but, when the accounts of the camp are made up for the 10 days, we draw from Government at that rate and it is credited to the expenses of the camp. That is how it is worked; if we were to get the better pay of 2nd-Lieutenant, probably we should get better food in camp.

The Chairman.—You want more money for the common fund?

Witness.—That is what the advantage would be.

The Chairman.—For what your expenses are in camp you are inadequately paid?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Is there any other means by which you could make the Corps more popular?

Witness.—My idea is efficiency; we must make it a little more efficient. In order to obtain efficiency I have suggested that officers should be attached to regular regiments for six months, not for one month.

The Chairman.—Could you spare members of the university staff for six months?

Witness.—The University will spare them if Government pays them at an adequate rate. If the Government were to pay these people, the University would be able to get some men to do their work for them as substitutes, in the same way as my friend, Dr. Hyder, is working on this Committee.

Mr. E. Burdon.—Can you tell me whether you approve of the principle that members of the University Training Corps should have no liability for actual military service?

Witness.—No, I do not think it is at all satisfactory, because I personally feel that, with the short time that they do this military work, they will never be efficient enough to risk anything; those who are efficient, will be so keen that they will volunteer.

Mr. E. Burdon.—The question I am asking you is whether you approve of the principle that the University Training Corps units should not be made liable for actual military service.

Witness.—No, I do not approve of this principle; I think that they should be as liable as members of the I. T. F.

Mr. E. Burdon.—You think the University Training Corps should be called up to quell disturbances or to go on field service?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. E. Burdon.—You do not approve of the principle of restricting the University Training Corps largely to an agency for forming character and for education?

Witness.—I think in practice it has got to be that, but I should not exclude them from liability for military service.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it is desirable that units composed of boys who are undergoing education should be liable to be called out, or should have even a nominal liability to be called out to quell a civil disturbance?

Witness.—The nominal liability would be good in this respect, that they would feel they were really taking part in the movement. Otherwise they would feel they were nobodies. In practice they would never be called on, but if the liability were there, they would have something to think about.

The Chairman.—But you have to look at it in this way. Either you have a corps, which has a distinct liability, or a corps which is maintained for educational purposes and the inculcation of the martial spirit. What class would you like your U. T. C. to belong to?

Witness.—The first class, with the liability.

Mr. Burdon.—But you do not think it would be possible to enforce this liability?

Witness.—I do not think it would be possible.

Mr. Burdon.—You must understand that in the military organisation everything has got to be clear. We want to know if a particular unit is to be relied on, because it is only in that way we can know the total military forces of the country. If we are not entitled to rely on it as part of the military forces of the country, why should we give it a nominal value?

Witness.—I suggested the nominal liability to give it an *esprit de corps*, to make the boys feel that they are soldiers and are not doing it for recreation.

Mr. Burdon.—And yet at the same time they would have to recognise that they were excluded entirely from the assessment of the military forces of the country

Witness.—I think those who would do the assessment would be wise not to assess them at any very high value.

Mr. Burdon.—No, they would exclude them altogether.

The Chairman.—Then you come back to the educational principle. Whatever may be your idea for giving the people of this country a martial spirit so that they may form part of the Dominion army, you must begin with the educational principle, and then go on to a distinct liability, where a man says "I am trained to go to the frontier and fight."

Witness.—That is true; that would come out in practice.

The Chairman.—But still I understand from what you say, that, whatever liability is imposed on the U. T. C., what would really happen is that they would come under the educational principle, and nothing more?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Don't you think a certain amount of *esprit de corps* might be infused into the U. T. C. if you allowed them to take part in ceremonial parades and trained them to high discipline in movement for that purpose?

Witness.—I think it is very desirable that they should be given some sort of importance, and they should be trained up to the standard of forming Guards of Honour and of being reviewed when the Governor visits Aligarh.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the parents of boys at your University would like them to belong to the U. T. C. if they had even a theoretical liability to be sent on service?

Witness.—I think the parents would be a bit nervous. Parents have been asking me very silly questions about this sort of thing, but I have not taken much notice of the parents' nervousness.

Mr. Burdon.—But still we want to make the U. T. C. a success, and, if we can make it a success within the limits you suggest that practical necessity indicates, that would be something. Have you found such training as the boys have done in the U. T. C. has improved their character, their sense of discipline or improved them in any way from the point of view which must appeal to University educational authorities?

Witness.—I think they have slightly improved from the point of view of discipline, but this improvement has been very small, and the reason for this has been that we could not get an instructor. We got a temporary man who was considered incompetent and was sent away. Then we got a Staff Sergeant, but he had behaved badly somewhere and he is now doing two years' imprisonment, so that for three months we were without any one. Then we got our present man, who is quite good, but he is hardly ever there.

Mr. Burdon.—You think more efficient and more continuous instruction would give results?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You think there would be a tendency to foster a spirit of patriotism and interest in the common good?

Witness.—I should not go as far as that, but certainly it would foster a spirit of discipline, and it would improve their physical appearance, the way they walk, the way they behave and that sort of thing.

Mr. Burdon.—And the University authorities would be only too willing to foster *esprit de corps* in the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You are keen on the U. T. C. as part of university life?

Witness.—Very keen indeed.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you suggest that the officers in the U. T. C. should be members of the teaching staff, and should not be drawn from among the students?

Witness.—I think for the next 10 years at least they should be drawn from the members of the staff. After that we will see what sort of standard our boys have reached. I found in the last camp that even those boys who were sergeants were inclined to be a bit bumpticus, and they did not get on very well with the privates. I know a case in which an Allahabad sergeant was very nearly given a good hiding by one of our boys. He was a bit bumptious and we had a big Pathan from the frontier who would not stand that.

The Chairman.—One of the chief objects, among many others, when the U. T. C. was formed, was the pious hope that the U. T. C. should provide officers for the Territorial Force, because naturally boys coming from the U. T. C. had a very much higher standard of education than the ordinary men. Have you had any experience of any of your boys going to the Territorial Force as officers?

Witness.—No; up to the present we have not even trained a single man.

Dr. Mullick.—You want to be treated more as soldiers, not as toy soldiers, and therefore you put a certain amount of value on your unit?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—One of their purposes is to help the civil authority, if necessary? Suppose it came to a Hindu-Muhammadan riot, to what extent could we rely upon your unit to do their duty?

Witness.—I think they would obey all orders. They would be slightly less efficient than ordinary police constables.

Dr. Mullick.—I am talking of the spirit?

Witness.—The spirit would be all right.

Captain Suraj Singh.—Would boys refuse to serve as privates after they passed out?

Witness.—I think most of them are ambitious to get commissions in the general Territorial Force, but some of them would be willing to join as privates.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think we can give all the students the rank of Lieutenants straight away?

Witness.—No.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—If all the educated boys whom we expect to come forward and serve and become soldiers, wish to become officers, who is going to be a soldier?

Witness.—The idea present in their minds is that they will have the cultivating class and the ordinary citizen who is not highly educated to form the backbone of the privates. The U. T. C. will form the backbone of the officers.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think these people will come and serve and be content to stop with the rank of private?

Witness.—It will depend upon their education; if they have common sense they can certainly improve and rise; but, as you know much better than I do, in modern military life a strong arm alone does not go very far; and, if that is their only qualification, they will have to remain as privates or at the most become lance naiks.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But there is the question of discipline: do you think a young boy straight from the university will command respect from the men below him?

Witness.—These people will certainly command respect, because they will have the skill and the education.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But what about military education? Will they appreciate the conditions of sepoys and the men below them?

Witness.—I think they will certainly appreciate the condition of the privates and the non-commissioned officers; they have been in the country and they know the men; it depends on their common sense; they have no objection to joining as privates, but they do not look forward to remaining as privates.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—They would rather come in as officers?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But you said these boys did not behave well towards their N.C.O.'s?

Witness.—We have turned those boys out, and have taken in better ones.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—You cannot do that every day?

Witness.—No, of course not; but when they have had their training they will know much better.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Would you send them to some unit for preliminary training before they can accept a commission or would you give them their commissions straight away?

Witness.—They could be taken on as supernumerary officers, but they must be in the ranks and go through the whole drill and qualify in their battalions.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What are the numbers in your unit?

Witness.—About 70.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What is the strength of your university?

Witness.—About 800. We agitated for an increase of numbers in the unit.

Dr. Paranjpye.—There is a great demand to join?

Witness.—Yes; I have left this part of the agitation to the Vice-Chancellor and I believe he is sending frantic letters to the proper quarters.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Supposing there were no limit, how many would join?

Witness.—We might raise a company and a half, that is, about three times the present number; but for the size of the place I would recommend two more platoons, that is 148.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You do not want any new measures for making your units popular?

Witness.—The only thing I want is for Government to pay to have our officers attached to regular regiments for six months; I want the officers to learn their work well.

The Chairman.—That is to say you are quite convinced that, until we have made arrangements to train officers properly, not to put too fine a point on it, your training corps will be no use at all?

Witness.—Yes, that is quite true; whenever I am on the parade ground, I feel shy and awkward, as though I might make an ass of myself at any moment. I should personally like to go to some good battalion and be trained for six months at a time. Taking the training in batches is no good; I should forget most of it if I took the training in batches.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would you be prepared to spend your vacation of three months for this purpose?

Witness.—One long vacation for three months and three months' leave from the university would do.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think the introduction of the study of military history would make your unit more efficient?

Witness.—I do not know very much about that; but I think really efficient training is much better than history.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would you agree to work entirely honorarily, the Government paying the expenses of your unit?

Witness.—The Government do pay as it is. I always feel that, when you have got a man feeling all the time that he is absolutely honorary, you have got no hold on him.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But the officer does not personally get anything of what is supposed to be credited to him?

Witness.—He will feel that he is contributing so much to the expenses of the camp.

Dr. Paranjpye.—On the other hand I believe at Cambridge, for example, the officers are not paid?

Witness.—When I was at Cambridge I was not allowed to join, and so I do not know.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think that the prospect of getting a permanent commission in the Army after sufficient training will be sufficient incentive?

Witness.—It would be an incentive; but I do not know whether it would be possible to get sufficient training for that in the near future; I think it will take another five years from now before our University Training Corps are really efficient enough; after five years it will be possible to give people this incentive.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What do you think about university men being allowed to join the Auxiliary Force after they leave the university?

Witness.—They would then have permanent jobs and they could not leave them for long periods. If ex-U. T. C. men are allowed to join the Auxiliary Force I should certainly think they should be given this privilege; but it will depend upon the sort of position they hold in life afterwards.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How long have you had your platoons?

Witness.—About a year.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—For some time you have had no instructors?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How many instructors have you had altogether?

Witness.—Three.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In succession?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—They have been of indifferent quality?

Witness.—The quality was all right; one was an indifferent person; the other was a very good instructor, I was told; I never saw him.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Anyhow you were not satisfied with the quality of the instructors or with the quality of the instruction they gave to the platoons?

Witness.—It is the quantity, not the quality, that I have objected to.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have had grounds for dissatisfaction, in quantity and quality?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you had camps?

Witness.—One camp.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—For your own platoon?

Witness.—For the whole United Provinces Battalion at a place five miles from Allahabad.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have had no rifle practice?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—No rifles have been issued to any of the United Provinces Training Corps?

Witness.—No. We have had no practice in shooting or musketry; but the inspecting officer said he was very pleased with our work and that he would make a recommendation.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The training of your platoon has been carried on under rather unfavourable conditions?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that, speaking of the military value of the platoons, you would not assess them too high? Supposing the training had been carried on under more favourable conditions with proper instructors and with plenty of rifle practice and so on, would you still say that your military value would be poor?

Witness.—I would still say so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are you thinking of the standard of the regular army when you say that?

Witness.—I am afraid I do not know enough about that; but I was watching the work of the Imperial Service Troops at Gilgit when I was there; they are regulars in a way; but Major Erskine used to say they were as bad as they possibly could be and I judged by them. Our population is migratory; a boy may or may not come to join the corps; and when he goes out he does not think of soldiering so much as of his bread and butter. We have to depend upon the third and fourth year students; there is no drill in the hot weather—only in the cold weather; those who are going up for the examination think more of their books than of the drill; they are indifferent. We can only give them six months' training and that at three hours a week works out to eighty hours' drill; that is not sufficient to make anybody a soldier.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you know the number of drills that a man in the territorial force has to undergo?

Witness.—28 days preliminary training and 28 days a year; it is concentrated into a few days and its effect is much greater.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing a boy who joined your platoon kept up his training for four years, do you think he will improve?

Witness.—Yes; he will make a very good man.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think the training ought to be such as to produce a full-fledged soldier or simply a good territorial?

Witness.—My idea is to get a full-fledged citizen who is capable of defending his own country. My standard would be such that with a little training he could become an officer in the territorial force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think that with a little training they could come up to that standard?

Witness.—Yes; if they were trained for four years.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to your men who leave the university would you provide them with any opportunities for subsequent training after they have left the university?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is it desirable or not to provide them with opportunities for subsequent training?

Witness.—If you are thinking of the case of the University Training Corps, I think there should be certain kinds of class companies for them in the general territorial force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What about the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—It would certainly be very desirable if they could get into the Auxiliary Force and continue this training.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You spoke of a nominal liability to serve. Supposing there was some need for utilising your U. T. C. would you refuse to send out your boys?

Witness.—I should welcome an opportunity of showing what they could do.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would like them to have some sense of responsibility?

Witness.—Certainly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would not shrink from employing them?

Witness.—Not a bit; of course we should like them to be a bit more trained than they are now.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you like the idea of dual commissions, that is to say Jemadar and Honorary Lieutenant?

Witness.—I do not like it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you for instance employ the U. T. C. for the purpose of internal security if necessary.

Witness.—Yes. But, as I have said, this employment depends upon their efficiency.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—If they are efficient?

Witness.—Yes; I should certainly employ them then.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think that, if liability for service outside India were imposed, it would make it more popular or the reverse?

Witness.—When some of my boys came and asked me about this class of service outside India, I simply told them that they would never be sent anywhere with their present training. No one would take any notice of them just now.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You satisfied them by a reassurance as to their impotence?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—So you really fall under the educational principle, pure and simple?

Witness.—Yes, for practical purposes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advise compulsory training?

Witness.—No; because some of the boys have got physical defects. Besides, if you make the training compulsory it takes away from the pride one feels in the body; that is one point; and then there is the question of expense which has to be considered.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What is the composition of your university?

Witness.—About 90 per cent. Muhammadans and about 10 per cent. Hindus.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Can you not get more men for your platoon?

Witness.—I can certainly get more; I have 90 on the list already, while the platoon consists of only 74 men.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advise military training as a subject of your university curriculum?

Witness.—No; not yet.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Why should you not include that in order to inculcate the martial spirit?

Witness.—I do not think there is really much value in syllabi.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you really look upon the University Training Corps as the frame work to supply your officers for the other battalions of the country?

Witness.—Not the frame-work; but I certainly consider that they should be the backbone.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And you think they should be well trained but in other battalions?

Witness.—That is my real object.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You suggested six months' training; do you know of any university that would dislocate its work for six months for the more efficient training of the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Our university, I think, would gladly do it; our examinations are in April; the session commences again in November; during this period everybody is working practically half time; and every university is like that, with a slack season when they can spare their staff.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Dr. Mullick asked a question as to whether it would be suitable to send out the U. T. C. say to cope with an inter-communal outbreak. You made rather an evasive reply; you said you were sure they would respond to the call of duty; do you think the present U. T. C. is a fit body to do that?

Witness.—I do not think they are.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would not suggest their being given the task of quelling civil riots?

Witness.—Not at present.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You are insistent on that point?

Witness.—Quite insistent; but I must add that I do not think they will go and take part in the riot or anything of that sort; perhaps if fifty were sent to quell a riot half of them might fall out.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—It is indiscipline?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Not any unmartial spirit?

Witness.—No.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You say in your written evidence something about the illegality of Europeans joining the U. T. C. and at the same time in reply to Dr. Paranjpye you said you had no experience of the Auxiliary Force; but you have elsewhere in your evidence made a comparison between the two forces.

Witness.—I did not put it like that: I think that legally speaking one has to be enrolled a member of the territorial force before being made an officer. Now, these Europeans could not be enrolled as members of the territorial force and therefore they could not be appointed officers. But I found out in camp that some of them were officers in the Auxiliary Force and that they were attached to the U. T. C.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In your written evidence you advocate that Europeans should be enabled to become officers in the University Training Corps. I wish to draw your attention to the opinion given by an Anglo-Indian officer of the Indian Territorial Force in which he says:—

"At present there is no distinct unit which Anglo-Indian University students can enter. This being so I do fall in with the proposal that the Anglo-Indian youths be permitted to enter the U. T. C., at present confined to Indians only, with the two-fold reason that it may help to remove all racial distinctions, which is of paramount importance, and also lessen the expenditure for maintaining an extra unit."

Do you agree with that?

Witness.—Yes; I certainly agree that they ought to be allowed to join some of the units.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Again you make a statement that Rs. 300 outfit allowance is inadequate and that Rs. 500 should be given; would that cover replacements?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Supposing you were given your outfit and the cost of it was met by the army authorities, would you be satisfied?

Witness.—Quite satisfied.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You say that the officers should be supplied from the staff of the University; what is the average age of your staff? Is it on the other side of 40?

Witness.—No; I should think it would be about 30.

Mr. Calvert.—You say that if the officers rise from the ranks they will naturally be of the same class as the men. What do you mean by that?

Witness.—I have been thinking of some sort of class companies, so that, when you arrange the general territorial force, you need not mix up people of different standards.

Mr. Calvert.—The social classes?

Witness.—Yes. As a matter of fact the sentence in my written evidence to that effect was inserted because when I was in Gilgit seeing the Imperial Service Troops, where the officers are all men who have risen from the ranks, as soon as they have finished certain courses of training, I found that they mixed together with the men and they never punished anybody for anything; they cannot do it. Lack of discipline will kill anybody, however efficient at the start.

Mr. Calvert.—Later on you say that it would be disastrous if most of the officers were to come from the less educated zamindars. Is your objection to the education or to the zamindars?

Witness.—My object is to balance interests; I am really talking of the professional classes to which I belong. If professionally I earned a decent sum and if I joined this movement and got only Rs. 75 per mensem, I should

not be able to afford it. You have got to attract the professional classes by giving them some sort of allowance which is compatible with the kind of pay or money they are getting in their private life.

Mr. Calvert.—You could not get a zamindar?

Witness.—I am really talking of the educated classes.

Mr. Calvert.—From some of the evidence I rather got the impression that the educated people show some lack of respect to the Jemadars and Subedars?

Witness.—They certainly do, because the Jemadar is a man from the ranks and that is almost the utmost he can rise to; and his education is below the ordinary; for instance, my instructor was a Jemadar, and all I could do when I met him was to offer him a cigarette. When he had finished that I offered him another. We could not carry on any sort of conversation for even a few minutes.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you then put out of all consideration the fact that the gift of leadership has no connection with education?

Witness.—Not necessarily; there are born leaders; but I think education is certainly necessary in leaders.

Mr. Calvert.—You have had all big Indian leaders from uneducated men?

Witness.—That was in the days of brute force. I belong to the people who have got no land, but who have some sort of education, and I think we have got something and I put some value upon it; in some cases I put a little more value on it than on zamindari property. There is another point too. If we had these people, who are only zamindars and have no education, and if they were taken on like British officers, they would really have nothing to say; they would show themselves off very badly and that gives a bad name to the whole movement; they could not even talk decently. That is the sort of thing I am trying to avoid.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Is this training corps you have got just as popular with the Hindus as it is with the Muhammadans?

Witness.—Yes; but our Hindus are a very small body.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—The percentage in the corps would be about the same as in the university?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—You have some rich boys in your university.

Witness.—Yes. They are all keen on joining the Corps, rich or poor; but I find there are more rich boys in the corps keen on this thing.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—They are looking for commissions in the territorial forces?

Witness.—That is why they are more keen.

The Chairman.—Do you recommend that officers of the U. T. C. should be paid in the same way as officers in the provincial units?

Witness.—I think they ought actually to get the pay. Then they will realise what they are getting.

The Chairman.—They should make their own arrangements for their messing?

Witness.—Yes. If they are given pay, it will bring home to them what they are getting.

The Chairman.—With regard to A and B certificates, would you give them A or B certificates?

Witness.—I should very much like to give some sort of certificate to people who have finished their training.

The Chairman.—Would it count towards their examination?

Witness.—I think that is a matter which should be decided by the Universities. I should only accept what the members know about their subjects. I would allow them attendances for those days on which they have attended the camp or for days on which they have to travel.

The Chairman.—As regards the University examination, you would allow them the time, but not the certificates?

Witness.—Not the certificates, but I would allow them the time.

Examination of Hony. Second Lieut. A. N. Wadhawa, 11/15th Punjab Regiment.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are a Territorial Officer of the 11/15th Regiment and you come from Jullundur?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—How long have you been in the 11/15th Regiment?

Witness.—About three years ago. I came to it from the 71st Punjabis.

The Chairman.—From what districts do you get the men of your battalion?

Witness.—Of the four companies, there is one of Christians, drawn mostly from Amritsar, Sialkot and Montgomery districts. In the second company there are Sikhs, of Ludhiana district. The third consists of Kadianis from Gurdaspur district and the fourth of Jats from Karnal and Rohtak districts.

The Chairman.—What is the state of efficiency of your battalion? The Territorial Force is described as a second line to the regular army. How soon do you think that your battalion would be fit to take its place alongside the regular army either as a reinforcement or as an addition to the forces in the field?

Witness.—I think it would take some time, probably about 5 or 6 years, because the officers are not trained and the training staff changes every year.

The Chairman.—Do you think they improve from year to year, or when they have finished their year's training do they go home and forget what they have learnt?

Witness.—They forget everything.

The Chairman.—So that every year they have to begin anew?

Witness.—The training period of 28 days is not sufficient.

The Chairman.—Would you get your men to come for a longer time?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—In your opinion, if they are to take their proper place in the field, they would require a considerable period of intensive training before they would be fit to do so?

Witness.—I think they would require about three months training a year.

The Chairman.—Are the Territorial officers in your battalion satisfied with their position?

Witness.—No. They object to the dual commission. There should be only one commission.

The Chairman.—What would they like to be called?

Witness.—I think if they were given good pay and the King's Commission, it would be quite all right. But if they only get paid at the rate of Rs. 75, I think it is a disgrace to the British rank.

The Chairman.—Suppose your Territorial Force is to be a second line to the army, would it be proper to organize the battalions of Territorial Force exactly like the regular battalions, that is to say to have a colonel commanding, so many majors, so many captains, so many subalterns, and then in addition to these officers, your Subedars and Jemadars, as your platoon commanders or do you think it would create jealousy?

Witness.—That would be better than the present scheme.

The Chairman.—What do you think ought to be the qualification by which officers should get Commissions analogous to British commissioned officers?

Witness.—The present scheme of selection by recommendation is not at all satisfactory. The officer to be selected must have gone through the ranks and afterwards pass an examination and be found fit by his officer commanding.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that with the present arrangements for training it would be possible to train territorial force officers up to a standard which would make them competent to command a company?

Witness.—That is most essential.

Mr. Burdon.—Yes, but do you think that with your present arrangements for training you could do it?

Witness.—Not with the present system, I have never heard any one profess that an officer could be trained with 6 hours' daily parade. At present before the unit can do any work, the Instructor or the Company Commander has to teach the officer first and that takes at least 2 hours work a day.

Mr. Burdon.—What form of further training would you consider necessary to enable a Territorial Force officer to qualify as a Company Commander?

Witness.—Officers must have extra training.

Mr. Burdon.—With regular battalions?

Witness.—At army schools, not in a battalion.

Mr. Burdon.—But don't you think they want any extra training actually with troops?

Witness.—After they have finished the army school training.

Mr. Burdon.—Then they should have some extra training with regular troops?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing the system which the Chairman has just indicated were to be adopted, that is to say, that you had in your unit a certain number of Indian officers with Indian officer ranks and other superior officers with British ranks, how do you suggest that promotion should be secured from Indian officer rank to British rank?

Witness.—I think the British rank officers will have to be selected from somewhere outside.

Mr. Burdon.—You mean, not from the regiment?

Witness.—But the Indian commission gives a greater incentive to havildars and offers them some hope for promotion. At present in the battalion the havildars have no chance of promotion and as a result they don't work as heartily as they ought to do.

Mr. Burdon.—Then you think that the Viceroy's commission under the system suggested should be open to men promoted from the ranks within the battalion?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—And that the officers who are to have British rank should be given direct commissions?

Witness.—They must undergo training before getting their commissions and pass their examination and be approved by the examination board and recommended by the C. O.

Mr. Burdon.—Then you don't think that any officer with the Viceroy's commission should be eligible for promotion to the British ranks?

Witness.—Not unless he shows himself quite efficient.

Mr. Burdon.—But you would not recommend a system under which a Viceroy's commissioned officer, say a man of 35, was then promoted to the rank of second lieutenant?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—You think the officers ought to get the rank of 2nd Lt. at about the same age as in the regular army, so that they may have a prospect of a full normal career in the British ranks?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—How are the Indian Christians turning out in your battalion?

Witness.—Our men are doing very well. Most of them were in the 71st Punjabis before, and they are very keen.

Mr. Burdon.—In your battalion do you enlist, apart from the Indian Christians, men of classes other than those which enlist in the Regular Army?

Witness.—No, with one or two individual exceptions.

Dr. Mullick.—I see that your unit comprises Punjabi Mussulmans and Christians. Have you Hindus as well?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—What are their relations towards each other in regard to social matters in camp? Do you find them sticking up for their particular religious ideas?

Witness.—During this training we had some difficulty between the Christians and Ahmadis. Our Christians are most of them converted from the lower classes, and most of the non-Christians hate them. We Christian officers are very particular about not allowing these fellows to mix freely with the men of other religions for fear of trouble arising. But I think if the Christians were given a full battalion apart from the others, as we had in the 71st Punjabis, that would work out very well. We can enlist the men for more companies.

The Chairman.—As regards the point of view from which you are giving your evidence, you were, I think, an Indian officer in the old 71st, and you are a Christian yourself?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—It was not exceptional cases that I was referring to. Taking the Hindus and Muhammadans, as a general rule, do they get on happily together? In military life, particularly in the field, it does not do to allow any friction between two sections, and the officers may not be able to stop the trouble once it has started?

Witness.—In that way we are pulling together very well.

Dr. Mullick.—You think that the camp life has a tendency to eliminate prejudices?

Witness.—Yes. We have now had three trainings and the men are pulling together very well.

Dr. Mullick.—You said you would prefer to have a longer training than 28 or 56 days?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Your men are only paid at present for the term of embodiment. Do you think they should be paid for the non-training period?

Witness.—They ought to be paid.

Dr. Mullick.—What payment do you think ought to be made?

Witness.—They ought to have a retaining fee of, say, Rs. 2 a month. I think that would be quite enough.

Dr. Mullick.—You are getting men who can spare more than 56 days?

Witness.—Yes. Most of our men are agriculturists and they could generally spare a longer period.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to your standard of efficiency for the Territorial Force, do you apply to them the same standard as to the regular army?

Witness.—The same as the regular army.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Then your conception of a Territorial Force is that it must be brought up to the same pitch of perfection as the regular army?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said it would take them five or six years' more training to enable them to take the field. When you say this, you mean in order to enable them to attain this footing of equality with the regular soldier?

Witness.—Yes, if they have the same period of training as they have now.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But if the training is made more intensive, do you think a shorter period would suffice? Say three months every year?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And you think there would be no difficulty in getting men to spare themselves from their avocations for three months in the year, year after year?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—For how many years would you continue this system of intensive training from the time a recruit enlists?

Witness.—I think it would take 3 or 4 years.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you command a company or a whole battalion?

Witness.—I am a platoon commander.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you now got the requisite number of officers and training staff in your battalion?

Witness.—We are one company commander short.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that the present system of appointments to commissions is by recommendation. Will you kindly tell me what the system is and who makes the recommendation?

Witness.—Supposing I want to become a first Lt., I first go to the Commanding Officer with my application. He forwards it to the Deputy Commissioner, who certifies my conduct only. Then I bring it back to the Commanding Officer and the Medical Officer.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You mean it goes by application and not by the action of the authorities *suo motu*. What is your exact objection to the present system?

Witness.—My objection is that at present applicants are not chosen with regard to whether they are fit or have any taste for the military life.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are appointments now made without reference to these considerations?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said there was no arrangement for training officers. Is not one of the objects of your training in the Indian battalions to train men to become officers. Is not one of the objects to train men for leadership? I simply wish to know the facts. Is it the object of the training in the battalion to train men to become good privates and soldiers or to train men also to become officers?

Witness.—During our three trainings, we have had no training that will teach men to be good officers. The object has been to train better privates.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is this Territorial Force sufficiently popular and does it attract people?

Witness.—Not at present, because it has nothing in it to attract men.

The Chairman.—In order to make your Force more popular, would you at the end of the training give the man a bonus, *i.e.*, a lump sum down for his training or would you pay him so much a month for the 11 months that he is not doing any territorial work in order to retain him in the Force. Which do you think would be the best. Have you thought about it?

Witness.—I don't think a lump sum is advisable. So much a month would be better.

The Chairman.—When would you pay him? We will say that a man in your battalion does his training for 28 days, and then he is due say Rs. 2 a month or Rs. 3 a month for 11 months. When would you give him that retaining fee?

Witness.—Every month.

The Chairman.—But just think of this. A man does his training and draws a month's pay as sepoy and then you pay him Rs. 3 a month for 10 months, and then he hates the idea of doing another training and says "I am awfully sorry, but my mother is dead" and he does not come up at all. Don't you think it would be advisable to devise some means by which we could get over this difficulty and see that, if we pay him for 10 months, he doesn't disappear before his next training, by paying him when he next comes up to be trained?

Witness.—I think the 11 months of the non-training period should count for this retaining fee.

The Chairman.—Yes, but you would not actually pay him until he comes up for the next training. Suppose you train him in January this year and he gets the full month's pay, which of course you must give him, and you have agreed with him to give him a retaining fee of Rs. 3 a month for the next 11 months, don't you think it would be better to pay him that Rs. 33 when he has done his next training, when you are sure he is coming up again?

Witness.—That is a good idea, I was thinking that the men would be paid like Reservists. They used to be paid every quarter.

The Chairman.—But of course you have more power over the Reservists than you would have over the Territorial sepoy.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You were yourself in the regular army before. What was your rank?

Witness.—I was a subedar.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And then you applied for a commission in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Can you tell me what the numbers are in your battalion?

Witness.—About 750 at present.

Dr. Paranjpye.—That is the full strength?

Witness.—I cannot say.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Where are the headquarters of your battalion?

Witness.—At Jullundur.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are your men drawn mainly from country districts or towns?

Witness.—Mostly from the country.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you got many agriculturists in your battalion?

Witness.—The companies of Christians are mostly agriculturists. The Jats are mostly discharged regular soldiers. The Muhammadans have got different jobs all round the district. Some of them are schoolmasters, etc.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You said you had Sikhs.

Witness.—They are discharged soldiers from the army.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What is generally the educational status of these men? How far have they been educated? Can they read and write?

Witness.—There are only about 20 or 30 men who have passed the 5th standard. The rest can hardly read Urdu or sign their names.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How many of them know English?

Witness.—Very few.

Dr. Paranjpye.—That is, you don't get any educated people.

Witness.—No.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How many Indian officers are there?

Witness.—We have about 15 in all.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are they all well educated?

Witness.—No. There are 5 Christian officers who are well educated. One is an M.Sc., one is a B.A., and the others are F.As. And in B. company two are Kumars from Kapurthala; the rest can hardly sign their names. In C. company, who belong to the Ahmadis, most of them are "Matrics", and in D. company they can only sign their names.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You suggested that the officers who are to have British ranks should be selected from outside. What would you suggest as the source for the recruitment of officers? Perhaps you have heard of the University Training Corps. Would your people, and would you, advocate that the officers should be selected from the U. T. C.?

Witness.—No, these officers should be those who enlist their platoons themselves.

Dr. Paranjpye.—So, you would give a commission to a man who recruits so many people. You would not necessarily get educated men who would also be able to recruit platoons?

Witness.—Most of them would be educated.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The man who is able to recruit a certain number of people would probably be a zamindar or a landholder who would not necessarily be well educated or be able to take his place alongside the British commissioned officers.

Witness.—He should be given some concession.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But if you want these people to be on a par with the British officer who has got the King's commission in the regular army, they must be well educated.

Witness.—They ought to be.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But if a man is to get a Viceroy's commission or a British commission only if he recruits 40 or 50 men he would not necessarily have any education. Then how would you remedy this? What suggestions have you got to make in this regard?

Mr. Burdon.—Would you prescribe an educational qualification for a candidate for a British commission? Would you make him pass an examination first?

Witness.—Yes, an examination, and afterwards the retention examination as well.

Mr. Burdon.—After the further training.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You suggest for the training of the officers of the Territorial battalion, that they should first of all be sent to a training school for officers. For how many months? For three months?

Witness.—That depends. For as long as they can spare.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What period do you think is necessary?

Witness.—I think two months in a training school would be sufficient.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you suggest their being attached afterwards to regular troops in order to learn the internal economy of a regiment?

Witness.—Yes. For a month.

Dr. Paranjpye.—So that you think two months at a regular training school and one month with regular troops would give them sufficient knowledge to enable them to do their work with the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You told us that appointments of officers depend upon recommendations. Did you say that it was only the first appointment as 2nd Lt. that was given on recommendation or promotions to higher ranks as well? I can understand, for instance, that a man, before he is appointed as a 2nd Lt., should get a proper recommendation because nobody knows much about him; but is his further promotion in the Territorial ranks to 1st Lt. or Capt. or a higher rank, also dependent on recommendation at present?

Witness.—I cannot say, because nothing of the kind has happened up to now. But I think promotion should be according to seniority.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And efficiency also; perhaps?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye—Don't you think the first appointment should be partly by recommendation?

Witness.—Partly by the recommendation of the C. O., after the man has been trained in the ranks.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But you have yourself told us that you don't want to promote people from the ranks to the King's commission—I am talking of the King's commission at present. For the King's commission would you require certain recommendations and a certain knowledge of the man's previous history, that is whether he comes of a good family or has education and so on. That is essential. Your complaint is that for further promotion in the grade he should not require any recommendation, but that it should depend only upon his work and efficiency.

Witness.—His efficiency, and whether or not he is approved by the Examination Board.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Of course. Examinations are included in efficiency.

Witness.—The Commanding Officer is the only man on the spot if he doesn't have to go through a course. So his opinion is quite necessary.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Yes, but you don't want other opinions for further promotions.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you have any difficulty in getting recruits?

Witness.—We have had no difficulty as yet.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you find that on the whole the existence of the Force is well known?

Witness.—It is not well known.

Mr. Calvert.—If propaganda work were done you should be able to get a larger number of men?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Is there behind the recruitment of Christians any idea of raising their social status?

Witness.—Not at present.

Dr. Paranjpye.—When the Christians join, are they conscious of any difference of treatment between them and the Auxiliary Force. Would they like to be in the Auxiliary Force rather than in the Territorial?

Witness.—The men do not know anything about the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would the officers prefer to be in the Auxiliary rather than in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I think that there should be no racial consideration in the matter and that both forces should be on the same footing. If that were so, it would be all the same if one was in the Territorial or in the Auxiliary Force.

Mr. Calvert.—Your Christians form a separate company? Do you think that their officers should be of the same class?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—How do you manage for your medical arrangements?

Witness.—We use the ordinary station hospitals.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you recommend that I. T. F. units should have their own medical officers?

Witness.—A Territorial medical officer, if he were appointed, would take more interest in his work.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In your composition there are Indian Christians. Do you think there is any trouble in their administration?

Witness.—I do not think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said that there was some feeling that you are not properly treated by other religions. Is that a real feeling?

Witness.—It was a temporary feeling, but one has to be on the alert always to avoid friction.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You are quite sure that the Indian Christians joined the force from a feeling of patriotism and not with a view to getting money?

Witness.—From patriotism for the first training but the spirit of patriotism decreases with the length of service.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You recommend also the formation of an Indian Christian battalion. How would you form it unless you had a big community to draw from?

Witness.—We used to have a full battalion. Men are always coming to our company officers for enlistment.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think you could form a battalion in your place?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In your battalion you would rigidly limit your commanding officers to Indian Christians. What is your reason for that?

Witness.—It is much better that they should be commanded by men of their own community, than by men of other castes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—A Sikh officer who comes from a martial race and has had previous experience will make a much better commanding officer than an Indian Christian who has not had that training.

Witness.—I have myself been under Sikh officers in my unit and had no objection at all to them, but some of the men might object.

Mr. Calvert.—It may be sentiment.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think your battalion is sufficiently well trained to quell a civil disturbance, such as a riot?

Witness.—It is already fit to quell a riot. But as a second line I cannot say that they are efficient.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—For internal security purposes you practically amount to a second line. Do you think that your battalion would be able to take up that duty to-day?

Witness.—No, I do not think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now said that any zamindar or any man of position who furnished your battalion with a platoon *ipso facto* got a jemadarship? Is that irrespective of his qualifications?

Witness.—Under the present system the platoon commander administers his own platoon, and he is generally a jemadar?

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You come from the Punjab. Would you consider it a good plan, if the universities situated in the Punjab were the source of supply for officers for the various companies and battalions of the territorial force in the province?

Witness.—No. I think it would not satisfy the present territorial officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I will put my question in another way. If this committee were prepared to recommend that Royal commissions should be given to officers in the I. T. F., would you still think that the present system of recruiting officers would be better than the system, which I just now suggested, of the universities supplying Indian officers for territorial force battalions. Would you accept that as a good means of providing a good class of officers?

Witness.—No, because there are a lot of educated fellows who have not been in the university training corps. They can come and take their places in the I. T. F.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you think that with training the territorial can reach the same standard as the regular army?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you accept the view that the territorial force can be put into the field at once or would it require some further training?

Witness.—It would require further training.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—With the present training could it do police work even in the event of disturbances or riots in a town?

Witness.—They could do that without any further training.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You do not favour the promotion of Indian officers to the higher commissioned grades. Don't you think that would create discontent. If a man is educationally fit and has got social position would you not give him a chance of promotion?

Witness.—I have taken the old rule of the Indian army that men must come from the ranks and be promoted.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Take your own case. If you had social status and were educationally qualified, but yet you were debarred from promotion, how would you like it?

Witness.—I have said that men of special capacity should be promoted.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Up to what age would you give them a chance of getting King's Commissions?

Witness.—Up to 35.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You said that you would draw the territorial officers in the higher grades from the same classes as those from which the men are drawn. You mean that Christians must have Christian officers, and Sikhs must have Sikh officers?

Witness.—If the same community can provide educated officers I would have them from the same class. If that is not possible, then they must come from other classes.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You know that in the regular army British officers command all castes. If you find an Indian with the same qualifications why should you object to serve under him?

Witness.—It all depends on what the feeling of the men is. I myself have served under many Indians and I did not object.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—In the civil administration you see I. C. S. officers working under Indians of other classes. Why should it be different in the army?

Witness.—I have served perfectly happily under two Indians with Royal Commissions and good qualifications.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—You said that in your opinion three years' intensive training would enable a man to take the field. In the regular army it requires 25 years to make a commanding officer. How would you recruit a commanding officer after three years?

Mr. Burdon.—How long do you think it would take a territorial officer to become a commanding officer and fit to take the field alongside regular troops. You do not expect that to be done in three years?

Witness.—It all depends upon the territorial officer. Some are hard workers.

Mr. Burdon.—Lt.-Col. Llewhellin's point was that it takes 25 years before you can train a man to be a battalion commander in the regular army. If you expect the same standard of efficiency in both, how long will it take in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—It will take years. I cannot say how many.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think a battalion commander can be trained very much more quickly than in the regular army?

Witness.—If a territorial officer is to be appointed to command, he ought to serve in the regular army for five or six years to learn all the responsibilities.

The Chairman.—You consider that unless he has a period of intensive training with a regular unit for a certain number of years, he will not be fit to take command?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You said there was little or no attraction in the territorial force at the moment?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—How do you account for the fact that your battalion is up to strength?

Witness.—Everybody thought that there would be some improvement in the force and most of them joined for patriotic reasons. But no improvement has been introduced.

Mr. Burdon.—Did you have many absentees from your training?

Witness.—Very few; about 16 or 17.

Mr. Burdon.—You had 600 men at the annual training? Did they work keenly?

Witness.—They worked keenly.

Mr. Burdon.—They came from patriotic motives and because they had a natural inclination for soldiering, but their interest in the thing will decrease, unless conditions of service are made generally more attractive and they are given better opportunities of becoming efficient soldiers?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Is it your idea that your battalion should if possible be trained up to a standard which will enable it to undertake any task that is assigned to a regular battalion?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—And your men will be prepared to face any task that is imposed on the regular army, if it is properly trained?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Have you got any demobilised soldiers from the regular army?

Witness.—I cannot say how many there are in the whole battalion, but in my company 80 per cent. are demobilised soldiers.

Examination of Major E. B. Mangin, late Adjutant, 11-19th Hyderabad Regiment.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are giving evidence from the point of view of the Bihar and Orissa and the Bengal Territorial Force?

Witness.—I have been away from that part for six months, but I had to raise the Bengal and the Bihar and Orissa wings.

The Chairman.—Had you any difficulty in obtaining recruits?

Witness.—At first I had. I started in November 1921 and it took me a year to get the numbers I wanted. I got 700 for the camp in January and February 1922, but about 500 were rejected owing to sickness and as not likely to make good soldiers. Those who were left were quite good material.

The Chairman.—Would you say that the Territorial Force is popular now in Bengal?

Witness.—It is not popular. Certain people are very keen about it, but the actual people we want to get to join as members of the Territorial Force are not very keen. Many of them cannot get away from their jobs for two months in the first year and one month in the second year.

The Chairman.—Did they all come from the towns?

Witness.—We got men from the country too.

The Chairman.—What class of men did you get from the country, and what is their employment in civil life?

Witness.—Most of them were agriculturists. We had also a good many educated men, probably 50 per cent. of our strength. They were clerks and professional men of that sort.

Mr. Burdon.—The attempts which you made in Calcutta to obtain recruits were not successful. What were your attempts?

Witness.—I discussed with the advisory committee the best means of getting recruits and we decided to go out into the country. We could not get many people in Calcutta and they did not seem very keen.

Mr. Burdon.—What sort of procedure did you adopt in order to get people in Calcutta? Did you do any propaganda?

Witness.—We did not do much propaganda. We had one or two meetings. We put notices in the local papers and told people where our office was.

Mr. Burdon.—You wanted recruits to come in, but none came?

Witness.—A few came. I think I got about 50 in about six months.

Mr. Burdon.—What sort of people were they?

Witness.—They were mostly people who were keen to enter the force, but they were not really of the right type. They wanted to see if they could get a Government job afterwards, through having been in the Force.

Mr. Burdon.—Were they people of education?

Witness.—Many of them had been educated at the universities.

Mr. Burdon.—Afterwards, when you went out into the country, what procedure did you adopt?

Witness.—I went round and formed committees in Dacca, Chittagong, Noakhali and Mymensingh. We then saw the men who sent in their names and later we called them up for the annual training. By this means we got about 800 men on paper, and 700 turned up for the camp.

Mr. Burdon.—After medical examination?

Witness.—They were medically examined in some cases by Civil Surgeons, and in other cases by Sub-Assistant Surgeons, and men of that type in the mofussil, but we found later that the standard they had set had not been very high. We did later on have to discard a lot of men who had been medically examined previously, because they were physically incapable of carrying arms.

Mr. Burdon.—Did you succeed in getting officers?

Witness.—We got some officers of the 49th Bengalis.

Mr. Burdon.—They were people who had returned to civil life and had then come back again as Territorial Force officers?

Witness.—Yes. They made very good officers.

Mr. Burdon.—What were their occupations in civil life? They were presumably educated men?

Witness.—They were educated men, and in the civil service. Two were Deputy Magistrates, and one was a Sub-Deputy Magistrate.

Mr. Burdon.—And they were keen?

Witness.—Very keen.

Mr. Burdon.—They came with the right idea?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—When you say that the force was not a success in Bengal, do you mean that the men were unwilling to come or that the right sort of men did not turn up?

Witness.—I think that, considering the size of the population of Bengal, I should say that the men would not turn up. We only had 700 for the whole of Bengal.

Dr. Mullick.—What was the strength required?

Witness.—We were trying to get a battalion of about 830.

Dr. Mullick.—I want to know whether there was ever a time when you could not accept some of the recruits sent to you, because you were filled up?

Witness.—Yes. That happened when I was told that I should have only two companies instead of a battalion.

Dr. Mullick.—Then these men did come forward and you could not accept them?

Witness.—There were very few applicants, whom I could not accept, probably about 100.

Dr. Mullick.—Were you able to replace the unfit men by other men who came forward.

Witness.—Very few of the others came to the camp.

Dr. Mullick.—Was it a fact that the military people could not accept them and that, therefore, they were unable to come to the camp? Had you been allowed to accept them, would they have come in?

Witness.—When they applied, the camp was nearly over, and it was not worth taking them.

Dr. Mullick.—Was the difficulty due to the fact that you already had your allotted numbers and, therefore, could not take any further men?

Witness.—We had been reduced to two companies.

Dr. Mullick.—You were reduced at the end of the camp?

Witness.—A certain time was fixed within which men had to apply for enrolment in that year, and we said we could not take more for the camp after that date, because it would interfere with the training. We took the names of the others and put them on a list.

Dr. Mullick.—But they were not actually accepted?

Witness.—They were not taken actually for that training; they would have been taken the next year if the strength had not been reduced.

Dr. Mullick.—There was a very large number of rejections in the camp. Did you have any Commissioned Medical Officer or anybody of authority to examine them in the districts before they came on to you?

Witness.—Yes. Civil Surgeons examined them in some cases and Sub-Assistant Surgeons in others.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you say that if you had had a stricter medical examination this disastrous result would not have occurred?

Witness.—Some of the medical officers did not know what the correct standard was.

Dr. Mullick.—Were all these men rejected on a second medical examination?

Witness.—Many of them; some were rejected by the G. O. C., because they were obviously physically unfit.

Dr. Mullick.—If you had had a better medical examination in the first place, better results would have been achieved?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—In that case do you think that medical officers ought to be appointed at various centres to examine recruits?

Witness.—Yes. It would be a good thing, but there are only a few men from some of the districts, so that it would not be worth while.

Dr. Mullick.—As a system it might give you better results?

Witness.—Yes. If I had had a medical officer to come round with me and we had seen the men ourselves, it would have been better.

Dr. Mullick.—At all events you would not have had this large number of rejections in camp?

Witness.—No. This, of course, was only the first camp. I do not think the same difficulty will ever occur again.

Dr. Mullick.—Was there any trouble with the railway or the steamer companies at the time of the camp?

Witness.—We sent the men the ordinary military warrants for their journey to camp. Most station masters in Bengal on the railways and of the river steamer companies did not understand what these warrants were and they would not issue tickets for them.

Dr. Mullick.—Did the recruits who came from long distances to the river station or railway station have to go back very much disappointed?

Witness.—They were detained in some cases. When we heard of the trouble, we put things right by telegraph, but I believe a few men did go back to their homes.

Dr. Mullick.—That reduced your numbers?

Witness.—Yes, but by very little; nearly all of them got to the camp, but many were late.

Dr. Mullick.—If you were put in charge of this unit again, do you think you would have better results?

Witness.—Yes, I think so. As long as the organisation works, now that it is reduced to two companies, I think in time you would get two very good companies in Bengal.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think the people want to have a full battalion recruited in Bengal?

Witness.—I think the educated people do.

Dr. Mullick.—Knowing the difficulties, what would you say would best help you to get recruits? Would you improve the general conditions of service?

Witness.—That is rather a big question to answer. I think if some of the landed proprietors sent in good recruits, matters would improve. At present they do not take much interest. If they came in themselves and were officers in the corps and brought in recruits with them, it would be a great help. In Calcutta itself I think some of the rich people might help. We did get a certain amount of assistance but we should have got more.

Dr. Mullick.—Taking the people of Bengal as a whole, if we did consider a change in the constitution of the Territorial Force, would you advocate forming other branches, such as mechanical and engineering units, in addition to the infantry?

Witness.—I advocated that at first, but I could not get recruits for a technical battalion; we only got clerks and motor drivers.

Dr. Mullick.—But there was no order from head quarters?

Witness.—The G. O. C. would not allow it.

Dr. Mullick.—So that there was really no great trial?

Witness.—It was dropped without any real trial.

The Chairman.—In continuation of the question which Dr. Mullick just now put to you, I understand that in Calcutta, for instance, you have a very large community of men with technical qualifications? Suppose we wanted to add an engineer company to the Territorial Force engineers and, if it were thought that for this particular company the most suitable form would be an electrical and mechanical company, would it be possible to raise such a company?

Witness.—It would be possible if the big civil firms allowed their men to come. That is the trouble. They will not let their men go out for the necessary periods of training.

The Chairman.—The material is there, but the difficulty is to get it? You do not consider that it would be impossible; it would be worth attempting?

Witness.—Yes. I think it would be worth attempting.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you suggest that large numbers of the educated people of Bengal or Calcutta were anxious to join the Territorial Force? Did they show any readiness to do so?

Witness.—I had a class of about 50 men whom I selected as being educated men suitable for appointment as N. C. Os. and Indian officers.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Is that all you could get of the educated people?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Were they amenable to discipline?

Witness.—They were; in camp they had to be.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Did they show keenness? Did they obey orders and show fitness for soldiering?

Witness.—Yes; they wanted a good deal of teaching at first.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Were they fit to bear hard work and to undergo the various hardships of a soldier's life?

Witness.—A training lasting only one month is so limited that I could not really tell you, but what they did, they did all right. I think they did a 15-mile march with their full kit and did it all right.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Were the men who came forward good as soldiers and were they keen on becoming proficient as private soldiers, or were they anxious to become officers?

Witness.—But they could not all be officers. We only have half a battalion, and we cannot go beyond that.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said you had 50 educated men. Did you come in touch with them, apart from your official relations with them?

Witness.—Yes, I used to meet some of them.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you been able to ascertain why the Territorial Force is not popular with these educated people?

Witness.—There are various reasons. They want more pay and more amenities in camp; and of course they would like to be the Auxiliary Force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are there any complaints about commissions?

Witness.—They all wanted commissions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What kind of commissions? Viceroy's commissions?

Witness.—Viceroy's commissions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Or King's commissions?

Witness.—They get a sort of dual commission.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are they quite satisfied with the dual commission or is it a matter for dissatisfaction?

Witness.—They never complained to me about it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Were your men all Hindus or all Muhammadans?

Witness.—They were about half and half, Muhammadans from the Dacca District and Hindus from the remaining districts.

Dr. Paranjpye.—They got on well together?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Did you have separate Hindu and Muhammadan companies?

Witness.—We did eventually, but not at first.

Mr. Calvert.—You have experience with what are called the fighting classes of India. The men whom you had in Bengal were not drawn from those classes?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—Seeing that there is a strictly limited budget and taking a practical view of the objects of a second line of defence, if this Committee recommended an extension of the Territorial Force from 15,000 to 30,000, would you, speaking as a practical soldier, advise us to take the 15,000 men from the martial classes or from the class of men you met in your battalion?

Witness.—From the martial classes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you mean to say that Bengal would not make a good field for recruiting.

Witness.—I do not think Bengal would make as good a field as it would if it had had a lot more training.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—When you were there was the response mainly from Muhammadans or Hindus?

Witness.—About equally from both.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—So there was a response in Bengal?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You have seen the Bengal lad of to-day. He is a very fine specimen, very much interested in football, hockey, etc. Do you think that that type of boy would make a good soldier?

Witness.—It would be an advantage to get more boys from University Corps into the Territorial Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you confine your selection to University Corps?

Witness.—I would not confine the selection to that altogether. Boys should pass through the University Training Corps to come to the Territorial Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Don't you think that the town boys are of the right type?

Witness.—I do not think their physique is very good, but they have got education and, in addition, they are very smart at arms.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then you would rather prefer the country lad for your type?

Witness.—I would rather go to the country.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I speak as a medical man who has had experience of Bengal for 10 years in the interior, and lately as a man now living in Calcutta. Is it or is it not a fact that in Bengal the country Bengalee is not physically as good as the Bengalee in Calcutta?

Witness.—I believe I have heard something to that effect. That is correct if the two classes are considered as a whole.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Taken together as a class the country Bengalee,—the agriculturist,—is not as well developed or as good as the Bengalee in the University or in town, as a class?

Witness.—Yes, but I think you get special men of a better type in the country.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What medical arrangements did you have in Calcutta?

Witness.—With my camp in 1922 we had Major Suhrawardy.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would advise that all Territorial Battalions should have their own medical officers?

Witness.—Yes, there is lots of work for them, and I would rather have my own.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I did not quite understand the reply you gave to Dr. Mullick about the 500 men who were rejected from the first camp. Did you mean by that that these men were badly selected originally?

Witness.—They were in the first case.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Did the zemindars of Bengal originally show keenness to come and join the force?

Witness.—They showed keenness.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you really mean to impress on us that, if the zemindars came and helped you, Bengal would not be second to any other province in her response to the Territorial movement.

Witness.—No. I think it would still lag behind, because there are not very many big zemindars in Bengal. They are mostly absent from Bengal.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Did you find your Territorial Force officers a good type of men, educated, patriotic and keen on their work?

Witness.—We had no complaints in Bengal.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—The first impression that I got of your men was that most of them wanted to be officers?

Witness.—Yes. They all want to be officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Was it very hard to persuade them to think that they would have to do rank and file work?

Witness.—They did not like it. It makes the corps unpopular, in some respects, if the educated men are not N. C. Os. or officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think they represent good material from which to make soldiers?

Witness.—I think that, if you had a camp for 500 men for six months, you would probably have to reject about 400 of them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think that the half battalion in Bengal is sufficiently trained to be called out to quell a riot?

Witness.—No, but I have not been there for some time.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—What do you think about the liability of the Territorial Force for service outside India?

Witness.—The men do not like having to sign a form saying "by land or sea" They do not mind the land, but they do not like the sea, and a lot of them objected to that.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You think that they would be happier if they were only liable for police work?

Witness.—They do not mind going outside India by land but they do not like the idea of going overseas.

Dr. Hyder.—By what class of men do you think your units should be officered?

Witness.—Taken as a whole the most suitable class is the zemindar class.

Dr. Hyder.—What qualifications do you think officers should possess if they come from the zemindar class?

Witness.—Power of command and good education.

Dr. Hyder.—I am not referring to military qualifications. I am asking about other qualifications?

Witness.—I think they ought to be educated.

Dr. Hyder.—Up to any particular standard?

Witness.—No, not up to any particularly high standard, so long as they know English and are open-minded or right-minded. They ought to be trained of course.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think your men receive sufficient training to make them an efficient second line of defence?

Witness.—No. I think one month a year is too little. The whole thing is a question of expense. If the prescribed training lasted three months it would be difficult to get the men to come for three months.

Dr. Hyder.—Are they satisfied with their one month's pay of Rs. 16?

Witness.—They had to be satisfied with that.

Dr. Hyder.—Supposing that we advocated a retaining fee, would you pay them for the other 11 months a lump sum grant or would you pay them monthly by instalments of 2 or 3 rupees?

Witness.—I would pay them a lump sum in arrears at the beginning of the next camp. The other system would involve too much labour.

Dr. Hyder.—Your men came up to you for one month and then they went back to their civil occupations? After the training the officers were not in touch with their men?

Witness.—I used to go to the districts occasionally, but I did not always see the men.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think a Money Order sent every month to these men would keep them in touch with the unit?

Witness.—Money Orders go astray; and then there is the commission and they would mean a lot of labour.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—I have a letter here from a G. O. C., Presidency and Assam District who says the Territorial Force in Bihar might flourish if the men had six months' continual training, but that in Bengal it is hopeless, because if they got even three months' training the men would break down. Do you agree with that?

Witness.—I do not say it is hopeless. I think, if you had two companies in Bengal to encourage them, they would get on all right.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Are you perfectly happy in your mind about the entire loyalty of the men who are enlisting?

Witness.—While they were in camp they were all right.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—I do not refer only to the camp, but to their general loyalty.

Witness.—I had not time really in two months to find out.

Lt.-Col. Llewnellin.—You have heard no report of any of these men being convicted of crimes?

Witness.—I believe that of the men of the 49th Bengalis, who joined the Territorial Force, one or two had been convicted, but I could not tell you of what sort of crimes.

Examination of Khan Bahadur Khwaja Mohamed Nur.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you kindly tell the Committee the point of view from which you give your evidence?

Witness.—I am President of the Bihar Local Advisory Committee. It is in that capacity that I have been sent up by the Local Government.

The Chairman.—I understand you take a very considerable interest in the Territorial Force movement?

Witness.—I can say, at any rate, that I have taken some interest.

The Chairman.—How long have you been on the Advisory Committee?

Witness.—This is my second year; we only started it last year.

The Chairman.—Would you say that on the whole, the Territorial movement was popular in Bihar and Orissa?

Witness.—We have had only the very short experience of one training season. I cannot give you a definite opinion, but it is looked upon with much favour.

The Chairman.—I understand that your two companies are quite full?

Witness.—They are not quite full yet. We had 257 men last year and we hope to fill up the two companies before the next training in January.

The Chairman.—Do you anticipate that you will have any difficulty in filling up the two companies?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—Have you from your experience on the Advisory Committee come to any conclusions as to the measures which should be taken in order to make the Force more popular?

Witness.—We have sent up some suggestions.

The Chairman.—I would like you to tell the Committee, in general terms, what we ought to do to make the Force more popular.

Witness.—The question may be looked at from two points of view. If you wish to make the Territorial movement work on purely patriotic grounds, then we should devise means to make it popular among the educated classes, but if we want to make it popular among the cultivating classes, from which you get the ordinary recruits for the army, then quite different methods will have to be adopted. The payment of a small subsidy or an annual or monthly allowance may prove very attractive to those classes from which alone, unfortunately, we have a large number of recruits at present.

The Chairman.—What is the motive which makes the men join your Territorial Force?

Witness.—At present, we have only about half a dozen or so educated men, who have enlisted on patriotic grounds for the sake of their country. The rest enlisted for extra remuneration, because we fixed the training period during the slack agricultural season, and they wanted to augment their income and have a little of the fun of camp life. It is very difficult to make them understand what patriotism is and what this force will ultimately stand for in the country.

The Chairman.—Do you think that they will be prepared in course of time to go on service and reinforce the regular army?

Witness.—Those whom we have got at present would certainly be ready.

The Chairman.—Would the educated class to whom you refer equally readily undertake the same obligation?

Witness.—I think so, but I must be very guarded in my views, because, as I say, I have had very little experience of the movement; but those few who have entered our Territorial Force certainly thought it was their duty to take up arms in defence of their country.

The Chairman.—Now in Bihar and Orissa had you any difficulty in getting the officers belonging to the two companies?

Witness.—We have had only one camping season as yet; we had for that an Adjutant supplied to us who arranged his own instructors. We had very little to do with getting a large number of officers. Of course we have had only one season's experience, which is too short a period from which to form an opinion.

The Chairman.—But you had some Territorial Officers?

Witness.—Some; almost all of them were ex-regular N. C. Os.

The Chairman.—Were they satisfied with the conditions under which they served?

Witness.—I had no complaint from them. We had only one man who was not an ex-army man. Our Adjutant offered him one particular rank and, when I went to the camp to inspect, he complained that he wanted some higher rank. Except for that, I did not come across any complaint whatsoever.

The Chairman.—That was purely a personal matter?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—What functions do you think the Territorial Force should be made to serve?

Witness.—I think that it should be what might be called a reserve army to maintain internal peace and defend the frontier in time of necessity.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, you think the Territorial Force ought to serve the purpose of being a reserve to the regular army and of being prepared to undertake in time of necessity, and after due training, any task that may be imposed on the regular army?

Witness.—Quite so.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think it necessary to limit the military liability even in the first instance?

Witness.—In the first instance, if you make it too wide, there may be some difficulty in getting recruits. I have stated what in my view should be the ultimate goal; you may possibly have to arrive at it by degrees.

Mr. Burdon.—You would limit the military liability, but you would not necessarily limit the degree of military training?

Witness.—At present I would limit the liability to the confines of one particular province, because it is provincial patriotism which is at present being developed, and I think it would be a wise thing to confine it for the time being to service within the province itself. You can extend it later.

Mr. Burdon.—But you want the Territorial Force to receive as high a degree of training as possible?

Witness.—Certainly. Of course not all at once, but by proper stages, having regard to the experience of those who join.

Mr. Burdon.—But you want to give them every opportunity in the matter of training?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you consider it a desirable thing that attempts should be made to bring within the force members of the educated class?

Witness.—Certainly.

Mr. Burdon.—You are, perhaps, aware that in the Punjab, in the battalions which have been organised in military districts, the result has mainly been that those classes enter the Territorial Force which are recruited for the regular army?

Witness.—That is exactly our experience. In our one year in Bihar we have recruited only those classes from which recruits go to the Indian army.

Mr. Burdon.—But you do think an attempt should be made, if possible, to bring into the Territorial Force the educated classes?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Why do you hold that view?

Witness.—As I said in answer to the President, I think that we must try to appeal to the patriotic sentiment of our people.

Mr. Burdon.—In other words, you want to stimulate patriotism?

Witness.—At present it is developed only among educated people.

Mr. Burdon.—And also the feeling that the responsibility in the matter of defence should be more widely shared?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—How are you going to get the educated classes to come in? If you leave things to take their natural course, the people who ordinarily join the army are at once attracted to the Territorial Force, as you say has happened in Bihar; and, because they come first and numbers are limited, there is no room for the others.

Witness.—I have thought about the best method of attracting the educated classes, and I cannot give you a solution; but from my experience I will just make a suggestion for what it is worth. If we can get a sufficient number of them to enrol, we must form them into separate battalions and give them separate treatment, as we have done for the Parsees in Bombay.

Mr. Burdon.—You would advocate separate battalions and units, the separation being based on social and educational standards?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not advocate any form of compulsion in order to get the educated classes to enrol?

Witness.—No; as far as Government servants and railway employés are concerned, there may be what is called some moral pressure, but I would not approve of any legal pressure upon anybody.

Mr. Burdon.—It is the pressure of public opinion, more than anything else, which is needed?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—When you have got special battalions of educated people of higher social status, would you give them as rigorous a training as the others, or how would you treat them?

Witness.—All these are questions which can more properly be dealt with by the army authorities; for instance, there is no room in the Territorial Force for people of the University Training Corps, after they have left their University, for the simple reason that they become lawyers or clerks, and their employers are not likely to give them two months' leave in the first year and one month's leave every subsequent year for their training. In their case, assuming they have put in three or four years' training in the University Training Corps, some special training should be provided after they have ceased their connection with the University.

Mr. Burdon.—And it will be a less rigorous form of training?

Witness.—Yes; more or less arranged by themselves, as is done in the case of the Auxiliary Force, who have no fixed period of training; they have to put in so many hours in the year and they can arrange it according to their own convenience.

Mr. Burdon.—You understand, of course, that the natural inference is that those who receive a less rigorous degree of training should have rather lower military liability, because they are less efficient?

Witness.—I do not say that it should be less, but suitably arranged according to their requirements; I do not say that it should be less efficient.

Mr. Burdon.—You realise that, without some period of fairly long continuous and intensive training, it is unlikely that a battalion will become as efficient?

Witness.—That is a matter for the army people to decide. I can only say that this Territorial Force cannot be expected to be as efficient as the regular army. What I understand to be the object of the force is that we should have the nucleus of a fine army, which can be mobilised at very short notice and turned into fine soldiers. Whatever training you might prescribe, it would not be as good or as efficient as your permanent soldiers, who undergo training throughout the year.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you impose upon the special class battalions the same military liability for service on the frontier as on the rest of the Force.

Witness.—I would; as I told you, the liability should be as limited as possible in the beginning, but it should expand.

Mr. Burdon.—Ultimately they should have the same liability for service?

Witness.—Yes; there should be no distinction in that line.

Mr. Burdon.—When you have got your special class battalions, how will you treat them in the matter of food, clothing and pay? Will you have different scales?

Witness.—As far as pay is concerned, I do not suppose it will matter much with them for the one month when they are under training. But separate arrangements would have to be made for their food and things of that kind.

Mr. Burdon.—You want them to have better rations?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—As regards clothing and other amenities of accommodation?

Witness.—They should have the same clothing as we give to our University Training Corps at present; the accommodation should be a little better than it is at present; though, of course, the men must be trained to bear hardship.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that it would be possible and desirable to have the same distinctions in their favour carried out when they went out on field service with the regular army or with the ordinary battalions of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—They can form a regiment of their own, if you like. War does not break out every year; but, when you have got a large number of such men, they can be formed into a big regiment of their own and have their own arrangements.

Mr. Burdon.—With better treatment, even on field service, than the battalions of the regular army?

Witness.—I cannot call it better treatment in that sense, because what is necessity for one man may be luxury for another; I would call it separate treatment.

Mr. Burdon.—You would call them a *corps d'élite*?

Witness.—I would call it separate treatment, that is all.

Mr. Burdon.—But you do think that, being of a higher social class, they would require better treatment on field service than the ordinary sepoy drawn from the ordinary martial classes?

Witness.—Of course.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you got any experience of the University Training Corps?

Witness.—Yes; it does not directly concern us, but we have one such Corps in Bihar and I have some experience of it.

Mr. Burdon.—What would you say was the function of a University Training Corps? Should they be liable for military service at all or should employment in their case be regarded as mainly educational?

Witness.—I think as long as it remains a University Training Corps it should be purely educational, in order to create what may be called a bias in favour of military work and to create in their minds a martial spirit. When they cease their connection with the University and enter the world, that bias, which you create in their minds, may be of general value to them, and might create in them an impulse to join the general Territorial Force or take up a military career.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that such training as is given in the University Training Corps has been very beneficial?

Witness.—Certainly; I saw our Corps twice on parade and I was struck with their good appearance and their sense of duty.

Mr. Burdon.—They submit willingly to discipline?

Witness.—Yes; I heard no complaint whatsoever on that score.

Dr. Mullick.—I understand that you consider that the Indian Territorial Force should really be divided into two categories, one a *corps d'élite*, as Mr. Burdon put it, and the other the regular Territorial with his full liability and his full training; is that your idea?

Witness.—Not exactly; I say that we should have two sections, one intended for those classes of people from whom you get the ordinary recruits for the army, and another for those people who enlist on what may be called purely patriotic grounds.

Dr. Mullick.—You would have them under different rules of course?

Witness.—Certainly; I do not mean any more favourable treatment for the one than for the other; I said different treatment which may suit their requirements.

Dr. Mullick:—Efficiency is the first desideratum?

Witness.—Certainly.

Dr. Mullick.—If you differentiated in the rules in this manner, you would have to relax your rules for the one and make them rigid for the other?

Witness.—I think that two separate sets of rules can be framed, both aiming at efficiency, but suited to two different classes of persons.

Dr. Mullick.—What is the consequential result?

Witness.—That is for the army people to decide; the training is there; you may take it within one period or spread it over a full year; whether or not that makes any difference, I am not, of course, in a position to say.

Dr. Mullick.—What do you think is the ultimate object of having a Territorial Force?

Witness.—The idea is, I suppose, that, if we want self-government for the country, we must shoulder the military responsibilities of the country; that is the general view.

Dr. Mullick.—And the duties attached to that responsibility?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—You take the responsibility in its entirety?

Witness.—Certainly.

Dr. Mullick.—If a person enters under the present rules, he must stick to them until the rules are changed?

Witness.—Quite so; some of them have entered in my province and they cannot break away.

Dr. Mullick.—You have got half a battalion?

Witness.—The sanctioned strength is half a battalion. We have not been able to secure the full number; at present we have about 250 men, of whom the educated men number, I think, about half a dozen.

Dr. Mullick.—Is it not possible to recruit this half battalion up to full strength under the present rigid system?

Witness.—Yes; we started rather late and, therefore, we could not obtain the necessary number last year.

Dr. Mullick.—Finances being what they are, would you go on with the present system?

Witness.—The finances are the bedrock on which alone any reform can be effected. What we say is this, that the present situation is such that there is very little opportunity for the educated people to come forward. I have already put before you the case of ex-members of the University Training Corps. After they have done their training at the University, and when they entered the world and realise the responsibilities of citizenship, there is no opportunity for them to join the Territorial Force.

Dr. Mullick.—In future, would you be agreeable to have the present rigid system in the Territorial Force alongside the system you propose for educated men?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—You have just said that you would require some special arrangements for the educated people, to enable them readily to come forward. But I would ask you, with great respect, whether you really think that people who profess patriotism should require any special arrangement or inducement from the State? Is that fair?

Witness.—I think that, taking human nature as it is—I wish to be a little fair and frank—they all feel the distinction that is made between members of the Auxiliary Force and the Territorial Force. Our educated people consist of graduates, lawyers and others, and, when they find that the members of the Auxiliary Force are accorded better treatment, then there is naturally a feeling of resentment among our educated people. What I say is that the treatment

accorded to members of the Territorial Force should in every respect be equal to that accorded to members of the Auxiliary Force. In my province there was a Deputy Magistrate who came and trained for 28 days. He underwent the full course and followed all the rules. He slept on the floor and did all that sort of thing. But I say that, in order to remove any feeling of resentment, our educated classes should be accorded the same treatment that is being given to members of the Auxiliary Force.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Perhaps the reason for the treatment which is accorded to members of the Auxiliary Force is not properly understood? The Auxiliary Force consists of Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and their habits and ways of living are absolutely different.

Witness.—Yes, that is very good in argument, but, when we have to meet facts, the position is different. For instance, I was a jail visitor. I know that a different kind of treatment is accorded to European prisoners from that accorded to Indian prisoners. But sentiment is a thing which you cannot altogether get over.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—The comparison you make between members of the Auxiliary Force and members of the Territorial Force is not fair. If you say the educated classes are inspired by patriotic intentions, then certainly they ought to come forward and take up service and show the way for the uneducated classes?

Witness.—Yes, that is a very good attitude on paper, but it will be very difficult to follow in practice. I entirely agree with a view that our people ought to come forward from patriotic motives, but with these distinctions it is doubtful if they will come forward.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—So what would you suggest?

Witness.—As I said before, there should be a separate arrangement made for our educated classes. I have not been able to work out the details. That is a matter still to be looked into, but, as I said, in order not to create a feeling of resentment, and in order that this class may come forward willingly, there should be a separate arrangement made for them.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are a representative of the Bihar and Orissa Legislative Council, and you move largely among the educated classes and you have a wide acquaintance with their sentiments and feelings?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware of the existence of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware of its terms and conditions also?

Witness.—Yes, in a general way.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware that the Auxiliary Force is confined to Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and that in very many matters, with regard to the area of their liability for service, their terms and so on, the members of this force are treated in a very different manner from that in which members of the Territorial Force are treated?

Witness.—My information is based on two facts only.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You know also that there are various other distinctions between the members of the Auxiliary Force and of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—It was said just now that it is not a fair thing to compare the Auxiliary Force with the Territorial Force, because the conditions of life of those people who join it are different. As a matter of fact, what do you think of the conditions of life of the middle classes among Indians? Are they not different from those of the people who at present join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Quite so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—May it not be said that there is a certain amount of similarity between the conditions of the middle classes among Indians and the conditions of Europeans and Anglo-Indians?

Witness.—Quite so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You think that there is a feeling of resentment amongst our countrymen with regard to the distinction in treatment that is accorded to members of the Auxiliary Force and to members of the Territorial Force, because it is of a racial kind?

Witness.—Quite so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are these distinctions liked or disliked by our countrymen?

Witness.—These distinctions are not liked by our people.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Taking the educated classes, so long as a young man is a member of a University, it is open to him to be a member of the University Training Corps, but, the moment he takes a degree, he has to leave it. Do you think that any opportunity should be given to the educated classes, after they leave the University, to continue in the Corps?

The Chairman.—He has answered that question.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In that case, would you give them admission to the Auxiliary Force, that is, to a separate branch of the Auxiliary Force, if you create a separate branch of it?

Witness.—I would say that separate arrangements should be made for our educated classes. What those arrangements should be, I am not prepared to suggest at the moment.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing a separate branch of the Auxiliary Force was created, would that meet your wishes?

Witness.—There should be an opportunity for our educated classes to enter it. Whether it should be a separate branch of the Auxiliary Force or a purely Indian branch, I cannot say.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But you would like to have a separate branch of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Quite so.

Mr. Burdon.—I should like to know how you would reconcile the statement which you just made, that it would be sufficient for them to join the Auxiliary Force, with the statement which you have made in answer to my earlier question to the effect that even the special classes should have the full military liability imposed upon them for service on the frontier or overseas?

Witness.—I have just said that I would like separate arrangements to be made for our educated people. What those arrangements should be, I cannot answer just now.

Mr. Burdon.—But you still hold to the opinion, which you expressed a short time ago, that even the special classes should eventually have full military liability?

Witness.—Yes, eventually they should have the full liability.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the University Training Corps, for how long has it been working in your part of the country?

Witness.—It was nominally started in 1921. I came in contact with it in 1923.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Has it ever gone into camp?

Witness.—Last year it went into camp.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How many men have you got in your Corps?

Witness.—I think 77, out of whom 47 came into camp. We get men only from one college in Patna.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the strength of your University?

Witness.—I cannot tell you that.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you had any rifle practice in your University Training Corps?

Witness.—We have had some.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—We had a complaint that the members were not taught rifle practice?

Witness.—Whether they are actually taught rifle practice or not, I cannot say, but I saw them with rifles.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to training of the educated classes after they leave the University, whether there is a separate branch of the Auxiliary Force or not, what is the amount of Territorial liability which you would enforce?

Witness.—At the outset I propose that they should serve within the province itself, then in India and later perhaps outside India.

The Chairman.—As I understand it, your idea is that they should ultimately have full responsibility?

Witness.—In the end, wherever they may have to go. Supposing India becomes a free country and if there is a world war, our men may have to go and fight even in America.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—At the outset you would not impose this liability by statute or make it obligatory to serve outside India, but would wait for some years until the martial spirit spreads?

Witness.—Yes, at present I would impose the liability to serve in the province only.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Then your ultimate idea that they should go outside India should be worked up to only gradually?

Witness.—Exactly so.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In your proposal to have separate conditions for educated people, is it your idea to expect equality of sacrifice rather than actually equality of conditions from different classes?

Witness.—I am afraid I cannot answer that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—My meaning is this. If an educated man has to go in for a military life under the present hard conditions which are generally suitable to the ordinary common agriculturist, he has got to make a much bigger sacrifice than an ordinary agriculturist, and it is for this reason, I suppose, that you propose that there should be separate class units for educated or middle class people?

Witness.—Our educated classes at present live under different conditions. As I told you, one month away from home may mean nothing to an agriculturist, if you select the off season for his training, but to a man who depends upon a profession or who is employed in a Government or private office, absence for any period is a definite sacrifice.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The sacrifice in his case would be greater and so you would have the slightly different conditions of continuous training for him?

Witness.—Not only on that ground. He is brought up in a different kind of atmosphere.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you also feel that at present the educated class are not very much in touch with military matters, and, while the agriculturists are to a certain extent conversant with military matters, recruiting and so on, the educated class are not. You want to create a bias in this matter, and so your proposal is of a temporary nature? In the end you don't expect separate treatment?

Witness.—That is so.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You told us just now that you considered that the University young men who have joined the University Training Corps have derived a great deal of benefit from their training.

Witness.—That is the opinion I have formed, from what I have seen.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How would you welcome a proposal that every University student who is medically fit should have a military training?

Witness.—Compulsion? I don't know how that system would work at present. There is so much suspicion; everything that Government does is looked upon with suspicion.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But if the self-governing Universities themselves imposed compulsion?

Witness.—I cannot give you any idea. I should not be happy with the idea of compulsion at present.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You are a member of the Senate of the Patna University? Would you encourage the U. T. C. movement as much as possible?

Witness.—In every way.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you would not put a limit on the numbers of the University Training Corps?

Witness.—As a matter of fact, from my little experience connected with the University of Patna, I may say that there will not be much opposition.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Even though you don't advocate compulsion, you would want the committee to recommend that there should be no limit put upon the number of people to be admitted to the U. T. C.

Witness.—Everybody who is fit, and who is willing, should be admitted.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you would create such a public feeling in the University that everybody who is medically fit and does not join would be looked upon as an outcast.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you accept the dictum that the prime object of the Indian Territorial Force is to be the second line of defence?

Witness.—For the time being.

Mr. Calvert.—Everything should be subordinated to the military needs?

Witness.—Not wholly. I think that should be the chief object for the time being, but we should not ignore the other objects. I say that it should be so for the time being, in order to give relief to the Indian exchequer and to reduce the standing army as much as possible. Of course that will be the main object. But I would not leave out the other aspects of the question from consideration altogether.

Mr. Calvert.—We in the Assembly know that the military budget is subject to very severe criticism, which means that the military authorities must confine their expenditure to the utmost limits of economy, and, they must only spend money on what they think will give them a return. Would you accept their verdict if they, in reply to your request for special treatment, said that they must subordinate everything to their military needs?

Witness.—Everything depends upon the money available and the willingness of the Assembly to vote.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would you as a public man advocate any extra expenditure of money for these purposes?

Witness.—Certainly. I would certainly vote for it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are the Biharis a martial race?

Witness.—That is a very wide question to answer.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What would you say, taking the past as a criterion?

Witness.—There are some districts of Bihar which are martial. A few districts of Bihar have always supplied recruits to the army. After all, Bihar contains a portion of Bengal, a portion of Orissa, and Bihar proper. As a race, I can only say that the Biharis have always taken part in the military movements of the country.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think the Indian Territorial Force is popular with you?

Witness.—As I told you, we have only had one season and I have no reason to say it is unpopular.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You have not advocated compulsory military training in universities but, as a persuasion and encouragement, would you not sanction universities giving any encouragement in the way of marks to those who pass certain military tests?

Witness.—I am not competent to give an opinion on that, but my ideas were stated at the Universities Conference at Simla. We shall shortly be discussing what should be done to encourage the U. T. C.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think that an appeal from Army Headquarters, particularly to Indian leaders or Indian employers of labour, would make it possible to raise, as for example, an engineering corps or a sapper unit?

Witness.—They are already in favour of such a proposal, as long as it does not affect their arrangements. Of course, they have to consider their shareholders, but as long as it does not conflict with their duty to them, I think they will certainly come forward to help the movement.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—No doubt you are aware that in the Auxiliary Force the European firms have to sacrifice their employees.

Witness.—They do. But as far as the Indian firms are concerned, they are in a very different position. You cannot expect the same sacrifice from Indian firms.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think that the liability for service overseas is popular with the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—Well, as I told you, the class of people of whom we have had experience are the same class of people who generally go to the regular army. This liability does not matter much to them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You made a statement just now about patriotic motives.

Witness.—My idea is this, that at present we are recruiting into the Territorial Force only those classes of people from whom we used to get our mercenary soldiers. Under the present arrangements there is very little room in the Force for those educated Indians who want to get themselves enrolled on patriotic grounds.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would like some special treatment for professional men in camp. Do you also want them to be graded according to their status or position?

Witness.—I think that they should obtain this by their own exertions. If you want officers for the Indian territorial force, you would generally go to the educated man first. Everything being equal, power of command, initiative, good physique, you would generally prefer the educated to the uneducated man.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You think that, whenever the men are free, they should put in a short time in camp?

Witness.—Camps should be arranged at short intervals.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you know that in the British army the rations of the soldier and of the officer are the same?

Witness.—That is a matter of detail with which I am not familiar. I think the officers and men of this special class will be people of the same status and they should get the same treatment.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You mean professional men?

Witness.—Yes. I may happen to be a senior man, but the men under me may have the same mode of living as myself or may live more luxuriously than myself. I would not, however, make a difference there.

Dr. Hyder.—Under section 12 of the Territorial Force Act, the membership of the Advisory Committee must be restricted to three. Does not that mean that there will be practically only two men to represent the whole province?

Witness.—There is nothing to prevent them from starting what may be called unofficial district or divisional sub-committees.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is there any desire that arms other than infantry should be thrown open to the members of the University Training Corps and the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Certainly.

Examination of Captain Caldwell.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you very kindly tell me, for the information of the Committee, the point of view from which you are going to give your evidence?

Witness.—I am the O. C. of the Patna University Training Corps. I was in the Bihar Light Horse as a Lieutenant and I was asked to take charge of the Patna University Training Corps, which was started just over a year ago. At present it is holding its second camp, so that we have not yet had very much experience of its working.

The Chairman.—You do actually belong to the staff of the Patna University?

Witness.—Yes. Some of the men are my students; others are students of other colleges. There are other colleges also attached to the Patna University.

The Chairman.—What function would you say that your U. T. C. now fulfils?

Witness.—I should say that its main usefulness is in teaching the men discipline and improving their physique.

The Chairman.—It does improve their physique?

Witness.—Undoubtedly.

The Chairman.—What should, in your opinion, be the function of the U. T. C.? Do you consider that the training in the U. T. C. should be purely educational and also for physical development, or would you give it some other function?

Witness.—I think that in this special case it is bound, to start with, to aim at giving the members better ideas of discipline, duty and patriotism. I do not see what else you could do. I think those are the important things to start with. The whole foundation of its military value must be based on that principle.

The Chairman.—Do you consider that while for the moment it should be entirely educational in its activities, you should aim at something else ultimately?

Witness.—I suppose that ultimately it should be used for some such purpose as the Officers' Training Corps in England.

The Chairman.—To supply officers to the Territorial Force?

Witness.—That apparently was the intention of the Officers' Training Corps, but as a matter of fact, when the war broke out, many of the men joined up in the ranks. They earned their status as officers by the work they did later.

The Chairman.—As regards the Patna University Training Corps, would you say that your ultimate aim should be to provide officers for the Territorial Force from among the students of your University?

Witness.—Possibly, but that is looking rather a long way ahead. I see various difficulties. I see difficulties in the way of the men of the University Training Corps joining the Territorial Force when they leave their university. When these men have got their degrees and qualified as medical men or engineers, they have to go out and earn their living, and I think they will find it difficult to spare one month or three months for training.

The Chairman.—Then you think that, as a rule, the civil avocations which will be taken up by students after leaving the University will interfere with their becoming officers of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I should certainly say so. That point of view was put before me by an Indian Barrister in Patna. He was asking me about the advantages of joining the Territorial Force, and he said it would be quite impossible for him to join, because of his work in the High Court of Patna.

The Chairman.—How is the U. T. C. regarded in your Universities? Is it popular or not?

Witness.—I can only speak of Patna itself, but the University comprises other colleges in Cuttack and Muzaffarpore. In Patna we have about 1,500 or 1,600 students. In camp at present there are 58. We expected 80, but the others made various excuses. Among the 58 there are a number of keen men, while of course others are not so keen. The numbers are disappointing. It is not easy in Patna to make the corps and its work well known, because we are scattered and have no headquarters. We have got no university buildings at all,

only an office and temporary quarters, so that there is no central place where the Corps can meet and work. As a result progress is rather slow, and we have not touched the external colleges at all. I cannot, therefore, say at all that it is popular.

The Chairman.—They have got no liability for military service at all?

Witness.—I thought that there was in the papers they have to sign.

The Chairman.—There is in the Act, if I remember correctly, but in 1921 an assurance was given to the U. T. C. that they would not be called upon for service.

Witness.—Of course they are only members of the corps so long as they are members of the University. You could not make them liable for any actual service.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would make any difference if they were liable for general service?

Witness.—I do not think it will make more people join. I think a great many dislike undertaking the signing of these papers. I have seen a number of papers in which parts had been crossed out by the particular students before signing. All about " by land and water " had been crossed out and also the line " even to the extent of risking my life."

The Chairman.—Have you any form of theoretical military education at the University?

Witness.—None.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be desirable to have it?

Witness.—The Patna University has on its printed syllabus so many subjects that it is not possible to teach that. I think it would be as well not to add any more to the list. On paper we are supposed to teach a very large number of subjects, and we may have students taking these subjects, but we are incapable of teaching them. We are rather a young university, and I do not think that it would be wise to try to do more. That, however, is a question for the university authorities to consider. Most students are engaged in learning those subjects which they are going to use later on in making a living and their time is very fully occupied. I think they would find it difficult to spare the time for anything new.

The Chairman.—If that is the case then any idea of giving military education will be very difficult?

Witness.—There is no question of starting it.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that at any time the U. T. C., as such, should be made liable for any form of actual military service, either for field service or for the purpose of quelling disturbances?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the authorities of your University regard it as desirable to encourage the U. T. C. movement?

Witness.—Yes, certainly.

Mr. Burdon.—From the national and educational point of view?

Witness.—Yes, certainly. They all say so.

Mr. Burdon.—You think yourself that it would be a good thing to encourage it?

Witness.—I think it does the men good.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the movement would become more popular if some rigid limits were not set to the strength?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing we said you could raise your strength to 4 companies or 6 companies, do you think you would get the boys?

Witness.—I do not think that the limit has had any effect at all, because we have not got the full numbers we are at present allowed.

Mr. Burdon.—You know that in theory, to a certain extent, if the thing became a movement with which the majority of the university identified itself, it would become a better show?

Witness.—Quite, but we have not succeeded in making it that at all.

Mr. Burdon.—If you were to set yourselves to encourage the thing, you would prefer not to be fettered?

Witness.—Yes, I think so. I think, if every one joined, there would be less objection to it. As it is, we have to hold our camp for a fortnight in the year during the term time—it is going on now—and we decided that the best time would be directly after the Poojah holidays. This means that these boys who join the Corps are away from the college for this fortnight; examinations are coming on in January, and the other boys left behind are rather pleased to be left behind and have this chance of doing extra work and attending extra lectures; and the boys in the camp feel they are being placed at a disadvantage. If the lectures were stopped during the camp period, it would be better.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you recommend the grant of marks or attendances to induce people to go to camp?

Witness.—At the university examination? I am afraid I cannot agree to that. I would certainly agree to getting over any difficulty about the percentage of attendances at lectures, but if you are examining a boy to see whether he is fit to practise as a doctor, it is not much good to take into account the parades he has done in camp.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you consider it desirable that the officers of the University Training Corps should be drawn from the teaching staff and not from the boys themselves?

Witness.—In a note which I wrote in June last for the local Government I said that one would naturally select the officers from among the members of the staff. I pointed out that the difficulty in our case was that the members of our University, the Indian members of the staff, have reached an age when they no longer take much violent exercise, as a general rule. I have had experience of only one camp and I am in the middle of another camp now. There is no member of the staff in camp now. One member of the staff did join the Corps, but he has attended no camp, and I have come to the conclusion that it would really be better to select the officers from among the students themselves. I believe the officers should go through the mill, should join and attend camp and parades as ordinary privates first of all, but all the Indian members of the staff, with whom I have talked, strongly object to that. They seem to think it will interfere with their discipline in college. With that I do not agree.

Mr. Burdon.—An alternative suggestion has been put to us that the members of the teaching staff, who are to be officers in the University Training Corps, should themselves receive some training with the Territorial Force or a regular battalion. Do you think that would be suitable to enable them to go through the mill in a more detached atmosphere?

Witness.—Would they go through the mill as privates?

Mr. Burdon.—I was going to ask your opinion on that.

Witness.—I would say that they should go through the mill as privates. You could easily attach members of the staff to units to learn tactics. You could send them to army schools and they would learn all about musketry or signalling and that sort of thing. But what they really want is to be thoroughly acquainted with the idea of military discipline, and I do not think that they can get that without having had to serve themselves in the ranks; not ordering others, but obeying orders themselves.

Dr. Mullick.—I see that your enrolled number is 166, of whom you have got only 82. Is that correct?

Witness.—Yes, and of these 57 have turned up to camp.

Dr. Mullick.—Is it that they are not able to come forward? To what would you attribute this hesitation to enlist?

Witness.—I do not know to what to attribute it. Last year our camp was held in January and it was impossible for fourth and fifth year students to attend. We only got the third year men. This year I thought that we were going to get more, but we have not.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think it is a matter of fitting in with their arrangements, or is it that they do not wish to come?

Witness.—One reason is that they do not like signing these papers. Of course the success of the whole thing depends on the students themselves. If the men whom we got into camp last year were keen on it, they could get

many others to join. If they are not, there is a difficulty. We should not despair about it, however; it is a very new idea to them. We did not start is early as they did in other parts of India.

Dr. Mullick.—You think they have made a fair response?

Witness.—It is something.

Dr. Mullick.—You are not disheartened by the response?

Witness.—No, because there are quite a number of men who are really keen and are really working well. There are scrimshankers of course.

Dr. Mullick.—What is the full strength of your University? In the Patna part there are 1,500 or 1,600.

Witness.—I should think there would be 1,500 with the Arts, Science and Law students. Then a medical college has just been started, and the Engineering College has opened this term.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think the force would be more popular if you attached engineering or medical sections to it?

Witness.—I do not know.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you advise this Committee to embark on a policy of raising units of other arms besides infantry?

Witness.—I feel that we are so much at the beginning of things that for a while we might well confine our attention to the infantry and see what can be done with them.

Dr. Mullick.—But you have got these other faculties,—engineering and medical,—and it would work in with their particular line?

Witness.—I think it might be quite useful.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The University Training Corps is on a small scale in Patna and it is too early to form any opinion?

Witness.—I think so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are the students of the Patna College particularly lacking in discipline, or are they amenable to discipline? I mean such discipline as is required in a training corps.

Witness.—Their discipline is quite all right in one sense, but there is too much shirking of duty and of giving silly little excuses for getting out of duty, such as saying that they are suffering from fever when there is not very much wrong.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You see a tendency to shirking?

Witness.—There is certainly more of it than I like to see.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You agree that the ultimate object of the U. T. C. should be the same as that of the O. T. C., that is, to provide military training and educate the boys for officerships?

Witness.—Yes, I think so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And you think, in course of time, it may be made to fulfil those purposes?

Witness.—Yes. I do not mean to say that they will be fit to be officers, when they have gone through their training.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that, after leaving the college, the boys do not join the Territorial Force and that their civil duties interfere with their joining the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are the conditions of the Territorial Force sufficiently flexible to meet the requirements of Indians in civil avocations?

Witness.—If you are going to have the training, you have got to spend time over it, if it is to be of value.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What I wish to suggest is this. In the case of the Auxiliary Force the conditions of service are specially adapted to the conditions of men in various avocations. Is there any similar adjustment of training in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—How are the conditions of the Auxiliary Force adapted to the requirements of the members?

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In this way, that the training is more continuous throughout the year instead of being periodical, and at so many more centres nearer the men's homes. Is there anything of the kind in the arrangement of the provincial battalions?

Witness.—Not that I know of; but what I feel is that the training of the Territorial Force is far more thorough than the training of the Auxiliary Force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But my question was, is there an adaptation of the terms and conditions of service in the provincial battalions to the needs and requirements of men in civil walks of life in the case of Indians, just as there is in the case of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I know very little about the Territorial Force; I have had very little to do with it. I look upon the Territorial Force as more like the militia at home.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You say that the University is in favour of encouraging the training corps by granting them attendance certificates?

Witness.—Last year I told my students that I would make it all right for them when they went to camp.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But take subjects like science where attendance at a laboratory is required; very great difficulty is experienced in regard to attendance at these classes?

Witness.—Last year I arranged that the laboratory lectures ceased about three weeks or a fortnight before the university examination, and I allowed my students who were in camp last year to use the laboratory for practical work during that time.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Is it not possible to arrange your time-tables in such a manner that students will be able to go to their drills twice or three times a week without missing any of their lectures?

Witness.—They can do it in Patna; I do not think any one has missed any lectures by attending drills after college hours; the difficulty is only in the camp.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Most of the students are not Christians, and you could utilise the Christmas Vacation for camp.

Witness.—The camp is fifteen days, while the vacation is only about 5 days; but we could do so.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You could not use the long vacation at Patna?

Witness.—You could not possibly live under canvas then, either at Patna or Ranchi.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You may possibly have read of my proposal before the Bombay University for compulsory military training for all people who come before them to take their degree; do you think that proposal practicable in Patna at present?

Witness.—I had compulsion in mind; if every one were compelled to join the corps, there would be no difficulty about missing lectures and the like.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think public opinion will be prepared for it?

Witness.—I do not think people like being compelled in that way to do things.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I do not think they like being compelled to attend lectures?

Witness.—There is no question of their being compelled to attend lectures.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What propaganda have the staff done in order to encourage students to join the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Only personal propaganda by talking to the students; some of them have been keen on persuading students to join. I think the best propaganda would be for some of the staff to join themselves and to work in the ranks, but, as I say, they strongly object to that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Could you not get some of your demonstrators or assistant lecturers to join? I do not mean the full professors.

Witness.—The one whom we did persuade to join was a demonstrator, but he did not attend camp and he said afterwards that he joined on the understanding that he was going to be made an officer; so he wanted to resign.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are your students keen on sports and out-door games?

Witness.—Yes, a great majority of them are.

Dr. Paranjpye.—From the point of view of physical exercise the training in the camp would not be of much difficulty to them?

Witness.—No; they ought to do it quite easily, and they do it quite well, though some of them do not like it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—They are not physically deficient in that way?

Witness.—No; but a great many of them go down very easily with fever or dysentery and things of that sort.

Dr. Paranjpye.—While in camp?

Witness.—We had some cases of dysentery and fever in camp.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you had any occasion to talk to the students and to hear from them whether any of them would like to go in for permanent military careers?

Witness.—No. I am afraid ours is a non-military province; one student did suggest such a thing, but he had to give it up on account of ill-health.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Don't you think a greater extension of the U. T. C. might develop that idea?

Witness.—I think it has its great value educationally; but I do not think any student is in a position to say anything about it yet.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Some of them might probably develop predelictions for it later?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In answer to General Shea you said that military subjects cannot be introduced into the University course. I do not suppose the President intended that they should be introduced as a compulsory course; but you have got various optional courses in your University, such as philosophy or chemistry, which are not of much use to a man in his practical life afterwards. If you could introduce the subject of military science, as an optional subject along with others, would it not be a useful thing?

Witness.—Quite so; and I think you mistook my reply to General Shea. I did not say it was impossible to take it up; I pointed out merely that Patna had a very large number of subjects on its syllabus, which it found impossible to teach, because there is no one to teach them, and it cannot afford to pay men to teach all these subjects; and it seemed to me useless to add one other subject which the university would find it impossible to teach.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But if it were possible?

Witness.—Certainly; I agree that a large number of other subjects could very well be taught.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you heard of any desire on the part of the outside colleges in Cuttack or Hazaribagh or any other places to have facilities for joining the U. T. C.?

Witness.—We have had applications from students in those colleges for permission to join.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are they prepared to raise a platoon of their own?

Witness.—No; they might in Cuttack, where there are the largest number of students in Orissa, but not elsewhere.

Dr. Paranjpye.—It all depends upon a keen member of the staff. We have in a small place like Sangli a professor who is very keen and has raised an excellent platoon of about 100 men.

Witness.—I think one or two keen men can do a great deal.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Dr. Mullick just now suggested to you the attachment to the U. T. C. of special technical branches; he mentioned the medical branch. Can you conceive the possibility of attaching a medical branch to your U. T. C., of men who are not qualified?

Witness.—I was at Barts when they started the Territorial scheme in England; I was a demonstrator in Chemistry and I joined up and I used to drill as a private with the medical students there. They went through the regular course of military training for medical units and I think such a course would be useful for medical students in Patna University.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What do you mean by the training of medical units?

Witness.—Stretcher-bearing and drill of that sort; I do not know anything about it, not being a medical man myself. My idea was that this might instil ideas of discipline into medical students.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—That was a medical hospital corps; but here you have a university; do you think it a good thing to have a medical unit, a law unit and so on?

Witness.—I do not know what a law unit would be. What I felt was that, if you had a medical corps and a medical unit, you would get medical students interested in the corps and, by giving them a kind of military training such as they have at Home, you would get an opportunity of driving some ideas of discipline into them as well; it does not matter which way you do it. I think the main thing is to give them ideas of discipline and patriotism and duty; I think that is the important thing in a University corps.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think the other students would be more enthusiastic if the U. T. C. men came into the lectures in the King's uniform?

Witness.—I think the important thing is that ideas of discipline, patriotism and duty should be instilled into them.

Examination of Major Suhrawardy.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Would you kindly tell the Committee the point of view from which you are going to give evidence?

Witness.—In the Territorial Force my position is that of President of the Advisory Committee in Bengal. I hold commissioned rank in the Territorial Force Medical Corps. I am also Deputy President of the Bengal Legislative Council.

The Chairman.—Your Advisory Committee at present consists of three members?

Witness.—Yes. One military member and, under the Act, two non-official members.

The Chairman.—Do you think that that number is sufficient for an Advisory Committee or do you consider that your number should be increased?

Witness.—The number might be increased with advantage, and another two men might be added to make it more representative.

The Chairman.—Do you suggest that there should always be a military member and always a member of the Territorial Force on the Advisory Committee?

Witness.—I think that there should always be a military member, and there should be a member of the Territorial Force as well, if a suitable man is available, that is, a man sufficiently senior to give advice on the subject. But there should also be non-official members, who know the country and who know the feelings of the country.

The Chairman.—You deal with all matters connected with the Territorial Force in Bengal, except of course with matters of discipline and training?

Witness.—At present we are not dealing with the question of the grant of commissions. The Advisory Committee, in my opinion, should also include a District Committee, which should consist of the District Magistrate and two non-official members, a Hindu and a Mahommedan, to go into the social status of the candidate who is going to get a direct commission. The District Committee will send the nominations to a Divisional Committee, consisting of the Commissioner of the Division, two non-official members as usual, a Hindu and a Mahommedan, and as the military member, the officer commanding the unit in which the candidate is going to get the commission.

The Chairman.—Then you consider that the interests of the Territorial Force would be better served if in each province you had a head committee which we might term a provincial committee, and in addition to that various district committees? You don't think that at present there is enough decentralization?

Witness.—At the present moment we want, for the purposes of recruiting and for the kind of work that we are doing, district committees, but there must be also a provincial committee at the head.

The Chairman.—You want a provincial committee with the various district committees working under it?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—How many officers have so far been recruited for the Medical branch of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—From Bengal there are three, to my knowledge.

Mr. Burdon.—Has it been possible so far to allot to you any particular duties in connection with the Territorial Force, or were you useful as a potential reserve?

Witness.—In the first camp in Calcutta, when the Territorial Force was first established, I did the work of medical officer in charge of the camp.

Mr. Burdon.—Were you attached to the Station Hospital for duty with the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I was not at that time. I had not even got a commission. Because there was some trouble on the frontier, and they could not get medical officers to do the work, and as I had done the work during the war, the then G. O. C. put me in charge, and I did the work of the medical officer during the camp. In the last camp, both Major Chatterjee and I were there. There was another doctor, and all three of us were in charge.

Mr. Burdon.—Were you attached to the Station Hospital?

Witness.—No, both Major Chatterjee and myself were then holding appointments in the Medical College.

Mr. Burdon.—What facilities were available to you in the matter of medicines, etc.?

Witness.—We got everything from the Station Hospital. We had our tent there, and we had our Hospital dispensary also. Whenever we found that a patient required more attention than we could give, we sent him to the Indian Station Hospital.

Mr. Burdon.—Generally speaking, you think it would be suitable for medical officers, who belong to the Medical corps of the Territorial Force, to be formally attached, on the occasion of the annual camps, to the Indian Station Hospital as a section of the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—That is the regular arrangement at present, but we might develop it into actual units and as a Territorial Force corps.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, with your own duties and Hospital attendance?

Witness.—I would like to have it more developed than at present.

Mr. Burdon.—Is that not too much, when you have only a medical officer?

Witness.—We have got one or two compounders from the ranks and they do all the dispensing work.

Mr. Burdon.—Generally speaking, you would like to have their existence separately recognised as medical personnel?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You have considerable experience, I imagine, of the manner in which recruiting was carried out for the Bengal battalion?

Witness.—I have some knowledge, as also has Dr. Mullick.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would be possible to raise and train Indian Hospital Corps companies as a portion of the Territorial Force? They would correspond to the ordinary Indian Hospital Corps companies, and would have clerical sections, nursing sections, store-keepers' sections, ambulance sections, and so on? Do you think it would be feasible?

Witness.—I think it would be quite feasible.

The Chairman.—Then we would have our Indian Hospital Corps companies with their own officers, which could take part in the training of the Territorial Force when the various units went into camp?

Witness.—Yes, quite so.

Mr. Burdon.—I understand—you will correct me if I am wrong—that sufficient support has not been received from the educated classes in Bengal, in so far as recruitment in Bengal for the Territorial Force is concerned?

Witness.—That is so.

Mr. Burdon.—To what do you attribute this?

Witness.—It is mainly because the educated classes all over India, and especially in Bengal, want equal treatment with Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and the Resolution that was passed in the Legislative Assembly, which created this Committee, also lays down that the Territorial Force should be made into an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army, and also that all racial distinctions in the non-regular military forces in India, including the Auxiliary Force, should be removed. This last sentence echoes the general feeling which exists among educated Indians, as I have gathered from different people whom I have consulted in the Bengal Legislative Council and outside it. That is one of the chief reasons why there has not been a better response. For instance, in the Territorial Force the whole system is based on the Indian Army system. The sepoy class in the martial provinces—if I may call it that—have been in the habit of supplying the requirements of the military by recruiting men from the agricultural classes, and the head agriculturist becomes a Naik or a Havildar or a Jamadar, and the British commissioned officers have always respected a jemadar and shown great respect and consideration to such people. But in Bengal and in other provinces the literate people, when they hear of a jemadar or a havildar, think of a police officer of the most subordinate rank and therefore the literate classes do not want to be put on the same basis as a sepoy, a jemadar or a havildar. They would rather be put on the same

lines as the Auxiliary Force people, as has been done to a certain extent in the University Corps everywhere. In the University Training Corps, we have got Corporals and Sergeants. These designations are more acceptable to the educated Bengali, and perhaps to educated Indians generally, than jemadar and subedar; although, having some knowledge of military people, I have more respect for the jemadar, who might perhaps be a more efficient man from the military point of view than a young subaltern, who gets a direct commission. But the feeling is there, and it is for this reason that there has not been a proper response. The second reason has been political obstruction, because certain classes of people have said that the British people are trying to get Indians to organise themselves into a body to fight their fellow Indians and to put down riots and rebellions. Muhammadans were kept out of the force by being led into believing that they were going to be sent against Muhammadan kingdoms. Of course they did not pause to think that they were not really efficient enough even to stand any chance against the frontier non-regular army, but that idea was traded upon by certain classes of agitators in Bengal.

Mr. Burdon.—That was a form of non-co-operation.

Witness.—It was. The promoters of the non-co-operation movement very largely hindered the recruitment of the better class of people by telling them that they were being insulted by the British, by reason of the ranks which were given them and by the food issued during the camps of exercise.

Mr. Burdon.—I would like to take you a little further than the question of names and designations. You say that the educated classes would like to be treated in the same way as members of the Auxiliary Force, and would like to have British ranks and designations. But what would they be prepared to accept in the way of military liability, of liability for actual military service, because that is really the fundamental thing. You see we are considering the force as a part of the military machine and, of course, the whole strength of the military machine must be determined with reference to each of its parts. One has to consider it, and I am certain the President would like to consider it, very much from the point of view of military efficiency, and therefore one has to go into that question of what military liability they would be prepared to accept?

Witness.—The educated classes, so far as I have been able to gather, think that the Auxiliary Force has been organised chiefly with the object of maintaining internal peace, and also of defending themselves against rebellion, if I may say so. If there is a rising the planters can unite themselves and they can repeal any aggression on their person and property. In the same way, in other places where small European communities are scattered and live amid a large number of Indians of various kinds, the military, or the Government, who have got the first duty of maintaining peace and of protecting people, have been relieved of that duty partly by the Auxiliary Force saying "We will do it ourselves, if you give us commissioned ranks or if you give us certain facilities." That is what the educated classes think and that is quite right. But the Indian Territorial Force, which the educated classes thought, when the Act was passed, was intended to allow Indians to bear arms and to learn the old volunteer system, has been directed to another end, and, whereas the members of the Auxiliary Force, who have been volunteers themselves and who have inherited through generations all the traditions of discipline and training, are only devoted to internal defence, the Territorial battalions which you are going to raise, are, the moment they are raised, to become the second line of defence to the Regular Army; so that at the very beginning you are putting on Indians a greater liability than that which you impose upon the Auxiliary Force, which is composed of a better class of people, more disciplined and better able to fight.

Mr. Burdon.—But not more than on other Indians.

Witness.—Not more than on other Indians in the regular army. As you know, there is among the educated classes a belief that the Indian Army has not been paid very well, but is used to fight the battles of the British, when the time comes. I volunteered for active duty during the first fortnight of the war, and I am ready to fight, if there is any attempt at rebellion. I will certainly fight with the Europeans and will save my European friends and colleagues as much as I save my Indian friends. And yet the doors of the military force were shut to Indians. Now that we are beginning, you want the baby to do what the able-bodied men are not asked to do.

Mr. Burdon.—But you have not answered my question yet.

Witness.—Perhaps I have rambled a little bit, but I have been asked to put before the committee the feeling of the people whom I am representing. I have been elected by the non-official members of the Council as their deputy, and by certain other members, and these are the things they ask for. I myself have been trying very hard to get recruits. During the war I did my best, with Dr. Mullick, when he was on the advisory committee. We tried our best to get recruits and we were thwarted. These were the arguments used by people to me in Bengal :—"You loyalists, you youths that went to the war, what has happened to you? This is how Government treats you." So now it is my duty to place before you, for what it is worth, my feeling on the question.

Mr. Burdon.—I appreciate very much your position and the force of what you say. But my point is important, because we have got to make precise recommendations. Generalities will be no good in the recommendations of a committee such as this, and the question is what degree of liability for actual military service would the educated classes be prepared to accept?

Witness.—The same as the Auxiliary Force, as at present established for the time. As a matter of fact, if they are asked to do more, they will do it.

Mr. Burdon.—Then the liability for actual military service would be no greater than that of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—They have never asked for more.

Mr. Burdon.—Is that the utmost, because it is a very limited liability? The educated classes would not agree to more?

Witness.—They would agree later on. They say that for the present we should have a Territorial basis as much as possible. We have got before our eyes a force already established. Why should we at the very beginning be asked to do more than that force? The illiterate classes don't mind the extra liability. To my mind, it is a most useful thing for the illiterate classes, because of the training and discipline they get in camp every year, and if I have to recruit ten years hence, my work will be very much easier than it was a few years ago, because these men are now learning. They may be, from the military point of view, of no value but there is this great value, that they are learning their work as sepoys, and a certain amount of discipline is being given to them. These are the men who will finally become our sepoys, and from the second line they may go to the first line. If we, for instance, have a Bengali regiment established permanently, you will find these men will come and enrol in it. In a province that has not given 10 men to your regular army you will find that, as a result, there will be perhaps a thousand, if a regiment is established.

Mr. Burdon.—Then you would retain the existing Territorial Force organisation, under which the members accept the liability for actual military service, including actual military service overseas, side by side with the special arrangements which you advocate for the literate classes?

Witness.—Yes. We could have two sections. It is the literate classes who feel and who agitate and who are overconscious at times. Let them have a section—call it Territorial Force, Section A or Auxiliary Force, Section B.

Mr. Burdon.—With a limited military liability?

Witness.—We want to have peace. These are the men who cause trouble. You have your standard, you make the most stringent selection possible to keep the door open for a certain number of Indians to be on the same basis as the Auxiliary Force, either by reason of their literacy or their past services or their power of command or the following they may have; but you must throw the door open for them to be treated on the same basis as the Auxiliary Force people.

Mr. Burdon.—Then how would you define eligibility for admission to the two branches, that is to say, to the Territorial Forces as at present organised and to the non-regular force for the literate classes which you have suggested. How is the recruiting officer to be guided?

Witness.—The recruiting officer would have to go to the agriculturists—the *chasi* class of people, as they are called in Bengal—and to those classes from which the regular militia is recruited in all countries, for his recruits for the Territorial Force, which is to be the second line to the regular army.

Mr. Burdon.—And you would take both your men and your officers from the agricultural classes?

Witness.—The officers might be drawn from the University Training Corps, which might be a kind of officers training corps. These men would be suitable as their officers, because they are their officers by birth. For instance, a land-holder sends his son to be educated at the University. That boy rises to the rank of sergeant in the U. T. C. by the time he has graduated. When he leaves college, he has to go back again and be a jemadar in your Territorial Force. That is what he does not want, and will not take. But if he could remain on as a Sergeant, and then finally work up to the rank of 2nd-Lt., he would be in the position to which by his birth, his influence and his education he is entitled. He may already have 10 or 20 of his tenants in your Territorial Force. You must, therefore, get a certain number of people who are of the tenant class. Of course, the merits of the rank and file should also be recognised, and they should be given Viceroy's commissions and other kinds of promotion. What I am trying to put before the committee is that we have got men who can be officers for our second line and you can promote a certain number of them according to the meritorious work they do.

Mr. Burdon.—You suggest that the men should come from the agricultural classes, and the officers partly from the same classes and partly from among men who have been trained in the U. T. C.

Witness.—Or in the Auxiliary B or the Territorial A, whatever you call the literate section.

Mr. Burdon.—How would you define eligibility precisely for admission to the special corps?

Witness.—The criterion would be a man's social status and intellectual capacity. These are the things which are at the present moment agitating the people in the Legislative Council.

Mr. Burdon.—That is little indefinite. What would be the precise educational qualification?

Witness.—For military rank you would not require an F. A. or a B. A. All you would want is sufficient education to mix with their British officers, to elicit their esteem, to elicit their respect and to mix with them socially. These men must have sufficient character to be officers. I feel very strongly that people who get the King's Commission should be chosen with the greatest care. Only those should be selected who are qualified by their birth, their social virtues and their character to be comrades of British officers, who have been for generations trained in a certain habit. Unless we get men of that type, I am not prepared to recommend them for direct commissions or for any commissioned rank at all.

Mr. Burdon.—Let us take the U. T. C. Have you got any experience of that?

Witness.—Only this much, that as a member of the Senate of the University of Calcutta I was a member of the advisory committee there and at Dacca. I was a member of the executive council of the Dacca University.

Mr. Burdon.—What is your idea as to the function which the University Training Corps should fulfil. Should it be liable for actual military service or should it exist purely and simply for the purpose of educating, of forming character and inculcating discipline. You would not want the University Training Corps to be liable to be called out to stop riots or for frontier service?

Witness.—Most certainly. Why not? The first principle of self-government is to be able to maintain peace within and repel aggression from without.

Mr. Burdon.—That does not determine absolutely the question of whether the boys of the university should be called out for this work.

Witness.—The boys of the university to-day are the politicians of to-morrow, who will agitate. If I agitate for equal treatment with Europeans, I must be prepared to send my son to prevent a riot or to go and fight on the frontier.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you know that the U. T. C. in England is not liable as such for actual military service?

Witness.—If that is so, then we will not have that liability for the U. T. C. We don't want to have any more liability than Europeans have.

Mr. Burdon.—It is an accepted military doctrine that, for the purpose of suppressing a civil disturbance of any character in every country, only the steadiest and best disciplined troops ought to be used. Do you think that the U. T. C. would fulfil that condition?

Witness.—What you just now enunciated is perfectly true, but in practice we do not find always the steadiest people amongst the constabulary in the reserve armed police, who are called out to quell riots or disturbances. They are under certain British officers who know when to give the order to fire, and who know what restraint means. If officered well and if taught discipline, they will never fire till they are asked to fire.

Mr. Burdon.—At any rate, you think that the University Training Corps will fulfil a very useful function indeed, even if its function is purely educational.

Witness.—Yes. At the present moment I am sorry to say that our young men are suffering from indiscipline of the worst type, and nothing would be more conducive to the betterment of the conditions in my province than to make it compulsory for every student in the university to enter the University Training Corps, unless exempted under a medical certificate.

Mr. Burdon.—To pursue the same point, if you are satisfied that it is a universally recognised doctrine that the O. T. C. in England should not be used for actual military service, then you will not object to that limitation being imposed upon the U. T. C. in India?

Witness.—Not only would I not object, but I should not want them to have any greater object. If this fact is made public, I can assure you that it will go a long way towards strengthening the hands of those who want to recruit men for the Territorial Force.

Mr. Burdon.—Don't you think that if there was an actual liability for military service the parents of the boys might have some objection to their joining the U. T. C.?

Witness.—I think so.

The Chairman.—If I understand your position correctly you advocate (1) a territorial force, which is to be a second line to the regular army and (2) the institution of this new force, primarily for the purpose of educating its members in the military spirit. As regards the U. T. C., you consider that its object is also primarily educational.

Witness.—That is so.

Dr. Mullick.—Can you give us a short sketch of what you consider the proper development of the medical section of the I. T. F. should be?

Witness.—I have nothing further to add to what I have already said in reply to Mr. Burdon.

Dr. Mullick.—I wish to ask one question in order to clear up this point. As regards these two sections of the non-regular troops, the *corps d'élite* or Auxiliary section and the ordinary section of the I. T. F., one for general service on restricted lines and the other more or less educational, supposing that we had two units each of a thousand men, and if your Auxiliary section or the *corps d'élite* was up to strength, would you allow the surplus recruits of that section to join the ordinary I. T. F.?

Witness.—That would be optional.

Dr. Mullick.—You would not confine the latter section to the agriculturists alone?

Witness.—I think that you have got to have an ideal or standard to work up to. You found, when the war broke out, that the members of the old I. D. F. and the old volunteers amongst the commercial classes of Europeans, and amongst members of the I. C. S. and other civilians joined up. It was an optional and free thing; we thought it our duty to join up and we did so. To start with we belonged to a body which was purely supported for educative purposes. We got our education in military matters. It may have been very imperfect. But that did not preclude us from taking part in active service during the war.

Dr. Mullick.—I think you told Mr. Burdon that, if you confine the ordinary Territorial Force to the agricultural classes, you may have some difficulty about the officers. If we take it as an axiom that an officer should gradually rise from the ranks, that difficulty would not present itself, if you throw open those units to others besides the agriculturists.

Witness.—I have already said that there would be a certain number of people promoted from the ranks to commissioned rank. There are different grades of

agriculturists. In Bengal it will take a long time to find suitable officers in this way. In the Punjab, in the Jhelum district, you will find that you have got all the different classes ready made.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you confine your officers in these units to the agriculturists? Could you get officers from them who would work side by side with the British officer?

Witness.—It would be very difficult. We have not got such men even in the Punjab. My friend, Sir Umar Hyat Khan, has got some of his relations in the Lancers, but they have not got King's Commissions.

Dr. Mullick.—We are visualising the day when the whole unit will be commanded by Indians.

Witness.—That will take a long time. I have grave doubts whether it will materialise or not in Bengal in the case of the agricultural classes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that there was a strong objection on the part of the educated classes to the title of Jemadar. Do you dissociate yourself from that?

Witness.—I dissociate myself because of the little knowledge of military matters that I have got.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You respect the Jemadar?

Witness.—I respect the Jemadar in the Indian army as a commissioned officer.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you drop your title of Major and like to be called Subedar?

Witness.—I would not. I am a covenanted medical officer and, before I joined, I wanted to be given the same privileges as my European colleagues.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would not like to be called a Subedar?

Witness.—No, because there is a distinction.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is there any desire that U. T. C. units of other branches of the army should be formed, in addition to the infantry?

Witness.—The literate classes want everything, as far as is practicable. There should be no distinctions based on racial considerations. Let them be based on anything else.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You propose two divisions of the Territorial Force, one for agriculturists, and the other for the educated classes. Do you contemplate that the second part should contribute officers to the first part, if they volunteer?

Witness.—Which is your first part?

Dr. Paranjpye.—The first part is the agriculturists who are liable for general service and the second part is the restricted service force. You contemplate, I suppose, that men from the educated section might volunteer as officers for the other section?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In that way you would be able to create as many officers as you like?

Witness.—A certain number of officers must come from the ranks.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advise that a medical officer should be included in the Advisory Committee?

Witness.—It is the case in Bengal; why should it not be the case in other provinces?

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In answer to Mr. Burdon's question about Hospital corps, you said it would be feasible to raise the side branches of a hospital corps. Can you tell me from what source you would recruit the men?

Witness.—From the same source from which we recruit nurses, ambulance workers and red cross people.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Where would you recruit these people from?

Witness.—Last year I started lecturing to the agriculturist class of our Territorial Force on the principles of first aid to the injured in Bengali and Hindustani. They may not be literate, but they can become efficient ambulance men, in the same way as we have police constables efficient in these duties. We give ambulance lectures and certificates to police constables and they nearly

all belong to the same class of people as the Territorial agriculturists. By training them we can get a certain number of first-aiders. Then we have got to get our compounders, dispensing men and nursing people.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Where would you get these from? From the town class or the agriculturists?

Witness.—From the agricultural class you cannot get dispensing men, because they must have a professional education.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You will get the best compounders from the various schools in Calcutta.

Witness.—Of course they must join the force. At the present moment I am corresponding with the Adjutant of the Bihar and Orissa wing, to whom I am sending a Muhammadan compounder who wants to join. There is another Muhammadan compounder who wants to join the force in Bengal. In fact, there are lots of people who want to join and we shall get these men in this manner.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You find difficulty now in getting men to join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—It is not a popular movement. There is another difficulty which I have not put before you, and that is financial stringency.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You suggested to Mr. Burdon forming the educated classes into a sort of special class with status equal to that of the auxiliary force, and you led me to understand that you suggested that as an antidote to Non-co-operation.

Witness.—Not as an antidote to the Non-co-operators themselves, but as an antidote to the handle that is used by the Non-co-operators, because the Non-co-operators want to give a bad name to every good movement, provided it is started by the moderates or by Government.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now spoke about the British standard of efficiency. Why was that?

Witness.—Because the British people have for ages learnt discipline, they have been trained to discipline and they have been in the Army. We Indians have only learnt to know what discipline is from them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Will you tell me why the U. T. C. in Calcutta is not popular?

Witness.—As I have said the U. T. C. is not popular, because, to start with, the political agitators said that they were being trained so that they might go and shoot Indians. Some boys were frightened from joining because they thought that they were going to be sent on active service in Afghanistan, whence there would be no chance of returning alive; even if they were left alive by the Afghans, the climate would kill them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You admit that the university lad in Calcutta is surcharged with political ideas.

Witness.—The university lads have been used as a catspaw by every agitator. The young, impressionable youths of my country have been ruined. The young men of Bengal have been misled at the present moment. But they can be formed into a docile, self-respecting and well disciplined body of useful men.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think your I. T. F. in Calcutta is in a proper and trained condition to quell any civil riot?

Witness.—Not only is it unfit now, but it will not be fit for any work of that nature for many years to come, and, as I stated to the Committee, the chief value, which we get from it, is that we are training the class of men from which we can get recruits who will answer the call of duty. They are not going to be used for actual service nor will they be fit to be used for anything for 7 or 8 years.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You say that you would form the agriculturists into one portion of the territorials and the literates into another. Political consciousness is coming very soon in India. We are now in a transition period. Would you deny the agriculturists, if they demand it, the opportunity to improve themselves in the same way as the literate class?

Witness.—Most certainly not.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—When the time comes, but not at the present moment?

Witness.—If the Bhadralog, as they are called in Bengal, who are not now getting it will sit quiet, they will get that dole too.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—How will you guard against the admission of undesirables into your special units? What precautions would you take?

Witness.—What precautions do you take in the Indian Army? We all know that the Indian Army is a body which can be corrupted and attempts were made by seditionists to do that. But at the same time we go on recruiting and the life and safety of thousands of people, Indians and Europeans, are entirely in their hands.

The Chairman.—Did you say that the Indian Army is a body which can be corrupted?

Witness.—Attempts have been made. The Indian Army is a loyal and splendid body, but attempts have been made. You know better than I do that there may be odd cases of members of the Indian Army being corrupted.

The Chairman.—The point you were stressing was that attempts have been made.

Witness.—Quite. I may be wrong. When you are recruiting, you have to take certain risks. You make your filtration medium as fine as possible, so that you may get in the meshes all the undesirables. But it is still possible that some undesirables may pass through. They have to be found out later on.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—What precautions would you adopt against the admission of revolutionaries and such people?

Witness.—I think the revolutionary people are well known. Besides in my province at the present moment anyone can be arrested without a warrant.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—That is only just for the present.

Witness.—It was thought necessary to allow that. The existence of such men in large numbers must have been proved to the authorities; otherwise they would not have done that; such men should certainly not be allowed to join the Force.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—But how would you know them? That is the difficulty.

Witness.—You can have no hard and fast rule for finding them out and stopping them with mathematical precision. All that you can do is to have the same sources which Government has, of knowing the undesirables from the desirables. All human agencies are liable to err.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—The Territorial Force is supposed to be the second line of defence, and Indians join that force from a sense of patriotism. But you say that the upper class people of Bengal, the literate class, do not wish to have a liability for service.

Witness.—Even in the present Territorial Force, if I may be permitted to say so, an Indian does not join for patriotic reasons. He joins for the purpose of getting a certain pay. His reason is a mercenary one. The class of people I am recruiting now on the militia basis, the totally ignorant agriculturist classes, do not understand patriotism and such things. They come because we clothe them well, feed them well, and, when they go away, we give them a certain sum of money. That is the reason why that class comes and will continue to come.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—But the upper classes will not join?

Witness.—The upper classes would join from a sense of patriotism, but they do not join, because they think they are not treated well enough.

The Chairman.—I am very interested in the idea you have brought out in your evidence, of two forms of service, territorial service with unlimited liability, and your *corps de élite* with a limited liability. Now in this *corps de elite* would you raise an unlimited number of units?

Witness.—To start with we should make a small beginning.

The Chairman.—Then would you confine these units only to urban districts?

Witness.—Yes, because at present training on the Auxiliary force basis is only possible in Calcutta and Dacca, where we have an armoury where the men can keep their arms in safety and where bi-weekly or even daily training can be carried on.

The Chairman.—You have anticipated the point which I wished to bring out, regarding the custody of arms. You think that these units should be confined to Calcutta and Dacca? You suggest we should begin with small beginnings and see how the scheme works?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—In dealing with your *corps de élite* how would you pay them?

Witness.—On the same basis as the Auxiliary Force, but pay will not attract the men. In the Auxiliary Force, people get pay according to their rank, but they give away the money for some purpose or other. Some of the Members of our Bengal Legislative Council were commissioned officers in the Calcutta Light Horse and, if they were privates, they got only a few rupees, while they were people who were earning thousands in their business undertakings. It is not money which will attract the literate classes, but the pleasure of working for an ideal.

The Chairman.—And how would you clothe and ration them?

Witness.—The Auxiliary Force get a clothing allowance.

The Chairman.—Would you clothe them in the same way as the regular army or better?

Witness.—Not better. An officer of the Auxiliary Force is clothed in the same way according to his rank.

The Chairman.—But I am thinking of the rank and file?

Witness.—The rank and file will continue to be clothed like the regular army.

The Chairman.—You do not propose to make any difference in clothing and rations?

Witness.—No difference in clothing and rations if the Force is based on the Auxiliary Force. Any Indian will be able to make his own arrangements on the money which he gets on that basis. He will not like bully beef; he will not like ham and eggs, but if he gets his few rupees he can get milk and *halwa*. And if he is an officer he will be dressed in the same uniform as the Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—But I am thinking of the rank and file; would they be exactly the same as the regulars?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—The rations would be the same as the regulars get?

Witness.—Yes, whatever the Auxiliary Force gets and I take it the Auxiliary force gets the same as the regulars.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What would you think of a system under which your *corps de élite* would get no pay for the days they spend in camp?

Witness.—I do not think that would do. There may be men who may be otherwise well off, but we must pay our men.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Your *corps de élite* consists of educated people of a class different from the agriculturists, who do not go into it for the money they make out of it. Do you think, in order to save any feeling of jealousy between these two classes of territorials, it would be of very great use if we could also point out to the others that one is paid and the other is not?

Witness.—But the literate section is not necessarily an opulent section. A Brahmin may be a very respectable and literate man, but he may be a poor man, and you are asking him for 15 days to say good-bye to all his work and get nothing out of it, except the commissioned rank you give him. That is not quite correct, and you have always got the literate classes leading the illiterate.

The Chairman.—I think, when you were answering questions put by Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer, he asked you a question about artillery. Would you start artillery at once?

Witness.—I would not. I said that Indians should be eligible for every branch, but progress should be by stages. We should qualify ourselves first as infantry, but other things should be open to us. Every arm in which the Auxiliary Force is given training Indians should be eligible for, and, if they are from the recruit stage eligible for the artillery, then Indians should be; or if they have to do some work in the infantry first, the same should be the case for Indians.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I understand you to say that eligibility should be progressive, and that you will first make sure of your infantry and then go on to the other branches?

Witness.—I think that is so. We cannot start everything at once. The first stage will be the removal of racial distinctions.

Mr. Calvert.—But the class distinctions you have suggested are worse than racial distinctions.

Witness.—The racial distinction is between the Europeans and Anglo-Indians and the Indians, but class distinction unfortunately exists in my country and the literate classes rule the depressed classes.

The Chairman.—You say that you should get on to eligibility for other arms progressively; do you think, if you wanted to raise a cavalry regiment in Bengal on the silladar principle, it would be possible?

Witness.—At the present moment I think it would be impossible, but the eligibility should exist on paper.

The Chairman.—As regards engineers, some witnesses whom we have examined have told us that they consider that it might be possible to start and raise a technical engineer company in Calcutta, for instance, an electrical and mechanical company; do you think that might be started at once?

Witness.—The idea should be brought into action, but how many men we could get we do not know. Dr. Mullick and I wanted to raise technical battalions a few years ago, because Calcutta has got a number of industrial undertakings. We thought we should be able to give a good training to these people who work in the different industrial undertakings, and that we could raise a bicycle battalion and a technical battalion and call them the technical battalion of the Calcutta I. T. F. It is possible, but I do not know what its practical value would be. It would be worth an attempt.

The Chairman.—Would you give places in the U. T. C. to as many men as come forward, or would you limit its numbers?

Witness.—I have said already that, if I could do it, I would make it compulsory for every student of the university, unless exempted on medical grounds, to join the U. T. C.

The Chairman.—And would you give them the same facilities as those enjoyed by the O. T. C. in England?

Witness.—The O. T. C. is entirely an officers' training corps, but here we have the rank and file amongst them and we could not do only O. T. C. work here.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you have an Indian branch of the Auxiliary force?

Witness.—Yes, there should be an Indian branch.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I think I am right in saying that in reply to a question you said that the literate class or the officer class at present are not attracted in any way by money, or that money would be no consideration to them? Would it surprise you if I told you that I have met a number of officers of the present battalions and their two complaints to me were (1) that their food was not good, and (2) that their allowance was too little.

Witness.—I am not surprised, but they perhaps did not make it quite clear to you, that they felt that people who are undergoing hardship, to which they are unaccustomed, should get a higher standard of food than people who are used to it. You are giving these officers sepoys' rations, but the Bengali is not a sepoy. He goes from his work to the camp of exercise; from morning till afternoon he has to do a certain number of hours with his drill masters, and he wants meat and a very much higher standard of food. We want a higher standard of food allowed to them, or at least the equivalent in money, in order to do away with that complaint. The other point which they spoke about was this; a lot of them are deputy magistrates and sub-deputy magistrates and they are holding the rank of Jemadar and, as such, they get pay as Jemadars or Subadars. They have also got, some of them, the rank of honorary second lieutenant and the power of command in the Territorial Force by virtue of their officer's commission. At the present moment the Indian Army do not have King's Commissions for Indian officers, and it is for this reason that we have got dual commission for them. These people want to be given a better scale of pay, which may be the pay of a jemadar *plus* the pay of a second lieutenant divided by two, provided, it is not higher than the pay of a

second lieutenant. But it is not the pay they desire but they do want their status to be raised, and they want either by an Act or by other means to be made pucca second lieutenants, and not to be jemadars as well.

There is only one more point which I was asked to bring before you and that is the question of rations. During the last two terms I have had a good deal of trouble as a result of the small rations we are allowed on the sepoy basis. A generous public had to give the men better clothing and better food, and on the last occasion we presented them with some mufti clothing also. A large number of people in Bengal think that, if there was a central advisory committee constituted here at Delhi with a certain number of non-official Hindu and Muhammadan members of the Assembly as members, a Military member as secretary and a member of the Viceroy's Council as member in charge, they would see that sufficient money is voted or earmarked for territorial purposes —a certain amount being given to each of the provinces; and that body would also be able to address H. E. the Commander-in-Chief on the question of the Territorial movement generally, its popularity and other aspects. Then we could have provincial committees which could get financial assistance from the central committee, because financial stringency militates very much against making a new thing like this popular. People who are not accustomed to this kind of hardship are apt to misunderstand. They say "We are given this hard work so that we shall not be able to do it; the Government want to smother the movement and they do not want us to do the work and, therefore, they are giving us such hard work and such poor food." But if we have got the money we know that this is our money and we can cut our coat according to the cloth at our disposal. I would, therefore, bring to your notice the desirability of the formation of a central committee as well as the provincial advisory committees.

The Chairman.—You would extend the principle of the advisory committee—the town and district committees working up to the provincial committees, and the provincial committees working up to the central committee?

Witness.—Yes.

Examination of Major W. A. J. Hinds.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are the Adjutant, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers, who are entirely recruited from Parsis?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Your conditions are different to those of other Territorial Force units, in that you train the whole year round continuously?

Witness.—Yes; they are different in certain other ways too. The men of the battalion have been granted the British scale of rations and clothing and the British scale of accommodation; they were given this concession when the battalion was formed; they were also granted leave to train on the same lines as the University Training Corps which gives them a permanent British staff of one staff sergeant instructor per company and four British officers including myself. Those are the main differences.

The Chairman.—What is their liability to service?

Witness.—Their liability is the full liability of an ordinary Territorial Force battalion, but they do not like it. I think the chief reason for their dislike is that they are not a very warlike race naturally, and that their standard of living and education and so on is considerably higher than that of the ordinary Indian regiment. They also feel that if they were sent out on service their dependents would be left with very little to live on; they are mostly clerks in offices in Bombay, drawing say Rs. 150 a month, or perhaps more, in quite good positions; and if they were called out they would draw only the sepoy's pay. I think that is the main reason for their wish to escape from this liability for service overseas or on the frontier.

The Chairman.—But why, particularly in view of the fact that, as you say, they are not a particularly martial race, should they have preferential treatment compared with a Territorial battalion which is prepared to go and fight on the frontier and overseas?

Witness.—I do not think that from that point of view there is any reason; the only thing is that we are getting no recruits now, and I think that it is the liability to go overseas which is the main reason preventing the men from enlisting. A great many men who joined originally are not attending their parades.

The Chairman.—But still from the point of view of efficiency they are confessedly inferior?

Witness.—I should say that from the point of view of efficiency they would always be inferior, because they are not of good physique and a great majority of them wear glasses.

The Chairman.—And yet they demand a higher standard of treatment than other Territorial Force units?

Witness.—Yes; I think that is what they have asked for.

The Chairman.—But there is really absolutely no reason why they should get it?

Witness.—I do not think, from a purely military point of view, they are likely to be any more efficient than any other Territorial Force units.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the selection of officers, you state in your memorandum—"The local influence and social status of the candidate being decided by the Advisory Committee the other qualifications by his Commanding Officer." To which qualifications would you give predominance; to local influence and social status or to military efficiency and knowledge and other military qualifications?

Witness.—That is rather difficult to answer. I think in the first place social status must be rather more important, because a man who is of good social status, as long as he is prepared to learn his work afterwards, is in all probability a more suitable officer; in that way I should say that social status was rather the more important of the two; it tells a great deal.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you give it more weight than to his education and military knowledge?

Witness.—At what period of the man's training is this?

The Chairman.—When you are first selecting a man, by what would you be guided? Would you be guided by his power of command and his aptitude for military work and possibly military knowledge, or do you think that his social status should be considered first?

Witness.—I think that he should first be passed by the advisory committee as being of suitable social status, and, if he is passed, then the C. O. can judge himself as to whether his military knowledge and capabilities are likely to be sufficient.

The Chairman.—But you would not allow social status to outweigh the other considerations?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—In his note Major Hinds refers to the poor physique of the Parsi community; that is perhaps the general opinion. I want to know whether, in his opinion, the poor physique of the Parsi disqualify him from active service on the frontier?

Witness.—I am talking only about the men in my battalion. For one thing the number of men who wear glasses is something like 70 to 80 per cent. in my battalion. That alone should almost debar them from service on the frontier. Besides this, their actual physique is poor.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I am talking as an eye specialist. You made two statements, that the Parsi battalion is physically poor and that most of them wear glasses. I suppose you are aware that at least 75 per cent. of the University students in Germany wear glasses?

Witness.—I am not aware of it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—By the time they leave the University 75 per cent. of the students wear glasses?

Witness.—We were talking about the winter in Razmak, and I do not think that there are many occulists there. It was in answer to another question that I made that statement.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—They undergo a sound physical examination in Bombay?

Witness.—They were passed by a doctor.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—By an I. M. S. man, I suppose?

Witness.—They were passed by a Parsi doctor.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—There is a certain visual standard?

Witness.—I believe so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Yet the doctor passed them?

Witness.—I believe so. I merely said with regard to service on the frontier that 80 or 90 per cent. wear glasses. I am merely stating the figures.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—With regard to their physique, is this a national characteristic of the Parsis?

Witness.—I should say that quite a large proportion of men in my battalion are very small and very weak.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What is the reason for the sudden drop in attendance at parades?

Witness.—I think one reason is the dissatisfaction amongst the officers owing to the difference in the terms of their commission. Another reason, I think, is that some of the men were rushed into joining the battalion when it was formed, after the riots in Bombay. There are a good many other reasons too. For instance, I think a good many men join without asking their parents, and I know the parents' influence has had a good deal to do in preventing their attendance at parades.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—We have heard a lot about the lack of enthusiasm in this battalion; you think those are the only reasons?

Witness.—I think a good many men joined thinking that their liability was not very real.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You know that there are Parsis in the Auxiliary Force in Poona?

Witness.—That is another reason, I might say, why some men stop away from parade now, because the Parsis in the Territorial Force are laughed at and are called sepoys. Unfortunately parade grounds were restricted and they were often parading side by side. Then there was a good deal of agitation in the Parsi newspapers on the same subject, which I think kept the men away. There were also a good many other reasons for the men staying away, which it is rather difficult to explain.

Examination of Capt. Oonwala, 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers.

November 12th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Am I correct in believing what I have been told, that the Parsis generally have a real dislike for liability to general service?

Witness.—Yes. Because most of the Parsis are recruited from the clerical and middle classes, and it is difficult for them to leave their homes and go away to serve on the frontier and overseas.

The Chairman.—I understand also that they have on many occasions, especially lately, demanded certain preferential treatment, as compared with the other Territorial Force units?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Why should they get preferential treatment, as compared with other battalions?

Witness.—They do not wear the same kind of dress which Indians wear. The rations which they are given do not agree with them. For instance, Parsis want meat and bread out of British rations, and they want rice and dall and ghee from the Indian rations; they don't eat chappatis.

The Chairman.—So they want a little bit of both?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Would it not be possible to give them equivalents which would suit them, as is done to the sepoys in the regular army? For instance, in Burma some sepoys get atta and rice, while others get different rations, but it is all a matter of equivalent and on the same scale.

Witness.—Quite.

The Chairman. For how long have you had a commission?

Witness.—I had a commission from the start of the battalion. Before that I had a commission in the Bombay battalion of the Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—Your commission in this battalion is that of a second Lieut.?

Witness.—Lieut. and Subedar. I am a local Captain.

The Chairman.—But you got a dual commission?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Is it a fact that you and other officers do not like the idea of having a dual commission? Is it a cause of discontent?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—What would you like to have?

Witness.—A King's Commission.

The Chairman.—How would you get that?

Witness.—By grant from headquarters.

The Chairman.—What qualifications have you got for a King's Commission, such as is granted to officers who go through Sandhurst?

Witness.—Educational qualifications and social status.

The Chairman.—Even the most highly educated Englishman of the highest social status, unless he goes through Sandhurst, cannot get a King's Commission?

Witness.—Let a college be started and we will go through it.

The Chairman.—But the regulations that exist lay down that only men who have gone through Sandhurst can be given King's Commissions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware that an Auxiliary Force exists in India. Do they grant King's Commission in that Force?

Witness.—Yes, they do.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What are the qualifications required of the recipients of those commissions; have they all gone through Sandhurst?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—At any rate, the King's Commissions are conferred upon a large number who have never gone through Sandhurst?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You claim a special privilege?

Witness.—Yes. I had a commission in the Bombay battalion.

Mr. Calvert.—I gathered that the Parsis would like to enter the Auxiliary Force, but they do not like to enter the Territorial Force, if they have a liability to serve on the frontier?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—If in order to remove racial distinctions the Auxiliary Force were abolished, Parsis would be willing to join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—They refuse to undertake full military liability?

Witness.—Not all of them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Yet they desire to have King's Commissions?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—For what?

Witness.—For local service, to serve in the district.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In other words, you do not wish to be in the Territorial Force, but you want to be in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You are aware that the Auxiliary Force at present is confined to European British subjects? Do you yourself wish to be called a European British subject?

Witness.—I do not.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then why do you seek admission?

Witness.—If we get the same liabilities as exist in the Auxiliary Force and can remain in the Territorial Force, there can be no objection.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Could you tell me the reason of the waning popularity of the Parsi battalion?

Witness.—There are several reasons. When the Parsi battalion was formed, the men who were enrolled at that time were under the impression that they would have to do only local service, but that is not the case. Another reason was that they thought they would get a Dominion Commission, and would be on the same level as members of the Auxiliary Force, but that is not the case.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I put it to you that the Parsis, as you must admit, have always declared themselves to be Indians?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Why don't you, then, like to continue in and take advantage of the Territorial Force? Why do you wish to eliminate yourself from the Indians?

Witness.—Because of the difference in treatment. The European community in Bombay are required to protect their homes in Bombay. The Parsi community, which is a very small one, think that they would be better serving their community by stopping in the locality or the district in which they are living.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I will give you a parallel case. The British shopkeeper and clerk during the war left his home and went to the front.

Witness.—So did some of the Parsis in the general force. There was a Parsi platoon of the Auxiliary Force which went to the front.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You think, and I quite agree with you, that the form of diet is a serious consideration. I quite agree with you that the diet of the Parsi is certainly different from that of the Indian. But, as General Shea has told you, if a special diet was offered to you, such as is given to other communities, would that be acceptable, and remove all source of grievance on that score?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you accept the principle that the Territorial Force should from the second line of defence to the Regular Army?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Hyder.—Then the men of your community would like to serve on the frontier or wherever they are sent?

Witness.—They would like to serve, but, looking to the smallness of the community, it is very undesirable that our youths should be sacrificed in that respect.

The Chairman.—You were talking about the question of the commission which you hold. Now, if the Auxiliary Force were granted the same commission as the officers in the Territorial Force, would you be satisfied?

Witness.—Quite.

The Chairman.—So long as you both had the same form of commission, you would be satisfied, whatever that commission was?

Witness.—Quite satisfied.

There is one more point. I should like to say that, when the Parsi battalion was raised, the Parsis were promised not only British rations, British clothing and British accommodation, but they were given to understand that they would be given the same commissions as the Auxiliary Force. It was said at the time that the question of the commission was under consideration but that most probably it would be a Dominion Commission. It was also said that the battalion would only be liable for local service. These are the chief grievances of the Parsi community, and I have been specially asked to bring them to your notice.

Examination of Mr. Singha, 11/15th Punjab Regiment

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Would you very kindly tell us what your qualifications are for giving evidence before this committee.

Witness.—I am a member of the Indian Territorial Force. I am a company officer in the 11/15th Punjab regiment, in which I am the senior territorial officer. I have been with the troops for six years. In the war I was secretary of the Y. M. C. A. and I have raised my own company in the Territorial Force. I have personally helped in recruiting and I am very keen on the Territorial Force, and that my community should take part in the Territorial movement.

The Chairman.—I think I am correct in saying that you are giving your evidence as an Indian Christian, who is speaking from the point of view of the Indian Christians in the Territorial Force. Is the Territorial Force movement popular among Indian Christians?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Where do you mostly get your men from?

Witness.—We get them from Sheikhpura, Lyallpur and Lahore Districts, and train them at Jullundur.

The Chairman.—You have got no difficulty in getting the man to come down there for training?

Witness.—Our community is well organised and it all depends with them on the leaders. When the leaders go to the villages and tell them to do a thing, there is no difficulty.

The Chairman.—What is the motive which generally makes your people join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—As far as the men are concerned, they join because they are patriotic and because they desire that everybody should consider that they are patriotic. We have so far suffered because others think that our interests may not be the interests of the country. As the Territorial Force is the first attempt of the kind, patriotic people like to take part in the defence of the country, voluntarily. They are keen to shoulder the responsibility and enlist in large numbers.

The Chairman.—Then I understand that the motives with which they come are two, firstly, patriotism and, secondly, because they wish clearly to prove that the Indian Christian is prepared to work for his country, exactly in the same way as an Indian of any other religion.

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—You have no difficulty in getting as many men as you like?

Witness.—There is no difficulty as long as we tell them to come.

The Chairman.—The primary object of the Territorial Force is to form a second line of defence to the regular army. Do you think that your unit or your company, for instance, would be fit to take its place with the regular army?

Witness.—I do not think I am very competent to make a statement on that subject. I can only quote my own Commanding Officer's words. He says that, if war broke out to-day and we mobilised, it would take 4 to 6 months to have our unit ready for action. My own company, I think, will take very much less, because we have a good number of ex-soldiers.

The Chairman.—Do you think that the training you have had has made you sufficiently efficient to command your company in war?

Witness.—No. I think the difficulty in our unit is not the men, but the officers. The men pick up their work very quickly, and all the officers who saw our training were surprised and have said that, what the sepoy in the regular regiment takes six months to learn, our men learn in two months. But we have always felt that our officers do not get sufficient training. One or two months is not sufficient for them.

The Chairman.—Is the defect in the present system due to lack of training for officers.

Witness.—That is one of the causes.

The Chairman.—What period of training would you like an officer to have, in order that he may make a successful commander?

Witness.—At the present rate it would take very long before we could be efficient. Now they are trying to give us opportunity to train with regular units for three months or two months. We have now in Jullundur a special class for officers, to which I have not been able to go. It would be very difficult for officers to go to such instructional courses. If we were told, when we joined, to get training for six months or a year straight off, and after that if we kept on having 28 days training in the year, I think that would be sufficient. It would be easier for many people, who are in service, to get leave for a year at a time, for then we could get men to take their places.

The Chairman.—Have your men any objection to the liability for general service?

Witness.—Some men have objected to it, and others have not. There is a lot of misunderstanding, and there are different points of view. There are certain groups who are willing to do anything, and there are others who argue like this. "The Auxiliary Force is only liable for local service and they get better terms, higher pay and better status; while we have to get more training, and undertake more liability, we are paid less." That is one objection. The second is that some people say that the force is intended for the defence of the country and that they would be willing to serve as long as it was only for the defence of the country; but that, if they are going to be used outside the country, it should not be unless their representatives in the Legislative Assembly sent them out. They consider it is unfair that they should be required to fight other peoples' battles, even though they might be the Empire's battles, unless the Empire pays them in the same way as they do the Auxiliary Force. I am merely stating what objections have been raised.

The Chairman.—I would like to have your opinion on this point. You have got your unit as a second line of the regular army and some men of your unit suggest that they ought to be paid higher. Under such circumstances, when you reinforce the regular army you will have your men drawing higher pay than the men in the regular service.

Witness.—Yes. I realise that difficulty myself. I have only informed you of the different opinions that I have heard. I have not yet said what my own opinion is.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you yourself think it suitable that the question of sending troops out of the country, possibly in the defence of India, should depend upon the vote of the Legislative Assembly?

Witness.—I do personally hold that view.

Mr. Burdon.—And your troops should not be mobilised without the consent of the Legislative Assembly?

Witness.—They should be mobilised. But the actual despatch of the Territorial Force out of India should be by a vote of the Assembly. Those individuals who volunteer to go out of India should be allowed to do so, but I do believe that the Assembly should have a voice in its despatch as a force.

Mr. Burdon.—You think it is desirable that the Territorial Force should not be sent overseas without the consent of the Legislative Assembly, except in the case of those members of the force who voluntarily undertake the liability to serve overseas, but so far as the regular army is concerned, you do not wish to advance any view of that kind?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—And your view as regards the Territorial Force is based, among other things, largely on the fact that an interval would always elapse before the Territorial Force could be sent out, and that there would be no urgency in the matter?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you consider that sufficient opportunities are now given, under existing arrangements, to members of your community to serve in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—The opportunities are not sufficient. We got this opportunity with great difficulty and by the special kindness of General Birdwood. Before that it was very difficult for our men to get into the force.

Mr. Burdon.—Christians are serving in your battalion. Are they serving in any other battalions in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Not in the Punjab, but in South India I am sure there are many.

Mr. Burdon.—There are many Indian Christians serving in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—To the best of my knowledge. There was a difficulty at first, because there was supposed to be a prejudice against them. In a mixed battalion there might be complications with platoons of other caste.

Mr. Burdon.—But you said you did not consider that sufficient opportunity is given to your community to serve in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I think, they would find it very difficult, if, for example, they were going to serve in any other unit, than an organised battalion or Company of Christians.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing this Committee were to recommend the expansion of the Territorial Force, do you consider, in that event, that any special facilities or special provisions should be made for the enrolment of Indian Christians?

Witness.—Personally I would desire that for the Punjab we should have two battalions of Christians, distributed by companies in the various regiments; or, preferably, to have one full battalion separate and one battalion mixed up by companies in other units.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you any idea about other parts of India?

Witness.—When I was in the U. P. last year, I talked this matter over with some people there, and I am sure that they are keen to have Indian Christians in the Territorial Force. If the provision is made, recruits will be forthcoming in the Punjab and U. P. About other provinces, I know only by hearsay.

Mr. Burdon.—Would your requirements be met by a general direction that Indian Christians should be taken into a company?

Witness.—Yes. That would help very much, because without that provision we should be handicapped.

Mr. Burdon.—That would be sufficient?

Witness.—Yes, because I know that our present record will make us find favour with Army Head Quarters.

Mr. Burdon.—I gather that, on the whole, you are satisfied with the existing arrangements in the Territorial Force, as regards the functions which they are intended to discharge and the service for which they are liable.

Witness.—I personally want to see more sides to this problem, and some provision made for taking other classes of men. But, as far as the Territorial Force is concerned, I want that to be retained.

Mr. Burdon.—You want that retained with the present functions and present liability for military service and the present arrangements for training?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—What is the other side?

Witness.—Some people who have got the same sort of private liabilities as members of the Auxiliary Force, though they want to learn the art of defending their country, though they want to be of use in time of need, cannot get the training, because it is impossible for them to go out for 56 days and 28 days for training. For such men provision should be made on the lines of the Auxiliary Force in urban areas. Where there are sufficient recruits, they should have battalions, otherwise companies or double companies.

Mr. Burdon.—With no liability for military service?

Witness.—With the same sort of liability as the Auxiliary Force has. You would have certain people volunteering if war broke out and they could be drafted into units.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, they would volunteer or not volunteer as the case might be?

Witness.—At the beginning; you will not leave it till the last moment. At the last moment you may get some more volunteers, but at the beginning you will know the minimum you will have, because, when they are enlisting, you will know from the form they sign whether they make themselves liable for general service or only for home service.

Mr. Burdon.—You would give people enlisting in the special section the option of accepting liability for foreign service?

Witness.—Yes, because many men may be willing to make themselves liable for general service, whose duties in peace time do not allow them to make the sacrifice necessary to go out. During war they may be able to make the sacrifice.

Mr. Burdon.—But they would like to have the less rigorous degree of training?

Witness.—Yes, it would be better than having nothing.

Dr. Mullick.—You would like to have a Christian battalion, if you had the authority. Do you think, from the military point of view, a communal battalion would be as efficient as a mixed battalion?

Witness.—From the military point of view there are two kinds of efficiency. You have the purely fighting efficiency, which I do not think would be interfered with. I think a purely Christian battalion would be more efficient than a mixed one. On the other hand you might have political reasons against such a unit; that is a different affair.

Dr. Mullick.—In your present unit there are various communities represented. Do you or your friends, as Christians, have any difficulty as regards treatment on account of your religion?

Witness.—Our men would have found difficulty if our officers were not what they are. I claim that our officers are on the average more suitable as officers than the others, and therefore they naturally earn respect from others, and, because of their friendship with the other officers, their treatment is better.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are your officers all Christians?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Your answer is that, because your officers set the lead, others reciprocate?

Witness.—If our officers were the same type as the men, because they are Christians, they would certainly be misunderstood, or have complications with others, but because the officers are all of families known to others and in their private life are on good terms with everybody else, here also their natural influence enables them to be on good terms with the men under their command, who will not be ill-treated in any way or insulted by other sepoys, because their officers, being friends of the other officers, take care of that.

Dr. Mullick.—So it is the personal influence of your officers which protects your men from undesirable treatment?

Witness.—Yes, from undesirable complications, because I do not think my men would go under.

The Chairman.—The fact remains that, as regards your unit, the men are not suffering from any discomfort on account of their particular religion?

Witness.—No, but there might be complications.

The Chairman.—That is supposition; but the fact which you have actually given me is that you admit that there are no complications.

Witness.—There is always a tendency in that direction.

The Chairman.—I am trying to get at what actually does happen, and you have told us that in your unit there are no complications.

Witness.—Have it that way, though I could cite instances in which there were complications.

The Chairman.—Have there been complications on communal lines?

Witness.—There was a complication on communal lines. One community tried to preach something contrary to our religion and there were complications, but when the C. O. came to know of it, he made arrangements to prevent it occurring again.

Dr. Mullick.—With regard to the question of overseas service, I will put it to you that it is necessary that we should make the most of the Territorial units. Therefore, if possible, we ought to make them a mobile force, as far as we can, to meet the enemy in any centre. Sometimes war is easier ended by meeting the enemy a little way outside. In the last war much of the fighting was

done in Mesopotamia. In a sense that was not foreign service; it was to protect the home land from devastation. Would you make that distinction with regard to the Territorial Force? Would Mesopotamia in those circumstances be considered foreign service?

Witness.—In my mind there are two points of view. One is, as you have said. that in order to defend our own country or as part of the Empire we have to go anywhere. The second point is the national consciousness in a country. The question is why the force is not popular. These are the things people are discussing. Personally I am willing to go anywhere.

Dr. Mullick.—I was only taking up the point of your reply to Mr. Burdon. He asked your opinion quite clearly whether on all occasions you would consider the sanction of the Legislature a *sine qua non* for all foreign service and you were quite clear that you would require the sanction of the Legislature. Would fighting in Mesopotamia come under that category of requiring the sanction of the Legislature, in the same way as fighting in East Africa or France? I make a distinction between fighting abroad for the Empire and trans-frontier service for the purpose of protecting our own country. Would you object to their being used to save our own millions from the devastations of war?

Witness.—Of course not, but it is for the politicians, not for me, to discuss these things and to say who is to decide whether it is for India or home defence.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you get enough youths of good education as officers in your Territorial Force battalion?

Witness.—In the unit as a whole I think we can. But there are many who, in my opinion, should not be officers. They are not educated enough, and they do not realise the advantage of *esprit de corps* or the advantage which comes from being together in a mess or a club, on which personally I lay great value.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—From the military point of view and in respect of their fitness as commanders, do you think they are not satisfactory?

Witness.—I do not think so. There are several weak men, but I think the C. O. would be the best judge.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—What are the causes of this situation?

Witness.—Personally I think that the functions and the constitution of the Indian Territorial Force were not understood by anybody, and nobody who was recruiting knew what type of men was required.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But you have just said that you were recruiting.

Witness.—And I said that my officers are all right. I say that, where a company has been recruited under these circumstances, there is less likelihood of its having good officers. It is just a chance in my case; I might not have had good officers.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—What do you suggest to remedy this defect?

Witness.—I will have to go into another line of reasoning. To me the chief defect in the Indian Territorial Force is its officers, and I do not believe you can easily get 16 platoon commanders, four company officers, an Adjutant, a C. O., about 22 men in all, for very many units who will be really fit to be officers, of the standard at which we are aiming. There is one point, that unless you pay these officers in an adequate manner, you will not get them.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—That is to say, in addition to the extra training, you have got to give the officers pay to induce them to come?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do you think that in four or five years' time with proper training it would be ready to take up its place in the first line?

Witness.—Yes; I have already made a proviso that the officers should be more trained.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you expect to produce an Indian battalion commander in five years?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—How long would you say that it would take?

Witness.—It depends on the genius of our men and the opportunities that are given them for training; but I do hold that, even with a little more training, they would be fit to become company commanders, but not to command battalions.

Mr. Burdon.—How long do you think, given the most favourable conditions, it would take to train a battalion commander?

Witness.—It is very difficult to answer; personally, I should say not less than ten years. There is one point I wish to speak about regarding the officers. We have a lot of officers holding the Viceroy's Commission and honorary King's Commissions; to remedy that and to get a uniform class of men, we should only have so many officers who are given the King's Commission every year, whether honorary or otherwise, whom we can properly assimilate; I would, therefore, suggest that platoon commanders should be all jemadars or subedars and that only company officers should be lieutenants.

The Chairman.—That is, in time you would have your Territorial units organised on exactly the same lines as the regular army units?

Witness.—Yes. Otherwise it would be a very anomalous position and would lead to heart-burning, and would detract even from the position of the honorary lieutenants.

The Chairman.—I deduce from your evidence four things: first, that you must train your officers; second, that you must pay them better; third, that you must do away with the dual commission; and fourth, that you must organise your regiments exactly like the regular Indian battalions; then you will get an efficient Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that a resolution of the Legislative Assembly should be required to send the Territorial Force for service outside India. If I caught you aright, I understood you to suggest a distinction between a war immediately affecting the safety of India and a war in which we are concerned only on account of the Empire; is that the sort of distinction?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is it because you think that otherwise the Territorial Force may be sent out where India is not immediately concerned?

Witness.—There is something in that.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the Territorial Force, would it increase its popularity if the liability to general service outside the country were not insisted on in the beginning?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing the liability to general service outside the country were not insisted on in the beginning, do you think that in time of necessity a sufficient number of men in the Territorial Force would offer themselves voluntarily to go abroad?

Witness.—I think so, from my own province.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you advocate not insisting upon the liability to general service for some time in the beginning?

Witness.—Not necessarily. I think, if we are going to have a Territorial Force, we should know for certain what we are going to enter upon definitely. That is why I have already suggested that this will only be a part; this Indian Territorial Force should be absolutely a second line of the regular army upon whom we can depend.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You want one part to remain with a definite liability?

Witness.—Yes; for the others I suggest an Auxiliary Force line from which men might volunteer or not.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said there was a complaint that the Territorial Force has more training, greater liability and less pay by comparison with the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think you would be able to get many more men if a branch of the force were formed on the lines you suggest, with the same terms of service as the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes, because those men who object are not people who join the Territorial Force: this objection does not hold good as regards the people who now join it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How many men are there in your company?

Witness.—150, I think.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What class do they come from?

Witness.—Mostly from rural classes; three-fourths are agriculturists and one-fourth clerks, who come from the towns, although most of them have their homes in the villages. 80 or 90 per cent. of them are literate; and 40 or 50 per cent. of them are literate in English.

Dr. Paranjpye.—General Shea asked you what was the inner motive of your community joining; is it for the purpose of raising the status of your community or of the people who join?

Witness.—In some cases probably.

Dr. Paranjpye.—When you go out recruiting do you make any appeal to the men on the ground that by joining they will be raising their own status and that of their community?

Witness.—Not their own status.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Excuse my putting this question to you; some Indian Christians are converts from what are called the lower classes of Hindus. Do you put it to them they will improve their position by joining the Territorial Force?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Is there any heart-burning at the differential treatment between Anglo-Indians and the Indian Christians?

Witness.—Times have changed; there might once have been heart-burning; but now Indian Christians look down upon the people who join the Auxiliary Force, because they go under false names: Jai Kishen becomes Jackson, Har Kishen becomes Harrison and so on.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do your people have the same kind of food, generally, as the other Indian communities—Hindus, Sikhs or Muhammadans?

Witness.—Just the same, but more like the Muhammadans.

Dr. Paranjpye.—So you have no difficulty about rations?

Witness.—There were some who said they wanted to have the same rations as Anglo-Indians.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You told us that all your officers are Christians? Would your people have any objection to serve under non-Christian officers?

Witness.—Certainly not.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What is the educational status of the Territorial officers whom you have got? Are they all well-educated?

Witness.—One is a graduate; another is an M.Sc. A third one has studied up to the B.A. and a fourth one is an Intermediate; and the fifth is also an educated man. They can talk English well and they are used to English ways, having been in English schools.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What do you think would be the effect of doing away with separate communal units and enlisting all classes in one unit?

Witness.—There would be practical difficulties in messing.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If you mixed them up, do you consider that the Hindus and Sikhs would object to the Christians?

Witness.—Some of them might, but my community would have no objection.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would not Muhammadans eat food cooked by Christians?

Witness.—Some might · it depends upon the ideas the Muhammadans have got of the food we cook.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If you were mixed up with the Muhammadan units would your people have any objection?

Witness.—No; our people would have no objection.

Dr. Paranjpye.—It may happen that in your districts there are a comparatively large number of Christians who could come to the camp near their homes; but you would not have a large Christian community in every district, and

therefore, if it is proposed to make district units of the Territorial Force, it will not be possible to have separate Christian companies, even in each district. Would your people have any objection to joining other platoons?

Witness.—As a principle, I say that as long as some homogeneity is maintained, whether local or otherwise, I have no objection. If they have some status and if they have some inducement, it is all right.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I want to ask you whether this communal principle is in your opinion, absolutely necessary, or whether some other principle binding all the people would be desirable?

Witness.—In the cities it is necessary, but in the village areas I do not think it is so very necessary.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are you in favour of having other branches of the Territorial Force started?

Witness.—Yes, I want others, if it is possible.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Some of the members of your community are expert mechanics and they would like to have a separate branch? Would they be able to join?

Witness.—Yes, in the mechanical and engineering branches.

Mr. Calvert.—Do your men ask for any preferential treatment or for any special arrangements?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—Is there any general desire among members of the Christian community to join the regular army?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—As regards officers, would you prefer that they should go through the ranks to be selected, or that they should get direct commissions?

Witness.—I, personally, consider that, under exceptional circumstances, men having exceptional local influence, or good social status, or who have rendered good service to the State, should be given direct commissions, but, as a rule, commanders should be recruited through the ranks, and only the best men should be selected, while the others should be given the option of leaving the force. If out of 6 candidates only one is to be selected, a distinct understanding should be given to the five others that they will have to go and will be permitted to resign. They will come from a different class and they will find it very difficult to carry on for a number of years with men of a different status.

Mr. Calvert.—You would not suggest that everybody should go through the ranks?

Witness.—Even if everybody goes through the ranks, only the best men will come to the top.

Mr. Calvert.—Would you mind telling me exactly why some Indian Christians wish to join the Auxiliary Force? What is at the back of their minds?

Witness.—It is just because by a mere change of name and nationality, they can get a higher status, while their habits and colour remain the same. Instead of being called a Havildar or Subedar they will be called by some other name.

Mr. Calvert.—Supposing for the moment that there is a very small extra amount of money to devote to the Territorial Force, what item would you consider as the most important upon which to spend it? What do you think the most important thing to do in order to improve the Territorial Force?

Witness.—The first thing to do would be to train the officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are you sure that patriotism is the only force that brings recruits into your company?

Witness.—No, I did not say that. I said patriotism and the desire to do away with the misunderstanding about the community, and also to improve generally the social status of the community.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Can you suggest any additional means by which *esprit de corps* could be encouraged by Government, or by your Instructors? Can you suggest anything to inculcate a better feeling?

Witness.—By introducing some form of competition in different kinds of games like hockey, rifle practice and so on.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Nothing like that exists at present?

Witness.—We have a hockey tournament and our men are proud of having won it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Can you suggest anything else, which is lacking and which exists in the Indian army, that would materially improve the level of the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—I cannot suggest anything just at present, except possibly to give us our own badges and colours.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now said that there are a certain number of people from urban areas, who desire to be given the same pay and facilities for training as members of the Auxiliary Force. Supposing there was no Auxiliary Force in existence, would there still be that desire, or is it because there is that Auxiliary Force facing you?

Witness.—Because the Auxiliary Force is facing us. But I would point out that, if the Auxiliary Force had a section which was a second line to the British Army, just as the Territorial Force is the second line of the Indian section of the army, then the difference in pay would not make much difference.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In other words, racial distinctions come in?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You are aware that among Anglo-Indians in the Auxiliary Force there have been included some members of your community who have changed their dress and name. You are aware that they get diet and dress on a more expensive scale than yours. Therefore, there may be some reason for increased pay for them?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You also realise that the training that they receive is of a shorter duration and not so complete as yours? You admit that?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You also at the same time consider that their duties are of a different nature, in that they are not liable for service overseas?

Witness.—No, they are not liable.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If one force is used only for internal security and the other is for overseas, to take the place of the regular army, their standard of efficiency and their training must be different?

Witness.—The training may or may not be different, but, if the Indian is willing to eat the British ration, if he is willing to wear the same dress, and if he is permitted to join the force without changing his original name, then it will be all right.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you be happier if the Auxiliary Force were brought down to the level of the Indian Territorial Force, *i.e.*, if the Auxiliary Force were to get the same pay as the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You have 56 days training in the first year. Is there any allotted time for the training of officers?

Witness.—They have extra hours.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you seriously advocate six months' continuous training for officers in the first year? Do you think it will be possible?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You say that the Officers are a weak spot in the present constitution of the Indian Territorial Force. Would you, under these circumstances, agree to every province supplying officers for the various battalions from its University Training Corps? Do you think it would be a good plan to supply a nucleus of officers for the various Territorial battalions from the University Corps?

Witness.—That is so even now. The University Corps form the potential basis for the supply of officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said just now that, if the military liability for service overseas was taken away from your terms of agreement, you thought that more members would voluntarily consent to that liability.

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You think that, if an order were passed to-day, taking out the military liability overseas from the terms of your enrolment, that it would so react on the members of your force that they would voluntarily enlist in large numbers for duty overseas?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Dr. Paranjpye asked you just now about holding out the raising of the status of your community as a bait for enlistment. How would it raise the community?

Witness.—It would raise the community like this. Just now everything seems to be on communal lines; I regret it. If our community is doing things which are worth while and for the country, people will see that, just because he is a Christian, a man is not a worse, but a better Indian.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Well now, you just now, in answer to Dr. Paranjpye, admitted that some Indian Christians had, by changing their names, crept into the Auxiliary Force as European British subjects. That is so. I admit that. I don't say they make better soldiers or worse soldiers, because we are on terms of equality in India to-day. But would you object to an order being issued that Indian Christians, who have under the guise of European British subjects enrolled themselves in the Auxiliary Force, be forthwith removed from the Force?

Witness.—That only increases the racial distinction.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—But you made that point just now. I want to give them back to you; they are good men and educated fellows.

Witness.—But they won't join the Indian Territorial Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you agree to an order being passed?

Witness.—No.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then why did you object to their leaving your Force?

Witness.—Because I regret that there should be this bait, or the circumstances which make them join at the expense of their losing their nationality.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You don't desire any preferential treatment for your community?

Witness.—No.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You said you would like the officers for the Territorial battalions to be from the same community as their men, as far as possible. Would you like them from outside, if they are not forthcoming from the community?

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—And you said that for training Commanding Officers you require at least ten years?

Witness.—That is my opinion.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you refer to Territorial officers or to outsiders of the same community from the regular army, who can be drafted in? Would the latter be eligible as Commanding Officers of units? I am calling all India a community. Say you can get a regular officer, who is a retired Commanding Officer with the King's Commission in the army; would he not do as C. O. of your unit in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—He must have sufficient experience. It is for the military authorities, I think, to say if a man is suitable.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—And what would be your standard for the Territorial Force; educational and social?

Witness.—The same standard as the British army would require from Indians holding commissions in the Indian Army, except with a different age limit.

Dr. Hyder.—The main occupation of your people is agriculture. Are they peasant proprietors or tenants?

Witness.—A few villagers own their own land. Others don't. They have got very small holdings as a rule.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Do I understand you to say that, if the Auxiliary Force were to become a second line of defence in the same way as the Territorial Force, it would do away with the dissatisfaction in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I say that in that case there would be no justification for the complaint. If it becomes the second line of defence, the others, who are for home defence only, should all be treated on the same basis, whatever the basis may be.

Mr. Burdon.—Then in that case, you would not ask for special facilities for people of higher social and educational status who don't like being sepoys?

Witness.—It depends on whether the present standard of the Indian Army is suitable or not. But personally, I think that educated people would not mind joining as privates in units that are homogeneous and include other educated people. But to expect educated people of good family to become privates in the ordinary units of the Territorial Force, as at present constituted, is too much even for patriotism.

Mr. Burdon.—But they would not mind sepoy's rates of pay?

Witness.—I think they would like to be called privates and sergeants and corporals. That is the mentality of the community.

Mr. Burdon.—But what about rates of pay?

Witness.—In the case of rates of pay, I think that if the British are getting so much, they must get so much also.

The Chairman.—Then you would have a man paid higher, not because he is of use to his country but simply because he happens to have a higher social status or better education?

Witness.—In a way.

The Chairman.—But you have in the Territorial Force in England men of the highest social status in the ranks.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—I myself not only in this war, but in the South African war, volunteered as one of the rank and file.

Witness.—I think our educated men would be willing to go as privates just as our brothers in the regular army do. Whether the regular army pay is better or not is not the question. Whatever the regular sepoys suffer we are willing to undergo, but, we must have imagination enough to see that they should have homogeneity in the group, as far as possible.

Mr. Burdon.—But no other preference?

Witness.—No.

Examination of Hony. 2nd Lt. Tikka Sahib Surindra Singh Bedi, 11/1st Punjab Regiment.

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are in the 11/1st Punjab Regiment. How long have you held your commission?

Witness.—About a year.

The Chairman.—Would you say that service in your unit was popular? Can you get as many recruits as you like for your regiment?

Witness.—Very popular. We could get as many as we like, provided we got a certain amount of money to pay each person every month—say Rs. 2. If we can get more, so much the better, but if we get Rs. 2 to start with, we shall be satisfied.

The Chairman.—I understand, from what you say, that you advocate that the Territorial soldier should be paid the whole year round.

Witness.—The whole year round, with a smaller amount of money for the non-training period.

The Chairman.—That is to say, a man would get his 28 days' pay for his training and for the remaining 11 months of the year he would get a retaining fee. When would you pay him that retaining fee?

Witness.—When he finishes his training the next year.

The Chairman.—That is to say, he will do one training and be paid for his month. He will do nothing for 11 months. He will come up the next year for his training, and at the end of his training he will be paid his month's pay for training and his fee for the previous 11 months at Rs. 2 a month.

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Have you any difficulty in getting officers in your corps? Is your complement of officers full?

Witness.—Practically.

The Chairman.—How are they selected?

Witness.—By the old system.

The Chairman.—The point I want to elicit is—when you are selecting officers for your corps, do you think that it is desirable to ask the opinion of officers who are already in the corps, whether they like the idea of the new-comer or not? Or will you leave it to the Commanding Officer to select?

Witness.—We hate to get the opinion of any of the Territorial officers. It is not done in the regular regiments and we don't like it. Our country is not so advanced as most people think, and if there were a Muhammadan Territorial officer, he might not like a Hindu or Sikh officer to come into his battalion. I am expressing the view of my whole battalion. They are quite satisfied with their own C. O.'s choice.

The Chairman.—What do you think is the state of efficiency of your unit? Your unit is a unit which is intended to form a second line to the regular army; do you think it could take its place by the side of the regular army?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—When do you think it will be ready?

Witness.—I don't think it will ever be ready.

The Chairman.—Not even if you gave it intensive training or extended training?

Witness.—If you were to give the men a good grounding and 56 days training in the year, that would make them more or less what might be called a second line.

The Chairman.—How long would you give them for the grounding?

Witness.—At least six months.

The Chairman.—Then do I understand you to say that with an initial training of six months and a training of 56 days every year they will be efficient?

Witness.—That is so.

The Chairman.—Do you think you will get the men to come for those periods?

Witness.—Yes. If we pay them for the period.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you any service yourself in the regular army?

Witness.—I have been nearly two years with the Gloucester Regiment. They sent me there with a view to sending me to Territorial battalion.

Mr. Burdon.—What is your civil avocation? What is your profession?

Witness.—I live in a village 30 miles from Rawalpindi. We have got good opportunity of moving amongst our people. We have a certain number of followers of our own and we go round visiting them. I should call myself more a villager than a townsman.

Mr. Burdon.—Apart from what you stated to General Shea, are there any defects in the present organisation or arrangements connected with the Territorial Force which you think require to be remedied?

Witness.—The advisory committees are doing no good. We have never seen them meeting, and the officers of our Punjab regiments say that they do not even know the names of the members. If you increase them it will mean that you will place military powers in the hands of civilians who know nothing.

Mr. Burdon.—You want these committees abolished?

Witness.—We have got three regiments, one is from the North-West Frontier Province, one from Campbellpur and the third from Jhelum. None of them know a single member of the Advisory Committee.

Mr. Burdon.—That is a piece of external machinery. Could you tell us, briefly, whether you found any conspicuous defects in the organisation of the Territorial Force at present?

Witness.—It all depends on the different regiments. Personally, I am of this opinion that we should get officers who have got a certain following at their back, and who can raise battalions by raising their fingers if a war breaks out.

Mr. Burdon.—You suggest that these feudal leaders should provide the officers as well as the rank and file. You suggested that they should raise battalions by raising their fingers?

Witness.—Officers should be selected out of that class, which has got a certain following at its back and which has got a certain influence in the country. It is no good taking in bannias and unmartial races, for whom the people have no respect at all. From my personal experience it was a mistake that some of the bannia class were allowed to enlist. People do not like it, and it is not popular. Another point I wish to bring before the Committee is about the commissions. I think we are not in any way better than the old subedars and jemadars and that, instead of King's Commissions, we should hold the same commissions as they do. Most people have come into the force only for the commissions or for the money. Where does patriotism come in. If people are fit to be officers, surely they can afford to pay their own minor expenses.

Mr. Burdon.—If you are going to have them all Viceroy's Commissioned ranks, how are you going to provide for company commanders, second in command, or commanding officer.

Witness.—We generally have British officers as company commanders.

Mr. Burdon.—That is only for instructional purposes. The intention is that the Territorial Force battalion should be officered throughout by Indians. My question is how are you going to provide for the appointment of the company commanders and the commanding officer if you are going to stick to Viceroy's Commissions only.

Witness.—Up till now we thought that we were to be a second line to the regular forces. We can never be in the same level as the regular soldiers.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you contemplate that the appointments of company commanders and higher appointments in the battalion should ever be held by a Territorial Force officer?

Witness.—If we are going to make the force a second line? You mean that it should have nothing to do with the regular regiments at all.

Mr. Burdon.—Its units will fight side by side with them in the same formation. They will go as individual units.

Witness.—That is a different thing, which I did not realise up till now.

Mr. Burdon.—Are there any conspicuous defects in the present arrangements, to which you take strong objection or your men strongly object?

Witness.—I think it would be better if the men got Rs. 22 in respect of mufti clothing allowance. At present, when they go back to their villages, people laugh at them. They should be given a certain amount of money instead of clothes. I think a certain number of binoculars might be kept in store for Territorial officers, and they could buy all other things out of their outfit allowance.

Dr. Mullick.—I understand you are dissatisfied with these Advisory Committees?

Witness.—The regiments do not like the Advisory Committees at all.

Dr. Mullick.—Is the Advisory Committee at fault on account of its personnel, or on account of its not meeting, or is it its constitution that you object to?

Witness.—What work do you think they are going to do? As far as I know, the Advisory Committees have done no good.

Dr. Mullick.—I see your numbers are up to the mark, 719 out of 733. So there is no difficulty in recruiting men?

Witness.—I wish they got a little more money, because the world has changed. 4 or 5 years ago we could get recruits more easily than we do now. There are lots of other jobs available for them now. If they got a certain amount of money all the year round, we should have a certain hold on those people. Every year we have to enlist new men. They have no attraction to stay.

Dr. Mullick.—Couldn't we legitimately infer, from the fact that you have got your full numbers, that on the whole your unit is fairly popular, and that the movement is fairly popular in your district?

Witness.—That is true.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that the officers should be men of influence and following. Is that if they possess military aptitude and capacity for leadership, or would you have as officers men of influence and following even if they did not possess those qualifications?

Witness.—Nobody is born a soldier or barrister. We all have to learn. But people are born with influence. For instance a chief has got thousands of people behind him and it is not difficult for him to raise platoons.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing that we do not succeed with officers of influence and following who have no military aptitude and efficiency?

Witness.—Such men are no good; get rid of them.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think it would increase the popularity of the Territorial Force if the liability to service outside the country were not compulsorily insisted upon in the earlier years of organisation? Does the existence of that liability serve to make the force popular or unpopular?

Witness.—I think it makes it more popular if we know that we have to go overseas.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you like to have other arms of the army thrown open to the Territorial Force, such as cavalry, artillery and so on?

Witness.—You cannot do that in the Punjab only. If the regiments in Bengal, Madras and Bombay also do well, that can be decided later on.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Your battalion consists entirely of Muhammadans and you are a Sikh?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You are an officer in that battalion. Do you find that your men object to a Sikh Commander?

Witness.—No, but they would if I was their platoon commander; as it is, I do the staff work.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What do you think about grouping together all the people of all communities?

Witness.—They would kill each other, I am afraid. For instance, we have a Pathan company, and if you had an officer for that company from any other province, as a company commander or platoon commander, they might shoot him before thinking of fighting any one else. They are proud of having their own people.

Dr. Paranjpye.—One of the functions of this Committee is to consider the removal of racial distinctions. Europeans and Anglo-Indians have got certain facilities; they are allowed to join the Auxiliary Force, with different treatment, and different liabilities of service to those of the Territorial Force. One of the claims of Indians is that they should be on the same footing as Europeans and Anglo-Indians. I just want to have your opinion?

Witness.—Indians enjoy the same life in their own regiments. A Subedar Major is so very well treated that he is proud to be a Subedar Major, and people respect him when he goes to the country. We are proud that our own people respect us.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In the Territorial Force Indians have this kind of double commission, Honorary King's Commissions and Viceroy's Commissions, while in the Auxiliary Force they have only got King's Commissions. Do you think there is any feeling about that among the educated people?

Witness.—We have nothing to do with the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think that the distinction between the Auxiliary Force people and the Territorial Force rankles in the minds of the more educated people; the officers, for instance, in your battalion?

Witness.—They do not understand about it. They are very happy in their own work, and they have got nothing to do with the Auxiliary Force.

Mr. Calvert.—You say that your men would prefer to have as officers men of their own class, rather than outsiders. Could you persuade them to see superior virtues in an M.A. from Calcutta?

Witness.—They would hate anybody else coming over them. They are proud of their own people.

Mr. Calvert.—Your Rs. 2 a month to 700 men works out to about Rs. 15,000 a year. If we gave you Rs. 15,000 a year, would you prefer to spend that Rs. 15,000 on a two rupee a month retaining fee or could you find better employment for it?

Witness.—I would rather give the retaining fee.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you approve, as a substitute for the Advisory Committee, of a panchayat amongst your own men, consisting of the O. C. a Hindu and a Muhammadan officer, to advise you?

Witness.—No. We never have any trouble which has to be decided by a panchayat. This is a military affair and not a civil matter. I would vest the power in the O. C.?

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You said that Territorial officers can never get that efficiency which the regular officer has got. Do you attribute that to lack of training or to anything else?

Witness.—To lack of training. It can never be possible. The regular officer and regular men work throughout the year, while the Territorial officer and men work only for a short time.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—If they were given more intensive training and more scope, would they fit themselves?

Witness.—They would be better, but they cannot compare with the regular army.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Even if a man gets extra training?

Witness.—If he becomes a regular soldier, there will be no difference. If he gets training for 12 months in the year, he will be as good.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—If he made it his profession, he would be as good as the regular soldier?

Witness.—Yes, not otherwise.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—As regards the Territorial Force, would you like to have Indian officers or European officers?

Witness.—We like British officers better than Indian officers.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You have some Indians in the Indian Army.

Witness.—Our people like British officers more than they like Indians, because they are doubtful as to what sort of Indians they may have.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Why do you like to be commanded by British officers?

Witness.—Because they are impartial.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—If your own people are impartial, even then you would not like to be commanded by them?

Witness.—Not at the present moment, whether he is a Muhammadan, a Sikh or a Hindu.

Dr. Hyder.—You do not like the principle of the Advisory Committees. Supposing you had a District Advisory Committee in each of your recruiting districts, you would not like these district committees?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Hyder.—Well, how are you going to enlist your men?

Witness.—According to the present system, which is laid down in the regulations of the Indian Territorial Force.

Dr. Hyder.—But who is going to bring the man to the British military officer?

Witness.—Most of the officers brought their own men in our regiment.

Examination of Captain J. N. Banerji.

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you very kindly tell me, for the benefit of the Committee, your qualifications and the standpoint from which you give your evidence?

Witness.—I joined the volunteer force, although I am an Indian, and was enrolled by Colonel Jenkins, now Sir Lawrence Jenkins, on the 12th November 1896. I served right up to the 19th or 20th of June, 1920, when I was gazetted Captain in the Presidency Battalion of the Calcutta Volunteer Rifles. So my period of service extends over 23 or 24 years. I joined as a private and worked my way slowly up to my present rank of Captain. In addition, I am on the Advisory Committee of the Indian Territorial Force.

The Chairman.—In a portion of the written evidence which we have had submitted to us, it has been stated that the Auxiliary Force should be thrown open to Indians.

Witness.—I entirely agree with that. There is a great deal of discontent in Calcutta and outside on this point. The Indian people ask why they should be excluded from the Auxiliary Force, inasmuch as Anglo-Indians of the humblest positions in life are enrolled, are given the privilege of taking their rifles home, are given better clothing and better treatment, and get better food in camp. In short, they are more trusted than the Territorial Force. So my submission to the Committee is that the Auxiliary Force should be thrown open to the Indians, and I suggest that a special platoon or two should be formed for Indians.

The Chairman.—That is to say, you would have a separate Indian section of the Force.

Witness.—A separate section, unless you get people of the same habits of life, when they can be mixed up. When I joined, there was some opposition to my joining, because I was an Indian, and I had to overcome some pugilistic contests to justify my connection with the battalion. From that position of hostility I am now occupying a position of amiability. They call me the Raja of Anglo-Indians.

The Chairman.—You are now *persona grata?*

Witness.—I am very popular in the battalion. And my point is this, if I am a man of the same habits as other people and know how to mix myself thoroughly with them, I do not see the least objection to my finding a place in a mixed company or platoon.

The Chairman.—I see clearly that in your case your popularity is personal.

Witness.—That may be so. It may not be the opportunity of everybody to get on as well as I have done. It may be a personal matter, but what has been done by one man may be tried and attempted and perhaps accomplished by other people.

The Chairman.—What I am leading up to is this—you will understand that I do not wish to draw any invidious distinction,—do you think, on the whole, if you took a number of individuals, that your idea of forming an Indian section in the Auxiliary Force would be popular?

Witness.—A platoon might be formed in the Auxiliary Force and its members might have the same training, the same pay, the same responsibility and the same everything else, as the Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—What would be your degree of eligibility for this platoon?

Witness.—Respectability and good position. There are a number of men who will not join the Territorial Force, for the reason that the food is not good enough. That is one of the chief reasons for not joining the Territorial Force. I suppose that difficulty would be overcome by the fact that they would get better food, and, in addition, the Auxiliary Force is considered to be a better corps and a higher establishment to belong to. Whether this belief is right or ill-founded I cannot say.

The Chairman.—Then really it comes to this, that the discontent, such as it exists, is purely social?

Witness.—Yes; to a certain extent it may be so, and there is this difficulty, as I have said, that the Territorial Force is not considered good enough; the food its members get and the treatment they receive are not considered good enough for the people whom you want to get to join it.

There are many people outside the Territorial Force who are able and willing to join; but they think of the food and they back out of it; so there is not only the social difficulty; personal comfort has also to be taken into consideration.

The Chairman.—Does the question of liability to service come in at all?

Witness.—My own belief is that, when a battalion is well drilled and well trained, the liability to serve either in India or abroad will not arise; they will go anywhere; but there is a distinction between training in camp and training from day to day. When the whole regiment is being trained together under canvas that is one kind of training; whereas, in training from day to day some turn up one day and some another day and they never all work together; it is not the same thing as being trained in camp.

The Chairman.—You think that the system of Territorial training of the men all together is the correct one?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Is it quite suitable in Calcutta?

Witness.—Yes; but I find that not enough men come and join the Territorial Force?

The Chairman.—Supposing that you made the liability for the Auxiliary Force and for the Territorial Force exactly the same, would that in any way remove the feeling of discontent?

Witness.—I understand the liability of the Auxiliary Force is purely local; whereas the Territorial Force may have to go all over India and even beyond India in certain cases. I understand that the Auxiliary Force exists more to defend themselves than to defend the Empire; should there be any trouble they have no liability to go abroad; they are grouped together in the first place for the purpose of defending themselves, should the necessity ever arise.

The Chairman.—The point I was trying to elicit was this: you say there is a certain feeling of envy among the better classes of Indians with regard to the conditions of the Auxiliary Force. One of the most important conditions of the Territorial Force is its liability to serve beyond the frontier or beyond the seas. If you made the Auxiliary Force have exactly the same liability, would it in any way remove the feeling which exists at present?

Witness.—I do not think that will make any difference because, I have already said, that a well drilled regiment will go anywhere.

The Chairman.—The reason why Indians wish to join the Auxiliary Force is merely social? They wish a higher standard of living?

Witness.—Yes; and they require better conditions; to my mind it is perhaps easier to drill from day to day than to go under canvas and stay there for a whole month.

The Chairman.—But you said that training under canvas was the better of the two?

Witness.—Certainly; I hold that still, because you learn more in that way.

Mr. Burdon.—That being so, why do you advocate that Indians of a higher social class should be allowed to have this less efficient method of training?

Witness.—Let them make a beginning; there are people who like easier training better than more difficult training, and a lesser liability to begin with; let us begin with a lesser liability and lesser training, and perhaps later on they may say that it is not good enough and may want a change. You have got also to make arrangements for the transfer of members of the Auxiliary Force to the Territorial Force. Therefore I say, let us begin with the lesser liability and and lesser training.

Mr. Burdon.—Can you tell me what public interests, in your opinion, would be served by allowing a certain class of Indians to have the less rigorous training and the lower standard of efficiency?

Witness.—It will induce a very considerable section of the people to obtain that training. Training has a charm when you once begin it, and later on they would like to have more and more of it; that is the point to be gained by it.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, it would help to spread voluntary military training over a wider range of the public?

Witness.—That is so.

Mr. Burdon.—But side by side with them you would maintain the existing Territorial Force organisation, with the function of being a second line to the regular army?

Witness.—I do hold the opinion firmly, that the training in camp is superior to training out of camp.

Mr. Burdon.—But you wish to maintain a Territorial Force, whose function is to be a second line to the regular army?

Witness.—I do.

Mr. Burdon.—And from what classes do you suggest that that section of the Territorial Force should be recruited?

Witness.—I have in mind two separate classes, one the literate or educated class and the other the village people, and I would keep these two classes in separate platoons or companies or regiments; to mix them up together is an unholy combination; they never get on well together. So I would keep the two apart, giving them training in the same camp, but otherwise keeping them in different units.

Mr. Burdon.—And where will the officers be drawn from?

Witness.—The officers would first of all be chosen for their physical fitness, aptitude for military training, discipline and readiness to work. A certain portion of the commissions should be reserved to another class of people—social magnates or zamindars with great influence and so on. I would have a mixture of the two; it is very important for recruiting that you should have people of that class in a locality.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you see anything incongruous in permitting young men of efficient military age to assume this lower liability for military service and to be allowed to differentiate themselves from other young men of military age merely because they are of a higher social class?

Witness.—My own impression is that when they make a beginning, and find that they can fit themselves for higher service and greater responsibility, they will gladly join the other class.

Mr. Burdon.—But don't you think it would be more appropriate and more suitable that differentiation in training and in liability for service should go according to age more than to social distinctions, as a general rule?

Witness.—That may be so; but you must make allowances for human nature. Some people are not bound to join any force at all; they will not join; but if they find easier training and less liability they will be very pleased to join, and then, when they are in it, I maintain that they will in time gladly assume the greater responsibility and higher training.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not advocate any principle of compulsion, in order to enrol the educated classes?

Witness.—Fitness is an essential thing.

Mr. Burdon.—Compulsion or the voluntary principle—which do you advocate?

Witness.—I am a great advocate of compulsion.

Mr. Burdon.—Of compulsory military service?

Witness.—Yes, everywhere; it leads me on to a political question; but I think no country is fit to exist unless there is some kind of military training among its population.

Mr. Burdon.—And you do not think you will get sufficiently widespread military training in India without compulsion?

Witness.—I do not think so. Most of my people are inclined to be a bit lazy and soft; you will make men of them if you bring them under harder discipline—I will not say iron rule, but harder discipline.

Mr. Burdon.—May I put it to you like this: that combined with the principle of compulsion, you would have the principle of imposing a light responsibility to start with, until people are gradually educated to be willing to assume the wider responsibility?

Witness.—If you start with compulsion you will be the master of the situation; you will give them no option and no choice.

Mr. Burdon.—But you say it is not incompatible with compulsion to impose a lighter responsibility to start with?

Witness.—No, it is not. When you are giving him the lower training, you can make him understand that there exists a better training and a greater liability; once you infuse the military spirit into the people, higher ambitions will come naturally. Gradually give them rifles. Make a beginning in that way. This training will have such a charm of its own that the men will gladly continue their training until they attain their manhood and become real soldiers.

Mr. Burdon.—How long a time will it take before the people would be willing to assume the highest responsibility?

Witness.—I would begin soon, and I think in ten years you would find the whole aspect of the country is changed.

Mr. Burdon.—With compulsion?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—But I presume you realise that it would take a further period beyond that before you could raise Territorial Force battalions, officered throughout and commanded by Indians, which would be capable of fighting side by side with the other battalions?

Witness.—Yes, but I think that every facility should be given for training these Territorial officers, or you should send them to special military schools. If you do that, I have not the least doubt that most of them, when occasion requires, will fight as earnestly and as heroically as any other soldier.

Mr. Burdon.—But with the same skill as a regular officer?

Witness.—Perhaps to a very considerable extent. I would not make any allowance for less skill. You think of a thing, and then you do it. So you will sometimes find that an officer with less training will be more skillful than an officer with more training. It all depends on the situation, and the mentality of the man himself. I may be a very brave man with less skill, but I may keep a whole platoon at bay. Good training is very necessary, but I submit to the Committee that with less training certain students will do just as well, and perhaps better, than others who have had more training.

Mr. Burdon.—Are you talking now of the lower ranks of officers, that is, of platoon commanders, or of officers commanding battalions?

Witness.—With regard to battalions, you have not yet given anyone a chance of attaining to that position. You cannot make us command battalions all in a hurry. If you give the men proper training, they ought to make excellent battalion commanders in 10 years.

Mr. Burdon.—You know of course that it takes 25 years in the regular army to make a really good battalion commander?

Witness.—Yes, but I would say, with all the humility and submission I can command, that a good man will learn more in 10 years than an ordinary man. It all depends on the mentality, the aptitude for learning and so on.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you suggest that all British officers who require 25 years' training are very ordinary men?

Witness.—I don't say that. I have the highest respect and admiration for British officers, but my proposition is this. If you have to wait for 25 years before you can command a battalion, you should feel more for your misfortune than for your faults. Some of your gentlemen ought to be raised more promptly and quickly. I have already told you that training alone does not bring success in warfare. A man, as I have said, with less training may do better than a man with more training.

Mr. Burdon.—What views do you hold regarding the University Training Corps? I will go step by step. My first question really is this. What function do you think the University Training Corps should serve, *i.e.*, should the University Corps, as such, be liable for actual military service, or should it solely be regarded as a form of education, for forming character and for increasing familiarity with military subjects and the necessity for self-defence?

Witness.—I agree with your latter proposition, where you said that it would serve as an excellent school for military discipline and military training and as paving the way for future higher and better military training.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not contemplate that a University Corps, as such, should be called out for actual military service?

Witness.—If they are called out, I have not the least doubt that they will do excellent service.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it would be suitable to employ boys of that age, say for the purpose of quelling a civil disturbance?

Witness.—Under very grave emergencies you will have to, but I would not employ them for that purpose, except in a very grave emergency.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that, if there was a nominal liability imposed upon boys in the U. T. C. for actual military service, either local or outside the province, the parents of the boys would feel any reluctance in allowing them to join?

Witness.—I do not think so. Parents have changed their mentality a lot. If the parents have not, the boys themselves have. I can tell you this much, that boys feel an amount of responsibility which the parents do not. I have not the least doubt that the boys will do well and they will assume responsibility and liability without any hesitation.

Dr. Mullick.—The Committee feel that you are a great enthusiast on this military question?

Witness.—I may be permitted to say this, although it is perhaps somewhat out of place to do so, that when, during the war, the Bengali regiment went to Mesopotamia and returned, there was a talk of making it a permanent unit, and, poor man that I am, I made an offer of a lakh of rupees to the Government to help in making it a permanent unit. My offer was accepted at first, but later on they changed their mind and returned the money. I may also go out of my way and say that I have kept that money as a sacred trust in my registered will, and the Territorial Force will have the benefit of it as soon as I cease to exist.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the Auxiliary Force is objected to by the people?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it is a necessary thing for the Europeans?

Witness.—No. I have a lot to say on that point. If I had my own way, I would make the European section of the community volunteers, I would go back to the old system and make them serve the country and Empire for no pay at all. Men like Sir William Carey and various other gentlemen used to serve in camp for no pay. They worked like the humblest volunteer and like every other member of the Territorial Force. If I had my own way, I would make all Europeans in India serve in a battalion of volunteers and go back to the old system. As for Anglo-Indians and Indians, let them have the benefit of the Territorial Force.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you mean on the same basis, without pay?

Witness.—On the same basis.

Mr. Burdon.—Just for the honour of serving the country? Indians as well?

Witness.—Not all Indians. Those who want to get pay, should get their payment, and those who want to serve without any payment should be allowed to do so. There are some Indians who consider it a dishonour to accept pay.

Mr. Burdon.—If we do embark on a thing of that kind, do you contemplate some form of military life on the present auxiliary basis, with this proviso that there should be no pay for Europeans?

Witness.—I would try that experiment.

Mr. Burdon.—You say that to every unit you would admit Indians and Anglo-Indians, with this exception that, whereas the European would require no pay or would be given no pay, the Indian would expect to receive some money consideration? Is that so?

Witness.—No, some Indians do not expect any money at all; others there are who will expect pay, and so let them be paid.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing that we let the Auxiliary Force remain as it is on the same basis with this exception that we admit Indians, as you suggest, to the extent of a platoon or whatever the number may be—will that meet your wishes?

Witness.—It will meet a portion of my views. If you have a platoon of Indians in the Auxiliary Force, it will be quite all right.

Mr. Burdon.—You will keep the present Territorial unit as it is, without any liability to serve?

Witness.—What is the good of their being soldiers if they cannot be called out to fight.

Mr. Burdon.—A question has already been asked as to what is the good of this force with these lesser liabilities, *i.e.*, of serving in their own province or district?

Witness.—It is an introductory school for higher life.

Mr. Burdon.—Therefore you consider that it is of educational value?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—During the war the volunteers guarded Fort William?

Witness.—I was one of them. I had the honour of being a sergeant in charge of a guard. We guarded Fort William, Government House and the Bank of Bengal.

Mr. Burdon.—That had a military value as well?

Witness.—When the war was in progress we had to be called out very frequently. There was plenty of rioting in Calcutta. We took the responsibility.

Mr. Burdon.—Therefore you did great service to the military forces?

Witness.—Some service.

Mr. Burdon.—Besides the educational value, you would have the military value as well?

Witness.—Undoubtedly, if there is no military value, the educational value will not be present. The two together will answer my purpose.

Mr. Burdon.—Therefore you consider that it is this combination of educational value and military value which will ultimately make you fit for the idea of conscription?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You are enthusiastic enough to start conscription at once. Do you think it could be done within 10 years?

Witness.—I would introduce compulsion as soon as possible, but slowly, and mildly, and I have not the least doubt that a great response will be made immediately. Tell the boys that they are going to be little soldiers, and they will readily make a response. We have schooling for five hours, and the boys do very little. They listen to five hours' lecturing through one ear and let it go out through the other ear. But I would take them out, and give them an hour of proper drill. I would see also that they got their tiffin, because most of the boys come to school with two pice in their pockets, which they spend on *pan* and *bidi* before they reach the school, and by the time it is time for lunch, they have no pice at all and no tiffin. I would see that every boy was supplied with *halva* and bread for his tiffin, and I would give him an hour's drill every day, and send him back to school to learn or unlearn.

Mr. Burdon.—You would require a certain period in camp?

Witness.—Certainly. Even in the case of the Auxiliary Force I would compel them to be in camp for a period.

Mr. Burdon.—In a country like India with 340 millions, have you considered the practical side of the question of camps?

Witness.—I would not enrol every human being in India and compel him to become a soldier. I would pick and choose, and of course it is for you gentlemen who are seated here, with a great deal more wisdom than I ever possess, to go into details. I would begin with a moderate number and gradually spread it out.

Mr. Burdon.—So you would cut your coat according to your cloth?

Witness.—You must.

Mr. Burdon.—The educative idea of conscription must be spread?

Witness.—You can never do anything for this country unless you compel the people. This country is hopelessly gone unless you give them military training. Some may be excellent soldiers, others may not be, but to my mind no training in the world is complete unless a little military training is also given.

Dr. Mullick.—I think you have made that very clear to us. So at present there is no question of conscription; it is an ideal for the future?

Witness.—Yes, you must arrange matters many years beforehand. There are such large numbers to be enrolled. Begin with physical drill at school.

Dr. Mullick.—With regard to the two classes of unit—that is, the I. T. F. proper and the Indian section of the Auxiliary Force—I am accepting your view that the Auxiliary Force should have an Indian section—you say the I. T. F. unit should be composed of agriculturists and the other unit more or less of the educated classes?

Witness.—No, I have not said that the I. T. F. should be wholly and solely agricultural, or rural. I say that you must draw a distinction between the two sections—literary and rural—but you must keep the rural apart. You would train them at the same time and together, but in separate platoons and sections.

Dr. Mullick.—You propose an Indian Auxiliary Force unit and you are looking forward to conscription. Now, taking the present temper of the country, what is the value which you attach to this unit?

Witness.—I will tell you what I think as regards my own country. I say that you should have two or three Bengali regiments, manned by these irresponsible revolver shooters, who are going about shooting people, to bring them under control, to discipline and make men of them. If you give us two regiments, you will bring in a lot of these firebrands into camp, and all their military energy and spirit will be devoted towards their training.

Dr. Mullick.—But do you think you will be able to raise more men?

Witness.—I will do my level best, I promise this Committee and I promise the Government. I have no occupation in life except my own trade and this other thing, military training and physical culture. I would compel every boy to take exercise at school. Athletics and military training have been my hobby in life. I will devote the rest of my life to them and I will help the Government and the Committee in promoting these ideas, if they accept my view.

Dr. Mullick.—Yes, but you know that the Bengali battalion has been split in half. Half has gone to Bihar and half has remained in Bengal.

Witness.—Bengali battalion will be a Bengali battalion and a Bihari battalion will be a Bihari battalion. I am patriotic enough to look on Bihar as my country, but at the same time I am patriotic enough to look on Bengal first and Bihar afterwards. I would keep the two battalions apart. The Bihar for Biharis and Bengal for Bengalis.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that military life will train these adventurous youths?

Witness.—It will. That is my own opinion. Not that I have mixed with these rebels; but I have gathered some ideas from these people and I have not the least doubt that it will. Frequent complaints have reached me of lack of opportunity: give us a battalion of our own, so that we can have a regular military career before us.

Dr. Mullick.—You are quite sure that your I. T. F., even with all the defects in the regulations which you have mentioned, if it were raised to a full battalion or increased further, would be able to get sufficient men to join?

Witness.—I am positive about it.

Dr. Mullick.—We are looking forward to the time when it may be desirable that every Territorial unit should be the best in the field. One witness was asked what, having regard to the present finances of the country, he would consider the value of certain units with reference to principle. What do you think would be the value of a Bengali battalion in the general organisation for field service?

Witness.—It would be of considerable fighting value; it would be a very useful battalion indeed.

Dr. Mullick.—You are talking of the infantry battalion. Would you consider that there are any other branches that could be included in a future expansion?

Witness.—Why not give a chance to a cavalry squadron. There was one in Bengal a few years ago during the war. It died an unnatural death. I do not know how it disappeared, but it died out completely. I would certainly suggest that, if you are anxious to have an expansion of the Bengali fighting element, you should let us have a cavalry squadron to start with. There are plenty of people in Bengal with plenty of money, more money than anything else, who will come forward. Artillery I should like to have also. You might make a small beginning. I am very ambitious about expansion. I may not be able to get all I want, but I want to see a regular organisation of an infantry battalion, two squadrons of cavalry and one battery of artillery.

The Chairman.—Would you start off at once?

Witness.—Not yet. I would feel my way as I proceeded. I say that Bengal should have an army, and you cannot have an army unless you have infantry, cavalry and artillery.

Dr. Mullick.—You think the Bengalis are fitted for any other branch of the army?

Witness.—I would go in for mechanical and other units. It is, however, a very ambitious project, and if we tackle the whole thing at once, Government will say that they have no money and then everything will be at a standstill

Dr. Mullick.—We have had varying evidence about whether there ought or ought not to be Advisory Committees, and whether they are useful or not.

Witness.—Our committee has been useful so far, and might be made more useful.

Dr. Mullick.—You think there ought to be such a committee?

Witness.—There ought to be a committee, but it should be invested with a little more power than they have at the present moment, and a little more authority. I am one of the present committee and it is valueless now. We want a little more authority, which we can use to the advantage of the battalion.

Dr. Mullick.—Have you got any clerks or establishment for your advisory body?

Witness.—We have got a little room. I do not know whether it is lent to us by the Adjutant or not. We are supposed to meet once a month, but the last occasion on which we met was some months back. The members of the Advisory Committee are scattered all over the place; I am in Calcutta, and others are miles and miles away, as a result it is difficult to arrange meetings.

Dr. Mullick.—The Bengal committee does not function properly?

Witness.—The committee is there, but more in name than in reality.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you extend it to the districts?

Witness.—I would expand the committee. I would have two or three more members and would make the President of it responsible for the office he holds. I would have the senior battalion commander as one of the members, and the senior I. T. F. officer and one or two gentlemen of importance, politically, socially, morally or intellectually. We must have a committee of five.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you have committees in the districts?

Witness.—I would have sub-committees in different centres. If the committee meets in Calcutta you cannot have men coming from Dacca and Mymensingh. I would, therefore, have sub-committees in local centres.

Dr. Mullick.—In fact, you would have the Advisory Committee with branches?

Witness.—I would have sub-committees and more expansion.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Can you get enough men for your Territorial Force?

Witness.—Certainly, but you must give them more favourable conditions.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Under the present conditions, have you any difficulty in getting them?

Witness.—It often happens that a wrong selection is made. Certain men are brought down to Calcutta and, when they are examined, they were found physically unfit.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—You want the recruits to be medically examined on the spot?

Witness.—That is indispensable. You do not want invalids and dead men in the army.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Have you found any other difficulty?

Witness.—I understood that the military authorities took it upon themselves to recruit. But this duty should be left to a recruiting committee of influential people in different centres.

Mr. Burdon.—How would you get them.

Witness.—I would go to the well known and influential people and tell them what is going on, and I have not the least doubt that they would help the Government.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you place any responsibility on them. Will they give a guarantee about the moral fitness of the men they recruit?

Witness.—There are plenty of people in Bengal who would be only too glad to assist the authorities in the formation of a platoon or a battalion.

Mr. Burdon.—They would be prepared to take full responsibility?

Witness.—Certainly. They would not select the wrong people. They would keep out the undesirables.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Are there any volunteers still waiting to join your unit?

Witness.—You have not given people a chance. If you let people know that they are wanted, they will come forward themselves. In Bengal there is some sort of awakening of the military spirit. The men want to become soldiers and they want to help in the formation of a territorial battalion.

Mr. Burdon.—And they will be quite prepared to co-operate with the Government, as by law established, for that purpose?

Witness.—I am perfectly certain of that. We are prepared to help Government in any good thing that Government wants to do.

Sir P. S. Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Even in the present disturbed atmosphere?

Witness.—The present atmosphere is confined to a number of young men who are stirring up the whole country. You can take it from me that behind that atmosphere there is a solid phalanx of influential men who do not want any disturbance.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Why should not the right-minded people and the press assist the Government?

Witness.—I do not want to run down the Bengali press. There are some very rabid papers and you can get no assistance from them in a good cause. But there are some very good papers, and if you go to the right sort of people, you will get assistance from them.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Before you try and form a battalion or two of infantry, will it not be better to give lectures to them and explain matters?

Witness.—I have not the least doubt that if you approach the question in the right way, and in the right spirit, the thing will not be as difficult as you seem to think. The people,—not the firebrands,—should be approached in the correct way. If you tell them that the Government desire to raise a Bengali battalion of the Territorial Force, I have not the least doubt that many people will come forward and render all kinds of help.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Is that not the duty of the leaders and chief people of the province?

Witness.—Unless they are called upon how can they interfere. I am not going to do anything unless you ask me to do it. If I do a thing voluntarily, you may say "You are not wanted; get away."

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In the present state of the country, you attach the greatest importance to the educational value of military training?

Witness.—Undoubtedly; in any state of the country I attach great importance to military training.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You consider it necessary that the military spirit should be strengthened?

Witness.—I am not using the term 'military spirit' in an arrogant and rebellious spirit.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The legitimate military spirit; the legitimate spirit of self-defence. In any organisation of the non-regular forces, there are two or three objects, internal security, resistance of external aggression and assistance to the civil power. Which of these objects would you impose upon the non-regular forces in the early stages of their organisation?

Witness.—I will say this, because you are not perhaps aware of it. In Bengal, where dacoities are going on, they have formed what are called defence parties in each village and the young men of these parties parade nightly after 10 o'clock. These parties have been a very great check on the dacoities.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—My question was, which of the various duties usually assigned to the non-regular forces would you impose upon the Territorial or Auxiliary Force,—internal security, reinforcement of the units in the field, or aiding the Civil Power.

Witness.—Internal security is certainly one of the most important things.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And the reinforcement of units in the field?

Witness.—Yes, certainly. I consider that very important.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you impose all these duties from the beginning or when?

Witness.—I would train the men first and would gradually impose the duties. You cannot expect a man to go to a battle without knowing how to shoot a rifle.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you know the strength of the Auxiliary Force in Bengal.

Witness.—I suppose some thousands.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And in the Auxiliary Force the strength of the Indian section which you suggest is only a platoon or two?

Witness.—Let there be a company. I should be satisfied with that to begin with, but I am very ambitious.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you place a limit on the number of men?

Witness.—Yes, for the purpose of selection.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Assuming that you were satisfied in regard to their fitness, irrespective of financial considerations, you would admit as many as came forward and satisfied you?

Witness.—That is so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the Territorial Force, are you satisfied with the existing number of training centres, or would you increase the number of training centres?

Witness.—Yes, for certain purposes. But I shall be satisfied for the present with the Calcutta centre. Men come from different parts to Calcutta and get their training, and I am satisfied with the arrangements for training in Calcutta.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the longest distance which a man has to come to the training centre?

Witness.—400 miles from Mymensingh. I would increase, however, the rate of travelling allowance. They get only 4 annas a day at present.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—As regards the introduction of other arms, you said that you would feel your way gradually. Is that desire to feel your way due to financial restrictions or to other considerations?

Witness.—It is due to financial conditions. If we can get enough money, we can start both cavalry and artillery.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Suppose you want to start an engineering company or a signal company, will that depend in any way upon the success of some other branch, like the infantry, or could you start it independently at the same time?

Witness.—Signal companies exist already in some U. T. C.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In the case of a battery of artillery, is it necessary that that experiment should have to wait until the infantry has been in existence for some time?

Witness.—I would prove the infantry first; then I would get on to cavalry, and then to artillery, but I would not wait for ever; I want to put a limit to the waiting period.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is your limit?

Witness.—Say one year.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would start the infantry one year?

Witness.—The next year I would start the cavalry, and the following year the artillery.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And the engineers?

Witness.—They would follow naturally. With regard to your University Training Corps, this year they are about 800 strong, but by the time they get into camp many of them will be rejected.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I am very glad to hear from you that you desire, ultimately, to have compulsory military service for every able-bodied person. Would you have any objection to begin the system in the case of the college students?

Witness.—I would compel every able-bodied man to go in for it; I would make it a part of their curriculum.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Another of your interesting proposals was to revive the old volunteer system and to have Europeans only embodied in the volunteers.

Witness.—I would compel every European in the country, including all *bara-sahibs*, to undergo military training.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If they were volunteers it would mean that there was no payment, except possibly for actual expenses?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And travelling expenses?

Witness.—Some refuse even that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Rations?

Witness.—In camp you must feed the men.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You know of course that the great complaint of Indians is the difference between the Auxiliary and the Territorial Forces. Supposing the Auxiliary Force, as it is at present, is entirely abolished and, instead of that, we have the volunteer force for Europeans and Anglo-Indians who want to join it, would you be satisfied if Indians were also allowed to join the volunteers and if those who joined the volunteers were not paid while the others who joined the Territorial Force were paid according to the Indian Army rate?

Witness.—Yes, I would be satisfied with that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—That all racial distinctions had disappeared?

Witness.—I would have no racial distinctions at all.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would you allow, for such a volunteer force, a slightly lower degree of liability for the moment, to serve only in the province?

Witness.—Yes, I would.

Dr. Paranjpye.—They would be given continuous training for two or three hours a week, and not do all their training in a 56 days' camp?

Witness.—Yes, I would be satisfied with that. I consider that a moderate beginning.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Because these people have fixed employment and cannot spend 56 days away from it. Do you think that a suitable plan?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think, if these people are not paid, there will not be any complaint about differential treatment?

Witness.—I think not. My experience was that I was treated just the same as anybody else.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think that your battalion of the Territorial Force has been a success?

Witness.—Yes, it is a good battalion.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think an appeal of the proper kind has been made to the educated middle class?

Witness.—I am afraid not. Not to their sense of patriotism. You have acted mechanically and very much officially.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think, if their patriotism is appealed to, they will come in?

Witness.—They will come in in flocks.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Is it your opinion that because they are contemptuously accused of having got no martial spirit, and because the young Bengali resents such an accusation, that they are not particularly keen to join?

Witness.—That may have been the history of the past, but you will pardon my saying so, now you touch a Bengali, and he will soon make you know he is a man. It is unfortunate, but the very fact of these young Bengalis grouping together and going about shooting people and looting houses shows desperate courage, because they know that if they are caught they will be hanged. You must bring them under control and give them responsibility.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you think this appeal should be made properly?

Witness.—Yes, through the proper representatives of the people, the local magnates.

Mr. Calvert.—In our terms of reference we are dealing with the Territorial Force as an efficient second line for the regular army, so for our purpose we are not concerned with educational values or sentimental values. All we want is an efficient second line. There are two aspects of the question, the number of men required; and the number of men willing to join. If there are more required than are willing to go, you must popularise your force. If there are more willing than are required, you must select?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert,—The army, as you know, is divided into two portions, a striking force and an internal security force. The Auxiliary Force is intended for internal security only. The principles required for these two purposes are worked out by the authorities. If they have already got all the men they require for internal security, will you then press for a further increase in the force which is already sufficient for its purpose?

Witness.—Yes, for the simple reason that I want a reliable available reserve. You do not train men only for certain purposes, but you have more men trained than you require. Then in times of emergency you can always fall back on them.

Mr. Calvert.—But they cost money?

Witness.—Everything costs money, and, you will pardon my saying so, the men are worth the money. Internal security is an object for which no sacrifice is too great.

Mr. Calvert.—My second point is the second line to the regular army. Now India has a large population. Probably somewhere around 3 million youths reach military age every year, on a rough calculation. Now three million is far more than the military authorities require, so there must be a selection.

Witness.—My submission is that you should begin your training in the schools and colleges. You need not bring them all up to the finishing point, but, as requirements arise, you bring them up for further and further training, you must have a very much larger reserve. Of course you cannot have three million men fully trained, but give them a partial training.

Mr. Calvert.—In so far as the cost does not fall on the military budget, this Committee is not concerned.

Witness.—But this Committee can recommend to the different Governments that physical training is essential for the health of the people, and that in every school and college compulsory physical exercises should be introduced. Make your university examination include the physical training. The results arrived at physically and mentally should be the sum total of the examination.

Mr. Calvert.—You yourself have passed through the ranks. Do you advocate that system for all officers of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I do absolutely.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—When you were enrolled in the volunteers were you enrolled as a European British subject or a Bengali gentleman?

Witness.—As a Bengali gentleman.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Indians were allowed to enrol then?

Witness.—No, but if you will read the section it says "Europeans, Asiatics, etc." I was included in that, etc.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think the I. D. F. was a better force than the volunteers?

Witness.—I cannot say that. The members of the I. D. F. had to be soldiers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think the Auxiliary Force is better than the volunteers?

Witness.—No, the volunteers were better men. I will give you an instance. When the war broke out my company consisted of 100 men, mostly fair-complexioned men, and out of 100 men, I, sent away 80 men to the war. I broke up my company. That shows the spirit of the boys in those days. Some were killed, some were maimed, some got commissions. At the present moment you cannot test the Force, until there is occasion for it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—As a fighting force you do not think the Auxiliary Force is better than the volunteers?

Witness.—No.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If this Committee decided to raise the status of the I. T. F. (I make a special note of the Bengal part of it) and, to the extent of a platoon or a company, put it on the same level as the Auxiliary Force, would the members of the I. T. F. be so anxious to join the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Some may. Perhaps you would get some men who have not joined the Territorial Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Supposing on the other hand we dragged the Auxiliary Force down to the level of pay of the Indian Territorial Force, would they still wish to go into the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I do not think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—The reason of this desire, then, is one of envy and racial jealousy?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You think if you remove that reason they will come in?

Witness.—I suppose so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I have discussed this question with most of the officers of the Bengal I. T. F. and one of them said that they would like to be attached as a platoon to the Auxiliary Force; their complaint was that they did not get the same pay, they did not get the same rations and the same status as the Auxiliary Force.

Witness.—Rations are the principal subject of complaint. May I be permitted to make a statement on that point? The Bengali youth generally lives comfortably at home with his rice and dal and fish curry and one thing or another; when he comes to join this force he is restricted to rice and dal, the same as most sepoys get.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would advise the enlargement of the University Training Corps?

Witness.—I would, certainly.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In the early part of your evidence you stated that the success of the force depended not on any question of the pay, but on arousing the patriotism of the people. Would villagers from the Mymensingh, Dacca and other districts come to Calcutta without pay?

Witness.—There should be centres in other places also.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Regarding the other branches of the army, don't you think Calcutta would be an excellent field to enlist recruits for hospital corps?

Witness.—Yes, undoubtedly.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And store-keepers, clerks and mechanical transport?

Witness.—Yes; and ambulance.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would advocate that, if a further extension were needed?

Witness.—I would.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think the popularity of the force would be increased if you enlarged the Advisory Committee?

Witness.—Undoubtedly.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advocate the association in it of a good few zamindars or wealthy Bengalis?

Witness.—I would, provided they took an interest in the matter.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—In reply to Mr. Calvert you said that you would like all the Territorial officers to rise from the ranks?

Witness.—I said that gradually I would give a greater number of appointments to the men who have got their instruction in the ranks, that is to trained men; I should have some appointments to commissions for outsiders.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Direct commissions?

Witness.—Yes, but place them for a period or two under training; I would not allow them to come on to parade and shout out words of command wrongly.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You also said that, if all differences were removed with regard to rations, status, etc., and the Auxiliary Force brought down to the level of the Indian Territorial Force, the Bengali would not care to join the Auxiliary Force. Do you speak with respect to the training?

Witness.—Those who are members of the Indian Territorial Force will remain as members of it for the simple reason that they come from long distances and cannot join the Auxiliary Force which is a local force.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Would the professional classes, the lawyers, doctors and others, prefer to have the Indian Territorial Force training or the Auxiliary Force training?

Witness.—Lawyers must ply their trade; they will not care to join the Territorial Force. Men coming from a distance prefer to be members of the Indian Territorial Force, because they have collective training on the spot for a couple of months. The people who live in Calcutta, or some such centre, prefer daily training.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think the principle of compulsory military training is in keeping with the genius and traditions of our people?

Witness.—I am prepared to say this, that, if they do not know what is good for them, make them know what is.

Dr. Hyder.—One more question: don't you think that it is the duty of all subjects of His Majesty to keep the peace, if the King's peace is broken?

Witness.—Undoubtedly.

Dr. Hyder.—So that, in your opinion, it is not the function of any particular class to keep the King's peace?

Witness.—It is the function of everybody; everybody has a right and duty to perform.

Dr. Hyder.—If the King's peace is disturbed in Bengal, do you think the people of Bengal will fulfil their duty?

Witness.—I have not the least doubt they will.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think that the European subjects of His Majesty the King will take this assurance at its full value?

Witness.—That is for them to consider; I cannot answer for their mentality; I do not know what the Europeans will think.

Dr. Hyder.—But do you assure them?

Witness.—I can assure them that a great number of the people will do their duty to keep the King's peace.

Examination of Mr. F. L. Brayne, M.C., I.C.S., Dy. Commissioner, Gurgaon.

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are Dy. Commissioner of Gurgaon and you are very interested in the I. T. F.?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Would you say that the I. T. F. in your district was popular? Had you any difficulty in getting recruits?

Witness.—It is popular. We had no difficulty so far as our men are concerned.

The Chairman.—Your officers?

Witness.—There was a certain amount of difficulty in recruiting officers, because in our district they are mostly small farmers. Probably in the major districts of the Punjab officers might have been secured, but in my district it was very difficult. In fact, it is much more difficult to get officers than men.

The Chairman.—What is the inducement which you put before the recruits to get them to join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—They hope to get into the regular army after they have completed their training. In fact, a lot of them do go on and get themselves enlisted in the regular army.

The Chairman.—That is to say, the Territorial Force in your district is a stepping-stone to the regular army?

Witness.—They also get into the police. After they have had some training they have a much better chance of getting into Government service, like the police or the army.

The Chairman.—Taking into account the present condition of the Territorial Force, have you any suggestions to put forward by which we could make the Force more popular?

Witness.—What they ask for is something like Rs. 2 a month between one training and another as a retaining fee.

The Chairman.—When would you give it?

Witness.—I originally suggested a lump sum, but since then I have had a talk with some of the Zamindars, and they would like to have it quarterly, because it gives the men some standing as reservists.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would interfere with the reserve of the army?

Witness.—No. The reserve rates are, I think, Rs. 7 and Rs. 4. I would not propose to put it as high as that. Our men are so anxious to get into the regular army?

The Chairman.—You said that you had difficulty in getting Territorial officers. Are you quite satisfied with the way in which the officers were selected or could you suggest a better method?

Witness.—In Gurgaon I was always consulted and I was asked whether so and so would be a suitable person as an officer. I should like to see them all go through the ranks. I do not want them to get direct commissions.

The Chairman.—You would like them to go through the ranks from recruit onwards?

Witness.—Yes, I should like them to go straight through the ranks; they must go through the regular mill. The present officers are *ex*-regular officers and they could not come in as recruits.

The Chairman.—A great many officers who have given evidence before this committee laid considerable stress on the small degree of efficiency of the Territorial Force at present. In what way do you think we could increase that efficiency so as to make the force a better second line to the regular army?

Witness.—We have been very much handicapped in our battalion by the extraordinary number of changes in the training staff. We have different Indian officers and British officers every year. In fact, last year they changed the officers in the middle of the training. We want a permanent staff of training officers. At present, we do not know now who is going to be our C. O., also we have only half the proper strength of staff, because two Territorial battalions have to be staffed from the regiments in Delhi, but they cannot spare the men.

The Chairman.—As regards the actual training of your Territorial officers, the point that I wish to elicit is, whether you consider that they get sufficient training at present, and if they do not, how can we better the system?

Witness.—The officers we have had so far have been *ex*-regulars. We have never had purely Territorial officers.

The Chairman.—The officers must get a considerable training with a regular unit before they can be fit to take their place in the Territorial unit?

Witness.—Yes. Quite so.

Mr. Burdon.—You don't think that the present arrangements for training would ever fit your officers to be company commanders?

Witness.—No. Not with the present training.

Mr. Burdon.—Even the officers you get now, if you want to bring them up to the level of company commanders, would want a good deal more training than they get at present?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—What would you suggest for them? Would you suggest attendance at classes of instruction and so on?

Witness.—If it were possible, it would certainly be of great advantage.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think we shall ever get a Territorial battalion fit to take its place as a second line on mobilisation?

Witness.—We should require to give them some further training.

Mr. Burdon.—It is contemplated that, even on the outbreak of war, Territorial battalions should be embodied and put under intensive training for six months, but of course you cannot create a whole officers' staff in these six months and you want some more intensive training during peace time. That is the suggestion. Would you agree to that?

Witness.—Yes, certainly.

Mr. Burdon.—In your battalion do you recruit any people from outside the classes which go to the regular army?

Witness.—The classes enlisted in our battalion are all classes eligible for admission to the regular army.

Mr. Burdon.—Did you make any attempt to get the others?

Witness.—We did at first, but they were not keen. We had plenty of people of the military class so we did not bother, because the physique of the others was poor.

Mr. Burdon.—Have the educated classes or the professional classes, such as exist in Gurgaon, taken any interest in the matter?

Witness.—A few, such as school masters, patwaris and men from my office. I told them it was a good thing to do. Most of them joined with the same idea, which an ordinary Englishman has, of having a jolly good time for a month, drilling and eating rations and all that sort of thing. It is also a change. Some also joined it thinking that it would improve their physique.

Mr. Burdon.—Have any of the commercial classes shown any interest?

Witness.—None whatever.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you done anything to persuade them?

Witness.—In time, I think, when the Boy Scout movement extends, they will begin to come in. If we encourage the Boy Scout movement, then there is a possibility of the non-martial classes coming in.

Mr. Burdon.—Generally speaking, does your district take any interest in the Territorial movement?

Witness.—Yes, some interest.

Mr. Burdon.—They do not definitely disapprove of it?

Witness.—No, they like it. From my written evidence, you will see that we have collected about Rs. 800 or Rs. 900 for challenge cups. We gave the battalion extra cups this year and even raised more money.

Mr. Burdon.—Apart from the question of training of officers and the question of a retaining fee, is there any other conspicuous defect in the present organization or present arrangements to which people take exception?

Witness.—They don't take exception to anything. In Gurgaon they are quite pleased with the training, the rations and the uniform, which is exactly similar to that given to the Punjab infantry.

Dr. Mullick.—I think we ought to congratulate you on the money you have raised from your zemindars and from the middle classes. Was it in large sums?

Witness.—Small sums. A few people gave larger sums.

Dr. Mullick.—I presume you take a great deal of interest in it?

Witness.—My influence has some effect.

Dr. Mullick.—I see that you advocate a rifle club to give opportunities for shooting and so on, and that the club should admit other people of military age who are eligible and suitable, as honorary members, especially the shooting population. How would you manage that?

Witness.—That is an entire experiment. I should like to see a Territorial club founded.

Dr. Mullick.—We should like to have some guidance on the point; it is an important point, and, as you have thought over it, we should like to have your views?

Witness.—The headquarters of the club would be at the district headquarters, and, if possible, we should have branches.

Dr. Mullick.—Many of you can shoot at ranges and you have proper butts, but in busy towns like Bombay and Calcutta we want to know whether you would get the same advantage?

Witness.—We can easily get a range in Gurgaon; it is very easy.

Dr. Mullick.—You think it would be all right—I mean to say from the point of view of safety and other considerations?

Witness.—Yes, there is nothing unsafe about it.

Dr. Mullick.—I see you advocate that government servants should join the force without pay.

Witness.—They would get their Territorial pay.

Dr. Mullick.—Is not that a great hardship for a married man?

Witness.—I would not ask a married man to join. I would take young fellows in government service, perhaps candidates on Rs. 25 or upwards. I don't want men with large families.

Dr. Mullick.—Such men would get much the same pay as the Territorial?

Witness.—Yes, and they would get first class food—*plus* their pay *plus* the mufti they would get,—and physical training and military training. That is worth something. I don't think anyone would mind dropping Rs. 10 for all that.

Dr. Mullick.—So that enlistment should be limited to those who are getting about the same pay in civil life?

Witness.—It would limit itself, unless a man were particularly keen and wanted to become an officer.

Dr. Mullick.—I see you speak of the dress. But instead of the dress would not a badge be sufficient? Because there was a proposal sent out from headquarters asking various provinces as to whether a badge should be offered to *ex*-soldiers?

Witness.—They can't go away with a badge only; they want some sort of clothes to attach the badge to. If a man turned up in an old *dhoti*, he would want something else to wear his badge on!

Dr. Mullick.—You also say that what is possible for one battalion may be impossible for another and rigid uniformity should not be insisted upon by the district commander. What have you in mind?

Witness.—I had in mind some of the proposals in the questionnaire, for example, the very complicated question of the giving of commissions. If it is all going to be done in one way, what suits Gurgaon may not suit Rawalpindi.

Dr. Mullick.—You don't mean in the way of liability for military service?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—They would all be equally liable.

Witness.—I don't see how they could join and then, if the battalion was wanted for the war, they had to look up their books to find out what they could be used for?

Capt. Suraj Singh.—In your memorandum you mention 2 rupees a month as a retaining fee and in your replies you have given various sums for different years. Don't you think that, if this bonus, which you recommend, was mixed up with the pay—the Rs. 16 a month—and given to these boys at the end of the training period and was not shown as monthly pay but as a bonus, it would be more advisable?

Witness.—Since writing that, I have asked various zamindars about it, and I suggest that the amount should be paid, as the Reservists are paid, quarterly in arrears, so as to keep the men in the battalion.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—What sort of Advisory Committee do you recommend?

Witness.—One for the area in which the battalion is recruited. My battalion recruits in Gurgaon and gets a few men from Rohtak; the Advisory Committee should come from that area only.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Should it include the Deputy Commissioner and head of the district?

Witness.—I should only say those who are keen on Territorials, whether they are magnates or not. If you put a lot of figureheads on the committee, the thing does not function. That is my objection to a formal committee. We had a formal committee which never did anything.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Have you got a committee now?

Witness.—We had one, but it never functioned. We put on it what you call the magnates, but they did not happen to be keen.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—But you have got a committee of your own?

Witness.—Not a formal committee. There was one when we started in 1921, but the members have all dropped out now and I just consult the people who I know are keen. I don't call them together, but when I am on tour I ask them questions when they crop up. Whenever I see them we always discuss Territorials, amongst other things. I know what their opinions are, but I don't hold formal meetings.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do they tell the people how good it is for them to join the Territorial Force and so on.

Witness.—You mean in the villages? I suppose they must have, otherwise we should not have got the recruits. But there were no formal meetings.

Dr. Paranjpye.—From what class are your battalions recruited—from the agricultural class?

Witness.—Practically entirely. There are a few who are not agriculturists.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are there many educated people in your district?

Witness.—No, I suppose we are the most backward district in education in the Punjab.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And no attempt has been made to recruit people from the educated classes, as opposed to the agricultural classes?

Witness.—The agricultural classes educate themselves too. Education is not confined to one class.

Dr. Paranjpye.—So the men in your battalion are literate at least?

Witness.—Yes, a certain number are literate men.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Now, you suggest that the people who are to be officers should all rise from the ranks. Do you think that people of good position and good education will be prepared to go in for training in the ranks, before they become officers?

Witness.—You cannot make a soldier unless he is trained.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What do you think of a boy from a village, from one of these military classes, who has gone into a University Training Corps, becoming an officer afterwards?

Witness.—How can he until he has learnt the work.

Dr. Paranjpye.—He might have learnt the work in the University Training Corps.

Witness.—He will go into the ranks with his brothers.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But he might have received training in the University Training Corps. Would you still require him to join as a private?

Witness.—Yes, otherwise you would spoil the whole regiment. Where is the dignity of being a sepoy if people are going to come over their heads like that?

Dr. Paranjpye.—Seeing that you have got a plethora of men prepared to join your Territorials, would you advocate an increase in numbers? Would you raise a second battalion in your district?

Witness.—I would raise as many men as I could. As an education for the young men, I don't think there could be anything better than to go into the Territorials. It is a question of military necessity, I suppose. I try to get as many of my men into the regular army as into the Territorials. They like it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you as head of the district consider the loyalty of the people joining these battalions quite above suspicion?

Witness.—Absolutely.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you give any special concessions in the matter of the Arms Act licences, etc., to those who have joined the Territorials?

Witness.—Practically everyone is armed nowadays. There is very little concession wanted. But what I would like to do is this. If there were two men wanting licences and I could only give one, I would certainly like to be able to give it to the Territorial.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Now, as regards government servants, you said that they would take leave without pay. Would you be prepared to give government servants leave with pay to go into the Territorials? If they have any leave due to them, you would allow them to take it at that time?

Witness.—Yes, I only said leave without pay, so that it would not handicap them in taking leave for family purposes later on. It was only to make a concession to enable them to stay in the Territorials without losing their leave. Most of them take leave for going to their families, and they can't afford to lose that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You have not got a big urban population in your district, so the question of training a big urban population does not arise. But supposing it was proposed that, for people from the towns or other centres, there should be a different class of training, like that in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—They would want more training because their physique is not so good as that of the country boys. I don't suppose their average sight or their average physique is as good as that of the country boys. They would certainly want more physical training. Town boys are usually more clever than country boys, but they lose in physique.

Mr. Calvert.—I understand that you could raise more men on the same terms. So you are not advocating any very radical change in the terms?

Witness.—No, I have put down a few little improvements that our men would like, but, if they don't get them, they are not going to drop out.

Mr. Calvert.—We have been told that certain people don't like to join the force because of the rations. Have you any complaint about the quality or quantity of the rations?

Witness.—None whatever. At first there was a certain amount of misunderstanding on the subject of rations. There were a lot of old soldiers and a lot of raw recruits; the old soldiers did better out of the rations than the raw recruits and that did produce discontent. I went over the battalion and we discovered that the old soldier was being "an old soldier". These new fellows are now just as good at looking after themselves as the old ones. That may be the origin of anything that has been said about rations. There is very little complaint now.

Mr. Calvert.—Now, you have had five years' war service with Indian troops. From your observation of these men, do you say there are distinctions between class and class in the Indian army?

Witness.—Well, they have got different qualities. I should be sorry to say any one class of the Indian army produces better soldiers than another. I am not enough of an expert. I served for a year with Sikhs and then with Punjabi Muhammadans.

Mr. Calvert.—What do you think of this distinction between military and non-military classes. Is it mainly a question of education?

Witness.—It has got nothing to do with education. It is a question of where they are born. A country boy makes a good soldier. The town boy generally tries to avoid the army.

Mr. Calvert.—We have been told that certain educated people, M. As. and so on, do not like to become Territorial officers because they will be called Jemadars. Do you think it is derogatory to be called a Jemadar?

Witness.—I do not see why it should be derogatory to be called a Jemadar. It is based on a misconception. Any man ought to be proud to be called a sepoy.

Mr. Calvert.—You have no desire to change the names?

Witness.—I have suggested that the platoon commander should be called Jemadar, keeping the name Second-Lt. for the Company officer.

Mr. Calvert.—You don't think that an M. A. is justified in thinking it derogatory to be called a Jemadar.

Witness.—If he did, he would be useless to me in the Territorials. How is he going to work in the army if he is ashamed to be called a soldier?

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I may be wrong, but I have an idea that, when replying to Mr. Burdon, you said that you did not think that from the military point of view the I. T. F. was of a high order?

Witness.—I was only speaking of officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I am glad to hear that. You were talking also about the boy scouts and an impression exists in my mind that in the creation of the I. T. F. we have started at the wrong end of the stick. We should start with the boy scouts.

Witness.—The army has got nothing to do with the boy scouts.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you advocate for your own area that officers should rise from the ranks?

Witness.—I think it will tend to raise the prestige of the corps. I am basing my ideas on the old volunteers in England, to which I belonged. Every educated man was bound to go through the ranks.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You have got different classes among the farmers?

Witness.—They are very democratic in my district. I have no trouble about that.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You know that the word Jemadar with ignorant people is very misleading. People who are not acquainted with military matters consider it degrading. The military Jemadar is a very respectable man, but the name as used in the civil sense is derogatory. Sweepers are called jemadars; a head chaprassi is a Jemadar. Would you agree to the name being changed?

Witness.—I do not see how it can be called derogatory. It is only a euphemism after all. Sometimes sweepers are called maharajahs!

Capt. Ajab Khan.—People with no knowledge of these matters might consider it derogatory?

Witness.—I cannot think of circumstances in which one could make a mistake. How are you going to legislate for ignorance as deep as that.

Dr. Hyder.—You think these Advisory Committees have not been popular?

Witness.—I am only speaking for my own district. I have no use for them.

Dr. Hyder.—The success of your unit has been due to the informal committees?

Witness.—The bigger farmers take an interest in the force and it is discussed informally.

Dr. Hyder.—What are the causes of failure?

Witness.—The difficulty of getting the members together.

Dr. Hyder.—How do you collect your informal committees?

Witness.—When I am on tour in a tahsil, we discuss questions of land revenue administration, and other questions also arise. The question of the Territorial Force is discussed then.

Dr. Hyder.—Supposing that there were no Deputy Commissioners who were enthusiastic and have actual military service, how is the government of the country going to meet the situation?

Witness.—I have no objection to formal committees inside the area from which the battalion takes its name.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think that the Territorial Force should be a replica of the regular army, that it should reproduce the conditions existing in the regular army?

Witness.—The people understand the regular army. There can be no misunderstanding about it. The nearer the Territorial Force approaches to it, the more will it be understood.

Dr. Hyder.—You think that the Territorial Force should form a second line of defence?

Witness.—The more it is like the regular army, the more useful will it be in defending the country in time of war.

Dr. Hyder.—In answer to a previous question you said that there should be no direct commissions in the Territorial Force, but in the regular army we have direct commissions to the Indian subjects of His Majesty and to the English subjects of His Majesty?

Witness.—There ought to be the same training, as they fight side by side. The Territorial has a short training, one or two months every year, and that is why I want to get officers through the ranks. They know their jobs and they raise the prestige of the ranks.

Dr. Hyder.—Is there no diversity of economic conditions in your district. The people possess more or less the same amount of money?

Witness.—We have not very many well-to-do men.

Dr. Hyder.—If a man belonged to a good family and was educated, would you prefer him as a leader?

Witness.—If he has been through the ranks. The officers will naturally tend to come from the larger land owners, because they can afford to give their sons more education and they will get their promotion quicker.

Examination of Major H. S. Stewart.

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are Deputy Assistant Director, A. and T. F., of the Presidency and Assam District, Calcutta. How long have you been in that appointment?

Witness.—Two years. I was there six months before as the General Staff Officer of the District. I have had considerable experience of the conditions in that area.

The Chairman.—In the written evidence which we have had, the idea has been put forward that the Auxiliary Force should be open to Indians; each unit of the force should have a separate Indian section composed of the higher class of Indians, who will not join the Territorial Force. They will have the same emoluments and training as the corresponding European section. What is your opinion of that idea?

Witness.—That means that a corps will be partly composed of Indians and partly of Europeans? I should say that you might just as well disband the whole Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—It has also been suggested that, as it is not suitable to ask the educated Indian to join the Territorial Force, as it exists at present, with the liability for general service, a section should be created for the educated Indian with a limited liability and giving him higher privileges as regards pay, clothing and allowances.—What is your opinion of that idea?

Witness.—I do not think it would serve any useful object. In the Auxiliary Force there are a large number of people who have had war experience and do know something about soldiering; and furthermore, they have all learnt discipline in their youth at home and in schools. That does not apply in the case of Indians. They have no military experience. In Bengal, where there is this agitation, everybody knows that, as a race, the people lack discipline.

The Chairman.—It would have an educative value?

Witness.—It might as far as they were concerned, but it would have no military value at all.

Mr. Burdon.—You know the Auxiliary Force took the place of Volunteer Force. The Volunteer Force were not paid; they only had their out of pocket expenses paid to them. Payment to the Auxiliary Force is a new departure since the war. Supposing that in the matter of pay and expenses reversions were made to the practice obtaining in the old Volunteer Force, how do you think it would affect the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I think it would disband it.

Mr. Burdon.—How did the old Volunteer Force remain in existence?

Witness.—In the first place the Volunteer Force did a great deal less work than the Auxiliary Force. In the second place, the Volunteer Force existed in the days when people were very much better off than they are now. When people are called out to go to camp now, their out of pocket expenses are very considerable. In the Assam districts, the tea companies had to come to the help of the poorer planters and help to meet their expenses by giving a bonus. If the system of paying the force were done away with, the tea companies would withdraw the bonus. People could not afford to join it.

Mr. Burdon.—I contemplate a system under which all out of pocket expenses will be paid by Government?

Witness.—If you spend as much money as you do now, it will only be a difference in name.

Mr. Burdon.—Under a system of that kind, do you still think the Auxiliary Force would disband itself?

Witness.—If you ensure that every man gets as much money as he does now, I do not mind it.

Mr. Burdon.—If conveyance expenses and every conceivable out of pocket expenses, rations, uniform, etc., were paid, what do you think would happen?

Witness.—A man gets his rations and uniform now. But he has a lot of out of pocket expenses and he wants cash to replace them. If you give him a bonus, he would not mind. You can call it pay or a bonus.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, there are certain out of pocket expenses which do not fall definitely under any particular category of Government payment?

Witness.—Yes. After all, what Government gives, does not cover the cost of food. The men get 12 annas a day and some of them spend Rs. 3 a day. They have to.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that Government should provide for that?

Witness.—We have been trying to get Government to increase the amount of money admissible as compensation for rations for the last 2½ years. Nothing has come of it yet.

Mr. Burdon.—If you had that increase and if you got all your out of pocket expenses paid on the same scale, would the necessity for pay still remain?

Witness.—The necessity for pay would still remain. A great many of these people have other expenses. At home they have got their wives and children. They have a great many out of pocket expenses. On the railways, for instance, the men who come to camp loose their running or over time pay. I have actually discussed this question with a number of people, and the general opinion is that any system of doing away with the pay would cut down the force by half.

Mr. Burdon.—If it were proposed by the Government to extend the liability for actual military service to service on the frontier, how do you think it would affect the popularity of the force?

Witness.—If there was any national emergency a great many would volunteer for service of their own accord. But that is a point that I have not considered.

Dr. Mullick.—You have taken a great deal of interest in the Territorial Force in Bengal. Do you know of the existence of various bodies of Indians throughout the province who have tried to do what they could for the Territorial Force, in the various districts?

Witness.—I know the Advisory Committee in Calcutta.

Dr. Mullick.—We shall come to that later on. There were various Committees that were formed with or without District Magistrates and officials and non-officials. These Committees have tried to do their best?

Witness.—They have done a lot of talking!

Dr. Mullick.—There was a desire on their part to do what they could. I simply want to tell you that these bodies of men have been formed, who wished in their hearts that they might be able to do something. Whether they were able to do anything or not is another matter. I take it that there is a desire in Bengal for people to join the Territorial Force.

Witness.—Yes, I presume so.

Dr. Mullick.—Having regard to that fact, what do you think would be the best way of getting success. I will assume that the movement has failed in Bengal. What would be the best way of achieving success?

Witness.—The best way to get success is for the people of Bengal to wish to make it a success.

Dr. Mullick.—The wish is expressed. Do you think that there were any other causes?

Witness.—I do not think any of these men put their own relations into the force. If each influential leader had enlisted a relation of his own, we should have had plenty of recruits without any difficulty.

Dr. Mullick.—Perhaps some other member would take up the question of whether these relations would be happy in the force. I will simply confine myself to your personal knowledge in Bengal. Here is a statement sent in by the Advisory Committee for the formation of electrical, ambulance, motor driving and other companies. What do you think of that?

Witness.—That is rather vague. What I remember was that a suggestion was sent in that there should be a corps formed of station masters, telegraphists, etc.

Dr. Mullick.—There was a meeting in the Secretariat, of the elected members, on the subject. This corps was to be called out for these purposes. Do you think from your administrative experience such a corps would be useful?

Witness.—I do not know what they would be used for. If such men were needed, you could collect them.

Dr. Mullick.—There was a question of starting a Dacca University Training Corps. That did not mature?

Witness.—As a matter of fact there were no funds available, as far as we knew, for this corps and it had no military value whatsoever. If it was desired, we said that the Dacca University should provide funds.

Dr. Mullick.—If funds were forthcoming, would you advocate a unit at Dacca?

Witness.—I suppose there is some use in the U. T. C. They are of some educative value to the University. I do not know if there is any military necessity in them.

Dr. Mullick.—You think that there may be some educative value?

Witness.—There might be. I think very probably there would be an educative value for the boys.

Dr. Mullick.—If you were an Indian, would you advocate this from the Indian point of view?

Witness.—From the purely educative point of view, of inculcating some discipline in the boys, it would be very good.

Dr. Mullick.—You would try and do your best as an administrative officer to make a success of the movement?

Witness.—Provided some one provided funds.

Dr. Mullick.—I quite admit that without funds we could not move. You would undertake the training of this corps because of its educative value?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Would it be of any military value at all?

Witness.—None at all.

Dr. Mullick.—Not even with sufficient education?

Witness.—If you want the Dacca University Training Corps to be of use, they could be made equal to the Territorials, if they did an equal amount of training.

Dr. Mullick.—Colonel Wilson, when he was officiating as G. O. C., suggested in regard to the I. T. F. unit in Calcutta, that it should be given training on the basis of so many hours a week?

Witness.—Yes, but when General Cubitt came back, he decided that it was not desirable to proceed with the proposal, so it was dropped.

Dr. Mullick.—He did not think such a system is possible?

Witness.—He did not think it likely to lead to any fresh result.

Dr. Mullick.—How many days does your Auxiliary Force spend in camp each year?

Witness.—There is nothing laid down in the Act, but we have been trying to arrange that each should spend seven days in camp.

Dr. Mullick.—As a matter of practice?

Witness.—I could not give the exact figures, but we get a large proportion for seven days in the year, and that does not include the days spent either travelling there or going back.

Dr. Mullick.—And what pay do the officers and members of the Auxiliary Force receive?

Witness.—The officers get the pay of their rank, and the members get about a rupee or two rupees a day.

Dr. Mullick.—You said that, if the pay was stopped, it might have a prejudicial effect upon the force? Was that remark made with reference to the men or the officers?

Witness.—I made it with reference to the men.

Dr. Mullick.—The rate paid them is the British rate, which is higher than the rate paid in the Indian Army?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—As regards the officers, they get pay at British rates or the pay of their Government civil employ, whichever is higher?

Witness.—Not very many of our officers are in Government civil employ; they are mostly private individuals.

Dr. Mullick.—So, in that case, they get the pay of their British rank?

Witness.—They get the pay of the rank.

Dr. Mullick.—In regard to the officers, do you think the stoppage of pay and the mere payment of allowances, as suggested by Mr. Burdon, would have a disastrous effect?

Witness.—If the officers happen to be men who are well off, they usually give their pay away. If they are not well off, they keep it themselves; it depends on the officer.

Dr. Mullick.—Among educated Indians are there men of the same status as is possessed by the officers of the Auxiliary Force; I mean as regards income and standard of living. I am talking of the officers. Can we expect educated people to join the Territorial Force, where the same rates of pay are not allowed?

Witness.—I think that, comparatively speaking, the Territorial Force men are very well paid.

Dr. Mullick.—And the officers of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I never heard the officers of the Territorial Force in Bengal grumble about the pay they were getting. They seemed satisfied.

Dr. Mullick.—Who are the men employed as officers?

Witness.—They are very respectable people, such as magistrates.

Dr. Mullick.—Have you any idea of their monthly salaries?

Witness.—They get paid at their civil rate; they are officers of the Bengal Government.

Dr. Mullick.—If an Indian officer of the Bengal Government is employed in the Territorial Force, does he draw the civil rate of pay during the time he is in camp or is otherwise engaged with the force?

Witness.—That is more a question for the Civil Accounts Department I think they do. But we expect the officers of the Territorial Force to be people of consequence, who will not be worried about questions of pay. If they are so hard up as to mind whether they get 75 or 100 rupees they are not much use as officers. We want people of better standing than that.

Dr. Mullick.—But in the Auxiliary Force you have men of education and status?

Witness.—Most of the people in the Auxiliary Force are people of education and status and they do not worry much about their pay.

Dr. Mullick.—Are they men in whose case pay is of more importance than in the case of the corresponding Indian who joins the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I do not know whether they are or are not. But, as practically every European in India belongs to the Auxiliary Force and as very few Indians belong to the Territorial Force, we rather expect to get a better selection of Indians for the Territorial Force.

Dr. Mullick.—I am trying to find out the reason why educated Indians do not join the Territorial Force; may it not be due to the fact that they do not get sufficient pay?

Witness.—I do not think that has anything at all to do with it.

Dr. Mullick.—You think the University Training Corps may attain the same value as the Territorial Force if they have the same amount of training?

Witness.—I should think they would.

Dr. Mullick.—In the University Training Corps they get training more or less continuously throughout the year, *plus* training in camp?

Witness.—Very little. I think their training is rather poor, because the same people do not turn up to parade twice in succession.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you tried to enlist the help of the college authorities inorder to get regularity of attendance in the University Corps?

Witness.—I was keen on getting them to give me some aid, but they seemed very apathetic about the matter.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You told us that the officers in the Auxiliary Force did not care much what pay they got. Would you be prepared to put the officers of the Auxiliary Force and the Territorial Force on the same basis of pay?

Witness.—I do not see any reason for doing so.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If you want people recruited from the same social standing?

Witness.—I think the soldiers of the Indian Army are of a rather higher social status than soldiers of the British Army, but nobody thinks of recruiting them on the same basis.

Dr. Paranjpye.—That is because the minimum amount required for an Englishman is greater than the minimum amount required for an Indian, but this is a question of the pay for people on a higher status.

Witness.—I do not know; the Territorial officers get quite enough pay to cover any expenses they are put to; they have not many expenses.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You said to the Chairman that, if Indians are admitted to the Auxiliary Force, there is a chance of the Auxiliary Force being disbanded. Why?

Witness.—Because they do not want them.

Dr. Paranjpye.—They do not want to associate with Indians?

Witness.—I do not know if they do not want to associate with Indians, but they do not want a mixed force of Europeans and Indians.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Supposing separate units of the Auxiliary Force were formed?

Witness.—That would be merely a difference in name.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Indian units of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—If you mean with similar liabilities, we do not consider an Indian unit formed on the lines of the Auxiliary Force would have any value whatsoever, because, in the first place, while the great point of the Auxiliary Force is the system of daily training, there we have a basis of men who have been trained in military affairs long before they ever came to India. And, therefore, they have all been trained in a sense of discipline in their homes and schools, and that, in my opinion, is entirely lacking in the case of the people of Bengal the only part where I have observed the Territorial Force, and where there is any demand to have a daily system of training.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How would you get rid of the prevailing cry about racial distinctions then?

Witness.—You cannot do away with racial distinctions; they are made by nature. There are bound to be racial distinctions of some sort. The Auxiliary Force is a racial force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I wonder if you are aware that certain members of the Auxiliary Force devote all the money they receive for their military training to a certain fund to support poorer members?

Witness.—I am not aware of that.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think that, as regards the Indian Territorial Force, if this Committee recommended that all the expenses of the officers were paid, there would not be any desire to enter the Auxiliary Force? The officers of the I. T. F. have told me personally that one of their chief grouses is that they do not get enough pay when they are in camp; if we recommended that they should be treated just like officers in the Auxiliary Force, do you think any of them would still desire to enter the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I do not know; I know this much, that it will be giving them more pay than officers in the regular army, with much higher qualifications, receive?

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If an I. T. F. officer showed clearly that his expenses for uniform, etc., came to Rs. 600 and he was only entitled to receive Rs. 300, would you consider that a legitimate grievance?

Witness.—I do not think that it would be possible for him to spend Rs. 600 on his uniform.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Many of them spend more than we do.

Witness.—I think Rs. 300 would more than pay for everything that an Indian officer in the Territorial Force could want; I am quite certain of it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advise the formation of an Indian Army Hospital Corps in Bengal?

Witness.—I think it would be a very good thing.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you advise the formation of a clerical corps in Bengal?

Witness.—No; I do not consider that a territorial force raised for internal defence wants a lot of clerks.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You want them in war time?

Witness.—We could recruit temporarily then.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Or a mechanical corps or electrical corps?

Witness.—I think that is for Army Headquarters to say.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think Calcutta lends itself as a suitable place for the formation of these corps?

Witness.—I do not consider that any military formation is of any value at all till it gets a certain amount of discipline and you are not going to have that discipline in a corps consisting of mechanics.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—We had a witness just now from Bengal who said that in Bengal he could raise two or three battalions.

Witness.—I have never yet seen anybody who could raise one battalion, though I have heard a lot of people who said they could.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have you had any experience in the Railway Auxiliary Force? Do you think it would be a sound idea if we took the permanent way department, consisting of engineers and the subordinate staff under them, who are fairly well-skilled mechanics, and formed platoons of them?

Witness.—No; I think they do much better as they are at present. What I mean is this: the Auxiliary Force at present do a certain amount of very good training and I would not like to interfere with them, without any suggestion coming in the first place from the railways themselves. No one has ever approached our headquarters with a request of this nature.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—As regards training, do you consider that the present amount of training given to the Territorial Force is sufficient? To put it in another way, the training of the Territorial Force at present is about 28 days in the first year. Your reservist gets the same amount?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—But he has had training for five years before?

Witness.—Yes. But the lapse of one year has made him lose a great deal of his efficiency.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Your idea is that 28 days is not sufficient training for a man?

Witness.—Certainly, combined with the fact that he gets only 56 days' initial training; it is quite impossible to give them any real training.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—It would take a long time to bring them up to a sufficient state of efficiency to take their place with the regular army?

Witness.—A very long time; I should think about six months' intensive training.

Examination of Lt. T. W. McKie.

November 13th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You belong to the Delhi Contingent of the Auxiliary Force. How long have you served in it?

Witness.—Three years now.

The Chairman.—It has been suggested to us by certain witnesses that it would be desirable to throw the Auxiliary Force open to Indians, that is to say, that each unit of the Auxiliary Force should have a separate section of Indians attached to it. Suppose that idea was carried out, what would be the effect?

Witness.—I could not give you an answer to that now; I am not prepared to answer that.

The Chairman.—Taking the general question of the admission of Indians into the Auxiliary Force, can you give me any opinion as to what you think the effect would be?

Witness.—From what I have gathered, if the Force is thrown open to the Indians, the Europeans and Anglo-Indians would probably resign.

The Chairman.—In this connection certain witnesses have said that an objection has been raised by the officers of the Indian Territorial Force that they have general liability for service overseas and across the frontier, while the Auxiliary Force have only got a liability to serve in their own particular province; do you think it would be possible to extend the liability for the Auxiliary Force, always supposing that they could be spared from their civil avocations?

Witness.—It is not an impossibility.

The Chairman.—Would the members object?

Witness.—I think there would be objections.

The Chairman.—On what score?

Witness.—Most of the men are in civil employ and they have really enlisted themselves for local service.

The Chairman.—Supposing that the conditions were made such that they could go without any risk to their permanent employment? In the last war many officers were spared from their civil employment, they got their pay and their positions were kept open for them.

Witness.—The conditions will have to be made known before I could answer that question.

Mr. Burdon.—You know that the Auxiliary Force has replaced the old Volunteer Force, and that under the old volunteer system the expenses of the men were paid out of the capitation fund. Supposing that we proposed to revert to the old volunteer system, and provided that arrangements were made to ensure that the men were not out of pocket, but that their expenses were paid by Government out of the capitation fund, what do you think would be the popularity of service in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I can only answer for our platoon. I do not think there would be much objection.

Mr. Burdon.—You don't think it would affect the number of men willing to join?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you had any experience in the Volunteer Force?

Witness.—Yes, I served in the old Volunteers for 10 years.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it would be possible, provided all the out of pocket expenses of the men were paid, in the absence of pay to attract people? Would the absence of pay prevent people from joining?

Witness.—It would not prevent people from joining.

Dr. Mullick.—I suppose you know that there is a great desire on the part of Indians to be associated with this military movement for the defence of their country. Do you think that, if they asked for service on the same basis as you have got in the Auxiliary Force, *i.e.*, if they were trained for service in their own districts, you would let them have it?

Witness.—I do not see any objection to it, that is, as a separate unit.

Dr. Mullick.—As a European you would not in any way be prejudiced against that idea? You would welcome the idea that the Indian should have some limited liability for service in India, in his own province?

Witness.—In separate units.

Dr. Mullick.—All your objection is that you do not want them to be associated in the same units. Would you say that, if Indians were to have the privileges that are now enjoyed by the Auxiliary Force, the latter would break up?

Witness.—Yes, if you bring them into the same ranks.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Following up Dr. Mullick's question, it may be possible in places like Delhi, Calcutta or Bombay, where there is a large population of Europeans and Anglo-Indians, to have separate units for them on the one hand and for Indians on the other, if it was decided to have Indians also in the Auxiliary Force, but in a smaller place where there are only a few Europeans and Anglo-Indians and a few Indians of the same positions, would there be any objection to Indians being trained with Europeans in that place?

Witness.—I don't see any objection in a very small station.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you any objection to Indians being trained with Europeans if the former are of the same social standing? Of course, I don't say that Europeans should be trained with agriculturists and uneducated Indians. But what I mean is, if there are educated Indians, men educated in England, lawyers, doctors and so on, who are conversant with European ideas and ways, would you have any objection to such Indians being trained with you?

Witness.—I don't see any objection personally, but I am not prepared to answer for the Association which I represent.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If there was a national call, do you think the members of the Auxiliary Force would respond to it?

Witness.—I certainly think so. They have done it before.

Examination of Lt.-Col. Craddock.

The Chairman.—You command the Calcutta Scottish. How long have you been with the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I have been in the Auxiliary Force for 4 years, and I was also in the old Volnteer Force for about 12 years, including the war period. In all I should think I have served for about 17 years.

The Chairman.—It has been suggested by certain witnesses that a separate section of the Auxiliary Force should be formed and that it should be thrown open to Indians, that is, that you should have an Indian section of the Auxiliary Force. Is that possible?

Witness.—No, not as a fighting section.

The Chairman.—Supposing that it was formed as a fighting section, what would be the result?

Witness.—The result would, I think, undoubtedly be a complete disappearance of the existing Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—Why?

Witness.—Indians and Europeans will not serve together. They certainly will not volunteer to serve together. I think, if I may say so, there is an example of this in the reason why the Calcutta battalions are so inefficient at present. They won't have natives, as I understand the word, in the Force, but they will have a lot of Anglo-Indians as members. Where in one battalion it was attempted to retain one company for the Trades Association for Europeans alone, that company is now practically defunct. I am quite certain, Sir, speaking for my own battalion, that it would entirely disappear if such a contingency as you have suggested were to occur. I can say the same in regard to three other units in Calcutta. I am speaking of the Calcutta Light Horse in Calcutta, the Port Defence and the Cossipore Artillery. But I do think that it is possible to train Indians to serve in signal sections possibly, or it may be in sections like the mechanical transport and the like. But even then their training would have to be entirely separate from the unit to which they would be attached, should the normal unit be called up for service.

The Chairman.—That is to say, their training should be entirely separate from the unit to which they would be attached?

Witness.—Absolutely. I do think they could be used with the Auxiliary Force, but that is as far as we could go.

The Chairman.—Another objection which has been raised against the Auxiliary Force is this, that the officers of the Indian Territorial Force have a liability to serve overseas and over the frontier, while the officers of the Auxiliary Force have only a limited provincial liability, a purely local liability. Do you consider that if this liability were increased and the Auxiliary Force were made liable for service overseas or across the frontier, they could be spared from their civil occupations?

Witness.—I think that you would certainly get men on those terms, if this is applied only to the present Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—Could you tell the committee a little more fully why you consider it impracticable for Indians and Europeans to serve together? Is it due to administration or differences in their habits and the food they eat?

Witness.—Principally to their habits and food. There seems to be no precedent that I can think of for such an amalgamation. If you asked me personally whether I would serve or not, I should say No. If you asked for a satisfactory reason I do not know that I could satisfy you with one. It seems natural to take that line somehow.

The Chairman.—Would you regard it as unsuitable for Indian troops and British troops to occupy the same barracks?

Witness.—Entirely.

The Chairman.—It is considerations of that kind that really determine the matter?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—As you know, the Auxiliary Force replaced the old Volunteer Force, and the old Volunteer Force were supposed to be paid their out of pocket expenses from the capitation fund. If we proposed to revert to the old system, and if we provided that Government should fully discharge all out of pocket expenses through the medium of the capitation fund or otherwise, do you think it would affect the popularity of service in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I do not. I think you would probably get rid of a number of undesirables who at the moment only join the Auxiliary Force for what is to be made out of it, and you would certainly get a better class. There is no doubt about it that at the moment the Auxiliary Force apeals to some Europeans and Anglo-Indians, who look upon it as a means of augmenting their somewhat slender incomes, and I do not consider that they are particularly desirable members of the force, or of particular military value?

Mr. Burdon.—Do you approve of the present system of military training in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I do not, but I do appreciate the vast difficulties of the whole question. The present system to my mind is unsatisfactory. Until you get the employers of the men definitely to give them up for a really thorough training, which would last for two or three weeks or whatever period the authorities consider desirable, until that is practicable, I am bound to confess that I think the present system will be inefficient and insufficient. I have found personally in my own battalion great difficulty in getting the men to realise that they have committed themselves to do so many hours training during the year. I point out to them that, if a sufficient number of men will come up I will organise week-ends, which I can guarantee to them will be serviceable from every point of view and less irksome than two parades a week, but at the moment, until a lead is given by the employers of the men, I am afraid it is unsatisfactory. My predecessor in command of the Calcutta Scottish last year circularised the firms employing the men. In some cases some encouragement was given. In a large number of cases the plea was made that owing to times being bad the staffs were being cut down to a minimum, and that, therefore, it would not be convenient to spare the men, and we have definitely on record two or three cases where the men were threatened with discharge from their employment. For instance on the proclamation parade on the 1st January the troops were on the Maidan as late as 9 or a quarter past 9 on one day in the year. One man came to us and told us a few days later that he had been told that, if such a thing occurred again, he would be immediately dismissed. The result is that we have had to kick out, to use a vulgar expression, something like 70 or 80 members of the Calcutta Scottish, who have failed, in my view, to do their job. I know that in quite a number of cases they have received little or no assistance from a number of firms.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the difficulty could be met if a provision were to be introduced in the Act, such as I think exists in Australia, making it penal for employers of labour to do anything to discourage their employees from volunteering?

Witness.—I certainly think so.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think the situation would be met?

Witness.—Speaking for my own unit, I certainly can say that.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think public opinion would permit it?

Witness.—I mentioned a short while ago that one of the battalions in Calcutta had what was known as a white company, consisting of members of the trades. They were most exceedingly efficient and very popular for some time. They have almost become defunct and I have been asked within the last week whether I would care to make an organised attempt to get these men back to the Auxiliary Force by meeting the members of the trades at the Delta Club, which is their particular club. My difficulty is that certain gentlemen in Calcutta who are members of the club are themselves employers of labour, employing some of the men whom, for want of encouragement, I have had to get rid of in the last twelve months.

Mr. Burdon.—Lt.-Col. Llewhellin suggests that, if a provision of this kind were made it would be got round by employers saying to their men that they will not be entertained if they volunteer for the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I think that would happen in very exceptional cases, and one or two cases would probably be sufficient to show up a firm. I must say that on the whole the firms in Calcutta are keen. In many cases we have received

replies that they will give facilities for their men to attend camp. I am now speaking of course of European employers. It is compulsory on joining some firms to join one of the Auxiliary Force units. That is the case in one or two of the biggest firms in Calcutta.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that it would be a practicable proposition to give commanding officers power to compel men to attend the week end training.

Witness.—I would not favour that. I think as a matter of fact that you have got to have the right kind of commanding officer to do most things in the Auxiliary Force. Where one succeeds, another fails. I think one objection to that idea would be that you would probably find that recruits would gradually drop off in number. I would rather see facilities increased and arrangements made with employers through such a provision as exists in Australia or in some other way. The responsibility of the battalion commander is really to train his men and not to get them on parade. These are two distinct propositions. It is easy to train the men when they are there. Personally I would prefer my own ways of getting my men on parade, but I should be largely assisted by something like the Australian Act which you have mentioned.

Mr. Burdon.—To return to the main point, I would put it to you that Indian private soldiers in the Auxiliary Force might feel just as uncomfortable if they had to sleep with European privates of the Auxiliary Force, as the latter would.

Witness.—You have taken the words out of my mouth. I feel that very strongly. I cannot see any desire on the part of the Indian private to mess and sleep and become acquainted with the European or on the part of the Indian officer to associating in the same way with a European. It cuts both ways. I agree absolutely with you in what you say. I do appreciate that very much indeed. I do not know why the matter has not been mooted before in discussing a subject like this.

Dr. Mullick.—I suppose there are a great many Anglo-Indians in the Auxiliary Force in Calcutta?

Witness.—Yes, they are mostly in the two Presidency battalions and the Railway battalions.

Dr. Mullick.—Could you give me some rough idea as to what the proportion is in these battalions?

Witness.—I should say in the two Presidency battalions, 75 per cent.

Dr. Mullick.—75 per cent. and the other 25 per cent. pucca Europeans. The relations are quite amicable between these two units?

Witness.—Yes, so far as I know. They rub along all right. I would not care to say more than that.

Dr. Mullick.—I mean to say, there is not that same prejudice that there would be against an Indian?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—So that if an Indian were to be admitted into the Auxiliary Force, it would be something besides his colour that would cause the objection—because an Anglo-Indian may be as dark as an Indian and still the pucca European may not object to him.

Witness.—Now you are going back to the point we raised before.

Dr. Mullick.—It is not only a matter of colour—that you yourself have just told us. It is something far more than that. Shall we say the life and habits of the two peoples?

Witness.—I should prefer to put it that way.

Dr. Mullick.—Put it that way. We will meet each other as far as we can. And therefore if you were satisfied—you have moved about a good deal in various society—if you were satisfied that their way of life and habits would not jar upon the European, would you think that Indians might be accepted?

Witness.—If you can go so far as to tell me that the time will come when they will not jar, then I am prepared to answer and say, that when that time comes I am willing to take them into my battalion. I am speaking not only from the battalion point of view. So far as I am personally concerned, you yourself are well aware that I do not socially associate with Indians and Indians do not socially associate with me.

Dr. Mullick.—Well, we will take an institution like the Calcutta Club. You have been to the Calcutta Club?

Witness.—I have.

Dr. Mullick.—I am just putting the general point to you as regards life and habits. If you were satisfied that they would conform to your habits and so to speak behave themselves, would your objection be just as great?

Witness.—No, it would not. Because at the Calcutta Club, if I may say so, I think the Indian meets the requirements of the European rather than the European meets the requirements of the Indian.

Dr. Mullick.—Quite right. That is what I wanted to know. Therefore, it is a question of selection?

Witness.—Quite.

Dr. Mullick.—And if there was an advisory board, if you and I got together and said "Knock A out and bring B in" do you think the difficulties would to a large extent disappear?—if we put our heads together and admitted such men as we mutually agreed upon? I would go further, I would leave the selection entirely to you. Would your objection be as great?

Witness.—I am afraid it would have to be. Because the only occasion on which a European requires to meet an Indian is for some profit to himself in most cases. I have my own clients with whom I do business. They are Indian gentlemen, and I admire them very much indeed, but they have finished with me when I have finished with their business and I have finished with them.

Dr. Mullick.—Well, we will leave that point. Supposing that there was a different section of Indians in the Auxiliary Force and that they trained very much as you train on parade,—you have Indian by the side of British units in the Fort in the same building.—Wouldn't that be possible?

Witness.—If you ask me whether I think it would be possible in Bengal for you to train a Bengal battalion of the Auxiliary Force alongside my battalion, I should tell you frankly—No, I don't think so.

Dr. Mullick.—But I am trying to get at the ways and means by which people can come to a common understanding. In the same way, I say there is no contrast greater than that between British and Indian units on the parade ground in the Fort. Would it be so much more different with regard to two sections of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—The point is that we should have no option in that case. If the Government decide to raise Indian units of the Auxiliary Force outside the existing—we will say—European battalions, we should have no option whatever. When you ask me whether my own battalion would decline in popularity, I should say the chances are that it would. But with regard to the training, if the Government thought it desirable and formed Bengali units in the Auxiliary Force in Bengal, I could not possibly have anything to say to that—I could only opine what the effect would be on the men of my own battalion, if they knew that such a thing was to be done. It might deter people from joining. It might have the effect of lessening the keenness.

Dr. Mullick.—It would not break up the unit altogether, as you said just now?

Witness.—I said it would break up the unit if you asked me to amalgamate. Undoubtedly it would,—absolutely. But now you are speaking of an Indian battalion being trained as an Indian battalion of the Auxiliary Force. I, naturally enough, could not tell you that it undoubtedly would break up my battalion, as I could in the other event.

Dr. Mullick.—They might not be as good people as you have now, but they might have their own instructors, and their own social life, and it might be quite possible for you to meet each other and shake hands.

Witness.—I doubt if that would be possible. It may be that we should be able to do a certain amount of training together, but the association would be finished when the training was finished.

Mr. Burdon.—It is only a question of names. Your proposition, Dr. Mullick, is whether it would be suitable for Indians to be allowed to volunteer for purely local services and do continual training in the same way as Anglo-Indians do.

The Chairman.—I don't see it in that way. I think he is getting to the point that he wants Indians to join the Auxiliary Force, and wants them to be called the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Mullick.—But not to clash with the other section, in the intimate way in which they would if their ways of life were not different.

Witness.—You mean as an entirely separate unit?

Dr. Mullick.—Everything separate. Separate dormitories, separate everything.

Witness.—I would not say in that case that my own battalion would cease to exist, as it would do in the other case, which you mentioned before, but I am very strongly of opinion that you would find the whole system of recruiting practically nullified.

Dr. Mullick.—But how, if we look at it from the point of view of an order of His Majesty's Government, would you, as a loyal subject, think that, because an additional body of men came into the service of His Majesty, your service or your loyalty would be any less?

Witness.—Not at all. But I question the value of that unit.

Dr. Mullick.—We are not discussing that. The headquarters will satisfy themselves on that. But we want to live and let live.

Witness.—Officially I can have no opinion, if the Government decide to enrol Indians as members of the Auxiliary Force. I have taken my oath to the Government, and I am bound to carry on. But I can only express to you what I think would be the general view and the general effect on the Auxiliary Force. You would practically come to the same state as I foresee in the other case.

Dr. Mullick.—It comes to this that you would carry on, but . . . . .

The Chairman.—He has spoken definitely on his two points. First, should I say to him: Col. Craddock, you are to have a company of Indians as part of your Calcutta Scottish,—he says: goodbye to the Calcutta Scottish. If you say to him: I am going to form a unit in Calcutta as part of the Auxiliary Force and call it as such,—he says: I personally would carry on in my battalion, but I do consider that to enlist Indians in the Auxiliary Force in Calcutta would have a detrimental effect on recruiting as a whole.

Witness.—Absolutely.

Dr. Mullick.—My last question is, how do you manage your medical examination? What is the procedure?

Witness.—Every recruit is examined by the medical officer on joining.

Dr. Mullick.—Have you a special medical officer?

Witness.—We have one.

Dr. Mullick.—Appointed by the R. A. M. C. or commissioned in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—He has a commission in the Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just now said that, if Government gave you a lead in the Auxiliary Force, with regard to employers, it might help you to get a better supply of recruits. Are you aware of the great opposition that was raised against the Auxiliary Force when it started in 1920. Almost every association including the Trades, objected to it. I was in Bombay, where very strong and serious objections were raised to the formation of the Auxiliary Force. So much so that at one time it was put in the papers that it might be on a compulsory basis. Do you think that in the face of that your statement holds good?

Witness.—At the time of which you are speaking, the Commander-in-Chief came down to Calcutta, amongst other places. He addressed the Bengal Chamber of Commerce, who were absolutely uneducated in this sort of thing, and pointed out to them that in the event of serious trouble in India, the role of the Officer Commanding the Eastern Bengal and Assam District, or we will call it the Calcutta district, would be at once to disappear as fast as he could with the entire regular forces and leave Calcutta to be defended by its own Auxiliaries. I think I am right in saying that the Bengal Chamber of Commerce then took a different view and went so far as strongly to recommend compulsory service.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If such a measure was resorted to, it might have the opposite effect on some firms?

Witness.—I think that, as a matter of fact, the objection of which you speak was largely due to ignorance, because I am certain that the Commander-in-Chief did address the Chamber. I believe precisely the same thing happened elsewhere. He went to Bombay and Karachi and found a very hostile spirit waiting for him, but when he definitely told them what the object of the Auxiliary Force would be in certain eventualities, they practically entirely voted for compulsory service.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—When you say that you would not like Indians in the Auxiliary Force, you wo not wish to perpetuate a racial distinction. You are positive on that?

Witness.—Absolutely. I freely say that my views with regard to serving with an Indian are probably precisely the same as those of the Indians to serving with me.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You wish to have this distinction to satisfy your different methods and manner of living?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said you used to have a Trades Company of Europeans, and that it was practically non-existent now? What was the reason for its disappearance?

Witness.—I did not have the Company. It belonged to the old Calcutta Volunteer Rifle Battalion which, while I was away during the war, became something else, and was finally absorbed in the Auxiliary Force. I do not know at the moment whether it is the Presidency Battalion or the other battalion, but I am assured that that company was a remarkably fine one. I am speaking of a period 10 to 15 years ago. It has practically ceased to exist.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You say you were asked to form such a company?

Witness.—I had been approached with a view to possibly forming a Trades Company and enlisting a lot of men who have fallen out of other battalions.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think that this would be favourably received by the Anglo-Indians and domiciled Europeans?

Witness.—If this white company would not serve conscientiously in one of the other presidency battalions, it might do so in a battalion which is entirely European.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—It has been impressed on us once or twice by several witnesses, that they consider that the conditions and help that is afforded to the Auxiliary Force by Government is much in excess of what is afforded to the Territorial Force. Now, do you consider that the Auxiliary Force have excessive privileges and advantages, or do you think the case is otherwise?

Witness.—On the contrary, reading the questionnaire which Col. Freeland was good enough to send me, I should make an immediate attack on the Territorial Force if I was in a position to do so. To speak frankly, you propose to do for your Territorial Force what you do not at present do for your Auxiliary Force. They claim at least the same treatment. I find in the questionnaire that you are going to equip your officer; on receiving his Commission, presumably you are going to give him a grant to get his outfit; but you are going to present him with a sword and binoculars, which are two very valuable items. I interviewed a Corporal in my battalion recently and got him to promise to send in his name for Commission. He asked "What is it going to cost me." I said "You have been commissioned already as an officer during the war." He said "Yes." He explained to me that he had 5 years' commissioned service as a Lieutenant in the Queen's West Surrey Regiment. A beneficient Government proposes to present him with Rs. 150 on joining as an officer of the Calcutta Scottish to equip himself. Now that Rs. 150 has to buy him his kit, his stockings, his shoes, at least 2 tunics, his helmet, sam brown belt and a sword. He has got to equip himself with a mess dress uniform as well. His total expenditure would, I calculated for his special benefit, be Rs. 500, for which Government propose to give him Rs. 150, because he had so much money from Government when he joined during the war. You well know on what he was required to spend that money and how, particularly for an officer serving in India, owing to climatic difficulties, practically no portion of the kit after 10 or even 5 years is available for use in this country. Another point, the Government very generously

presented my battalion with a piece of ground, immediately south of the Calcutta Club in Calcutta and built a magnificent building for me on it. But they make me pay all sorts of rates and taxes. On an average, for supply of electricity which I estimate will cost me Rs. 250 a month, they give me Rs. 40. The staff required to run it as a club in order to attract the right sort of men to my battalion, will cost me Rs. 250 a month. Towards that I get nothing whatsoever.

Dr. Mullick.—You got the building free and the land also free?

Witness.—The building we got free. At the moment I pay no rent, but I am threatened with having to pay a rent of Rs. 400 a month shortly. The building is practically paid for. I think the Government gave Rs. 1,25,000 against an expenditure of Rs. 1,35,000. In addition to this, I propose spending Rs. 15,000 on furnishing this building. I have not got the money at the moment, but I hope to get it from my friends.

Col. Llewhellin.—By voluntary subscription?

Witness.—Absolutely. And yet I see it is proposed to have clubs with assistance from Government to encourage the officers of the Territorial Force. It is proposed to make a grant to them, whereas I get no grant.

Examination of Mr. H. R. Nevill, I.C.S., District Magistrate, Agra.

November 14th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are giving us your evidence from three points of view, I understand, (1) as ex-Director of the Territorial Force at Army Headquarters, (2) as a district officer, and (3) as an officer of the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—I should first like to go into a matter of detail connected with the Parsi battalions, because I feel that you personally can give us direct answers regarding what actually happened when those battalions were formed. The evidence which Captain Oonwalla, of the 11/2nd Bombay Pioneers, gave us was this. He said that when the Parsi battalions were formed they were specifically promised (I am now talking about the promises of Army Headquarters) British rations. Is that so?

Witness—I should like to explain how these promises, such as they were, were given.

The Chairman.—If you could take the points in detail, we could ask you how the promises were given.

Witness.—They were given to understand that they would get British rations and British clothing.

The Chairman.—And British accommodation in camp?

Witness.—I have no recollection of any question being raised about accommodation.

The Chairman.—Captain Oonwalla said that, at the time the battalion was raised, they were specifically promised King's Commissions.

Witness.—They could not have been. We were not in a position to give King's Commissions. They were not promised anything of the kind; they were promised the commissions which would be available for the Territorial Force.

The Chairman.—And then, later on, he seemed to modify that statement by saying: "At the time when the Parsi battalion was raised it was said that the question of commissions was under consideration, and that they would most probably be Dominion Commissions." Did that emanate from Army Headquarters?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—And lastly he said that his battalion was specifically promised that they were raised for local service only.

Witness.—That is definitely not the case, because I addressed them myself in Bombay on that point.

The Chairman.—There is no question that this misconception has arisen, because in the written evidence we have received and in the verbal evidence we have taken, great stress is specifically laid on these points. From your evidence I gather that, with regard to commissions, they were promised the commissions which would eventually be granted to the Territorial Force, and they were not promised that their battalion was raised purely for local service. Have you any idea how these misconceptions arose?

Witness.—Yes, I have. An enthusiastic meeting was called, under the presidency of Sir Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy, at which the whole question of liability to military service was discussed. The first point discussed was whether the Parsis were Europeans or Indians. That was soon settled. The second thing was the terms of service. They wanted to have the same method of training as the Auxiliary Force and not to be embodied for training, and I said that we could not make special rules for the benefit of a special community; but it was afterwards considered that the difficulty could possibly be got over by making them into a unit for which no provision had been made hitherto, that is to say, by making them pioneers. That was the proposal. Nothing was settled at this meeting. Then other questions arose. This question of rations was brought up

at once and I said that I thought there would be no difficulty about it. The question of clothing was raised, and, as there was almost a full company of Parsis already in the Bombay Battalion of the Auxiliary Force, who expressed their willingness to transfer and already had British clothing, we said we thought that would be quite easy too. Then the question of commissions came up. At that meeting I explained very carefully to them that nothing had been settled about commissions and that the Government of India could not make promises beyond its powers, but that the whole matter was under consideration. I said that they would get as good treatment as anybody else. Then after that meeting the matter went further, and the first battalion was organised and in due course sanctioned. That is to say, we had got a large waiting list before the actual sanction of the Government of India was accorded. Then I went down to Bombay and we had another meeting of the members of the battalion. Sir Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy was there too. This question of service came up. I explained, that being pioneers, they would be wanted at once as pioneers and that their place would probably be on the frontier in the event of a war with Afghanistan, and they quite understood that.

The Chairman.—That is to say you specifically anticipated the possibility of their being sent to the frontier?

Witness.—Quite so. I insisted on the liability to general service as for the rest of the Territorial Force. They discussed that point a lot, and as far as I understood, they entirely agreed to it; but I said that none of the Territorial Force would be sent on service until they were fit to go; the idea was that on mobilization they would be embodied permanently and put through intensive training to make them fit. I told them that it would be a point in their favour that they had two battalions,—the second was either formed, or in course of formation—because, as they were Parsis, and different from any other class of the army, they could not be blended, and would probably have to be used as a unit; that would probably mean the formation of a depôt in Bombay in time of war, to keep up the supply of recruits. I said that it was hardly likely that for some time both battalions would be on service simultaneously, but I said that that fact did not alter the liability. I clearly explained that, and they understood and accepted it.

The Chairman.—Then how did they get this idea into their heads?

Witness.—The Parsis arranged a good many things for themselves. They had, as you know, a very enthusiastic man in the first Commandant of the first battalion, and I think they had rather run away with ideas. That is to say, they had arranged for themselves all sorts of things which were not sanctioned. I found, for example, that they were calling themselves, right down to the lowest ranks, by British appellations of rank. That had never been sanctioned, and the ordinary battalions were not doing that; they were following the Indian army. I had to check all sorts of ideas of theirs.

The Chairman.—So that you think most of the mistakes which were made were rather the result of enthusiasm?

Witness.—I think that was the reason.

The Chairman.—Now as regards the question of the Auxiliary and the Territorial Force. You, I know, have been an officer in the Auxiliary Force and of course you had very great experience of the Territorial Force, as you made many inspections of units and discussed various questions with the officers interested, in every province of India. The idea has been suggested to us by certain witnesses that it is desirable to amalgamate a portion of the Territorial Force with the Auxiliary Force, not to amalgamate by individuals, but by units, but at the same time actually to admit Indians to the Auxiliary Force as part of it in separate units. From your experience do you think that is a possibility?

Witness.—My experience of the Auxiliary Force is this, that the most successful battalions, just as in the present Territorial Army at Home, are those which are of a definite character of their own. The relics of the old battalions which took in all classes within a given area were never a real success, like the planters' corps, tradesmen's corps, business men's corps, such as you see in Calcutta and in Assam and Bihar. The I. D. F. did a lot of damage in this respect, because they roped in everybody and posted them to units, not according to the character of the unit, but according to its deficiency in numbers. That destroyed the old character of the unit very much, ruined all *esprit de corps*, and made the force very unpopular. Our idea was to restore the right feeling as far as circumstances

so permitted. For instance we worked on the principle of getting the men who would be happy together into one unit and keeping them separate. In Calcutta and the big places like Madras and so forth we broke up the units In the U. P., where the numbers were small, we kept the old units, but made them into local forces; contingents, I think they were called. In Lucknow you have got a contingent with machine gunners, small detachments of Light Horse and so on, for that very reason that you cannot successfully in a voluntary force of this description combine very different classes. Where you are bound to do it you have to have different companies and platoons, but a unit formed on that system is not so successful as a unit like the Calcutta Light Horse or the Calcutta Scottish or the Cossipore Artillery. For that reason it would be a very difficult experiment in practice to make a unit with an Indian section into an efficient unit. I do not think it would be popular with either party. I think, apart from principles, that, if you are going to have anything of the kind, a combined unit of that sort will not be a success.

The Chairman.—Suppose as a definite question of policy and organisation you ordered such an amalgamation, what do you think would be the result?

Witness.—I think that one party or the other would disappear in a very short time. You will remember in the beginning when the volunteers were first organised, before the I. D. F. came in, the administrative battalions were a general collection of all the available people who were willing to come forward. The process in every case was identical. First of all the Club members said they wanted to be in a separate company. Then they said "Why should we walk, when we have got horses? Let us be a mounted infantry company." Then they separated them into a small light horse corps; that was universal, you will find, in the history of all the mounted regiments in the Auxiliary Force which are in the Army List—a perfectly clearly defined course. It happened in Assam; it certainly happened in five or six cases in the United Provinces, and it happened in the Punjab. I do not know if it happened in Bihar; it happened in Madras and Bombay; it was demonstrated most fully in the I. D. F. where they drafted men from units all over India and put them in composite battalions for duty at Poona; they were most uncomfortable and most unpopular, but in course of time they sorted themselves out and that was the only way.

The Chairman.—It has been suggested to us by certain witnesses that a section of the Territorial Force should be raised, whose liability would be provincial and not overseas or beyond the frontier. Supposing that you had a force of that kind in your district, would you as an officer, who at any time may have to appeal for help in time of trouble, when the situation gets beyond the power of the police, be prepared to call out such a force of the Indian Territorial Force, composed of Indians, to quell such a disturbance?

Witness.—It depends entirely on their composition; you cannot answer a question like that generally.

The Chairman.—I am talking about your district.

Witness.—I could not do it in my district.

The Chairman.—Why not?

Witness.—I have discussed this question with many people in my district, and they say that they are not going to undertake this liability to be called out in aid of the civil power; it puts them in too uncomfortable a position, they say.

The Chairman.—They have definitely objected to it?

Witness.—Very definitely; emphatically.

The Chairman.—I was once told by a very influential member of the Legislative Assembly, when discussing the Auxiliary Force, that, while it was fully recognised that it was right for a European to be in the Auxiliary Force, in certain units there were many individuals about whom considerable doubt exists, as to whether they were really Anglo-Indians or not. Has that been your experience at all?

Witness.—Yes, especially in Madras; for the simple reason that the community has probably been longer established there than anywhere else; and to meet that objection we arranged that any question of that nature which arose should first be determined, before enrolment, by the local branch of the European and Anglo-Indian Association.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you see any particular objection to the proposal, which General Shea has just described, that Indians should be allowed to serve in some branch of the non-regular forces, with only a limited service liability and with opportunities for continuous training instead of periodical training? A suggestion has been made that a device of this kind would bring under military training, as an educative matter, a lot of people who will not come in under the present conditions; it is not suggested that it should be a permanent arrangement, but that it should be one of the initial steps to be taken in this matter.

Witness.—There was a very promising experiment at one time, but it was unfortunately killed; it was the Bengal Light Horse; that was a line which might have developed very well with other treatment than it had, and I was quite prepared to suggest its resuscitation, and its possible extension to other provinces.

Mr. Burdon.—You see no objection to the general proposal?

Witness.—As separate units; I do not believe in the combined unit. The main objection is a question of military policy, pure and simple, of whether or not they want such units for the army. You talk of education and experiment; an educational experiment may be wholly unobjectionable, if it is treated as such.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think an expedient of this kind necessary, in order to extend military training and military aptitude to the educated middle classes?

Witness.—Our object has always been to treat the Territorial Force on the lines, laid down by Sir Charles Munro, that it was to be of definite military value, not merely a question of playing at soldiers or an educative experiment; it was to be a fighting force of value which would fit into the scheme of things.

Mr. Burdon.—The present Territorial Force does that; but you are not getting any further forward with the other problem?

Witness.—Quite so; the door is open, but the field is more or less restricted in that respect.

Mr. Burdon.—The door is filled with a struggling mass of military classes who are anxious to get in?

Witness.—That is not so in the U. P. Every battalion is short of establishment. The door is open to all who want to be trained; but we are faced with the old story, that they do not like the training.

The Chairman.—Is it that they do not like the training or that they do not like the liability?

Witness.—They do not like the training; I had a meeting last week; when we discussed the thing up and down, and they wanted to lower the physical standard. I said "You forget that the physical standard for the army is the minimum; it is based on the expectation that a man with training and regular diet, carefully and scientifically arranged, will fill out in time. But you cannot expect the Territorial with his short training to fill out in a month; and therefore, the Territorial Force should really aim at a higher standard than the minimum army standard." These points had never been put before them before, and they wanted more propaganda on sound lines; that was the resolution they passed.

Mr. Burdon.—Speaking as an officer of the Indian Civil Service also, would you consider it a proper thing to do, if it was desired to spread the training over a greater period?

Witness.—Not in that fashion; I think it would be a waste of time.

Mr. Burdon.—What are the remedies which you would suggest for achieving that object?

Witness.—I think it has got to be generally understood that the people who are wanted for the defence of India, should the regular army prove insufficient, are people who can be spared to do the work. The people, who have been demanding admission into the Territorial Force, realise on reflection that they cannot be spared at any moment, indefinitely, and that is really what has brought down the Territorial Force recruitment to the recruitment of those who are very much in the same position as the sepoys of the regular army. That is the practical experience. We have seen this thing working for three years, and the elimination of those who joined with the motives which you sketch out has been constant and rapid; there are very few left. I have been in close touch with the battalion in Agra for the last two trainings, and they all tell me the same thing; that they cannot get away from their work and are losing by it.

Mr. Burdon.—Of course there is the possibility that, if they were allowed to enlist for local service, when they found there was no reality or substance in the thing, they would get just as sick of it.

Witness.—Yes; unless the education is very slow and prolonged, that would be the case with classes that have not been habituated to it; the thing is very popular with the villager; he does not mind hard work, and he likes to have a change of scene and enjoys it thoroughly; but the other people, who come in from a sense of duty, are not happy. I know that personally; they are perfectly frank about it.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think the thing will be a success, until the educated classes take it on the same basis as the other people?

Witness.—What you want to do first is to make the University Training Corps a real success. They vary very much in the U.P.; they are not anything like so successful as those in some of the other provinces. They have not got the spirit of it. I think you must work up from the beginning.

Mr. Burdon.—Can you tell us why the old capitation grant system failed. The present system of paying the men is a change from the old Volunteer Force. Can you tell us, generally, what are the considerations which mainly lead to this change?

Witness.—I think the question of pay really arose out of the I. D. F. In the I. D. F. the greatest grouse was that the men were compulsory soldiers without any pay, the like of which does not occur in the whole world, and this system was considered anomalous. As you will remember, the first conception of the Auxiliary Force was based on the proposal to continue general and compulsory service, and the question of the pay came along with it. At the last moment, when the compulsory principle was thrown out, the pay remained. But that was not the only reason. The chief reason was to prevent the juggling with the capitation grant, and to ensure that the expenditure, which was incurred in the force, was regular expenditure and not irregular.

Mr. Burdon.—Was not there any other reason? At the end of the war the fellows were fed up with military service and the war generally. Were you not rather afraid that you would not get a response to the Auxiliary Force unless pay was given?

Witness.—There were a good many cases of hardship suffered by many in the I. D. F. when the service was compulsory. The men had to do hard drills, failure to do which entailed imprisonment. Men were also out of pocket. We thought it would be much better to give regular pay than to have irregular payments to cover expenses. Officers, too, had a great many expenses inseparable from their position as such. I know what it was. I gave figures from my own accounts to show what an officer had to spend during the year, and they said that it was reasonable to reimburse him his necessary expenses. Having said that, in the case of officers, it went down to other ranks on a very much reduced scale. The scale of pay drawn by a private is very small, and it is simply meant as a recompense for loss.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you advocate the cessation of the system of paying these people?

Witness.—It would ruin some corps; it would not affect others. In Calcutta I should think it would ruin the Calcutta Presidency Battalion, but it would not affect the Calcutta Light Horse or the Calcutta Scottish.

Mr. Burdon.—I think you advocate the retention of the system of pay?

Witness.—I think it is the simplest way of avoiding any grievance.

Mr. Burdon.—Can you tell us another thing. How did the system of dual commissions in the Territorial Force arise?

Witness.—You will remember that, when the Esher Committee Report was discussed by the Assembly, one of their Resolutions was that the commissions for both the Territorial and Auxiliary Forces should be in the same rank and that they should emanate from the same source. To that Resolution the Government of India agreed, but it was not understood at the time that their consent only went as far as their powers. It was immediately found, on looking into the question, that the Territorial Force, being under the Indian Army Act, could only get commissions within the scope of that Act, and therefore, short of amending the Territorial Force Act and the Army Act, it was necessary to give them

Indian Army Commissions emanating from the Viceroy. In order to fulfil the pledge recourse was had, as a way out of the difficulty, to the Honorary King's Commissions, which were at the Viceroy's disposal, and which had been granted by the Viceroy during the war.

Mr. Burdon.—What would you recommend as a permanent arrangement?

Witness.—I should recommend in both the Territorial and Auxiliary Forces the use of a Commission similar, *mutatis mutandis*, to that in the Indian Defence Force. We need not keep up a system of Honorary Commissions, which is disliked and felt to be a sham. Get the consent, if you like, of the Home Government. That is the only way out of the difficulty. Under such commissions the powers of command, precedence and everything else should be exactly like the other Dominion Commissions and regulated by a King's Regulation.

The Chairman.—I understand you to recommend a Dominion Commission?

Witness.—Something analogous to that. I would go even further than the Dominion Commission. I would give an ordinary commission in a particular force, with conditions to be worked out according to the necessities; that is to say that, as far as precedence and power of command are concerned, it should be like the Malta Artillery Commissions.

Dr. Mullick.—I understand, from your replies to Mr. Burdon, that you are not entirely in favour of having a branch for the Indians in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I am certainly not entirely in favour of it.

Dr. Mullick.—On what grounds do you base that objection?

Witness.—It is a question of military advantage, I think. I have always had to look to both the forces simply from the point of view of our requirements. I am not an authority on the subject.

Dr. Mullick.—Taking the Auxiliary Force as it is, what is your opinion about the value of that force? In what way is it of use to the army?

Witness.—The trouble with the Auxiliary Force is that the population composing that force is not distributed as the army would have it distributed. But I can refer you again to the Esher Committee Report, in which Lord Esher himself has said that, if you do not have the Auxiliary Force or something equal to it, you must have a larger number of British troops.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that one of its functions would be, naturally, to safeguard European interests?

Witness.—Not European interests alone; we will say law and order. That concerns everybody.

Dr. Mullick.—In case of a riot, do you think that it would be necessary also to protect Indian interests?

Witness.—Of course it would be necessary; why not?

Dr. Mullick.—Then would you not allow the Indians to arm themselves for that purpose?

Witness.—If they are willing and ready to do that, I do not see any objection.

Dr. Mullick.—Therefore, I ask you, as the District Magistrate of Agra, from the civil point of view, would you welcome a force of that kind?

Witness.—No, I would not, until I had tried it.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you try it in your district, as an experiment?

Witness.—I would rather have the experiment tried in any other district than my own. I would not recommend it in my district.

Dr. Mullick.—Therefore, may I take it that, when you give the opportunity to the European to protect himself, you would not allow the Indian a certain latitude and help him in trying to get up a force to protect himself?

Witness.—I know there are a great many people who would like to get themselves trained, I am not in the least ignorant of that fact, because I have discussed the matter with many Indian friends. But whether you could get a regularly trained force is a problem of which they themselves feel extremely doubtful, because you have got to go very much further in the matter than mere training. In the case of the Europeans, they have got a large number of ex-service men with some military knowledge, who can do all sorts of things before they are taught.

Dr. Mullick.—I quite recognise that the Europeans and the Anglo-Indians, having had greater advantages in the past, are taking more readily to military life. We are now sitting to consider whether it is necessary to introduce such elements in the present system as would also make it easier for the Indian, in future, to take up that responsibility?

Witness.—When you say necessary, in whose interests do you mean it would be necessary?

Dr. Mullick.—In the interests of the general population, taking the Auxiliary Force as it is.

Witness.—In a large centre like Calcutta, we found many more men than were needed. The establishment was rigorously pruned. We could have got 10,000 men, but we cut down the number to 3,000.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you mean to say that the European element is quite sufficient?

Witness.—More than enough.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you consider that you should not encourage military training for its educative value, so that men might learn military duty in the first instance, and then be put to such uses as were within their capacity?

Witness.—It is an economic question, of course. As I said to General Shea, it is a question as to what you can make of the University Corps. You have got an experiment before you, already.

Dr. Mullick.—So that your objection would not be entirely racial?

Witness.—No, not in the least.

Dr. Mullick.—I should not expect that from you, but I am simply taking it from the point of view of feasibility and possible utility?

Witness.—I do not think it is feasible. If it were feasible it might conceivably be useful.

Dr. Mullick.—If it were given a trial, would you say, "Very well, God-speed it."

Witness.—I would say that to everybody. I see no harm in it.

Dr. Mullick.—You see no harm in it as an experimental measure? Let us take the Bengal Light Horse. I know something of the Bengal Light Horse. Your opinion is that it might have been kept on, if it had not been killed by the regulations?

Witness.—I think it might have been developed into something quite educatively useful.

Dr. Mullick.—Quite so; so that the Bengal Light Horse would have discharged very much the same duties as those which you are discussing.

Witness.—It is not a question of duties; it is a question of training. They did not get very far.

Dr. Mullick.—As a corollary, don't you think that, as a civilian, you would be able to rely upon the influence of those families which had members in the Auxiliary or the Territorial Force or the Bengal Light Horse? Would not they be naturally dependent on their interests?

Witness.—I am trying very hard to get people, who have been given arms licences, to use them when they are needed. I have succeeded in certain remote and rather wild parts in the district, to some extent. But what happened last year in the district was that, as soon as there was trouble, they came in and handed over their arms?

Dr. Mullick.—You ought to be thankful they did not use their licences.

Witness.—I wish they had.

Dr. Mullick.—Take the educational side of the question. In future, if there was any recruitment to be done, would not these men, who are now more or less being introduced into the profession of arms, even in that limited way, come to the front, and would not that create a spirit of emulation among the population?

Witness.—I don't see why.

Dr. Mullick.—Because they are getting more used to a certain thing. Take the Indian element in the Civil Service. Look at what it was and what it is now, simply because they have had to go through the training.

Witness.—It is a question of standards.

Dr. Mullick.—That is quite true. That is why I say that, from the educational point of view, it would be a thing which might mature in the future.

Witness.—It might. I have never had anything to do with the educational side. I have always dealt with the military problem.

Dr. Mullick.—Now, let us take the military problem. As you said, General Sir Charles Monro dwelt on efficiency. Now that efficiency may be in varying degrees. One unit may be fairly well up in a few days, while another unit requires a longer time. But efficiency must be judged by the proper conditions in which the unit is placed.

Witness.—Those that take too long a time had better go; they are not wanted.

Dr. Mullick.—Quite so. Those men who are absolutely unfit should be got rid of at once. They are not fit for soldiers. But, if you give certain non-martial races the chance of training themselves, will you deny them the opportunity to develop themselves?

Witness.—Well, I don't like your definition of non-martial classes. I don't understand what it means.

Dr. Mullick.—As a physiologist I don't believe in it, but the term has been used. It may be taken in any way you like. We will say races which have not received military training so far. For their development it will take a little more time; but in time they will also become a useful unit. So that the sum total of what I want to know is—it is the same question as the one put by Mr. Burdon—could not you help us in formulating a scheme, by which you could rope in these men to their educational as well as their military advantage?

Witness.—The scheme we formulated gave them just as much chance as anybody else.

Dr. Mullick.—That is, the Territorial Force for Indians and the Auxiliary for Europeans?

Witness.—Yes. Because the military value of the Auxiliary Force is unfortunately limited. It had to be limited because the population, from which the Auxiliary Force is drawn, cannot go where we should like it to go. But if you have got a force with a limited sphere of activity, the smaller that force is the better, from the military point of view. You cannot get away from that. The limitation which you are pleading is a positive nuisance. You cannot take a surplus force from Calcutta, as was proposed on one occasion, and send it to Rawalpindi, where it might be really useful. There are no spare men; they are all employed in civil avocations. But the limitation is a curse, and not a thing to be encouraged.

Dr. Mullick.—I agree with that. It is no use paying for a thing that you don't want.

Witness.—It is no good buying a thing which you would rather not have.

Dr. Mullick.—But in this case you would admit a certain class who are anxious to be admitted.

Witness.—Well, if you are anxious to add to your curse, do it. But I don't see any advantage, unless, as you say, it has an educational value.

Dr. Mullick.—It might bring out the latent instincts which they may have for the defence of the Empire; like anything else, it comes back to Indianisation.

Witness.—I don't see what the limitation of the liability for service has got to do with that.

Dr. Mullick.—Perhaps I am putting it too broadly.

Witness.—You ought to remember that when this thing was discussed,—I was in attendance on the Select Committee on the Territorial Force Bill at the time,—the Indian elected members clamoured for the removal of such limitation. It was on their pressing against this limitation within India, as being derogatory to the Force, that that part of the scheme was framed. They said: "Why have any limitation?" Now you are going back on that.

Dr. Mullick.—That raises very large questions about conscription.

Witness.—It is a very small question, when it comes to military value.

Dr. Mullick.—Now let us take the medical arrangements Did you consider the medical arrangements satisfactory?

Witness.—Yes, we had a scheme for a very large Territorial Medical Service. We wanted to get all those medical men who were scrapped during the war, and organise them into a regular reserve. That was approved; and it was also considered that you might very usefully in some centres raise complete local Territorial medical units. It is simply a question of cost. The establishment was limited and the expenditure was still more strictly limited. But the schemes were there.

Dr. Mullick.—You would have them of course just for the 28 days' training?

Witness.—The medical units? We suggested that the medical colleges might very well form units and send them out to camp. The suggestion was that they should go on manœuvres to help and get experience, but we did not propose embodiment in the case of medical units, as in the case of other technical units.

Dr. Mullick.—Did you consider the question of pay?

Witness.—Well, it is quite easy. There is an Army Instruction about the Indian Territorial Force Medical Corps, in which they get very good conditions indeed. I think they get definite commissions in the Territorial Medical Service. They are better off than the fighting men.

Dr. Mullick.—There is definite scheme?

Witness.—Oh yes! it is at least two years' old. The officers get actual rank, not honorary rank. They are qualified medical men, and they get pay according to I. M. S. rates.

Dr. Mullick.—You had a good deal of personal experience, I know you had, of Advisory Committees in the various Presidencies. What was the origin of these Advisory Committees?

Witness.—The origin of the Advisory Committee was the apparent desire to secure as much uniformity on paper as you could, between the two forces. The Advisory Committee was the last insertion in the Act, after it had been through the Assembly. Just as it was coming away from the Select Committee, to go back to the Assembly, this addition was pushed in. Nobody knew then what it was going to be; it was thought out afterwards, and the composition was fixed by the elected Members of the Select Committee. Of course in practice it proved that a single Advisory Committee of one official and two non-official members for a whole province was an unreality. I know it is impossible in my own province, where we have got at least five centres, and two members of the Advisory Committee living three or four hundred miles apart. They don't meet and they won't meet. The difficulty arose at once; it was perfectly obvious to any one that it must. I recommended that they should form unofficial sub-committees, to look after the interests of the various areas which raised battalions.

Dr. Mullick.—Then who were they responsible to?

Witness.—I don't know. They were advisory. The actual Advisory Committee is constituted by the Local Government.

Dr. Mullick.—I suppose they are responsible to somebody. Do you know who the authority is, under whose guidance they are?

Witness.—Certain questions have to be referred to them.

Dr. Mullick.—Yes, there are 5 or 6 items which are mentioned in the regulations.

Witness.—But in practice the answers never come back.

Dr. Mullick.—But you are in favour of having sub-advisory committees in the mofussil in district towns, apart from the provincial headquarters?

Witness.—I think that is a question to be answered on the experience of the Advisory Committees. I don't see that they serve any particular useful purpose; otherwise I should have proposed them.

Dr. Mullick.—Would not they facilitate recruiting?

Witness.—No, they don't. The only way of doing recruiting is by the district. I don't mean the district officials, but the people in the district who are interested in it.

Dr. Mullick.—I can give you a little experience of our own. We make the district magistrate the centre of our Advisory Committee and he gets in those who are likely to help in recruitment.

Witness.—But the District Magistrate has not time to do that sort of thing. I have got a lot of men into the Territorial Force, not through official influence at all, but by talking when I am on tour and discussing the question with big landholders, when I get an opportunity.

Dr. Mullick.—You advocate the formation of mechanical, or engineering, or ambulance sections as a part of the I. T. F.? With limited liability or with a general overseas liability?

Witness.—Yes, with general overseas liability. I don't know what technical units with local liability are going to do.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—In reply to Sir John's question, you said that, instead of having these favoured corps, you would rather begin to get something out of the U. T. C. and make them turn out officers.

Witness.—I said I would see what could be done with the U. T. C. That would be the natural avenue.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—How would you begin with the U. T. C.? What modifications would you like to make?

Witness.—I don't want to modify it. I want to see if it will work out into something, and afterwards develop the men who pass out from the U. T. C.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Under the present system?

Witness.—I see no objection to that at all.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Have you heard anything to the effect that the Territorial Force think their pay is too small, and that some people have recommended a sort of retaining fee?

Witness.—Yes, I recommended it myself.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Now, do you think that instead of giving them Rs. 2 a month for the non-working period, it would be better to give them a lump sum at the end of the training season—say Rs. 40 or Rs. 50 in all?

Witness.—The trouble, I understand, is the uncertainty, that the unit commander has, as to the exact number of men who will assemble for annual training. Therefore, I would suggest as a check that this retaining fee, or reserve pay or non-embodied pay, whatever you call it, should be given six-monthly. They have a great difficulty in some districts in keeping all their men. You can very easily keep track of a man, if you give him Rs. 16 as his pay after the period of training and his retaining fee six-monthly. If you give it more often it will be very expensive and troublesome. I think every six months would be a useful and practicable interval.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—That is the longest period after which it could be paid?

Witness.—Every quarter would be too often.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—What I want to get at is this. Supposing that instead of giving a man so much pay at the end of the training, you simply give the man twice as much and call it a bonus, do you think that would be suitable?

Witness.—What is in a name. I do not think it matters in the least what you call it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The present constitution of a second line force involves a liability to service outside the country for the purpose of replenishing the units in the field.

Witness.—In certain circumstances.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—It is only quite recently that this idea has entered into the constitution of a second line force in England.

Witness.—Not at all recently. The idea is 700 years' old.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In the Territorial Force Act of 1907 there is no liability to service outside the country?

Witness.—I know there has been a change. Any man who signs on in the Territorial Army now must undertake the liability to serve abroad.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—So far as the provincial battalions of the Indian Territorial Force are concerned, do you think that the liability to serve outside India acts as a deterrent to recruitment?

Witness.—The idea is so remote that it has no effect at all.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think that it would make the force more popular and that you could get more recruits, if this liability were not imposed at the earlier stages?

Witness.—I hope it would not. I do not know.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Don't you think that you would get more recruits, if you remove this liability for some years to begin with?

Witness.—If you were to pay this retaining fee of Rs. 3 a month, you could get two hundred thousand to-morrow.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—I am not aware of the conditions in the U. P. Now with regard to the Auxiliary Force, you think it is adapted to the conditions of the members' occupations? They are men in various walks of life, and the conditions are adapted to their requirements?

Witness.—Quite so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—There are many Indians whose occupations prevent them from undertaking a wider liability?

Witness.—I am very strongly in favour of debarring Government servants from joining. It is no good a man undertaking a liability, which he cannot fulfil.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—There are people in civil occupations which prevent them from undertaking a wider liability, but who yet are anxious to get military training and do such duties as they can.

Witness.—They are not worth having. A man who has got a business from which he cannot get out is not worth having. So long as you can get sufficient numbers for your army without disturbing the arrangements you can do without these men.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—I suppose you attach far more value to the military value of the organisation than to the educational aspect.

Witness.—Yes. It is not justifiable to charge the Army estimates with a pie of expenditure that is not of military value.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is it or is it not of importance to a nation to import a military spirit and bias to the nation?

Witness.—It is undoubtedly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—From that point of view it would be expedient to arrange for such an organisation as would promote the military spirit?

Witness.—I do not know whether it would be expedient. It might be desirable.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that you would develop the U. T. C.

Witness.—I did not say it would be expedient or desirable to develop the U. T. C. It is desirable to wait and see what you can do with it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You will not express any opinion as to the desirability or expediency?

Witness.—Your Madras corps was much better than I expected. Some of the corps are not so good, I have heard. The U. T. C. is purely an experiment at present.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you have any objection to developing the U. T. C. on the lines of the O. T. C. in England, with regard to courses of instruction and so on?

Witness.—I do not know about the O. T. C. If the question is one of producing officers it all depends on how many you want.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—If you require officers for the Territorial Force, the U. T. C. may be a reservoir and may supply officers, if they are properly trained.

Witness.—We wanted them to take the A. and B. certificates.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would not disapprove, if it was trained on the lines of the O. T. C. for the A and B certificates?

Witness.—I would not.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to men who leave the university, would you make any provision to enable them to keep up their training?

Witness.—If they can come. But they tell me they cannot come.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In those cases would you compel them to join the provincial battalions of the Territorial Force, or would you allow them to enter some unit with a somewhat restricted liability?

Witness.—Certainly not with a restricted liability. The original conception was to form a second line army for India. I do not know how big the Territorial Force is going to grow. You must face the fact that if it does grow you will get classes differing in character. There is at present only one avenue for people coming from these University Corps. In England you have class units, like the Inns of Court, the London Scottish and so forth, for such as they, but at present such units do not exist in India.

Dr. Paranjpye.—As regards what you said about the Parsi pioneers, was it put before the Parsis that they were a small community confined to Bombay, somewhat differing from the other large communities, such as Hindus and Muhammadans, and that they might possibly be only for local service on the same lines as the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I cannot say; I did not put it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—There is a tendency amongst some Parsis to consider themselves as somewhat different from the other large communities, and they might have thought that their being enrolled in this manner might be a help for their own small community, and also, possibly, for local defence in case of riots and so on.

Witness.—I think that idea is mistaken, because a definite question was put to me by the Parsis "If we go on foreign service, will the Government be as responsible for the protection of our property and our families as they would be in the case of the Auxiliary Force or the regular troops going away?" That definite question suggested knowledge of the fact.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The genesis of this Parsi unit was after the riots, so that this idea might have been at the back of their minds at any rate?

Witness.—The riots stirred up a desire for military training.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The Parsis suffered a good deal more than the other communities, and consequently this idea might have been at the back of their minds?

Witness.—I disillusioned them clearly on that point, if it arose at all. I talked to them a great deal about liability.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In answer to a question by Mr. Burdon, you said that most units which are recruited from different classes of people have a tendency to form themselves into different sections? Do you consider that tendency a desirable tendency?

Witness.—No, it is inevitable.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Just as you have units from tradesmen, Scotchmen, the Civil Service, etc., is it desirable or possible to have similar units of Indians of approximately the same class?

Witness.—It might be possible, as I have said, in certain centres.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I am only talking of the bigger centres.

Witness.—It might be possible. Whether it is useful, I do not know. It depends.

Lt.-Col. Le Rhellin.—They would all have to be for separate provinces. You could not mix provinces?

Witness.—No. I am talking of a local corps. In Bombay, for example, it might be done.

Dr. Paranjpye.—It might be possible to have a corps of Bombay lawyers, a corps in which lawyers might predominate?

Witness.—It might be possible.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Indians are quite as much interested in local defence as Europeans and Anglo-Indians?

Witness.—Of course they are.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If these people were embodied in this manner, would they not be useful in the case of any local emergency?

Witness.—It depends on the composition. I cannot answer that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The Territorial Force have a liability for general service. That includes a liability which the Auxiliary Force have not.

Witness.—Quite so. The utility of the Auxiliary Force is limited; fortunately, that of the Territorial Force is not.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The Territorial Force has also got the liability of coming to the aid of the civil power?

Witness.—It has the liability, but it is not a practical liability for the simple reason that you could not get them in time.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In big centres where there are more possibilities of disturbances than in the smaller centres, if you have a part of the Territorial Force with a liability the same as that of the Auxiliary Force, don't you think it would be useful?

Witness.—If you needed them, they might be useful.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you consider it desirable that a general knowledge of military affairs, a military bias, and, to a certain extent, a modicum of military training should be as widely extended as possible?

Witness.—It depends on the size of the army you want in all conceivable circumstances.

Dr. Paranjpye.—That is true. But in order to get the best possible army, would it not be better if you had got a wider field to select from?

Witness.—If you want the best possible army, go to the best possible material.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you consider that the so-called martial races at present are absolutely the only possible material?

Witness.—That was proved during the war not to be the case.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think it is inevitable that people of certain classes should not develop a martial spirit or military bias?

Witness.—I think it is highly probable. It is not only a question of occupation, but of all sorts of things.

Dr. Paranjpye.—As regards the U. T. C., people are taken into it only during the time of their work at the university. The ordinary course at a university is 4 years, generally, and some people may join even in the third year, because they are too young in the beginning. They might go there at 16. So all this trouble about the U. T. C. is to train them only for two years in many instances?

Witness.—That may be so.

Dr. Paranjpye.—What is your proposal for intensifying this training and making these people available for further military use?

Witness.—I have no proposal. The University Corps, as is well known, were formed, not for any direct military value, but for being of possible ultimate military value. I am not in a position to judge whether that intention has been achieved or not.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In the present circumstances it will never be of military value, because at the utmost the training will be for 4 years, probably only 3 or even 2 years. How would you intensify that training?

Witness.—It is a question of policy. If you intensify the training of the U. T. C. I know very well that you will be in opposition to the college authorities: They object now to the time taken. I know of two colleges which have objected.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You do not agree to make the U. T. C. an O. T. C.? Would you like the officers of the Territorial Force to be trained by the U. T. C.?

Witness.—If they are men who can keep up recruitment, if they have got position, if they have the leisure, the time to go and be trained by a regular unit, if they have got the position, the money, by all means do it.

Mr. Calvert.—The first problem we have to deal with is this. Are a sufficient number of recruits forthcoming? In the Punjab you get all you want but this

is not the case in the other provinces. It has been suggested to us that, if we began on the civil side with boy scouts and U. T. C., etc., we might develop a spirit which would lead to adequate recruitment?

Witness.—You cannot put it on the civil official.

Mr. Calvert.—Presumably on the education department.

Witness.—Which is trying for itself already.

Mr. Calvert.—The question is one of the expansion of the Territorial units in provinces where there are no recruits forthcoming.

Witness.—It is simply a question of supply and demand. If a unit does not get its numbers, break it up and start another in a place where you can get the numbers. That is the only practical solution. If the military authorities wish it, they can go out and get them. If the educationalists wish it, it is up to them to produce them.

Mr. Calvert.—There are two ideas about the use of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—It is either a play thing or a reality. You have got to get down to hard facts, instead of aspirations. Either you want it for the defence of India or you do not.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If this Committee agreed to form a section of the Indian Territorial Force with the same status as the Auxiliary Force, that is with a limited military liability, including the quelling of civil disturbances, would you, as a civilian officer in your own district in a Hindu-Muslim riot, depend on such section of the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—It depends entirely on what I knew about it. If you put up an imaginary force and ask me to pass judgment on it, I cannot.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I am asking you what you would do, if this Committee did decide on this.

Witness.—I would wait till I saw it and knew it and, preferably, till somebody else had tried it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You mentioned Madras and the constitution of the Auxiliary Force there, and you said you allowed the deciding factor as to inclusion in the force to be the Domiciled European and Anglo-Indian Association. Are you aware that that power has never been exercised?

Witness.—It was exercised by them in Calcutta; they were doing very good work there. Within my knowledge it has been done in Calcutta.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are you aware that it is a *sine qua non* with the railways that their men must join the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—It was not in all the railways in my time at Army Headquarters.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I have received replies from all the railways that it is so. Do you know that a man by going on parade loses his overtime pay. Would you say that overtime should be given to them?

Witness.—When they had not actually earned it? Certainly not.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you agree that these men should be fined?

Witness.—No; they are not being deprived of any reasonable expectation, because they know they have to do this work.

Dr. Hyder.—The President has said the defect of the Indian Territorial Force, as at present constituted, lies in its officers, is that so?

Witness.—Yes, just as in the Territorial Force at home. It is not the officers themselves but their lack of training. It is the amateur against the professional every time.

Dr. Hyder.—You know that ours is a land of castes and that we had a military caste, Kshatryas. Do you think we should revive that caste?

Witness.—To the disadvantage of others?

Dr. Hyder.—You were talking of professional soldiers?

Witness.—In the regular army it takes 25 years to make a Lieutenant-Colonel. I do not see how you could make one in a shorter time in the Territorials.

Dr. Hyder.—How is this Territorial Force to be officered?

Witness.—By the best men you can get. I think the most likely lines of success,—they vary in different provinces, but to take our own province,—would be to train the territorial magnates to take their natural places as leaders of

the men who will fill the ranks. That is the idea in the militia; the leading men of the county generally joined the militia and made the most satisfactory officers. They were not very good, because they did not know very much about soldiering, but they did their best.

Dr. Hyder.—That would be possible only in our province?

Witness.—In the Punjab, too, it would be possible.

Dr. Hyder.—In the Punjab there are no large estates.

Witness.—Yes, there are; in the Campbellpur battalion they are all Khans and Maliks, and there are other men of position, like the Tiwanas.

Dr. Hyder.—There is one other point. Purely from the military point of view, you think the Auxiliary Force is not much good?

Witness.—I do not say that it is not much good. It is very good indeed: it might be much better, if it had not got this limited liability. It is very valuable within its local limits, but unfortunately this objectionable limitation exists.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Do you think the Indian population would prefer a European or an Indian force being used in aid of civil power, in the case of a civil disturbance?

Witness.—I can only judge of that by the expression of opinions on the part of Local Governments, who made the request that the Indian Territorial Force should not be used in case of civil disturbance. Some of them said that in no circumstances should the Territorial Force be used, and that was supposed to reflect the opinion of the people.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—I have not had quite an answer to my question. Do you think the Indian inhabitants would prefer the Territorial Force to be used for quelling a riot, or a European corps?

Witness.—I can only judge from such experience as I have had personally, and that is, that the local inhabitant, when there is trouble, vastly prefers the importation of British troops to the use of the armed police; that is all I know about it personally.

Examination of Major Nance, Adjutant, 11/3rd Madras Regiment.

November 14th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are the Adjutant of the 11/3rd Madras Regiment, and it is from that point of view that you will give us your evidence?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Do you particularly try to get into your battalion men of other classes than those that actually belong to the regular Madras Regiment?

Witness.—I don't now make any particular effort, but I did at first.

The Chairman.—Have you any difficulty in getting men?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—Are the conditions of service generally popular and is the Territorial movement popular in Madras?

Witness.—Yes, I think it is. There are one or two grouses, but generally it is popular.

The Chairman.—We want to know what these grouses are, and what you suggest in order that we may make the Force more popular?

Witness.—The travelling allowances are the chief complaint.

The Chairman.—Those sort of small details are all being gone into. That is the universal complaint throughout India.

Witness.—There is the rank of officers. They object to the dual commission, and they would prefer not to be paid and hold only honorary commissions.

The Chairman.—They don't want pay, but they do want an honorary commission?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—A single commission?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Are there any other particular causes of complaint?

Witness.—I suppose the scale of rations would come under the head of one of the small points which are already being dealt with?

The Chairman.—Would your men object to a scale of rations suited to the particular needs of the people?

Witness.—It would be all right then.

The Chairman.—It generally comes down to a question of suiting the particular people, according to their pockets.

Witness.—Yes, that is correct.

The officers would like the period for passing the retention examination extended to three years.

The Chairman.—They do not think two years is long enough?

Witness.—No, it is not long enough.

Mr. Burdon.—Had you served in Madras before you became Adjutant of your battalion; had you experience of Madras and the people of Madras?

Witness.—Yes, I have served all my service in a Madras regiment.

Mr. Burdon.—In your Territorial battalion have you many *ex*-soldiers?

Witness.—10 per cent., I should say.

Mr. Burdon.—And the rest largely belong to the same class as the soldier who serves in the Madras regular regiment?

Witness.—Largely, yes, though we have some men of other classes.

Mr. Burdon.—From what sort of civil avocations are the rest drawn? Are they all agriculturists?

Witness.—By no means. They are of many different professions.

Mr. Burdon.—And do you get any people from the commercial classes?

Witness.—Yes, we do. We get almost every kind of man.

Mr. Burdon.—And are they keen?

Witness.—Yes, they are. Whether they will appear for training quite as well the second year I cannot say.

Mr. Burdon.—But so far they have displayed interest.

Witness.—Very considerable interest. They are very keen indeed, I should say.

Mr. Burdon.—The spirit is the right spirit? You have no difficulty in maintaining ideas of discipline and proper military organisation?

Witness.—No, there is no difficulty in that respect.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that the present system of training or the amount of training given to the Territorial Force battalions is adequate, if it is really to become an active second line to the army?

Witness.—No, I don't think it is.

Mr. Burdon.—You don't think the present arrangements have really much practical military value?

Witness.—Is one to count on their having intensive training before they are used if an emergency arises?

Mr. Burdon.—Yes.

Witness.—It has some value. You can't say it has no value.

Mr. Burdon.—It has some practical military value. I imagine that, so far as it goes, it has this value that it does make some effort in peace time to train officers?

Witness.—Yes. But I think it possibly has less value for them than for the men.

Mr. Burdon.—It is of more value as far as the men are concerned? You think when they come to be used, the men probably would be of more use than the officers would be?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—What sort of Indian officers have you?

Witness.—They are men drawn from a very suitable class for Indian officers.

Dr. Mullick.—How have they become officers? By direct commission? I suppose they are selected in accordance with the rules, but how did you select them?

Witness.—They have to be recommended by their Collector and pass a medical examination and then they have got to have the recommendation of the unit commander, in whose unit they are to serve, and endorsed first by the district commander and then by the provincial Government.

Dr. Mullick.—Do the officers you have got now give you satisfaction? Are they of that military type of which good leaders are made?

Witness.—I think they are of the type that would make good leaders of men. They could be trained up to it.

Dr. Mullick.—Now, with regard to the composition, I see you have a varied composition. Have you recruited any of the depressed classes?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—Is it a matter of principle? Have they not come forward, or have you rejected them?

Witness.—No, I have not rejected them. One has had so many to pick from, that one has been able to take men who served one's convenience more or less—men who can train at a particular time of year for instance,—so that they may all train at the same time.

Dr. Mullick.—Is there a desire among the depressed classes to better themselves by joining His Majesty's forces?

Witness.—I have not found anything of the kind.

The Chairman.—Of course, the military experience of the depressed classes is that they are some of the bravest people that have ever existed. I think I can vouch for that, for I had a sweeper in Palestine who was one of the bravest fellows I have ever seen.

Dr. Mullick.—Especially with that statement in view, would you consider it a matter of good policy to encourage these depressed classes to come in?

Witness.—That is out of my line. I don't know.

Dr. Mullick.—What I want to know is this. Has there been any occasion for the exclusion of the depressed classes?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—And are the classes which you have got quite friendly as regards social relationship with one another? There is no difficulty about food in camp and so on?

Witness.—Oh! no. Of course, we keep them in platoons by classes.

Dr. Mullick.—The Telegu does not like eating with the Muhammadan and so on. You find that distinction is necessary?

Witness.—They don't like eating together, and we always respect their likings.

Dr. Mullick.—What are your medical arrangements?

Witness.—We have the use of the station hospital.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you have a medical officer in the camp?

Witness.—He was not our own medical officer.

Dr. Mullick.—There is no such thing as a medical officer being attached to your unit?

Witness.—Not at present.

Dr. Mullick.—As Commandant, would you think it a good thing to have one?

Witness.—It would be very nice.

Dr. Mullick.—I understand that you gather your recruits from all over the province. How do you arrange for their medical examination?

Witness.—I go out and see them in the district.

Dr. Mullick.—Who examines them medically?

Witness.—A medical officer is supplied by the civil authorities.

Dr. Mullick.—It is just a question of getting his good offices. There is nobody detailed for this duty?

Dr. Mullick.—The Collector of the district details an officer to attend the inspection.

Dr. Mullick.—You would prefer to have a medical system of your own?

Witness.—It would be a convenience in many ways.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have four battalions in Madras?

Witness.—Yes, if you include the Malabar and Coorg battalions. There are two in Malabar, one in Coorg and one in Trichinopoly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—All your battalions are up to full strength?

Witness.—Yes, including the recruits who will be trained this year. There are a certain number of discharges at the end of the training and they are replaced. There is no difficulty.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—It is generally believed that Madras is very benighted in military matters. Do you consider it very backward in the matter of military spirit and fitness for military life? Do you share that opinion?

Witness.—I do not share that opinion.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—At one time recruitment for the Madras battalions used to be much more free than it has been for some years.

Witness.—If there had been a larger number of Madras battalions there would have been a greater demand for recruits.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—For many years there have been very few battalions in Madras.

Witness.—They have recently been reduced.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the training, they get 56 days in the first year and 28 days in the subsequent years. What do you think of the progress attained by your men? Do you consider it satisfactory?

Witness.—During the 56 days that I have seen them they have made very good progress. Whether, when they return, they will have forgotten what they had learnt or not I cannot say.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—So far as your experience goes the men are keen on training?

Witness.—They are distinctly keen.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—As regards the officers, do you consider they have made fair progress, considering the time they have been under training?

Witness.—They have made as good progress as can be expected.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Suppose a man remained in the Territorials for the full period of six years, he would have got two months in the first year and one month in each of the succeeding years. That makes 7 months. Do you think that that course of training would fit him to command a platoon or a company, or do you think he would require additional training and, if so, for what period?

Witness.—He would get his six months' intensive training.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing that he gets this intensive training, would that be sufficient?

Witness.—It all depends on what the officers are like.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In the regular army it takes a large number of years.

Witness.—Would you expect a Territorial officer to achieve the same efficiency as a regular officer?

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—It is not fair to expect that. How many months' more training would you give him, if you wanted the Territorial officer recruited from the Territorials to command a company or a platoon?

Witness.—He should have more training, undoubtedly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think that the policy of attaching him to a regular unit for a certain number of months would be a good one?

Witness.—It would be, undoubtedly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How many months would you suggest?

Witness.—The more the better.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the indispensable minimum?

Witness.—The amount would be limited by the convenience of the officer. I should prefer to give 12 months.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You mean in some one year?

Witness.—In all the years. That is the ideal.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Among your four regiments, two are recruited from Malabar and one from Coorg and one from the ordinary Tamils and Telegus. Malabar forms only a small part of the Madras Presidency. Did you think it was an easy recruiting ground?

Witness.—I would not say that. Owing to the trouble in Malabar and the Malabar rebellion, people were in a hurry to come forward.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In order to learn self-defence?

Witness.—Yes. The battalions filled up rapidly. Major Bremner, who raised them, was to have raised 6 in Madras, but later he was told that only 4 would be allowed.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If you wanted to raise two or three more, you think you could raise them easily?

Witness.—There would be no difficulty.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The numbers of the 11th battalion are 414 out of the 738?

Witness.—Those are the remnants of the last training. The battalions are up to full strength.

Mr. Calvert.—Your men are mostly drawn from those who ordinarily seek service in the army. Supposing that you wanted to have a large increase, say six times the present number, would you require any special attraction?

Witness.—I think that would be necessary.

Mr. Calvert.—What further attraction would you offer?

Witness.—Rebate of land revenue. They would like that very much. Or give them this retaining fee in the course of the year.

Mr. Calvert.—With a little more attraction you could have a bigger expansion?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Your men do not ask for any special arrangements?

Witness.—The ordinary arrangements suffice.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are there any Indian christians in your battalions?

Witness.—About 75 in the whole battalion. They make good soldiers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are they mainly ex-service men?

Witness.—No, not mainly; perhaps the proportion is slightly larger in their case.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think any objection would be raised to including in your battalion the depressed classes? Have the depressed classes enlisted?

Witness.—We have Parayans, but then that is rather a wide class. As a matter of fact they are not exactly depressed classes. They could be separated in platoons.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What percentage of your men speak English?

Witness.—12 to 15 per cent. of the men and all the officers.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have you heard any of them express a desire to join the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—No.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—They do not look on the Auxiliary Force as anything better?

Witness.—Not by any means.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—What is the standard of education of your Indian officers? Are they fairly well educated?

Witness.—They are. I have several members of the Madras Legislative Council, big zemindars, etc.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—If I understood you correctly, in answer to Mr. Calvert, you just now said that the retaining fee of Rs. 2 would be a good thing for the expansion of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—At present the Rs. 2 is unnecessary?

Witness.—I do not say that it should be given at present. There is no difficulty in getting the numbers.

Examination of the Raja of Kalikote.

November 14th, 1924.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer introduced the witness to the Chairman as an Uriya Zemindar in the Ganjam district, a Territorial Officer of the 11-3rd Madras Regiment at Trichinopoly, and one who had raised a number of men himself and had induced his men to join.

The Chairman.—You have got considerable local influence and you have used that influence to get men for the I. T. F. Would you say that the Territorial Force movement was popular in your part of the country?

Witness.—People did not know much about it until lately. I think it is fairly popular.

The Chairman.—Do you think that we could take any further steps to make it more popular?

Witness.—Yes. For instance we now have training only once a year at a certain place. For us it is at Trichinopoly, right at the other end of the presidency. We have to come from the northern portion to the southern portion of the Presidency.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the distance from your place to Trichinopoly?

Witness.—About a thousand miles.

The Chairman.—What are your suggestion?

Witness.—Our men have to go to Trichinopoly to undergo 3 or 4 weeks' training. They come back and they forget all about it till next year.

The Chairman.—They learn a certain amount and they go away for 11 months, and then they come back and begin at the beginning?

Witness.—Yes. To get over that difficulty, I would suggest that we should have some local training in each district. Some staff for instruction might be sent round and we could have some local training in our district, in addition to the 4 weeks' training in camp. To suit the convenience of the various areas we might have this training at different times of the year. For instance, people of Ganjam might have a particular time which might suit them and people of other districts might get training at some other time.

The Chairman.—You wish to have a permanent staff which could move about the district?

Witness.—Somebody from the regular regiment to give instruction, say a Subedar; or even our Commanding Officer could give the training at different times of the year to suit local conditions.

The Chairman.—Anything else?

Witness.—We have at present got one battalion for the whole of the Madras presidency, leaving out Malabar. I think we should have two battalions, one for the north and one for the south. We could easily get the men.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With two separate training centres?

Witness.—Yes. The northern portion could have a training centre at Waltair, and the other in the South in Trichinopoly or Tanjore.

Mr. Burdon.—What was the motive which induced yourself to join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I like the training.

Mr. Burdon.—And you are still interested in it?

Witness.—Yes, very much.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think you get sufficient training?

Witness.—I think so.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think that, as time goes on, you will want classes of instruction in more advanced subjects, such as musketry?

Witness.—Yes; I do not think we get enough in those subjects. But at present I have only put in one year's training. I cannot give any opinion about that.

Mr. Burdon.—Naturally, before you could qualify for any higher command, you would feel you would want more technical training. Do you think you can get sufficient training of the kind that you require in this one month's annual training? Do you think you will ever get sufficient training to qualify you as commander of a company, or as second in command?

Witness.—After some time.

Mr. Burdon.—With only one month's annual training?

Witness.—After some years.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think one month's annual training would suffice?

Witness.—No. I am anxious to have local training.

Mr. Burdon.—And in the case of officers, do you think that this training should be supplemented by courses of instruction?

Witness.—Yes, local training for officers too.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you yourself like, for example, to be attached to a regular battalion for a period of some months and to see what work is done by a regular officer of a regular battalion? Do you think that would be useful?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think there are many officers of the Territorial Force who would like that, and who could spare the time?

Witness.—Whether they could spare the time I cannot say, because we have got other things to do. There are so many other things; we have got to look after our estates and we have other public things to attend to. I think most of the officers would like to be attached to a regular regiment to undergo a little training.

Mr. Burdon.—It is no good having a Territorial Force unless you are going to make it efficient?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—It is a very important point you have mentioned as regards further local training. We have discussed this question in Bengal, but there were certain difficulties. You have a certain centre and to this centre you must bring in men from the villages, that is to say, from their homes. How do you propose to collect the men?

Witness.—Government will have to bear the cost.

Dr. Mullick.—What about the time at which this local training should be held?

Witness.—I have suggested that the time which would suit them best should be selected.

Dr. Mullick.—You think they can afford to have periodical training?

Witness.—Yes. At a certain time of the year they have got their harvest season and cultivating season; they cannot come then. At other times, they could afford to spare two or three weeks.

Dr. Mullick.—Is not the time when they have the camp the busy season?

Witness.—This year it is going to be in January, which is a good time. December is a bit too early.

Dr. Mullick.—That is a matter of arrangement?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Is it your idea to have the local camps in addition to the 28 days?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Your idea is to keep the rust off?

Witness.—Yes, because otherwise they forget all about what they have learnt.

Dr. Mullick.—You say they can afford the time, because they are not always busy. How many times a year would you have these local camps?

Witness.—About once or twice a year. Two weeks on each occasion. That would be about a month *plus* a month.

Dr. Mullick.—How about the instruction? How about the safety of the arms?

Witness.—They could be taken by the officer who goes to give instruction and brought back by him, because somebody from the regular regiment will have to go to give instruction.

Dr. Mullick.—That means a temporary establishment?

Witness.—Just for the time, yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You mean that the arms will be brought down from the centre and taken away afterwards?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think, for example, that members of the Territorial Force would like to have the responsibility of keeping their rifles clean and in good condition the whole year round and in safe custody?

Witness.—I do not think you could do that kind of thing with the men; you might do it with the officers. I personally agreed to take over some rifles once myself, I wanted to take my own platoon and give them a little training before the camp, and I wrote up and said I would have my own instructor and put them through a little course before they went for training. I asked for rifles and uniforms and said they need not have fresh uniforms when they went to camp. They wrote back that they could give us uniforms, but not rifles. Even about the uniforms there was great delay. As a Zemindar I am myself exempted from the Arms Act, and the officers could, I think, take the responsibility.

Mr. Burdon.—It means a certain amount of work and skill to keep a rifle clean, particularly during the rains.

Witness.—I could do that.

Dr. Mullick.—There would not be one local centre; you would have to spread them throughout the district. Your men might have one centre, but there are other sections who come from other districts.

Witness.—For my district there could be one centre. For Vizagapatam and the two districts adjoining it there could be one place of training, and another for the men from Ganjam.

Dr. Mullick.—The fact that you have joined the I. T. F. has an influence among your neighbours?

Witness.—Yes, several of my brother Zemindars in the district want to join, but they want to know beforehand what sort of people they will have to deal with. I think they have got some desire to join, and would join if . . . . .

Dr. Mullick.—What is the if?

Witness.—It concerns the granting of commissions. I think they have been granted rather indiscriminately. They should be given to men of some birth, or of a Zemindar family.

The Chairman.—You think the officers should be more carefully selected?

Witness.—Yes, they should be men of aristocratic birth, or men of standing who have some influence.

The Chairman.—Would these men that you have in view be prepared for overseas service? You are prepared for overseas service?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—I am speaking to you more for information as regards your neighbours. You think the overseas service would not deter your brother Zemindars?

Witness.—I think it would to some extent.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are a Kshatriya by caste and your ancestors were warlike? But recently they have had no military opportunities?

Witness.—Not for two or three generations.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The men you have been able to induce to join the Territorial Force are, I suppose, mostly your own ryots?

Witness.—Yes, people who are entirely dependent on me.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would those men join if they did not?

Witness.—No, I do not think they would go to the training if I did not.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have got a dual commission. Do you like that dual commission?

Witness.—No, I do not.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you want?

Witness.—We want to be honorary; we do not want the pay.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You want to be a Lieutenant?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You do not like to be called a Jemadar?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With regard to the liability to service outside India, would you be prepared to go to Afghanistan and fight?

Witness.—Yes, if it is for the defence of India.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You mean you would not go to make war on others?

Witness.—I would not mind going abroad, if it was for the defence of India.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What about your men? Would they be prepared to undertake a general liability to serve outside India?

Witness.—I do not think so.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think the existence of this general liability adds to the attractions of the Territorial Force, or diminishes them?

Witness.—It diminishes them.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think the force would be able to recruit more people if this general liability were not insisted upon?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would like to be trained nearer your own home? You have now to travel a thousand miles.

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—As regards the training you all undergo, it is only two months in the first year and one month every subsequent year? That is not quite sufficient. Would you be prepared to undergo training for a longer period every year?

Witness.—No, I have other work to do.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What are you prepared to do in the matter of further training. Would you be prepared to go through further training if it was nearer your home? Supposing it was at Waltair, would you be prepared to undergo training for a longer period in the year?

Witness.—Not at a stretch. 28 days is long enough. To stop continuously for more than a month is impossible; we might have a week or two at another times.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The maximum period is no more than 28 days?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And you are prepared also to undergo a training of 15 days at a time on two other occasions in the year?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How many people from near your own place could, without leaving their homes, attend training?

Witness.—I have raised at present about 40. I have not raised a full platoon yet, but that was all that was wanted. I think I could get a hundred in my own place.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In your own town? So that if you had an instructor there, you would not require them to go anywhere else?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Calvert.—Would this home training which you suggest, be compulsory or optional?

Witness.—Compulsory.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you find any desire amongst your officers to enter the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—No.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you personally have any desire to enter it, or are you satisfied?

Witness.—I am quite satisfied.

Captain Ajab Khan.—With regard to the question of commissions, you said you would like an Honorary commission. Does that "Honorary" apply to pay only or to other aspects as well? An Honorary commission does not confer any status.

Witness.—Only in regard to pay.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would have the commission in other respects equal to an ordinary commission?

Witness.—Yes. There is one point I would like to mention. The officers of the 11th Battalion would like officers of Madras regiments appointed as their company commanders, etc. We do not want outsiders; we prefer people who know the Madras customs. In the matter of Commanding Officers, we would like to have fairly senior men, so that company officers may not supersede them.

Examination of Captain F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, Madras University Training Corps.

November 14th, 1924.

The Chairman.—You are Adjutant of the Madras U. T. C. What practical utility does your U. T. C. fulfil, in your opinion?

Witness.—I think for the moment practically a purely educational value, but at the same time, in the event of any emergency, there would be a number of men with military training and knowledge. In the early days of 1914 many officers were chosen from people in the O. T. C., and a man with a little experience is better than a man with none at all. In the same way a man who has been for four years in the U. T. C. has got quite a good ground working.

The Chairman.—But what training do they get in the U. T. C.? Is it sufficient to fit them for employment in an emergency? Or do you mean that they would be good material for intensive training?

Witness.—Good material for intensive training.

The Chairman.—Do you suppose that if you increased the period of training, that you have at present in your U. T. C., it would be acceptable to the university authorities?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—Then, actually speaking, they get very little training?

Witness.—They get a fortnight in camp and about two or three drills a week during the rest of the year. The custom in my battalion is to have intensive training till they are past the recruit stage, and they are then examined by the regimental officers; until the recruit has done six or eight months he has very intensive training, and then he takes his place on the battalion parades and begins his musketry course.

The Chairman.—You must then, in your own mind, have formulated some ideas by which you could improve the U. T. C. as a unit: what are they?

Witness.—I have not; I think the unit is going on extremely satisfactorily at the present moment; we are rather short of money in camp, but that is all.

The Chairman.—But suppose a boy in the U. T. C. has done his three periods a week and has done his fortnight's camp and then leaves the University; taking it for the moment that his civil avocation allowed him to continue his military training, what would you suggest as the best steps for him to take to continue the training which he already had in the U. T. C.?

Witness.—In the first place I should attach him to a regular unit.

The Chairman.—And then?

Witness.—Then, I think, he will be fit to take his place with the ordinary Territorial officers.

The Chairman.—He will be fit to be a Territorial officer?

Witness.—Yes, after training by attachment to a regular unit.

The Chairman.—For how long?

Witness.—Of course it is rather hard to lay down a standard for the ordinary Territorial officer.

The Chairman.—We want to get some idea of how long the attachment should be continued: someone just now suggested six months?

Witness.—I should think so.

The Chairman.—One of the functions for which the University Training Corps is intended is that it should be a source of supply for officers of the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—The Territorial Force officer at the present moment is meant to be drawn from the landed aristocracy, of which only about 1 per cent., or possibly less, send their boys to the University at all.

The Chairman.—But, if you remember, when the University Training Corps was first instituted, it was the general idea of the authorities that they should be a source of supply for officers for the Territorial Force. Have you heard among your boys any desire expressed to go to the Indian Territorial Force as officers?

Witness.—Yes; they are very keen on it.

The Chairman.—And have you ever been able to send them?

Witness.—About three, so far; the difficulty has been that, on leaving the University, practically all boys have to start some civil employment; they have to start earning their livelihood, as soon as they leave the University.

The Chairman.—Have you any form of theoretical military instruction in the Madras University curriculum?

Witness.—Yes; we have regular exercises; and during camp, we arrange for a certain number of lectures from various people in the station, on military engineering, sanitation and that sort of thing.

The Chairman.—Do lectures on military subjects form a regular part of the University curriculum?

Witness.—No.

The Chairman.—If we tried to institute such a procedure, do you think that the University authorities would accept it gladly or otherwise?

Witness.—I do not think they would accept it gladly.

Mr. Burdon.—You have had time, I imagine, in the 2½ years you have been with a U. T. C., to see whether the work the boys do in it has improved their physique?

Witness.—It is very hard to say, because the boy is growing and it is rather hard to tell how much is due to the U. T. C. and how much to playing hockey, cricket and football in college.

Mr. Burdon.—There is no noticeable difference between boys who are in the University Training Corps and those who are not?

Witness.—We pick the boys to start with.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you find that the University authorities approve heartily of the U. T. C. movement?

Witness.—That again is rather a big question. I found, for instance, that the Principals of the Colleges would not allow attendance at camp to count for college attendance. I think they feel that by doing so they are rather protecting the boys who do not join the U. T. C., I have talked with the Principals, pretty fully at times, about it.

Mr. Burdon.—They are not really frightfully keen on the U. T. C.?

Witness.—I think they do whatever they can to help.

Mr. Burdon.—But they are not actively concerned to encourage and promote it?

Witness.—The question of encouragement has not really arisen.

Mr. Burdon.—How many boys have you got in the U. T. C.?

Witness.—The full strength—671—and a very large waiting list.

Mr. Burdon.—I take it that yours is the largest University unit in India?

Witness.—I do not know. I presume all the others have recruited up to full strength.

Mr. Burdon.—How many students are there in the University all told?

Witness.—I think the number is roughly 17,000.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you scattered detachments?

Witness.—Only one; about one-fourth of the battalion is in Trichinopoly and three-fourths in Madras.

Mr. Burdon.—You can parade something like 400 in Madras?

Witness.—We did on the occasion when the Viceroy came down; we turned out more men to line the streets than any other unit in Madras.

Mr. Burdon.—Is it your experience that there will be no necessity, at any rate in your University, of introducing compulsory military training?

Witness.—So far as I can say, if it is to be introduced in the corps as it exists, certainly not; I think it will have an opposite effect, to what is intended.

Dr. Mullick.—I see that you have got members from Trichinopoly. How do you manage as regards their training? It is all one unit?

Witness.—Trichinopoly is only a short journey from Madras; and I have one permanent staff sergeant there.

Dr. Mullick.—How many members are there?

Witness.—106—the full amount we are allowed.

Dr. Mullick.—What made you pick out Trichinopoly? There are other centres.

Witness.—I did that in consultation with the Vice-Chancellor and the Director of Public Instruction; it is far and away the biggest mofussil university centre.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have had more applicants to join than you could take in?

Witness.—Yes; we had to refuse admission to about 250 in 1922, and possibly a smaller number in 1923.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But you were able to make replenishments to the extent of more than the number who went out?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Has there been much enthusiasm to enlist?

Witness.—Yes, very great enthusiasm this year.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In what way was the enthusiasm—better quality or larger numbers?

Witness.—Both; we got a larger number and, I think, a better quality.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are able to pick and choose a good quality of student?

Witness.—Yes; in several colleges we were able to select 1 out of 4.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Could you raise another battalion, if there was no financial limitation?

Witness.—Yes, in numbers.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would it be possible for you to increase the strength of your contingent, without adding to the number of battalions and without interfering with the efficiency of the instruction?

Witness.—Yes; that would be possible.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—How many more men could you safely take and provide for the training of?

Witness.—It depends to a certain extent on whether it would be in Madras. In Madras city I think we could raise another three companies quite comfortably, consisting of 480 men. If you are going to include places on the west coast the expansion would be practically unlimited.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What would be the limit to which you think the U. T. C. could be extended numerically, consistently also with what you might consider good quality. Assuming that we gave you the staff that you want.

Witness.—I think we could double it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—With due regard to efficiency and quality?

Witness.—Yes, we could double it with due regard to efficiency.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think you could form technical troops, for instance, troops of mechanical engineers, signal corps and so on. There is a large medical college in Madras, as well as an Engineering college at Guindy with over 300 students. Do you think you could form a company of engineers or a veterinary unit and so on?

Witness.—So far as a company of engineers is concerned, I think it would be quite possible to form a company. There are a large number keen on joining it. The question of instruction, of course, is rather different.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What kind of training do you give to your men?

Witness.—The ordinary infantry training. We carry out tactical exercises with and without troops. We have arranged for general lectures on all branches of the army. We have had the N. C. O.'s shown round the Sappers and Miners camps in Bangalore, and we had a small demonstration there.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you give any other kind of training?

Witness.—I think that is practically everything. The gunners in Madras gave us a demonstration of how they use their guns.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You had your camp in Bangalore once or more than once?

Witness.—We have had two annual camps, but we had a large number of small camps during the year.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have they been a success?

Witness.—The last one was particularly successful.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you got a band in your unit?

Witness.—Yes, we have.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have the boys taken to it keenly?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Unfortunately, you do not get any allowances for it from Government?

Witness.—We get the instruments, but no allowance.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would like to have some grant or allowance, I suppose?

Witness.—Of course.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have training for about 80 hours in the first year?

Witness.—It usually requires 80 hours for a recruit to pass out, and after that he has plenty to do.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—I see that, in your University Training Corps Standing Orders, it is stated that each recruit on joining is required to undergo 3 hours' training each week . . . .

Witness.—That was written some time ago, but I may say that it requires anything between 80 and 100 hours to train a recruit on his first joining.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Putting all this training together, how does it compare with the standard in the Territorial Force in the Provincial battalion? Is it better?

Witness.—If you mean to judge it purely by parades and things like that, I think that it would compare rather favourably, and be rather better than the provincial battalions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you think of the efficiency of your boys? Are you satisfied with the amount of progress they have made?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You find that they are quite keen about their training?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you think of the proficiency of your officers? Are they up to the standard of your military requirements?

Witness.—They are all right in keenness and so on, but they have not had sufficient time to acquire the required amount of proficiency from a military standpoint. They have not had time to get efficient in military training. When they started they knew nothing about it at all.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But at any rate, considering the training they have had, you are quite satisfied with their proficiency and attendance?

Witness.—Of course, I am quite satisfied.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you be in a position to give sufficient training to your men, if allowed, for the A or B certificate?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would be in a position to provide instruction of that standard without any further increase of staff?

Witness.—Quite, provided, of course, the men were keen on it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think that there would be a sufficient number of men to avail themselves of this advantage, if offered?

Witness.—It depends upon what prospects they have before them, or what concessions you give them.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing that you offered them the same concessions which you give in England, as a result of the possession of these certificates. I suppose that would be an incentive?

Witness.—I do not think there are really any benefits, unless you want to get into the army.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—They entitle you to a commission in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you think of the musketry proficiency of your boys?

Witness.—Quite satisfactory. They are very keen.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have you got any standard?

Witness.—The same standard as the Territorial battalion. About 60 per cent. of those who are qualified would be first class shots.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are there any complaints in your camps, which you think can be rectified and which you would like to put before this Committee?

Witness.—There are one or two things, but they are small matters. For instance, when our men go from one camp to another they would like to travel by mail trains. As it is they have to travel by passenger trains. Besides that, while travelling they get no batta.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Are you satisfied with the amount of your training grant?

Witness.—Of course we should like to have a little more.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the amount you have got now?

Witness.—Rs. 13,000.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you think it ought to be?

Witness.—The more we get the better, and the more we can do.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What amount, in your opinion, would be necessary to raise the efficiency of your corps?

Witness.—If you double the grant I can do twice as much. If you give half of it, we can only do half of it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing that you were asked to give us suggestions as to the increased amount, what would you suggest?

Witness.—I should be perfectly satisfied with Rs. 20,000, instead of Rs. 13,000 which we get now.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are running a monthly magazine for your University Training Corps, which records the achievements and progress of your corps from time to time?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you get students from all colleges in Madras, and even from the medical college?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If the University made it a condition that every student before taking a degree, should have gone through a course of military training, what do you think the effect would be?

Witness.—It would be of very little use indeed. Quite 90 per cent. of the students would look upon it as a nuisance and would not take it in the right spirit.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You yourself say that the students are very keen and that there is a large demand to join?

Witness.—The large demand does not amount to anything like 30 per cent. of the total number of students in the Madras Presidency.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In Madras itself the number of students is about 5,000, including those in the professional colleges, out of which I suppose about 2,000 would be medically disqualified. You have got about 500 in Madras and an equal number on the waiting list. So you have got about a thousand, so that about a third of them are prepared to come into the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do you think that, on the whole, compulsion would have a better effect on the others? Would it facilitate your work? It is apparently one of the complaints—I do not say it is a very effective complaint, but still it is one of the complaints—that the people who have already joined lose a part of their time, which could otherwise be devoted to their studies?

Witness.—It is a very small complaint indeed.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Especially from students who work in laboratories?

Witness.—The only people who might find it difficult would be those in the medical colleges.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Don't you get any students studying science? They have to work hard?

Witness.—They do their corps work perfectly efficiently. But the medical college students have to work harder than anybody else.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You send lists of absentees to the principals of colleges?

Witness.—To the college company commanders.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Do the college authorities help you in getting these people to join?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Could you not get them to help you?

Witness.—Some time ago we held a conference, with the Director of Public Instruction and Principals of colleges and others, and it was decided that it could not be done.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In your annual camp, are there any other difficulties of a social kind as regards food or messing

Witness.—There are two messes, the vegetarian and the non-vegetarian. The Brahmins join the vegetarian mess and the others join the non-vegetarian mess. We have no difficulty.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Don't you think it is a waste, to be put to the trouble and expense of training these people in the University Corps, and letting them go out of the military organisation of the country after say only 3 years' training?

Witness.—If anyone can suggest a way in which they can be retained in the military service, I should be very pleased. Of course, it is a thing to which I have not given many hours of consideration, but if they were able to attend the annual camp after they have left the Corps, it might serve the purpose.

Dr. Paranjpye.—They might be allowed to attend the annual camp of the U. T. C., in the capacity of old boys?

Witness.—The whole question wants an amount of careful working out.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You suggest a reserve company of the U. T. C., composed of old boys?

Witness.—Quite.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you find these young men accept discipline? There are no complaints on parade?

Witness.—No. They even accept discipline quite well from their own N. C. O.'s. It is quite a common thing to have a man, who commits a minor offence, reported to his N. C. O., and to have the thing dealt with in the normal military way entirely by the N. C. O. of his company.

Dr. Paranjpye.—I suppose they make these petty complaints rather at the beginning, when they do not know anything about military life?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you find the Madras youths, physically, well developed?

Witness.—Yes, quite. We have our height and chest standards.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Did I understand you to say that your instructional staff was ample?

Witness.—For our present needs.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have any of your men expressed a desire to join the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—On the contrary, I have had several men transferred from the Auxiliary Force to the Territorial Force.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Have you had any demands from other mofussil centres to start platoons of their own?

Witness.—Oh yes, from practically every centre in the Presidency.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And you consider that it is feasible to start at least a platoon, and probably a company, in many of these centres?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—If you can give them a sergeant or some instructor?

Witness.—It wants careful working out. A sergeant is no good unless he has practical experience.

Dr. Hyder.—Will you please tell us whether you have ever tried the marching powers of your unit?

Witness.—That is a question that I have been into this morning. We have boots issued which were made for the regular sepoy. Our men only wear boots when they come on parade and the boots, having solid soles, are very hard indeed. If I had many long marches in camp there would be a large number of cases of boot-bite. But I have a scheme for overcoming that.

Dr. Hyder.—Do they march with full kit and rifle?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Hyder.—And what is the longest distance which your unit ever marched?

Witness.—In camp only about 7 miles, because of this question of getting bad feet.

Dr. Hyder.—Did any men fall out?

Witness.—A few.

Dr. Hyder.—Supposing that you marched them in pouring rain, and they were drenched to the bone, do you think your men would stand it?

Witness.—I don't know.

Dr. Hyder.—Do you think you could throw your men against the King's enemy across the frontier?

Witness.—No, I don't. It is not our object. The men are not liable for any form of service whatever in that way.

Mr. Burdon.—In continuation of what you were saying just now, you mean that the present function of the U. T. C. is entirely educational?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—They are not liable for any military service. Do you consider that that is a proper arrangement and that it should continue?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you actually advocate the expansion of the U. T. C. in your University?

Witness.—It is a question which really concerns the military and university authorities more than me. It can be done.

Mr. Burdon.—What is your opinion generally? You think that the movement is, on the whole, a beneficial one. It would not do any harm to expand it up to its natural limits?

Witness.—Quite. I think its influence is certainly beneficial. Various professors in the colleges have told me that.

Mr. Burdon.—As regards officers of the U. T. C., do you approve of the system under which the officers are drawn from the teaching staff and not from the boys themselves?

Witness.—Yes, I do, emphatically.

Mr. Burdon.—What is the best method of training the teaching staff to become officers?

Witness.—In the first place, I can do a great deal of that with the staff privately, but, if it were possible to attach them to regular units, it would be so much the better.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that it would be the better system that they should go through the regular training, if possible?

Witness.—Yes, that would do them a lot of good, certainly.

Mr. Burdon.—And they could be attached during their long vacation, I suppose? They have got three months' vacation?

Witness.—Theoretically. But they are most of them university examiners, and that cuts the vacation down to one and a half months.

There is one thing that I might mention before I go. I may have given an impression, which I rather want to remove. Although the Corps is flourishing at the present moment, I do feel that as a class the students are very apt to be upset by very minor points, and supposing that in one year in camp there have been complaints that the rice was not good or that the food was not sufficient, I feel that at present, in the early stages, that might have a very bad offered on recruiting next year. I feel that, however well the Corps is progressing at the present moment, that might have a very bad effect on future recruiting.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You mean the boys are rather sensitive to trifles and too thin-skinned?

Witness.—Yes.

Examination of Mr. De, I.C.S., Commissioner, Presidency Division, Bengal.

November 14th, 1924.

The Chairman.—We have had a great deal of evidence bearing on the various points in connection with the popularity of the Territorial movement in Bengal and the like, and I do not propose to burden you with any questions of that kind, because already we have had a great deal of evidence. But I should like to ask you a question with regard to certain other evidence which we have had laid before us. Certain witnesses advocated that a portion of the Indian Territorial Force should be formed with a limited and local liability, as compared with the present liability of the Territorial Force for general service. Would you advocate such a Force being formed?

Witness.—I think so, if it can be done.

The Chairman.—Then I presume that the object in view would be purely educational, would it not?

Witness.—Not only educational, but it would give my own province of Bengal a second line of defence of its own.

The Chairman.—But of what utility would that line of defence be? Against what would it defend Bengal?

Witness.—It would be the same as the present Territorial Force.

The Chairman.—The present Territorial Force, if you remember, is intended to be a second line to the regular army. That is to say that, when required, we reinforce the regular army with units of the present Territorial Force when they are fit to do so. Now, if you have a Territorial Force with purely local liability, it would naturally perform no such function.

Witness.—I don't exactly understand that. It would be exactly the same as the present Territorial Force; only the men would be told that they would be liable to serve only in the province of Bengal and not otherwise. Would that take away from their efficiency in any way.

The Chairman.—In what way would you use them? For internal security?

Witness.—To relieve the forces that are in Bengal in time of war, for garrison duty.

The Chairman.—Do you think they would perform that service efficiently?

Witness.—If they are properly trained, I don't see why they should not.

The Chairman.—And would you propose to use such a force for purposes of internal security?

Witness.—If they are properly trained, I should like to use them.

The Chairman.—Would you like to use them in the case of riots for instance?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Do you think that is advisable?

Witness.—I have never thought of the matter. As far as I can think of it now, I don't see any serious objection to it.

The Chairman.—The Territorial Force in England is not called out in case of industrial disputes or riots. That is an axiom which is very closely followed. You have a certain province in India which has asked that the Territorial Force should not be used for purposes of internal security. That is the reason why I have asked you whether you think it is advisable to call out such a force, should there be rioting or disturbances of that kind.

Witness.—I don't see why, simply because they are Territorials, they ought not to be called out. But I see practical difficulties. For instance, these riots and disturbances are more or less sudden and the embodiment of the Territorial Force takes time.

The Chairman.—That is true. Therefore, you could not get them in time to be of any practical value to meet a particular emergency?

Witness.—But if you can get them, for instance, if they are in camp at Calcutta, I don't see why you should not use them.

The Chairman.—But all our experience as soldiers is that, of all the work we have to do, the work which we dislike most and the work which calls for the very highest standard of discipline, not only among the trained officers, but among the troops, is that when they are called out in cases of civil disturbances.

I speak from the point of view of being called out to quell an ordinary disturbance in one's own country and in other countries as well. I can assure you, speaking from the point of view of a soldier, that there is nothing which a soldier dislikes so much and there is no work which requires such rigid discipline among the actual men in the ranks, as being called out to quell civil disturbances. You will understand that when troops are called out to quell civil disturbances, one shot very frequently is like a match thrown on inflammable material, and—you will forgive me for saying this,—it has been very frequently said in the papers, and in other places, that some check should be put on the officer to prevent him from giving the order to fire, until the last possible moment. I can assure you from my own personal experience that it is not the military officer who requires to be checked, but it is the civil officer who has the power to appeal to the military officer to fire who needs the check. The real check lies in the experience of the military officer who says to the magistrate "Do not fire yet; wait, the time is not yet". I say this to try and prove to you how extremely difficult and horrible it is to be called out to quell a civil disturbance, and I am trying to get at this point, whether it is desirable in that case to call out any troops that are not trained in the higher sense?

Witness.—It must certainly be distasteful to the men themselves, but in the same circumstances the same class of men who are employed in the civil police, the armed police, and the military police are doing exactly the same duty.

The Chairman.—But then they get continual training?

Witness.—That is so.

Mr. Burdon.—Will you kindly tell me from what reasons you have made the suggestion that there should be a section of the Territorial Force liable only to local service?

Witness.—I did not make any suggestion. I simply approved the suggestion, because it would make recruitment more popular.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that it would make the force more popular?

Witness.—That is the only reason I had for recommending it.

Mr. Burdon.—What public purpose would be served by having a branch of the army with less training and with this limited liability?

Witness.—I never anticipated less training. The training would be the same.

Mr. Burdon.—A force like that would not be worth having. Its duties will be limited. If we are going to have a battalion, which we cannot send anywhere we like, it will be relatively of little military value as part of the military forces, taken as a whole?

Witness.—If it involves less training or inefficient training, then I certainly do not recommend it.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you not think that for the Territorial Force there should be the one standard of efficiency and one standard of training?

Witness.—The same as for the regulars.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you any experience of the U. T. C.?

Witness.—I have seen them at work, but I was never associated with them. I know only the Territorials.

Mr. Burdon.—You know that the function of the University Training Corps, at the present moment, is merely to have an educative influence, to form character and inculcate habits of discipline, and they are not, in fact, liable to any form of military service. Do you consider that a sound arrangement?

Witness.—I think so.

Mr. Burdon.—You would not advocate their liability to military service, as such?

Witness.—Not as such.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you like the members to join provincial battalions later?

Witness.—I would encourage them to do that.

Mr. Burdon.—You think the functions of the U. T. C. should be limited, as at present?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Could you tell me whether the influence of the U. T. C. in Bengal has, on the whole, been good?

Witness.—Decidedly for good.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you tell us something about that. Have you discussed it with the university authorities?

Witness.—No. I am speaking only from my own experience of all these young men whom I have met in the University Institute and other assemblies?

Mr. Burdon.—Does the training improve their physique and general alertness, and induce habits of order and all that sort of thing?

Witness.—It makes men of them.

Mr. Burdon.—You think it is beneficial?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you advocate an expansion of the U. T. C.?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Up to what limit?

Witness.—To the extent to which the Government can afford to spend money.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you advocate the principle of compulsion?

Witness.—Not, unless we cannot get as many as we want.

Mr. Burdon.—You will not advocate the principle of compulsion unless the voluntary principle has been shown to be a failure?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—You did a good deal of recruiting work during the war, and you are quite familiar with the military aspirations of the people of Bengal?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that the Territorial Force, as it is at present constituted, gives scope to all the aspirations that exist?

Witness.—I hoped it would, but my experience of the Territorial Force during the last two years has been very disappointing. The men have not come forward in the same numbers and with the same enthusiasm as I thought they would.

Dr. Mullick.—What is it that checks the growth of the force?

Witness.—Many causes. One is want of propaganda. People do not know about it. There is another difficulty about recruitment in Bengal. It is a very minor matter and I hope you will forgive me for mentioning it, because my Government asked me to mention it. The military authorities and the civil authorities do not seem to pull together in the matter of recruitment. When I was Commissioner, three of my collectors were not repaid the recruiting expenses which they advanced. The military authorities do not heed their letters. There seems to be nobody who is at all keen on the matter. In Rungpur, the recruiting expenses were advanced by the Collector, and he wrote time after time about it, but never got a reply. This sort of thing damps the ardour of the officials who would otherwise work the propaganda. Again the people do not understand exactly what they are going in for. I think a pamphlet should be prepared by Army Headquarters and sent to the different Local Governments. It should be translated into the vernacular and distributed in the different districts. That would help. The recruitment should be handed over to some responsible body. At present it is in the hands of nobody. The members of the Territorial Force do the recruiting themselves. We have formed the Territorial Force Association, of which Dr. Mullick is the Secretary, and I am one of the members, and we have been doing our best; but we get no financial help from Government at all. It is difficult for us to work. If the matter is left in our hands, we will do all that is necessary.

Dr. Mullick.—In what way can Government help an association like this?

Witness.—Give us some money for our printing and for our staff. Rs. 5,000 a year would be ample for this. When a man is recruited, we must be able to pay his expenses.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that the present numbers could be increased by offering any further inducement to recruits coming in? How could it be made more popular?

Witness.—There are various points. For instance, our recruits come from all classes of people, the poorest classes as well as the better classes. The poor people want various small things. They want their mufti clothing. The better class of people want a little more travelling allowance. I have mentioned these points in my written replies.

Dr. Mullick.—These matters are already receiving attention. Is the general liability for overseas service a difficulty in the way?

Witness.—I have had no talk with the recruits on that point. When a man comes in, I think he understands that he is liable for overseas service, although the chances are remote.

Dr. Mullick —You could get enough men to fill up the number wanted?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Is there any class that would like to have military training, but has no scope now?

Witness.—There is a higher class of Bengalis who would like to join a force, somewhat similar to the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Mullick.—Of what value would that be? Would you use them for quelling civil disturbances?

Witness.—As I have said, it is a very distasteful thing.

Dr. Mullick.—How would you frame a scheme for them? Would you have drill with the European Auxiliary Force, or separately?

Witness.—I would have a company of the Auxiliary Force composed of Indians, with exactly the same privileges, the same rank, the same training and the same responsibility as the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Mullick.—You say simply to give them military education?

Witness.—It will do that, but at the same time it will form a useful branch of the army and be of help to the State in the same way as the European branch of the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Mullick.—You have seen a great deal of mofussil life; you have seen a great deal of people in various stages of development, of mentality, etc. Do you think a force of this kind could be depended upon at the crucial moment as a military organisation?

Witness.—It is an absolutely imaginary force; I have never seen anything like it.

Dr. Mullick.—Would not the present political feeling in Bengal make a difference as regards the value of the force? Would a military unit raised in Bengal be above suspicion? That is my point. Would it be beyond political influence?

Witness.—Do you mean the anarchical movement? The anarchical movement is limited to a very few young men. The large majority of our boys are absolutely free from it. These few young revolutionaries are all working underground; they are not mixing openly with the rest of the population. So I have no fear that the Territorial Force will be contaminated by them.

Dr. Mullick.—As Commissioner of the largest division in Bengal, you have had access to all papers and all records and is that your firm belief in this matter?

Witness.—I do not think there will be much chance of it. Some of them might get in, but ordinarily, I do not think they will extend their activities in the direction of the Territorials.

Dr. Mullick.—As a Committee we have to take all things into account before we recommend anything.

Witness.—I believe that the anarchical movement is not limited to Bengal.

Dr. Mullick.—On the whole you say that the movement would be safe enough?

Witness.—It would be safe enough with sufficient safeguards.

Dr. Mullick.—As regards Advisory Committees, I see you lay down a scheme. Would you have this Advisory Committee purely at provincial head quarters, or in district towns in the mofussil?

Witness.—There should be one Advisory Committee with each unit.

Dr. Mullick.—How do you mean? The Territorial unit is recruited from all over the province.

Witness.—I have said in my report that for each training centre there should be one Advisory Committee; I have suggested that there should be 4 training centres in Bengal.

Dr. Mullick.—How would you find officers for these centres?

Witness.—We have got officers now. There are British officers stationed there. There is a man at Dacca, the Adjutant in charge of the Auxiliary Force. I do not see why he should not take charge of the Territorials as well.

Dr. Mullick.—Could you raise any technical companies, such as engineering, ambulance or mechanical, in Bengal?

Witness.—You could certainly do that.

Dr. Mullick.—How would you fit them in? With a special unit of their own, or with the U. T. C.? Would you extend the U. T. C. in that direction, or would you have a special unit?

Witness.—I would have special Territorial units.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Bengal is not a province composed of martial races, there are other provinces in the same position or which suffer from the imputation?

Witness.—So I have heard.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You think it necessary that the martial spirit should be created or roused in those parts of the country which suffer under this reproach?

Witness.—But it is not a fact.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you not consider it desirable to create or strengthen the martial spirit?

Witness.—It should be strengthened, not created.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You attach great importance to the educational aspect of military training?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—From the national point of view, which do you consider most important, the training of a certain number of people ready to be sent into the field, or giving a bias and a bent to the whole nation in favour of military service?

Witness.—Both are necessary side by side.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you, on grounds of financial stringency, stint expenditure for the training which has this educational objective? Would you stint expenditure on military training, because it has an educational aspect, and spend all the money available on the production of troops ready to be sent to the field?

Witness.—You are asking me about the comparative merits of the two? I am afraid I never thought over the matter.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is it not very much like the question, whether you would spend any money on education in preference to expenditure on the army? Is it or is it not worth the while of the nation to incur expenditure of this nature for the educational aspect?

Witness.—Certainly it is worth while. But as regards the comparative merits of the two things, I think we want the two things side by side. I would not give the preference to one or the other.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You want both objects to be pursued, not one to the exclusion of the other?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—So far as the U. T. C. is concerned, would you be in favour of expanding it to the fullest possible limits, to the extent to which there is a demand for such training, subject of course, ultimately, to financial considerations?

Witness.—I would, to the fullest extent.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Would you train the U. T. C. in all branches of the army or only in some? You have had an English training. You know something about the O. T. C. The O. T. C. is trained in all branches of the army. Would you develop the U. T. C. on the same lines?

Witness.—If we can afford it, certainly.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—We have first of all to make up our minds before we decide upon ways and means. With regard to the question of general liability to serve outside the country, do you think it would increase the popularity of the Territorial Force in the beginning, if the liability to serve outside India were not insisted upon by statute?

Witness.—It is enforced by statute.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—If it were modified, would the removal of the liability to serve outside India increase the popularity of the force?

Witness.—I think it would improve the popularity of the force.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Which would you consider the better course, to impose a slightly limited liability in the beginning and then raise the liability after a few years' experience or to impose the general liability from the very start as it is now?

Witness.—I have never heard anybody object to the liability existing now. If it were removed, I think it would make the force more popular.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You said that the Territorial Force was not quite popular; it has been rather disappointing in the last two years?

Witness.—The number of men I expected to come forward did not come.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is that due to, what you might call, official impediments, or to other causes?

Witness.—To various natural causes, the chief cause being that nobody knew anything at all about it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think if that impediment were removed it would be all right?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware of this anarchical movement in Bengal. It is a reality?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—In the face of that, do you consider there is any danger of the Territorial Force being exploited or used by members of this movement?

Witness.—None whatsoever.

Mr. Calvert.—In your written evidence you talk about an Indian section of the I. T. F., composed of the higher classes of Indians, who would not join the ordinary Territorials. Why would they not join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—If you saw the two camps on the Maidan, the Territorial Force camp and the Auxiliary Force camp, you would not ask the question. The Auxiliary Force camp is one of luxury, whereas the Territorial camp is very, very poor.

Mr. Calvert.—At whose expense is the Auxiliary Force camp a luxury?

Witness.—At the expense of Government.

Mr. Calvert.—Are you quite certain?

Witness.—That is what I thought. I have worked in the Territorial camp, and supplied them with necessaries during the last two camps. It is because of this lack of necessaries that these people say they cannot live in that style.

Mr. Calvert.—You are aware that the English Territorials, such as the London Scottish, are recruited by non-official effort, although recognised by Government. The Calcutta Scottish is recognised by Government, but the battalion was due to non-official agency. Could not there be non-official effort to start a battalion or two of the I. T. F.

Witness.—Certainly.

Mr. Calvert.—Would not that meet the case?

Witness.—Yes, that would meet the case; we could do it, if it can be done by non-official effort.

Mr. Calvert.—Then you have said one or two things about the educational value of military training. Could you say more explicitly what you mean by educational value?

Witness.—It teaches the men discipline and self-defence.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you think, with regard to the difference between an English boy and Indian boy in a public school, it is correct to say that the Indian goes to school for the cash value of the education?

Witness.—To a large extent.

Mr. Calvert.—Whereas the English boy goes really to have a good time and to play games, and works as little as he possibly can?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Don't you agree that the discipline in England is very largely due to that difference? We get licked into shape, but it is different out here?

Witness.—That is true.

Mr. Calvert.—Would you not get your discipline by a better school system?

Witness.—We should, but we should get it also by military training.

Mr. Calvert.—Would it not be better to get it through the school system than the military system?

Witness.—We tried to establish a public school in Calcutta, but it did not succeed.

Mr. Calvert.—Nobody denies the enormous value of military training, but surely this would be better?

The Chairman.—It surely would not be better. It would be an addition. Nobody has ever denied the value of military training, which could be given at school.

Mr. Calvert.—The impression I have got is that there is some confusion as to the object of the Territorial Force. Its object is not to teach discipline.

Witness.—But it does that, and so does the U. T. C.

Mr. Calvert.—Then would you advocate something like the O. T. C. in our preparatory middle schools?

Witness.—That was a thing which was very recently mooted, and has since been very fully discussed amongst us. I am not prepared to go so far as to say that military training should be introduced in the middle standard, but in the High School certainly.

Mr. Calvert.—Then if you could have your military discipline introduced through your high schools and colleges, you would not have so much need for this special non-fighting class of Territorials?

Witness.—I should like to have both.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Our schools are not residential, and most of the boys are day-boys, whose conditions of life are entirely different from the conditions of life of an English boy?

Witness.—Yes, but still a great deal can be done and is being done by introducing drill and marching.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The English public school is a matter of evolution, and you cannot introduce it all at once into another country?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You mentioned in your written evidence that an officer's outfit costs Rs. 1,200. Can you tell me how it comes to Rs. 1,200?

Witness.—A recently appointed officer assured me that it cost him Rs. 1,200.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You said that candidates for commissions should be selected by the Advisory Committee. Do you think that is a good idea?

Witness.—If the Advisory Committee is composed as I suggest, and has the T. F. officers and the Commandant of the unit on it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then you say that you would leave it to the choice of the District Magistrate?

Witness.—No, the District Magistrate would report whether the man is fit or not.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—The District Magistrate should be consulted?

Witness.—The District Magistrate should be consulted, otherwise you will find all sorts of undesirables coming in. He should be consulted regarding the antecedents of the man, his relations and his social status in the district.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think your Advisory Committee in Calcutta has done any work?

Witness.—No, it has not; it is badly constituted.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would have it radically altered?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you like a central school for training officers on the same lines as the Dehra Dun College? Would you like the Indian Territorial Force officer to be sent to Dehra Dun, or some college, or to be attached to a regiment?

Witness.—I suggested a separate school for the Territorials, because I was given to understand that the other colleges would not take Territorial officers for training.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I have asked various witnesses and the desire on the part of Indians to have entrance into the Auxiliary Force seems to be confined to Bengal.

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I take it that the Bengalis have become so anglicised and have had opportunities of comparing both camps and that has brought about this desire. I have spoken to many Territorial Force officers and I have not heard from one a desire to enter the Auxiliary Force, but I have heard complaints which, taken together, amount to that. They want extra pay, extra allowances, extra clothing and better food, and, given those, they are quite content with their position. Is that correct?

Witness.—They want extra pay, extra clothing, better food, and mosquito nets. But there is a certain class, who would not even come under these circumstances. I think that they would much rather join the Auxiliary Force with the Europeans. I mean the class of men who are members of the Calcutta Club.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think they would allow the members of the Auxiliary Force to go into the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you think the various regiments would allow that, or like it?

Witness.—I do not know whether they would like it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In answer to Dr. Mullick or Mr. Burdon, you said that the revolutionary unrest in Calcutta was confined to a few boys?

Witness.—Not boys alone but men.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Am I right in saying that the majority sympathise with the movement?

Witness.—I do not think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Am I right in saying that the majority are intimidated by the movement?

Witness.—The majority are certainly not in sympathy with it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are they intimidated?

Witness.—I do not know. A certain number are intimidated by means of red pamphlets and so on, and a certain number of us officials have had our lives threatened by letters.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You replied to Dr. Mullick that there would be some doubt of the utility of such a corps in case of a riot. But if Christian corps are capable, you see no reason why Bengali corps should not be capable, but you say there should be certain safeguards?

Mr. Burdon.—I think the witness had in mind the desirability of having recruiting done by responsible people, who would guarantee the antecedents of the recruits.

Witness.—The men must be selected with care, and from families where the question of loyalty is assured.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then you would deny a recruit entry into the Territorial Force, if he had the courage of an independent opinion?

Witness.—If the independent opinion means assassination and intimidation, then certainly, but otherwise not.

Dr. Hyder.—You say that a salary for the period of non-embodiment should be given to your men at the rate of Rs. 2 a month. In what way exactly would you propose to pay this amount, would you pay it monthly, or hold it up until they have finished their period of training?

Witness.—I would give it to them monthly, so that they can feel every month that they are the Sirkar's servants.

Dr. Hyder.—So that the men would be kept in touch with their headquarters officers?

Witness.—And they would also have in their minds that they are responsible to the Government.

Dr. Hyder.—At present you think the officers are not sufficiently in touch with the men?

Witness.—They are not.

Dr. Hyder.—I should like to hear from you how you think of officering the second line of defence.

Witness.—Chiefly by Indian officers, who should be men promoted from the ranks as the ordinary course, with the exception which I have mentioned in my written answers, the occasional exception of territorial magnates.

Dr. Hyder.—Should these men be sent to the regular army, in order to obtain intensive training every year, so that they may become efficient officers?

Witness.—Yes, they should certainly be sent, and I believe they are being trained in that way.

Dr. Hyder.—It seems to me that the people in Bengal are keen about mosquito nets. In war no one, from the highest general down to the lowest private, has a bed, and yet this force is to serve as a second line.

Witness.—If in war we do not give them mosquito nets, they will get fever. If the doctor says that they should have mosquito nets, all the men in the force will have them. All the men in Dum Dum have mosquito nets.

Dr. Hyder.—In wartime do men get mosquito nets?

The Chairman.—If they can get them, and if they are necessary.

Dr. Hyder.—Can you make any suggestions so that the Indian Territorial Force may become a really efficient fighting force?

Witness.—If given proper training they will.

Dr. Hyder.—Would you extend the period of their training?

Witness.—We have had no experience; we do not know if six years is long enough or not. We have had only two years of working.

Dr. Hyder.—Should their annual training be extended for more than 28 days?

Witness.—We cannot get men to go for more than 28 days.

Examination of Mr. Palekanda Mudappa.

November 14th, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you kindly tell us from what point of view you are going to give your evidence? You have taken a great interest in the Territorial movement?

Witness.—Some little interest; I am not in the Coorg Battalion, but I am on the Advisory Committee.

The Chairman.—Had you anything to do with the raising of the battalion?

Witness.—I was of some use in helping recruitment.

The Chairman.—From your experience of the Coorg Battalion, what could we do to better the conditions or make it more attractive?

Witness.—The first thing, that I would suggest, is this: I believe they are not properly paid now: that is the chief complaint, so far as I could gather; and there is the complaint regarding their food.

The Chairman.—As regards the quantity or quality of the ration?

Witness.—The quantity, not the quality.

The Chairman.—Do you get the proper kind of rations?

Witness.—The fact is this, that the average Coorg is accustomed to about 3 or 4 meals a day, but, as a matter of fact he gets only two, and therefore there is plenty of discontent amongst the ranks.

The Chairman.—Are the officers satisfied?

Witness.—They have got a mess. But they get only Rs. 75 and it is not sufficient to enable them even to meet the mess expenses.

The Chairman.—The mess expenses cannot be met and they do not get sufficient food. Are they content with their rank?

Witness.—They certainly would like to have regular King's Commissions; now they do not quite realise where they are.

The Chairman.—Have you ever discussed this question of the dual commission?

Witness.—Yes; they want full King's Commissions; they do not want to be ranked with jemadars and subedars. They want to be second lieutenants and lieutenants.

The Chairman.—Will they take an honorary commission without pay?

Witness.—Some of them will; others cannot afford it.

The Chairman.—From what class do you draw your Territorial officers in Coorg? Are they local magnates?

Witness.—Some of them are government servants; some are planters. Most of them are graduates.

The Chairman.—Could you better the class with different conditions?

Witness.—Probably we might.

Dr. Mullick.—About the Advisory Board, in what way do you think you are useful in this movement in Coorg?

Witness.—We are of some use in helping recruitment; I do not think we have been of any use in other ways.

Dr. Mullick.—But in what way do you exercise your influence as regards recruiting? How many of you are there?

Witness.—Two non-officials and one military member.

Dr. Mullick.—In what way have the non-officials influenced the people to join?

Witness.—We have some little influence in our little province, and we use our personal influence for getting recruits.

Dr. Mullick.—Because you have asked them to join they have joined?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that you could improve your committee or that you are quite all right as you are?

Witness.—The committee must be improved. The chief complaint among the men was that they were put to very severe training for 12 or 13 hours, and that they could not stand it.

Dr. Mullick.—As regards your committee are you quite satisfied with the constitution of it?

Witness.—Its number might be increased by 2—a civil officer and another non-official.

Dr. Mullick.—What advantage do you expect from that?

Witness.—They will command greater influence in the land, and they can get more recruits.

Dr. Mullick.—You think that, as the movement extends, this larger committee would be of greater use?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—At present you simply get in the men and represent such grievances as the men may have to the military authorities?

Witness.—Our powers are restricted; we cannot of our own accord send in our recommendations about the grievances of the men, unless we are asked; we cannot recommend anything or suggest anything. Our functions are laid down in the Act.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you like to have further powers?

Witness.—Yes; I would certainly suggest that the programme of training must be submitted through the Advisory Committee and the Advisory Committee must get a chance of passing comment, just as is done in the Auxiliary Force.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you have any sub-advisory boards?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—I was going to say that in other provinces—in my own province in fact—we have got much larger powers than that; we have made representations to the military, who have always given them the best consideration, and I do not think it has crippled our influence in any way.

The Chairman.—I am quite certain that the powers of all Advisory Committees are very extensive; the only thing in which the power of the Advisory Committee is limited, and rightly so, is the question of discipline; otherwise their powers are not very limited.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Your battalion is the 14th Battalion. It does not consist entirely of Coorgs?

Witness.—Coorgs proper and Gowds.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the strength of your battalion? Is it fully up to sanctioned strength?

Witness.—I cannot tell you definitely; but very near that.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But they are all natives of Coorg?

Witness.—Yes; and all of the landed classes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—The Coorgs are of a martial class?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You know that the provincial battalions are subject to a general liability to serve outside India. Has that deterred any people from joining?

Witness.—It might have deterred about 20 per cent.; the majority do not mind it.

Mr. Calvert.—One of our terms of reference concerns the best way to expand this force. Supposing that you had to expand your Coorg battalion four-fold or six-fold; what changes would you recommend as necessary for a big expansion?

Witness.—Increase the number of the Advisory Committee members and pay the men better; I would recommend a 75 per cent. increase in pay; the officers must be given the same pay as army lieutenants.

The Chairman.—Is there any particular point which you would like to put before the Committee for the betterment of your battalion?

Witness.—I would suggest that some sort of bonus should be given to people who undergo training for the full period.

The Chairman.—When would you pay them?

Witness.—After they had finished the course.

The Chairman.—What inducement would you put before the man to get him to come up next year? Do you think it would be better to pay it him in a lump sum or in instalments?

Witness.—I should leave that to the discretion of the authorities.

Examination of Capt. Fasken, Adjutant, 11/20th Burma Rifles.

15th November 1924.

The Chairman.—You are the Adjutant of the Burma Territorials. Now, we have had a great deal of evidence about Territorial battalions, which I feel certain is applicable practically to every single battalion that exists. But what I would specially like to get from you is whether there are any particular local conditions, with regard to the Burma battalion, which you wish to bring forward? We thoroughly understand that there is much to be done in the matter of road and rail allowances, etc. But I have no doubt that there are special local conditions which you would like to put before us.

Witness.—There are one or two. I think a great many of our officers are government servants—out of about 18, about half are either township officers, corresponding to tahsildars in India, and the like—and they complain that when they join up for 28 days' training they lose some of their allowances.

The Chairman.—I might say that that is one of the questions which is applicable to all. That will be decided generally for the whole of India and Burma on the general question of whether you will or will not have government servants in the Force.

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is there any difficulty in getting leave for government servants?

The Chairman.—Yes, very, very great difficulty. In fact I know of one very important department in the administration which forbade its servants to join at all.

Witness.—I think all our officers are very keen on being excused the capitation tax. I think that is peculiar to Burma.

The Chairman.—That is a matter which must be referred to the Local Government. Now I take it that the Burma battalion essentially would like to have its local appellation applied to it and to be called the Burma Battalion?

Witness.—I think they would.

The Chairman.—Have you any difficulty with your officers about their dual commission?

Witness.—Yes, I think they don't like the dual commission at all. They would rather have a substantive commission, or else be subedars or jemadars.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Is your Burma battalion composed entirely of Burmans?

Witness.—No, we have a company and a half of Burmans, a company and a half of Karens and a company of Arakanese.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have you any Anglo-Indians or any Anglo-Burmans in it?

Witness.—None at all.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Or Indians?

Witness.—None.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do your officers come from a good class?

Witness.—A very good class.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are they all landowners?

Witness.—I think they would all come under the head of landowners.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And do they bring their platoons?

Witness.—In some cases they have personally enrolled most of the men in their platoons.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—What do you think is the efficiency of your Territorial battalion to-day?

Witness.—I think it is very fair. It is not going yet as a battalion. It has only been trained in separate companies. We must have it all together as one battalion.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And you think their training is enough?

Witness.—I think it would be very difficult to get the men for more than 28 days.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Are your officers educated?

Witness.—They all speak English.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You have an Auxiliary Force battalion in Burma. Is there any desire on the part of your officers or your men to join the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—No, none at all.

Mr. Calvert.—You have four training centres, at present. Are you in favour of separate training centres?

Witness.—We should like to have everybody at one centre, but we can't very well do that. We have asked to have three companies at one centre and one company at another.

Mr. Calvert.—There is one point on which we have had no suggestions, and that is how to improve the efficiency of the officers. That is practically the weakest point in the Force.

Witness.—Our officers have to undergo a two months' course immediately before their training, a two months course in the general duties of platoon commander at the battalion centre before their training starts.

Mr. Calvert.—You hope to make that an annual thing?

Witness.—It would be very hard to get the officers. A lot of them don't turn up now.

Mr. Calvert.—Would you agree that the chief element of weakness is the officers?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Calvert.—Apart from the two months' course, you can make no particular suggestion?

Witness.—If we could get officers to attend for, say, one more month before the annual training each year, we should be able to get a few each year.

Mr. Calvert.—Would it be practicable in Burma to attach them to regular regiments for training?

Witness.—That has been done. They were attached for about two months to a regular regiment. We found that very valuable.

Mr. Calvert.—Then you recommend that that should be repeated?

Witness.—Yes, it is very convenient.

Mr. Calvert.—Now, assuming for a moment that we offered you a lump sum, say Rs. 15,000, what would you spend it on? What do you think is most urgently needed? Rs. 15,000 is 2 rupees a head for 11 months.

Witness.—On extra clothing. The men are very keen that they should be provided with mufti clothing to take home after training.

Mr. Calvert.—You think the most important thing is clothing?

Witness.—And rations. There are several small items like that. I cannot think of any one large item.

Dr. Paranjpye.—In your Territorial battalion have you got any educated men, who have passed out of a University?

Witness.—Our senior officer is an M. A. I don't think we have any men who have a high standard of education.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How would you suggest getting a continuous supply of officers—from the landed gentry or from the University Training Corps?

Witness.—I think it would be more satisfactory to get them from the U. T. C.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the strength of your battalion?

Witness.—About 600 at present. We have not been able to complete the full strength this year.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And it is reserved exclusively for Burmans, Arakanese and Karens? You don't take in zarbadi Muhammadans? No Muhammadans, Hindus, etc.?

Witness.—I think we have one or two Burmans who are Muhammadans by religion.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What is the composition of the battalion? Is it intended to be reserved for Burmans?

Witness.—Yes, it is laid down that we can only take Burmans, Arakanese and Karens.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is there any desire on the part of Indians to join and would you make any provision for Indians?

Witness.—We have not had any applications.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Have your men been very keen about their training?

Witness.—I think they are very keen.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—They have got much military aptitude?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are there any special classes among the Burmans who are supposed to be martial and others who are non-martial?

Witness.—No, we have no distinction like that. They are fairly homogeneous. Any Burman from any district is accepted for the battalion.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—What do you think of the progress your men have attained in your battalion? Have they made satisfactory progress?

Witness.—They have made very rapid progress. They learn quicker than Indians.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Have you found any objection to the liability to go overseas?

Witness.—The question has not come up.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—When they sign their enrolment form, I suppose they know what it means?

Witness.—We explain to them that they may have to serve overseas, as well as in India.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—Do they object to it?

Witness.—No, there is no objection to it.

Capt. Suraj Singh.—There is no difficulty in getting recruits?

Witness.—No.

Dr. Mullick.—What are your medical arrangements for the examination of recruits?

Witness.—Each camp has a medical officer, a Sub-Assistant Surgeon.

Dr. Mullick.—You have your own medical officer in the camp? Have you a medical officer, a store keeper, nurses, etc.?

Witness.—We have got the Indian Station Hospital. The medical officer is a regular and has nothing to do with the Territorial Force.

Dr. Mullick.—As regards your recruiting, you recruit from various districts?

Witness.—Practically all the 38 districts of Burma.

Dr. Mullick.—What medical arrangements do you make for the recruits in the districts?

Witness.—I take a Sub-Assistant Surgeon with me to inspect them.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you think that the delay in examination makes any difference to the enthusiasm of the recruits?

Witness.—I think it does. They get fed up and lose their enthusiasm.

Dr. Mullick.—Would you like regular centres where doctors could be present, who could examine recruits without much delay?

Witness.—I should like that.

Dr. Mullick.—When they come to camp, do you re-examine them?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—We have had evidence that, in some places, men who were examined in the mofussil were found unsatisfactory in the camp.

Witness.—That has hardly arisen.

Dr. Mullick.—You have been satisfied with the physique of the men whom you get?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—Have you an Advisory Committee?

Witness.—It sat once last year.

Dr. Mullick.—You do not feel the want of it?

Witness.—Two of the three members did not turn up.

Dr. Mullick.—Supposing that you were given a proper committee, do you think it would help in your recruiting?

Witness.—I think so.

Dr. Mullick.—Could you give us any idea as to how you would improve the present position?

Witness.—The Advisory Committee might well contain some members of the Legislative Council.

Dr. Mullick.—Would it help you if you had a committee at headquarters and sub-committees scattered in all the districts where you may require them?

Witness.—That would be very helpful.

Mr. Burdon.—Generally speaking, what is the civil employment of the class of men who come to you. Are they agriculturists, workmen or artisans?

Witness.—Chiefly cultivators. The Karens are all cultivators.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you get any townsmen?

Witness.—Some artisans from towns.

Mr. Burdon.—They have all fairly good physique?

Witness.—Yes, on the whole.

Mr. Burdon.—You have no great difficulty in getting recruits with the requisite physique?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you any idea as to what is really the motive behind the Territorial Force? What is it which attracts these people to join?

Witness.—I think they are keen on military service. During the war a large number of them served in the army and were demobilised.

Mr. Burdon.—Do they come in the same spirit in which an English boy likes to go into camp, for the fun of it and because they take a pleasure in physical exercise?

Witness.—Yes, that is so.

Mr. Burdon.—Has there been any political propaganda, I might call it more appropriately national propaganda, to get the people to fit themselves for self-defence and that sort of thing?

Witness.—One of Karens we had used to write articles in the newspaper advising all Karens to join the Territorial Force.

Mr. Burdon.—At any rate your Territorial movement in Burma is certainly not disapproved of, either by the national political leaders or by the Local Government?

Witness.—Not at all.

Mr. Burdon.—They look upon it with favour and approval?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—The Press also helps you to a certain extent?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—At present the Territorial Force is liable to be called out to aid the civil power in quelling civil disturbances. If your unit was called out, do you think it would be fit to discharge that responsibility?

Witness.—I think it would. It would be very hard to get it together. It is so scattered.

Mr. Burdon.—You think it would be reliable?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You say that, from the practical point of view, they are not likely to be of much use, because you could not collect them quickly.

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—May we take it that this liability, under the present conditions in Burma, will be only a nominal liability?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You think it is improbable that this liability could be enforced, unless the disturbed conditions last a considerable time?

Witness.—It would take several weeks to get the men together.

Mr. Burdon.—Once you got them together, do you think your unit would be useful in helping the civil power?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Do these people submit willingly to discipline?

Witness.—The Burman does not like anything which is uninteresting.

Mr. Burdon.—Have you been able to make them appreciate the necessity of discipline?

Witness.—Yes, certainly.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you recommend any expansion of the Territorial Force in Burma? You are not up to strength at the moment and you have got 140 untraceable absentees from the last camp. Can you account for these absentees?

Witness.—Their absence is chiefly due to their changing their addresses, which they do not take the trouble to notify. There were floods in Bassein this year, and things like that, which kept some away.

Mr. Burdon.—Is there any natural tendency to expansion, which is at present checked by the limit imposed by Government?

Witness.—The Karens are very keen on raising more companies. They have a company and a half. They can easily raise two or three more companies.

Mr. Burdon.—Could you raise your battalion up to the strength of a thousand?

Witness.—I think we could.

Mr. Burdon.—You have no dissatisfaction, at the present moment, with the rates of pay given, apart from the question of out of pocket expenses which are not sufficiently met by allowances?

Witness.—The men on the whole think they are not paid sufficiently.

Mr. Burdon.—Is that the feeling in the regular battalion?

Witness.—I do not think so.

Mr. Burdon.—In the Indian army, at the present moment, it is believed that the pay and allowances and everything given are very liberal. They produce absolutely first class recruits, at the present moment. Do you think that Burma has a different standard from the Indian sepoy?

Witness.—In Burma we have a higher standard of living.

Mr. Burdon.—In the regular battalions you have not heard any complaints about the existing scale of pay?

Witness.—No definite complaints have come up.

Mr. Burdon.—What do you think of the pay of the Territorial officers?

Witness.—There is no doubt that the officers would like a higher rate of pay.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you mean a higher rate of pay more corresponding to the honorary rank?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—The Territorial Force officers would like a rate of pay corresponding more to the rank they hold?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—But they have never expressed any desire to have conditions corresponding to British service conditions?

Witness.—In the course of correspondence, before this Committee, a few people have suggested that officers should draw the full rates of pay of an Indian Army Officer.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that is a reasonable request?

Witness.—I do not think it is reasonable.

Mr. Burdon.—In the case of the Burma unit, would you for the present carry on with infantry training only or would you recommend any further development? Under the Territorial Force Act, other arms of the Territorial Force can be constituted by the Governor-General in Council. Would you for the present carry on only with infantry training, or do you think it would be desirable and practicable to start other training?

Witness.—Would that include machine guns? The Burmans are keen on anything mechanical.

Mr. Burdon.—You say they have a mechanical turn. It might be a good thing to constitute some electrical and mechanical companies? Would that be a proper thing to do if we decided to expand?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Apart from what you have told us about matters of relatively minor importance, can you tell us of any conspicuous defect in the organisation and general arrangements of the Territorial Force in Burma?

Witness.—Recruiting is at present very difficult. At present the Adjutant is the Recruiting Officer and he has to look after his office and go out recruiting also. He has no time to visit the head-quarters of all districts.

Mr. Burdon.—Would you like responsibility for recruitment to be placed in a larger degree upon local Advisory Committees, that is, people who are interested in this as a national movement?

Witness.—Something on that principle, with local recruiting officers.

Mr. Burdon.—You mean local magnates? That would improve things, so that the responsibility should not rest solely upon the adjutant?

Witness.—Yes.

Examination of Hony. Lieutenant L. V. Po, 11/20th Burma Rifles.

15th November 1924.

The Chairman.—You are in the same regiment as Capt. Fasken. How long have you been holding a commission?

Witness.—For 3 years now. I am a Company Officer at present.

The Chairman.—Will you tell me, from your point of view as an officer of the Burma Territorial battalion, whether you think that there are any improvements in the Territorial system, which we could introduce, which would help to make your units more efficient or more popular?

Witness.—There are three things that I would like to suggest. The first is about the officers. We are in a very awkward position at present and are made more or less a standing joke for the regular army, because we get dual commissions. The second point is about the men. There is a tax called the capitation tax in Burma. If they could be exempted from that, it would give them better status. The regular army men are exempt from it.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Are any other classes exempted from capitation tax?

Witness.—Only soldiers. Pensioned military officers are also exempt, I think. The third is about the food in the Territorial Force. The boys complain of the food. They are different from Indians. They like rice twice a day, if possible, and they do not eat ghee. They use oil, instead of ghee, and they are meat-eaters.

The Chairman.—You have a certain ration. Do you complain—and no doubt quite rightly—about the quality of the ration or the actual composition of it?

Witness.—It is not the quality. It is the composition.

The Chairman.—If you got the same ration or its proper equivalent, you would be properly fed?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—Do you think it would help the popularity of your battalion if it had a purely local name?

Witness.—At present we are known as the Burma Rifles; most people know it as such, but they do not know it as the Indian Territorial Force.

The Chairman.—Instead of being called the 11th/20th Burma Rifles, would you like to have the title of Burma Territorial Regiment?

Witness.—I think it would be quite satisfactory, because we are the second line to the regular army. That would be quite satisfactory.

The Chairman.—Have you any difficulty about recruiting in your battalion?

Witness.—The civil authorities do not give us enough assistance when boys desert and have to be brought back. They seem to think that is more or less a minor affair, and do not pay enough attention. I know of a particular case, in which some of our boys deserted and went back to their village. The headman of the village knew they were there, but he never assisted in getting them back.

The Chairman.—When I was over in Burma last year I investigated the local conditions of the Burmese battalions and tried, if possible, to learn something of the differences between the various races. Taking, for instance, a comparison between Karens and Burmans, the Officer Commanding the battalion, which I inspected, told me that Karens were particularly amenable to discipline. He said that the Burman, when he was out of his own country, was not very difficult to manage, but when he was in his own country, he had no use for discipline at all. If he wanted to take three days leave at the end of the week he did not see why he should not do so, and he mostly went.

Witness.—I am a Karen myself, and it would be rather wrong for me to say anything against any other race.

The Chairman.—It is not that you are saying any thing against any race, but what we want to find out is your actual experience. I did not know you were a Karen.

Witness.—The discipline is rather good, but, if we had a bit of assistance from the police side, to catch some of the boys who run away, it would be a help.

The Chairman.—You do not think the system of recruiting is good; can you suggest a better one?

Witness.—I would suggest that they ought to employ regular army officers for recruiting. At present they depend on the Adjutant, but he has more than his handful to do, and he depends on us to get recruits, and we cannot get enough men.

The Chairman.—We had considerable difficulty about the actual recruiting of Burmese soldiers for the Burma regiments, and I arranged, when I was there, that the recruiting officer and a regular military officer should visit the various districts in turn. Do you suggest when the recruiting officer is getting recruits for the regular army, he should also recruit for the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I think so.

The Chairman.—Do you get the same class of men in the Territorial Force as you have in the regular army?

Witness.—The class of boys who join the Territorial Force are usually men who do not want to join the regular army. They are quite satisfied with their civil work and they join more or less as a side show. They get quite a lot of fun out of it, and they know their responsibility that in case of war they have to serve.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Do you consider your present training of 28 days sufficient?

Witness.—I think so.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—With that training, how long would it be before they could take their place as reinforcements?

Witness.—The first year they have to do 56 days training and second year 28 days. I think the second year they would be quite fit to take their places in the ranks.

Dr. Hyder.—You said that the civil authorities did not help you. What would you think of forming district committees on which men of local influence would sit. Do you think that would be of any use to you?

Witness.—I do not think we need depend on the civil side, if we get the system we want on the military side. We do not want to depend on the civil people.

Dr. Hyder.—But surely without the help of the civil authorities, we know every little village in the district, your military people might not be able to do so much?

Witness.—Take for instance a township officer; he has a lot of work; he cannot pay attention to recruiting for us, even if he is asked to.

Dr. Hyder.—But if, in the districts, committees were formed of non-officials, men of influence who know their men, do you not think such committees would be better?

Witness.—If that could be done.

Captain Ajab Khan.—Have you served in the regular army.

Witness.—I served in the first reserve of a British regiment for a year and a half.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You said that after three months' training a man would be able to take his place in the ranks?

Witness.—In the regular army, I mean; they would be trained as regular soldiers are.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you know that a regular soldier gets eight months recruit's training and after that he gets advanced training?

Witness.—I did not know that; it took me only three months training to get ready to go to the war.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Those were exceptional times. You said that you were not satisfied with the commissions the officers hold. What sort of commissions would you like?

Witness.—In the regular army I understand an Honorary Lieutenant gets pay of four to five hundred rupees, whereas we get paid as Subedars.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would like to be called Honorary 2nd Lieutenant and be paid as such.

Witness.—Yes.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Do you think the officers get enough training?

Witness.—The officers have not enough training. The first year they asked us to go for six months' training to some regular battalion, and I told them I was ready to go. I was working as a journalist and I put another man in my place and went for six months' training. After I had finished my first month, I received a wire from Burma, saying that I was only allowed to go for one month.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would like to have more training for the officers?

Witness.—Officers should be given more training. I think they should be given three months' training.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—In excess of what they get?

Witness.—Every six years three months more.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Taking the condition of your battalion to-day, if there were a civil disturbance in your country, would you like to call out your men to quell it?

Witness.—I think they are quite capable of doing it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have they any difficulty in getting officers?

Witness.—I do not think they have much difficulty, because there seem to be lots of applications.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I am given to understand that the University Training Corps in Burma is a very go-ahead one. There is an officer who is very keen on enlarging it. Do you think it would be a good thing if this University Training Corps supplied officers to your Territorial battalion?

Witness.—Yes, I think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—But you do not find difficulty in obtaining officers now.

Witness.—You might get a better class from the college.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You were appointed an officer from the very beginning?

Witness.—As a platoon commander first.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Did you take part in the recruiting of your men?

Witness.—I got about 100 recruits from my district.

Dr. Paranjpye.—How did you recruit them; have you great influence?

Witness.—I have not great influence, but in the community I am well-known; I go on my father's reputation.

Dr. Paranjpye.—It has occasionally been proposed that men of influence should be made officers. Do you agree with that, simply if they are able to recruit a sufficient number of men?

Witness.—Not simply that; they must have education too.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You told us that you would like military officers to recruit the men for the Territorials. Now I suppose you understand that the idea underlying this Territorial Force is the creation of a national army. Don't you think that if the military officers had to do with the recruiting of Territorials, that would go against the principles of recruiting the Territorial Force?

Witness.—The reason why I wish military officers to do it is because they have the time to do it, whereas a civilian has his own job; he cannot go out into the districts.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The district Advisory Committees might help you to recruit?

Witness.—The district Advisory Committee would be good, but I do not know whether it would be successful.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Don't you think it would, on the whole, be advisable to keep Government departments, either the civil or the military, out of this recruiting and other matters in connection with it? Don't you think, in the recruiting,

management and everything in connection with these Territorial battalions, it would be well, as far as possible, not to give it an official air?

Witness.—I do not think it would be a success if you do that.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You think, if it were possible, it would be more desirable?

Witness.—If it were possible.

Dr. Paranjpye.—It has been suggested to us, so far as India is concerned, that the Force would be more popular, and you would be able to preserve discipline and make the whole organisation more efficient, if the men were given a retaining fee.

Witness.—I think they should be given a retaining fee.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Would that make absenteeism much less?

Witness.—At present absenteeism is not so very bad. In my company, out of 200, there have only been about 25 or 30 absentees during the two years.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—There were 140 in the whole battalion?

Witness.—I do not know the exact figure; in my company there were only about 30.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Do you think you would be able to trace these men?

Witness.—It depends on the postal authorities. There is no communication with the places where some of these boys live.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—A retaining fee would be very useful in making the force more popular?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You are aware that there is a general liability to serve, in the Territorial Force, outside the limits of India and Burma? Your men are aware of this liability?

Witness.—The men are all told that before they are sworn in.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Has the existence of this liability had a deterrent effect on recruitment?

Witness.—They do not mind it at all.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Do you think you could raise more Territorial Force battalions in your province?

Witness.—If we have a proper recruiting staff.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Is there any desire among the Burmans for training in other arms of the army besides the infantry?

Witness.—They cannot do the other jobs; infantry is best for them and they like it.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you find that the people in Burma like this Territorial movement?

Witness.—The Karens do.

Dr. Mullick.—Taking Burma as a whole?

Witness.—I could not say anything about that; but the majority of the Karens are keen on it.

Dr. Mullick.—Do you find that the military get aid from the civil population for recruitment?

Witness.—They have been getting it.

Dr. Mullick.—So that if there were properly constituted Advisory Boards or Committees in the Karen districts, would they be of use to you as an officer of the corps?

Witness.—I think they would.

Dr. Mullick.—And you would not be entirely dependent upon the military authorities for recruitment?

Witness.—No; we should not.

Dr. Mullick.—It would thus be possible to keep the men who join the Territorial Force distinct from the men who would be required for the regular force. You would not take away the chance of the recruiting officer of the regular force

getting his quota of men? Can you get men for your Territorial Force, in addition to the men for the regular force?

Witness.—I think we can.

Dr. Mullick.—You would not take away from the supply for the regular army for your Territorial Force?

Witness.—No; the boys who join the Territorial Force know something about the regular army and they know the differences between the two forces; they join because they want to be in the Territorial Force.

Dr. Mullick.—They would not go into the regular army?

Witness.—They would not.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Those who are left over, because there are no vacancies, would join this movement?

Witness.—No; the regulars would not join the Territorial Force.

Dr. Mullick.—And *vice versa*?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—You say that the civil authorities do not give you sufficient help in tracing deserters; this difficulty has arisen in other provinces. I put it to you, don't you think that in the early part of a movement like this, it would be desirable to go slow a bit? Supposing a man did desert; unless there were other reasons, you would rather not take any action—I do not say always—but as the movement progressed there would be less and less necessity for it?

Witness.—You must have discipline.

Dr. Mullick.—You think you could raise another battalion?

Witness.—I think you could easily, if you had a proper staff for recruiting.

Dr. Mullick.—You have sufficient enthusiasm?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—But I see you are about a hundred short?

Witness.—They could be easily filled up.

Dr. Mullick.—Can you tell me why they have not been filled up?

Witness.—Because we have not had a proper recruiting staff; we have our own work to attend to, as well as recruiting.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that an expansion of the Territorial Force in Burma at present is necessary?

Witness.—In Burma I think it is necessary.

Mr. Burdon.—For what reason?

Witness.—There are lots of political agitators at present; and in case of emergency we may need the force.

Mr. Burdon.—You think the influence of the Territorial Force upon its members is good?

Witness.—I think so.

Mr. Burdon.—And you would recommend an extension?

Witness.—Yes, I would.

Mr. Burdon.—You know that at present the Territorial Force has got a liability to be called out in aid of the civil power to quell civil disturbances; do you think that, in actual fact, your Territorial Force battalion could discharge this obligation efficiently?

Witness.—I think so.

Mr. Burdon.—They would not mind it?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—But there is of course this difficulty, that civil disturbances generally arise suddenly and unexpectedly and there would be some difficulty in getting the men?

Witness.—I do not think that there would be much difficulty in getting the men.

Mr. Burdon.—Are your men widely scattered? How long would it take to get them in?

Witness.—About a month.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—But a portion of the force may be kept in a big town like Rangoon, where a riot may take place?

Witness.—The Burmese are mostly in towns, but the Karens are cultivators and they are up in districts some distance away.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Supposing that a riot took place at Mandalay; could you get any number of Territorials together at once?

Witness.—As I say, it would take about a month.

Mr. Burdon.—I think you said that you would recommend more training for officers. What kind of training?

Witness.—Special officers' training.

Mr. Burdon.—Attachment to a regular unit, if possible?

Witness.—Either that or a special course for officers at one place.

Mr. Burdon.—How long do you think it would take before your battalion would be capable of moving out as a reinforcement, on mobilisation, as a unit with its own Burman or Karen commanding officer, second in command and company commanders?

Witness.—At present the officers have not got the proper training.

Mr. Burdon.—How long do you think it would take to get a Karen Commanding Officer, second in command and company commanders?

Witness.—It would take a long time; at least six years or so even for a company commander.

Mr. Burdon.—And for the second in command it would take a further corresponding period?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Is the Territorial movement favoured by political leaders in Burma?

Witness.—Yes; some of the people belonging to the Y. M. B. A., which is really an anti-government society, recruited for us.

Mr. Burdon.—They see it is a good show?

Witness.—Yes.

Examination of Kanwar Ganpati Singh of Karwa.

15th November, 1924.

The Chairman.—Will you kindly tell us the standpoint from which you are going to give your evidence? I understand you do not belong to the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I do not.

The Chairman.—Are you very interested in it?

Witness.—I am.

The Chairman.—Have you done anything for it?

Witness.—Last year Col. Freeland came to Ajmer and, through the Commissioner, invited all the Istamridars of Ajmer-Merwara to meet him in conference and see if we could join the Territorial Force as platoon commanders and if we could bring for them men from our own estates.

The Chairman.—What are the men on your estates?

Witness.—Rajputs, Jats and others.

The Chairman.—Do they join the Territorial Force willingly?

Witness.—They would, although they have not joined so far from our estates.

The Chairman.—I suppose you would yourself join the Territorial Force as an officer, when you get a large following from your estate?

Witness.—I hope to be able to get at least a platoon.

The Chairman.—What battalion are you particularly interested in?

Witness.—The 11/4th Bombay Grenadiers.

The Chairman.—Is it the case with that battalion that the recruiting depends on the personal influence of the leaders?

Witness.—No, not entirely; there are two sections in those parts; one part belongs to the Istamridars, who are something like the Taluqdars of the United Provinces; the other portion is directly under the government and is called the Khalsa; so far they have been recruiting from the Khalsa and also occasionally from the Istamridar estates; but, as they wanted more platoons, we were asked to see Col. Freeland in a conference and make up our minds to join as platoon commanders.

The Chairman.—Are you going to join the Territorial Force yourself?

Witness.—No, not under the present conditions. Because there are dual commissions, and it is a very unsatisfactory arrangement, so far as we are concerned. We are Rajputs and Thakurs, and we claim to have the loftiest martial traditions in the world. As there is a racial distinction observed in the two forces, we are not prepared to join, unless we are given equal status and powers of command, with the officers of the Auxiliary Force.

The Chairman.—If you were to go into the regular army, would you claim the right to go into the British army? That is to say, if you were going to be a regular officer of the regular army, would you claim the right to join the actual British forces in India?

Witness.—I would not necessarily stick to the British forces.

The Chairman.—Why should you claim the right to join the Auxiliary Force, which is purely a British Force in India?

Witness.—Because both the Territorial Force as well as the Auxiliary Force are non-regular. In one force we can get actual commissions as Jemadars and Subedars only, while in the case of the Auxiliary Force they get commissioned ranks like 2nd-Lieut., Lieutenant and Captain. That is the sort of feeling that is prevalent. Now I go to other military stations, like Nasirabad, which is very close to my place, and I get equal treatment from the officers there. I mix with them and go to their club, but I notice that the Jemadars and Subedars are treated very differently. They are not considered as the equals of the officers, and, though I consider these Jemadars and Subedars as my equals, when I see them being treated as unequals by the other officers, I naturally do not like to lower myself in the estimation of those officers by treating these Jemadars and Subedars as my equals.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Your desire is to raise a unit of your own and you think you can?

Witness.—We can, but we did not express the intention ourselves. We were asked to do so, and we are prepared to do it now.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—They would accept full liability and go overseas?

Witness.—Do you mean as in the Territorial Force at present? They would certainly accept.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—I take it that your objection to this inequality is purely for the officers and not for the men?

Witness.—Not for the men, because for them the treatment would be equal to the regular Indian army. But there are two things; the pay of the men in the Territorial Force is the same as the pay of the men in the regular Indian army, whereas the pay of the officers in the Territorial Force is the same from one point of view, so far as Subedars and Jemadars. But as far as their honorary ranks are concerned, there is no pay, nor have they any status or powers of command.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—Is it a question of pay or is it a case of social equality?

Witness.—It is a question of social equality above everything else. Pay, too, is a consideration, because if others are going to be paid more, I also ought to get more pay.

Dr. Hyder.—It is on account of the dual commissions that you would not like to join the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I should certainly not like to join it, as long as the dual commissions exist.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—What would you like the officer in the Territorial Force to be?

Witness.—Exactly the same as in the Auxiliary Force.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You know that the Territorial Force is a second line to the regular Indian army, and you know the organization of the Indian army?

Witness.—I know it to a certain extent, I don't know much about it. If you ask me any technical question I may not be able to answer it, but I can answer on broad lines.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—You would like commissions with equal status and equal power of command?

Witness.—Yes, as in the Auxiliary Force.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Would you like to recruit officers direct, or to promote them from the ranks as well?

Witness.—If officers are fit to be promoted from the ranks, I should have no objection, but, as matters stand at present, you cannot expect educated Indians to come forward and join as privates in the Territorial Force. If you throw open the Auxiliary Force to Indians, there are lots of lawyers and other highly educated people who will readily and willingly join it simply for patriotic reasons, and not for reasons of pay. In that case you can very well choose from the ranks those men whom you consider fit. But in the case of the Territorial Force, as it stands at present, it will not be practicable, I think, to promote officers from the ranks except in very special cases, and even that I doubt.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—What is the reason that the educated people will not join the Territorial ranks?

Witness.—That is because of the differential treatment.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—It is only for the officers and not for the men?

Witness.—They talk of the Auxiliary Force, and the men also feel the differential treatment.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—What qualifications would you fix for the Territorial officers? The same as in the regular army?

Witness.—As the force is considered less efficient, a little lower qualification should be enough.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have you ever seen your Territorial battalion on parade?

Witness.—Yes, I have seen it at training once.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Have you seen an Auxiliary Force battalion?

Witness.—Yes, at Ajmer.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You have seen them in camp?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Were you particularly struck with the difference between these two forces?

Witness.—I can't say that I was particularly, but I have been reading about it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—So you have only book knowledge?

Witness.—Yes. I have been reading not only newspapers, but also the Territorial Force and the Auxiliary Force Acts.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Is the opinion that you are giving shared by all the Zemindars?

Witness.—I have not been sent up here as their representative, but I think I represent their views. We consulted together last year and we were all of the same opinion. We decided not to join the army until these distinctions were removed.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You are aware that the Territorial Force is a second line to the regular Indian army, and that in a time of emergency, you would have to take either the front line or the second line as the case might be, and in order to be able to take that place in time of emergency, you must have a constitution similar to that which obtains in the regular army, or else you would have a great deal of confusion?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—How would you associate your desire to take the same ranks as in the Auxiliary Force and yet belong to the Territorial Force and be a second line of defence? You would be placed in an anomalous position. Some of your officers might be senior to the corresponding officers in the first line. How would you adjust that?

Witness.—Just as it is done in the English Territorial Forces. At present you make me an actual Jemadar or an Honorary Second Lieut. and after some years you make me an actual Subedar and an Honorary Lieut., and later on you make me an Honorary Capt. and so on.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Supposing that we have granted what you want, how are you going to assimilate the composition of your second line battalion to that of the first line, when they are associated on active service? Some of your junior officers will be senior to regular officers of corresponding grade? Who would be your Jemadars and Subedars?

Witness.—Of course, the Subedars of the Territorial Force must be junior to the Subedars of the regular forces.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—That is to say, you would be in an anomalous position?

Witness.—Of course, it is a second line, I admit that, but what about the Honorary Capt. of the Territorial Force?

Mr. Burdon.—Do you understand what the composition of the regular Indian army is?

Witness.—No.

Mr. Burdon.—There are 12 officers in an infantry battalion with Royal Commissions and 20 Indian officers of the rank of Jemadar, Subedar and Subedar-Major, as the case may be. There are 12 officers with British commissions and British ranks and titles, and the rest are Indian officers with Indian ranks. Now do you contemplate that in the Territorial Force there should be exactly the same composition of officers, *i.e.*, that in the Territorial Force you should have 12 officers with British commissions and designations and 20 Indian officers with Indian titles and Indian designations like Jemadar, Subedar, and so forth?

Witness.—I am not at all in favour of the titles of Jemadar and Subedar. But as it brings in the question of the regular army, I think I cannot say much about that.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—But what I want to get at is this. Mr. Burdon has told you the position of the regular army. As you are the second line of defence would not you like to dovetail in with the regular battalion in time of emergency, with your officers taking their regulation position, or do you all want to have the King's Commission?

Witness.—Yes, certainly, we want King's Commissions.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You want the platoon commander to have a King's Commission, although the platoon commander in the regular army is a Jemadar? You see the position? It will create a difference between your regiment and your regular battalion.

Witness.—I know a little about it. But I think the 2nd-Lieut. also does the same duty in the British Army.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—We are not thinking about the British Army, but the Indian Army. Now, supposing the Committee conserted to give the officers in the Territorial Force King's Commissions, would you be quite happy then? Would you join?

Witness.—If they gave King's Commissions, I would join.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Whether it was called the Auxiliary Force or the Territorial Force?

Witness.—There are some other objections, but I would join. I would claim something more again.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—But I have induced you to join with the King's Commission. What other inducement would you like to have?

Witness.—The same facilities as the Auxiliary Force. A machine gun corps and a cavalry regiment.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—If you had a cavalry regiment, you would like to join it? Well, having induced you to join it with one arm, would you like to call yourselves the Indian Territorial Force or the Indian Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—So far as I am personally concerned, I don't mind being called anything in that way—because I prefer to go to the front, outside India. But there are other fellows like me who cannot afford to leave their places and go out of India. They would like the Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then, in other words, you would like to have part of your battalion with a limited liability?

Witness.—I would like to have a part of the Auxiliary Force open to Indians.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you like to have a part of your force in your country open to the Europeans and Anglo-Indians? Supposing that they gave you a force, would you like to open that to Europeans and Anglo-Indians?

Witness.—Certainly.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You wouldn't mind if a platoon of Europeans came into your Force?

Witness.—Except for practical difficulties, which would be for the military authorities to consider.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Supposing that there were equally practical reasons for not throwing open the Auxiliary Force to Indians, you would respect them? If the military authorities respected your practical reasons, you would not object to the military authorities respecting the practical reasons of the Auxiliary Force, as it exists at present?

Witness.—If they were absolutely practical reasons, everybody would have to consider them.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you accept the military authorities' opinion on that? Would you accept that as being practical? Supposing that the military authorities were to say to-day that it is not practical to throw open the Auxiliary Force to Indians?

Witness.—If they said only this much, I would not accept it. If the military authorities step in and say it is not practical to have the Auxiliary Force open to Indians, I am not prepared to accept that, without their giving us certain reasons. But for ordinary matters, I mean messing and leave and pay, these of course I dont' know much about, and necessarily I cannot force my views about that.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Do you insist on the pay, too, of the officers?

Witness.—Certainly, the pay ought to be the same as in the Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would that induce you to join? Would it induce most of your friends in your district to join?

Witness.—The question of money going into my pocket would not affect me. But the question of the difference, the feeling that that difference existed would, to my mind, prevent people from joining, if there was any difference in pay.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you accept admission into the Auxiliary Force with limited liability?

Witness.—Here again, I would say that personally I am free. My father is there; he does the work and I can go away anywhere and do what I like. So it is my duty to join the Territorial Force rather than the Auxiliary Force. But there are other Istamridars who are sole proprietors, and who cannot leave their estates for long. I think they would prefer to join the Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then of what military value would they be to the second line of defence? Your intention is to help the Government to create a national army. Your value would be nil except for quelling disturbances.

Witness.—I don't think you would call the value of the Auxiliary Force nil.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Comparatively. It is something different. The one liability is limited and the other is general. You would not like to have your liability limited, would you?

Witness.—I don't say so personally, but I have heard people say, and some of us might say, that the Auxiliary Force has not been made open to Indians, simply because some day Government might not trust us and, in the event of war, might send the Indians to the front and keep the Europeans and Anglo-Indians to guard India, because they did not trust the Indians.

The Chairman.—That is a purely hypothetical supposition.

Mr. Calvert.—I suppose you are aware that we have in the Punjab large sections of Rajputs called Dogras.

Witness.—Yes, I have heard the name.

Mr. Calvert.—Now there is a Dogra Territorial battalion also. But the difficulty has not arisen there of the Rajputs being called Subedars and Jemadars.

Witness.—I could not tell you about the Punjab. I come from the Ajmer district.

Mr. Calvert.—Would not you rather agree that your objection is not so much to your being a Rajput as that you are an Istamridar?

Witness.—Personally, I should say, if I am unfit for anything, don't give me anything; turn me out at once.

Mr. Calvert.—Could you tell us whether there are any of this Istamridar class in the regular army?

Witness.—No, there could not be. There are no regular King's Commissions open to Indians.

Mr. Calvert.—They did not take regular commissions in the Indian army?

Witness.—They were not open to them.

Mr. Calvert.—As far as you know, are people in the Khalsa villages joining the Territorials?

Witness.—Yes, they are joining.

Mr. Calvert.—Is it correct to say that there is some little lack of good feeling between the Istamridar and the cultivators?

Witness.—None whatever. It is not like in the U. P. We have got co-operative societies in the villages too.

Mr. Calvert.—Now, supposing that you were given a commission in the B. E and C. I. battalion at Ajmer. Might not you find there some of your fellow officers whose social position was not quite equal to yours, and not as high as you would like?

Witness.—I would not raise any objection to that.

Mr. Calvert.—Your main criterion is social position.

Witness.—My main criterion is the social position with capabilities. I am not going to say that, even if I am not efficient, my social position should raise me to a very high standard. I am not going to claim that.

Mr. Calvert.—Do you claim that social position should give you precedence in military rank?

Witness.—No, it should not.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Apparently you have a very lively objection to being treated differently from the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—That is really so.

Mr. Burdon.—I rather gather, from what you have said in answer to previous questions, that you do not object to the liability for service imposed on the Territorial Force.

Witness.—No, I don't object to the liability for service.

Mr. Burdon.—I also gather that you don't object to the system of training?

Witness.—I have not said anything about the system of training.

Mr. Burdon.—Will you let me know now if you have any objection to the system of training in the Territorial Force? That is to say, going to the annual camp for 28 days, being embodied and being trained at the headquarters of the regular battalion, to which the Territorial battalion is affiliated, one month in every year.

Witness.—No, I don't object to that.

Mr. Burdon.—You don't object to the liability or to the system of training. But what you do object to, in particular, is the dual commission.

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—And you object to the officers who have got an honorary royal commission not getting appropriate rates of pay.

Witness.—Yes, I object to that too.

Mr. Burdon.—What it really amounts to is that, if a single commission with a British rank and appropriate corresponding rates of pay were introduced into the Territorial Force, you would have no objection to the Territorial Force at all?

Witness.—Well, even then, it would be somewhat different to the Auxiliary Force.

Mr. Burdon.—But you said you did not object to the liability, and you did not object to the system of training—these are the essential differences of the Auxiliary Force, and that is why I asked you.

Witness.—These are something more than the Auxiliary Force. But there are other aspects of the question which are less than the Auxiliary Force. So I object to everything less and not to anything more.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not object to the liability, and you do not object to the training. You object to the dual commission, but if a commission with proper rank and pay were given, that would meet your objection?

Witness.—What rank?

Mr. Burdon.—British rank.

Witness.—British officer's rank as in the Auxiliary Force?

Mr. Burdon.—Well, let us say, British rank something corresponding to what is given in the regular army,—as in the regular Indian army for British officers.

Witness.—Yes, that would be all right.

Mr. Burdon.—Then most of your objections to the Territorial Force, as such, would disappear?

Witness.—No, still there will be difference between the Auxiliary Force and the Territorial Force, and that is what I object to most.

Mr. Burdon.—Then what further changes would you recommend in the Territorial Force?

Witness.—Make it equal to the Auxiliary Force.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, reduce the liability and also the training.

Witness.—No, throw open a section of the Auxiliary Force to Indians.

Mr. Burdon.—That is to say, you don't want to belong to the Territorial Force, as such. You want to leave it.

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not want to abolish the Territorial Force, as such.

Witness.—I do not want that.

Mr. Burdon.—Supposing that all these defects were remedied, whom would you admit to the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—All educated Indians who can read and write English.

Mr. Burdon.—You want them to be made eligible without any qualification?

Witness.—Of course qualifications must come in.

Mr. Burdon.—Without any reservation?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You do not think that an educated Indian would mind the private soldier in the Auxiliary Force, drawing the British soldier's rations and having the same privileges as a British soldier?

Witness.—That would be something more than what the Indian now gets. So there would be no objection.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think there would be any objection on the part of Indians to live with the British soldier, sleep with him, mess with him?

Witness.—As regards messing, if you have separate battalions of British soldiers and Indian soldiers, that would be all right.

Mr. Burdon.—You would not recommend living together, sleeping together, eating together?

Witness.—As regards eating together some of them may have some objection. I have personally no objection at all. I eat with Europeans. Others may have their religious feelings. As regards sleeping, I do not think there would be any objection. As regards rations, they might contain beef. Some might object to that.

Mr. Burdon.—On the whole, it would be preferable to have separate battalions?

Witness.—That would be much preferable.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it would be suitable that the Territorial Force, quite apart from the separate Indian battalions which you suggest, should be liable to be called out to suppress riots and to quell civil disturbances?

Witness.—They should do all the duties which the Auxiliary Force is asked to do. They ought to be called in.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think it would be suitable?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—Are you aware that it is an accepted military doctrine that for the suppression of civil disorder only the steadiest and best trained troops should be employed.

Witness.—I accept that.

Mr. Burdon.—Do you think that the non-regular forces, which do not receive continued training, could fulfil the condition which I have sugested.

Witness.—Would you include the Auxiliary Forces in the non-regular forces? If the Auxiliary Force are not called out, the Indian Auxiliary Force ought also not to be called out. But if the other Auxiliary Force is called out, I think there ought to be no objection to the Indian Auxiliary Force also being called out.

Mr. Burdon.—Then you would decide it simply on what the Auxiliary Force does, without any reference whatsoever to the particular merits or difficulties of the matter?

Witness.—Then do you say that the European section of the Auxiliary Force would be better trained than the Indian section?

Mr. Burdon.—Yes, because the Auxiliary Force consists of a very considerable number of ex-soldiers and people who have had training from their youth up, and who have had intensive training at different periods of life and in different places?

Witness.—You will find some Indians of the same kind joining the Auxiliary Force. If they are given proper training, I do not think the Indian section will be at all inferior in training and efficiency to the European section.

Mr. Burdon.—You think it will be capable of suppressing civil disorder?

Witness.—If the European section of the Auxiliary Force is capable then I think the Indian section also will be capable.

Examination of Mr. C. D. M. Hindley, Chief Commissioner of Railways.

15th November 1924.

The Chairman.—In addition to your present high office as Chief Commissioner of Railways, I understand that you have also actually commanded a railway unit?

Witness.—I have. I commanded the East Indian Railway Regiment for two or three years before I left the E. I. Ry. I have been a Volunteer officer, I think, 30 years this month. Before that I was for four or five years a cadet and also a private in a Volunteer regiment at home. I have been practically through all ranks of the force and I claim to know something, from personal contact, of the railway corps particularly.

The Chairman.—The reason, why I asked you to be good enough to spare the time to come and appear before the Committee, was that we particularly wanted your views as regards the actual employment of railway personnel from a military point of view? If you will give us your ideas about that, I shall be grateful.

Witness.—I should like to make it clear that what I am saying now is based on my experience as a Volunteer officer, and not as coming from me in my official position as Chief Commissioner of Railways. I should like to make that distinction. I am of the opinion that the railway corps should be organised rather more on a technical basis than it is at present. The old tradition of a railway corps was that it was organised as an infantry battalion. For very many years, very little else was done except infantry drill and work of that kind. We have in recent years made some attempt to organise more on a technical basis, but my idea would be to take a big step in that direction, and to organise these Auxiliary Force corps on the lines of transportation companies and field engineering companies; that is to say, they would be trained in ordinary times to do the actual work that they would be required to do, when they were embodied or mobilised.

The Chairman.—This idea of yours has been based on the fact that on mobilisation your railway personnel would be required for their actual railway duties?

Witness.—That is so. There has been a good deal of confusion of ideas, I think, about this in the past and Railway Corps have been looked upon as potentially a force which could undertake a fairly large portion of the internal security work. In actual practice, in times of disturbance or commotion, the personnel of each corps are necessarily occupied in the work of keeping open communications. That is to say, the traffic men have to look after the running of the trains, the loco men to look after the engines, the permanent way men to look after the track, and it would be almost impossible, in the case of widespread disturbance, to collect any reasonable force to do any work, apart from the primary work of keeping communications open. That was the basis of my idea.

The Chairman.—But they should have sufficient training to be able to defend themselves if necessary?

Witness.—That is, of course, essential, because there might be occasions when they could not look for any other support, but the essential point, I think, would be to enable them to carry out, under mobilisation, the essential work for which they have been trained in normal times,—of keeping open communications and running trains.

The Chairman.—Therefore their proper function is really that of an engineer corps?

Witness.—Yes. I think that is really one of the most important things to begin with. I pressed this point specially when the question of reforming the Auxiliary Force came up, at the time when the Indian Defence Force was being abolished. I pressed strongly, at a conference we had in Calcutta, that railway corps should be considered to be engineer corps, with Adjutants from the Royal Engineers. The idea was apparently accepted at the time, but I suppose there have been difficulties in carrying it out, particularly in matters of personnel and so on.

The Chairman.—From your experience, you strongly recommend it?

Witness.—I strongly recommend it.

The Chairman.—Then of course the personnel on the railways consists of Europeans and of Indians. Under your scheme, how would you propose to use them?

Witness.—I have thought over this a long time and my solution of that problem would be to organise units of the Territorial Force on railways, closely allied with the Auxiliary Force, to carry out practically the same kind of training, and to co-ordinate it with the work of the Auxiliary Force, so that the two could combine in the defence of the railway and keep communications open.

The Chairman.—That is to say, you would have on your railways a portion of the Auxiliary Force and a portion of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—That would be my idea.

The Chairman.—Would your numbers be sufficient to form a special unit of the Territorial Force.

Witness.—I think it is a thing that would have to be started experimentally in the first instance, because there may be practical difficulties about the recruitment and training of the necessary numbers, with which I may not be actually in touch. I should like to see a definite experiment made on some of the larger railways, of forming small units officered by Indian railway officers and manned by the Indian personnel, to be trained in the same duties of engineering, maintenance and transportation work, so that they could take their place alongside the Auxiliary Force, when occasion arises.

The Chairman.—They would, necessarily, have to have an entirely different and special form of training from the ordinary Territorial Force.

Witness.—Yes, entirely different; just as different as the special railway training that I propose for the railway Auxiliary Force, and I think there would be very little difficulty in carrying out that training, very often simultaneously, with the Auxiliary Force. On the East Indian Railway there are arrangements for annual training, which have been brought to a rather high pitch of perfection. They have a standing camp for practically the whole of the cold weather. For some months in the cold weather all the railway staff in the Auxiliary Force have to pass through this camp, and there would be many opportunities in a camp like that for associating the Indian Territorial railway force with the Auxiliary Force in the training, both in drill and musketry, as well in their technical work.

Mr. Burdon.—You contemplate that individual members of your railway corps would, on mobilisation, have to remain in their peace appointments?

Witness.—I think that that would require some adjustment probably, and a scheme would have to be worked out.

Mr. Burdon.—If they are merely going to remain in their individual peace appointments, I do not see how they can work as a unit or corps. Would they not also be completely immobile, if they remained in their individual appointments? You could not move your corps from Asansol to Rawalpindi.

Witness.—It would be possible, I imagine, to squeeze out a certain number of men in a time of serious trouble. The Railways would have to do as other employers—spare the men. People would have to take double duty, in order to release a certain number of men. So far as the railway Auxiliary Force is concerned now, it is more or less organised on the assumption that the units would not be transferred from place to place.

The Chairman.—I should like to be clear on this point too. I understood, from the evidence which you have been good enough to give this Committee, that the whole purpose of your training was to make the personnel of your units as efficient as you possibly could for the purposes of keeping the railways open and that, far from any question of employing them as a unit or sub-unit elsewhere, the training would, to all intents and purposes, be for the improvement of communications?

Witness.—That is the idea certainly, to train them as technical troops.

The Chairman.—I gather that, at present, you consider the present organisation of the railway corps into infantry battalions a waste of good material?

Witness.—Yes.

The Chairman.—And you consider that if they were trained purely and simply as technical troops, they would be of much more value in time of trouble than they could possibly be otherwise?

Witness.—Yes. It is a little difficult to generalise, because local conditions in different parts really vary. For instance, take a large workshop centre, where you can possibly get together a force of 200 or 300 men in the Auxiliary Force. It might be possible, in case of dire necessity, to move away some of those people for local defence work. If you shut down your workshop, it is not very serious for a period. You could then make some of your force mobile. But it could not be done for very long. The workshop is an essential part of a railway system. Therefore, it must be kept open by every possible means. I should deprecate very strongly taking away any of those people, except to work in their own area.

Mr. Burdon.—On the other hand the arrangement, which you have in mind, would include the possibility of organising these individuals, highly trained in peace, into a form of railway unit to move within certain limits?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—You would contemplate that?

Witness.—Yes, but I would not like to see them rushed off from Bengal to Peshawar, to do some railway work on the frontier.

Mr. Burdon.—Anyhow your arrangement would contemplate a possibility of this, of individuals trained in peace being organised as a unit?

Witness.—Exactly so.

Mr. Burdon.—And being mobile under an emergency?

Witness.—To a limited extent.

The Chairman.—As I understand it, your idea is this, that, if a special force is trained, it should primarily increase the value of railway staff on mobilisation to the highest possible limit, and the majority of these people would be employed on their technical duties on mobilisation. Their training would be such that, if it was a question of dire necessity, some individuals could be collected for purposes of defence. But it would be unfair to employ them on guarding the railways, guarding bridges, guarding important portions of the lines or guarding stations. You really want to make the railway men as efficient as possible, under the difficult circumstances of a civil disturbance, in the actual running of the railways, leaving the actual guarding of the railway to other people?

Witness.—That is my idea. It is more or less forced by practical considerations.

The Chairman.—It is exactly the same in regard to the regular army. We keep our technical troops away from the actual firing line as much as possible. We have the ordinary troops to do the fighting.

Lt.-Col. Llewhellin.—You talked about working the Territorial units and the Auxiliary units side by side, as much as possible. I do not think you mean to open the Auxiliary units to anybody except those at present admitted?

Witness.—No. That was my idea certainly. I had in mind, if I may just carry on that idea, the fact that we now have—and have an increasing number—of Indian officers on the railways, men who are extremely able in every way in their work, and I have an idea that they feel amongst themselves that they would like some opportunity of assisting in this work of technical training for defence. The idea I put forward was that some opportunity should be given to them of having Indian units enrolled, which they could officer. The actual training, as I said just now, could be done, probably, by the same permanent staff as attend to the Auxiliary Force training, and in very much the same way. That was my idea.

Dr. Hyder.—I entirely approve of this idea. My difficulty is this. You could not split your system. Your corps must be an organisation. If it is to be purely technical, you could not split it into two parts, for then it would not remain an organisation. That is a difficulty that I feel.

Witness.—I think, if I may say so, it is rather a theoretical difficulty. It is not a practical difficulty.

Dr. Hyder.—You have got, for instance, capable Indians now working as A. T. S. or Executive Engineers. I am speaking purely from the railway point of view. If these men were embodied in a Territorial unit and others in an Auxiliary unit, who is going to direct and supervise the whole?

Witness.—The suggestion was, of course, merely a beginning. It is very difficult to work out in one's mind how it might eventually develop. My practical suggestion is that it should be tried by small units at the big centres, where it is possible. It must be quite obvious that to attempt to enrol a very large number of Indians from the ordinary railway staff now would result in immediate failure. The class of man who is employed in unskilled work and the lower skilled labourers have no conception of the ideal at all; it is entirely new to them. Therefore, it would be impossible to look forward to any immediate large enrolment. My idea was that, in some of the large centres, the workshop centres and some of the big traffic centres, it would be possible to start with a small unit, say a platoon here and a platoon there, perhaps two companies in all on one big railway system, purely as a start; and then, if you have, say, a large railway workshop station where you have already one or two companies of Auxiliary Force, if you start with one or two platoons of Indians, such as could be enrolled now, you would have a unit which could work quite easily alongside the company of the Auxiliary Force. The railway corps never acts together as a whole. It never comes out on to the parade ground as a battalion, or very rarely does. It may be that on some special ceremonial occasion people are brought in from outlying stations for a short time. They are working in small units all over the country side; a platoon here and a platoon there. At the bigger workshop and traffic centres there are larger possibilities and these centres, I suggest, should raise small units of Indians, to be trained technically under British or Indian officers. That was my idea. The organisation as a corps is very largely on paper. The actual work is local and done by small units.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—There are some Indians who work over the heads of Europeans, such as Executive Engineers. Will you send them to different camps? Will you send Indians to the Indian portion or will you amalgamate the Territorial portion with the Auxiliary? Where will you class Executive Engineers and Assistant Traffic Superintendents?

Witness.—I should give them commissions in the Territorial Force. My idea would be that they would be officers in the Territorial Force.

Capt. Ajab Khan.—Some commissions in the Indian Territorial Force are honorary, and are not on the same level as the Auxiliary Force. There a man will be working over the head of another man. There will be a distinct difference between his position and status and that of his subordinate.

Witness.—I should be inclined to leave that to take care of itself in the future, because, as I said just now, we can begin on small beginnings. I think that difficulty would solve itself in time.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You just said that you could not get men together. Have you found it difficult to get a large body of men together? In the old Volunteer days you remember there were 6 or 7 railway battalions and sometimes 2 or 3 battalions in Calcutta.

Witness.—In those days nobody had anything to do. I very well remember that we got together a battalion in Calcutta, of 400 or 500, from the E. I. R. on one occasion. You could for a short time, say 24 hours or so, take men away from their duties. It could not be done for a long time. It could be done on special occasions. I do not think more than 200 or 300 men ever get together now at the E. I. R. camp, at one time.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I asked a similar question of one of the witnesses as to the possibility of raising a sapper company in each railway battalion and attaching it to the battalion, the officers being Indian, European and Anglo-Indian, but he was against it. In making your railway battalions special battalions, would you take the whole battalion and make it a special unit for duties such as local traffic control, transportation, etc.?

Witness.—I think so.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You may not be aware that the total strength of the Auxiliary Force is 33,000 and the total railway strength is 14,649. If you deprived the Auxiliary Force of a little less than half their number, do you think you would affect the force?

The Chairman.—There has been a ruling on that point. It is recognised from the military point of view that, whatever personnel you have on railways, you must leave to the railways. I am not, of course, discussing times of emergency, where, owing to a breach of the line they should collect some of their forces—that is a special case. But the general principle laid down in the Army is that the railway portion of the Auxiliary Force is to be left alone.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—That leads up to my other question. If you did specialise the whole battalion, say in the E. I. R., how would you get protection for your railway in time of attack?

Witness.—As I said in the beginning, these men would also be trained in defence duties, as part of their work.

The Chairman.—If in time of trouble you were travelling for instance from Bombay to Peshawar, we would make such arrangements that you would travel in safety.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—In what force would you enlist this special engineering corps? Would you consider it part and parcel of the Auxiliary Force under the same terms and liability, or would you prefer that it should be part of the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I started from the idea that the Auxiliary Force would remain as it is and these additional units would be enrolled in the Territorial Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—It would be a special corps of the Indian Territorial Force?

Witness.—We might call the one the Indian Railway Territorial Force, and I would like to call the other the Indian Railway Auxiliary Force.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And this engineering corps you were suggesting, you would confine it entirely to Indians?

Witness.—My point is that the present Auxiliary Force should be trained and put on a technical basis, and should have associated with them certain units of the Indian Railway Territorial Force on the same lines.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then it would really be a blending of the two forces, the Territorial and Auxiliary Forces?

Witness.—I do not see why you should use the word "blending." They would be enrolled separately, and they would be trained, as far as possible, together.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—You would recruit this engineering corps from the traffic department?

Witness.—I am not talking of any engineering corps; I am talking of training the whole railway Auxiliary Force on a special basis.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—But I am talking of the special Indian section you were going to train.

Witness.—I imagine they could be trained partly as transportation people and partly as engineer companies.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Then you would have both the Anglo-Indians and the Indians trained for similar duties?

Witness.—Yes.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you make it a term of service? When an Indian comes into the railway, would you ask him to serve in any force?

Witness.—No; I understand the Territorial Force is purely voluntary.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—And the Auxiliary Force is too. When an Anglo-Indian comes into a railway, do all railways insist on his enlisting in the Auxiliary Force?

Witness.—I do not think they do; I think the practice is different in different parts of the country.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Not that I am decrying it, but let me inform you that I have applied to all railways, and every Agent, that I have written to, said it was a *sine qua non*. Practically, it means that it is conscription.

Witness.—I am not in a position to answer categorically; I have not the facts.

The Chairman.—If I had to answer the question, I should say that some do and some do not

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I know two or three, the Darjeeling Himalayan Railway and others who do not, and I know a number of men of the E. I. R. who are not members of the Auxiliary Force.

Mr. Calvert.—Is it correct that the railway battalions are not generally available for service in internal disturbances?

Witness.—I think that is right. And they are still less available in war time.

Mr. Calvert.—So your Territorial battalion would not then be a second line to the regular army?

The Chairman.—Yes, it might be, because we always contemplate using the railway personnel in war in so far as the railways can give us them.

Mr. Calvert.—When the Afghan war broke out, the Punjab I. D. F. had to help the railway; they could not help us.

Witness.—That is always the case in serious trouble.

Mr. Calvert.—To get over that fact of your Territorial battalion not being ordinarily a second line army, would you recommend another battalion of railway men, with similar training, who would be available as a second line?

Witness.—I am afraid I have not thought about that; I have not thought whether it would be possible to train them.

The Chairman.—I can speak with some experience, because I have had to go into the question of the employment of railway personnel, and I think we may regard it as a fact that the railway personnel may well be considered as wanted for railway work. Directly mobilization occurred, I would ask Mr. Hindley to lunch; I should give him the best possible lunch I could, and, when I thought he was in a kind mood, I should say to him, what railway personnel can you possibly spare me for railway work on the frontier? There never has been any contemplation by the General Staff of employing Railway personnel in any other way than on railways, and we quite recognise the fact that the railway man may have to defend himself. Therefore, we try and arrange that he is taught to do so; but I cannot realise railway personnel being formed into a unit divorced from railways.

Mr. Calvert.—I am only trying to find out how far Mr. Hindley's suggestions fall in with our terms of reference that the Territorial Force is a second line of defence.

The Chairman.—The railway battalion would be used for technical duties; they are technical troops.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You suggested to us that there should be a railway branch of the Auxiliary Force and a railway branch of the Territorial Force, one open to Europeans and Anglo-Indians, the other open to Indians. You contemplate that they should have the same sort of training?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Of course the training in the early stages would have to be somewhat different, because the people recruited would be different, but your objective is the same?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The object for which they are going to be used is the same, to help in railway work in time of war or emergency?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—The only difference, apparently, that you make between these two portions of your railway battalions, of the Auxiliary and the Territorial Force, is a racial distinction?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And further, for the Indians you will impose on them liability to serve abroad, because that is the liability at present imposed on the Territorial Force?

Witness.—I have not said anything about that.

The Chairman.—I can again speak with authority on that subject. Railway duties are so extensive that we should go to the Auxiliary Force on the railways as well, for personnel for the frontier. You really want British and Indian personnel, and we should endeavour to get the railways to supply them.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But the Auxiliary Force has liability to serve only within their own province, and with the Governor General's orders, in the whole country.

Witness.—The military area in the case of railways means the whole railway system on which the corps is raised.

Dr. Paranjpye.—And in the Territorial Force the liability is in the country and overseas also. So the Territorial branch of your railway battalion will have a bigger liability?

Witness.—I suppose that is so.

The Chairman.—But it would not be so in actual fact.

Dr. Paranjpye.—But it would be according to law.

The Chairman.—It might be according to law, but, as regards the actual fact, whatever liability was extended to the Indians on a railway would be equally extended to the Europeans on the railway, because you want both classes of personnel.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You are a member of the Legislature and you know our Committee owes its existence to a feeling of racial distinctions, and at present this feeling of distinctions may, plausibly, be justified by the different objectives of the Territorial Force and the Auxiliary Force, and the different kind of training they receive. At present that is the partial justification, but with your ideas, even the partial justification will disappear, and you will make these two parts different, wholly and solely on the racial basis.

The Chairman.—No; that would not be so; I can tell you what will be the effect,—whatever liability the Indian on the railway will have, the European on the railway will have exactly the same liability.

Dr. Paranjpye.—At any rate at present there is some sort of difference between the two forces.

The Chairman.—We are now talking about the form which Mr. Hindley recommends; I can tell you, as I am responsible for providing the railway personnel on mobilisation, that I would personally not differentiate and I would ask for legislation, so that I might be permitted to call on Mr. Hindley to give me what Indian personnel he could spare and what European personnel he could spare; I can assure you that there would be absolutely no difference.

Dr. Paranjpye.—So that at any rate if there are these two branches you will ask us to recommend that their liability should be the same and the difference would only be racial?

Witness.—I suppose that is correct.

Dr. Paranjpye.—We have now different commissions for people doing exactly the same kind of work: one set of people having King's Commissions and another set having honorary King's Commissions with the actual rank of Jemadar and Subedar: do you think that will tend to increase the *esprit de corps* of your railway personnel?

Witness.—I have not really considered the question of the exact form of the commission or who signs it, I am afraid. I have had, I think, six different commissions since I started—the first was signed by Queen Victoria; the second was signed by Lord Elgin; the third by some understrapper in the War Office: the one I held and recently relinquished was—I never received it. It did not matter to me or any of us, so long as we knew we had authority to act, exactly who signed the commission.

Dr. Paranjpye.—At any rate in actual practice between these two commissions the one who has a British commission always holds rank over and above the man who holds the Viceroy's commission?

Witness.—I never contemplated that there would be any squabble as to seniority on the parade ground about this at all, I am afraid. I am not quite clear about the organisation of the Territorial Force.

Mr. Burdon.—This business of the dual commission is only a make-shift: it is not intended to be an ultimate arrangement; it is not admired or approved even by Government; I do not know if you read the communiqué that was issued at the time; it took a whole page and a half to explain it; it is regarded as anomalous even by ourselves.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You do not care what commissions are given, if they get the right kind of training?

Witness.—That is right—a practical force for practical work.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would leave the question of the commissions to the military authorities or the Government?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You spoke of the bigger centres; you said your suggestion might apply to them; but when you ask the military authorities to make a beginning in this direction, you obviously contemplate the ultimate idea of spreading this organisation over the whole country, over all railway systems?

Witness.—I am not prepared to prognosticate to that extent; I should like to see the experiment tried.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Supposing that the experiment succeeds in the bigger centres?

Witness.—Experiment with the various Auxiliary Forces of the Crown has been in progress for a good many years, and I presume will go on for a good many more years; and I would not like to lay down a scheme which would cover the next 20 or 30 years. I would like to see a beginning made in the larger railway centres.

Dr. Paranjpye.—At the small centres, where there are a few Anglo-Indians or Europeans and a few Indians, at any rate in the superior branches, have you any objection to their being trained and organised into a common unit for railway purposes?

Witness.—I do not see any practical benefit from that; we have got to look at things from the practical point of view; at a small station, where perhaps there is one European inspector and perhaps a fairly large number, say 20 or 30 educated Indians, and a large number of unskilled Indians, you have got only to look at that little station—to me there is no practical sense in attempting a military organisation in a place like that; that one European living there is trained to arms for reasons which you all understand, and he takes his place in the adjoining unit when occasion arises for his training and so on. I do not see any object, from the railway point of view, in at all attempting at present to force any kind of military organisation on a little station of that sort.

Dr. Paranjpye.—Take a moderately sized station like Manmad?

Witness.—I do not know how many people you would get at Manmad who would be likely to serve in the Territorial Force; it is no good blinking the fact that at a small station, where people live in a parochial way and have a parochial outlook, and know practically nothing of what goes on beyond the distant signals on either side of the station—you are not going immediately, in this year 1924, to try and raise a Territorial unit in a place like that without some little difficulty. You know your own countrymen better than I do; but there is a very considerable difficulty in getting the ordinary Indian educated clerk, in an office, to even begin to think about military training; is not that so?

Dr. Paranjpye.—They are beginning to think about it.

Witness.—Only beginning; at these places, where you have got big workshops and a lot of people, out of this small percentage of educated Indians, among the thousands of uneducated men, there may be a chance of forming a practical unit; I do not believe it is a practical possibility in the small centres; that is my only point—I was looking at it from a practical point of view.

Dr. Paranjpye.—You would not allow Indians with the same type of qualifications as your Anglo-Indians to be trained with the Europeans?

Witness.—In so far as there is any training possible with the number of men available, I do not see, as regards members of the Indian Territorial Force who are stationed there, that there will be any practical difficulty in putting them through the same training as the men of the Auxiliary Force there.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—Your idea is to emphasise the technical importance of a railway corps?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You would have Indian Territorial Force and Indian Auxiliary Force personnel; besides the technical training, which you would insist on and to which you give predominance, you would also give them some amount of fighting training?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You do not mean to confine that force entirely to one function or the other?

Witness.—No.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—They will all have to be trained in self-defence and act in military fashion; and both kinds of training will have to be given to each section of the force—that is your conception?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Mullick.—You have given us a very original idea to-day, which we have not had from any other witness so far, and we value it accordingly; and as a further consequence of Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer's question, may I ask you whether you would permit your railway men, who wanted to join the Indian Territorial Force to go for their annual camp, the first year for 56 days and subsequent years for 28 days?

Witness.—I imagine the training laid down would have to be regulated according to the possibility of these people getting away from their railway duties.

Mr. Mullick.—Some of our promising men who came from Fairlie Place, (E. I. R. office) were served with notices that they had no business to join us and they had to go back; there was some difficulty about it; if you, as the head of your department, could feel your way to give such facilities without detriment to your own particular work, it would help the Territorial Force a good deal: do you think that it is possible?

Witness.—I do not think it would be possible in the ordinary course of events to give a railway employee 56 days' leave every year.

Dr. Mullick.—It is only in the first year.

Witness.—It is a very big order; of course I would not like to say, off hand, that it could be done; the railway section suggested by me would have to have a special course of training, applicable to the particular conditions.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—You have just referred to the difficulty of the railway company being able to spare these men, say for 28 days, at a stretch. Would not that point to the desirability of having more or less continuous training all the year round at different centres instead of sending them to distant centres?

Witness.—Different ways of training have been tried, and the experiment that is being made now in the E. I. R. is one that holds the best chance of succeeding. There they have a standing camp for five or six months, and the men are drafted from the different parts of the railway to do their training of 7 or 8 days, and they can be more easily spared in small numbers from each station; it is much easier to get them together and you concentrate your training staff; that is proving the best way of doing it.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And you have got a number of training centres?

Witness.—Yes, all over the railway.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And there would be facilities for the railway members of the forces to be trained at these centres, except when they are in camp?

Witness.—Yes.

Sir Sivaswamy Aiyer.—And you would give the same facilities to your Indian and European railway employés?

Witness.—Undoubtedly; there will be no difficulty about it.

Dr. Mullick.—You simply want your Indian personnel to get a military training in some way, and you leave the details to be worked out later?

Witness.—Yes; I simply put forward this suggestion as a practical means of getting something started.

Mr. Burdon.—Just one question to elucidate a point; during the great war am I correct in saying that you had to send a considerable part of your railway personnel overseas to Mesopotamia and other places, both Europeans and Indians?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—That was done under the old arrangement, which provided for the contingency of railway people being asked to volunteer for field service, and those who did volunteer, and could be spared, were given certain extra pay—25 per cent. or thereabouts?

Witness.—That varied to some extent.

Mr. Burdon.—That is the general basis?

Witness.—Yes.

Mr. Burdon.—The essential point was that, under those arrangements Indians and Europeans, with regard to liability, were treated absolutely on the same footing, and that it is very desirable for railway exigencies to have that arrangement?

Witness.—Yes.

Dr. Hyder.—You want this railway technical corps to function in times of serious emergency. Supposing that there is a strike, are you going to call out your men?

Witness.—I have to reserve my answer on that. I have come here as a Volunteer officer, and not as Chief Commissioner for Railways. I am not prepared to answer that question, categorically, on behalf of Government.

Lt.-Col Gidney.—When an employee of the railway goes to his camp, Loco or Traffic, he loses his overtime?

Witness.—He does not work overtime and so he does not earn it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—I am aware that he is in receipt of an allowance when he goes to his camp. Does that allowance cover his overtime?

Witness.—I could not tell you that; I am not in touch with it.

Lt.-Col. Gidney.—Would you, as a railway official, think that the man was entitled to the difference?

Witness.—No, I should think that the man makes a reasonable sacrifice.

Estimated cost of the Committee.

	Rs.	A.	P.
Travelling and detention allowance; Members and Witnesses	13,750	0	0
Printing charges (approximately)	3,000	0	0
Purchase of books and incidental charges . . .	200	0	0
Expenditure in connection with the employment of an additional officer to assist in the Auxiliary and Territorial Force Directorate, Army Headquarters, for one month	550	0	0
Total .	17,500	0	0

DELHI
GOVERNMENT OF INDIA PRESS
1925

Non-Regular Military Forces in India

Report of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Committee

Dated 23rd January 1925

VOLUME I

CALCUTTA : GOVERNMENT OF INDIA
CENTRAL PUBLICATION BRANCH
1925

Price Annas Eleven, or 1s. 3d.

Non-Regular Military Forces in India

Report of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces Committee

Dated 23rd January 1925

VOLUME I

Government of India Publications are obtainable from the Government of India Central Publication Branch, 8, Hastings Street, Calcutta, and from the following Agents :—

EUROPE.

OFFICE OF THE HIGH COMMISSIONER FOR INDIA,

42, GROSVENOR GARDENS, LONDON, S.W. 1.

Constable & Co., 10, Orange Street, Leicester Square, London, W.C.
Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner & Co., 68-74, Carter Lane, E.C., and 39, New Oxford Street, London, W.C.
Bernard Quaritch, 11, Grafton Street, New Bond Street, London, W.
P. S. King & Sons, 2 & 4, Great Smith Street, Westminster, London, S.W.
Grindlay & Co., 54, Parliament Street, London, S.W.
Luzac & Co., 46, Great Russell Street, London, W.C.
W. Thacker & Co., 2, Creed Lane, London, E.C.
T. Fisher Unwin, Ltd., 1, Adelphi Terrace, London, W.C.
Wheldon and Wesley, Ltd., 2, 3 & 4, Arthur Street, New Oxford Street, London, W.C. 2.
East and West Ltd., 3, Victoria Street, London, S.W.1.
B. H. Blackwell, 50 & 51, Broad Street, Oxford.
Deighton Bell & Co., Ltd., Cambridge.
Oliver and Boyd, Tweeddale Court, Edinburgh.
E. Ponsonby, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin.
Ernest Leroux, 28, Rue Bonaparte, Paris.
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, Holland.
Otto Harrassowitz, Leipzig.
Friedländer und Sohn, Berlin.

INDIA AND CEYLON.

Provincial Book Depôts:

MADRAS :—Office of the Superintendent, Government Press, Mount Road, Madras.
BOMBAY :—Office of the Manager, Government Central Press, Bombay.
SIND :—Library attached to the Office of the Commissioner in Sind, Karachi.
BENGAL :—Office of the Bengal Secretariat Book Depôt, Writers' Buildings, Room No. 1, Ground Floor, Calcutta.
UNITED PROVINCES OF AGRA AND OUDH :—Office of the Superintendent of Government Press, United Provinces of Agra and Oudh, Allahabad.
PUNJAB :—Office of the Government of Punjab, Lahore.
BURMA :—Office of the Superintendent, Government Printing, Burma, Rangoon.
CENTRAL PROVINCES AND BERAR :—Office of the Central Provinces Secretariat, Nagpur.
ASSAM :—Office of the Superintendent, Assam Secretariat Press.
BIHAR AND ORISSA :—Office of the Superintendent, Government Printing, Bihar and Orissa, P. O. Gulzarbagh, Patna.
COORG :—Office of the Chief Commissioner of Coorg, Bangalore.
NORTH-WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE :—Government Press, Peshawar.

Thacker, Spink & Co., Calcutta and Simla.
W. Newman & Co., Ltd., Calcutta.
R. Cambray & Co., Calcutta.
S. K. Lahiri & Co., Calcutta.
The Indian School Supply Depôt, 309, Bow Bazar Street, Calcutta, and 226, Nawabpur, Dacca.
Butterworth & Co. (India), Ltd., Calcutta.
Rai M. C. Sarcar Bahadur & Sons, 90-2A, Harrison Road, Calcutta.
The Weldon Library, 17, Park Street, Calcutta.
Standard Literature Company, Limited, Calcutta.
Association Press, Calcutta.
Chukerverttv, Chatterjee & Co., Ltd., 13, College Square, Calcutta.
Higginbotham & Co., Madras.
V. Kalyanarama Iyer & Co., Madras.
P. R. Rama Iyer & Co., Madras.
Rochouse and Sons, Madras.
Bright & Co., Trivandrum.
V. S. Swaminathan, Bookseller, West Tower Street, Madura.
Thacker & Co., Ltd., Bombay.
D. B. Taraporevala, Sons & Co., Bombay.
Sunder Pandurang, Bombay.
Ram Chandra Govind & Sons, Kalbadevi Bombay.
N. M. Tripathi & Co., Booksellers, Princess Street, Kalbadebi Road, Bombay.
Proprietor, New Kitabkhana, Poona.
The Manager, Oriental Book Supplying Agency, 15, Shukrawar, Poona City.
R. S. Gondhalekar's Book Depôt, Publisher and Bookseller, Budhwar Chawk, Poona City.
Managing Director, Co-operative Bookstall, Booksellers and Publishers, Poona City.
The Standard Bookstall, Karachi, Rawalpindi, Murree, Lahore, Peshawar and Quetta.
Karsandas Narandas & Sons, Surat.
A. H. Wheeler & Co., Allahabad, Calcutta and Bombay.
N. B. Mathur, Supdt., Nazir Kanun Hind Press, Allahabad.
The North India Christian Tract and Book Society, 18, Clive Road, Allahabad.
Ram Dayal Agarwala, 184, Katra, Allahabad.
Manager, Newal Kishore Press, Lucknow.
The Upper India Publishing House, Ltd., 41, Aminabad Park, Lucknow.
Munshi Seeta Ram, Managing Proprietor, Indian Army Book Depôt, Juhi, Cawnpore.
Rai Sahib M. Gulab Singh & Sons, Mufid-i-Am Press, Lahore and Allahabad.
Rama Krishna & Sons, Booksellers, Anarkali, Lahore.
Puri Brothers, Booksellers and Publishers, Katcheri Road, Lahore.
Manager of the Imperial Book Depôt, 63, Chandney Chawk Street, Delhi.
Oxford Book and Stationery Company, Delhi.
Supdt., American Baptist Mission Press, Rangoon.
Proprietor, Rangoon Times Press, Rangoon.
The Modern Publishing House, Ltd., 30, Phayre Street, Rangoon.
The International Buddhist Book Depôt, Post Box No. 971, Rangoon.
Manager, the "Hitavada," Nagpur.
S. C. Talukdar, Proprietor, Students & Co., Cooch Behar.
Times of Ceylon Co., Ltd.
The Manager, Ceylon Observer, Colombo.
The Manager, The Indian Book Shop, Benares City.
B. C. Basak, Esq., Proprietor, Albert Library, Dacca.

Report of the Committee appointed by the Governor General in Council to investigate and report what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force, so as to constitute it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army, and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the Non-Regular Military Forces in India, including the Auxiliary Force.

Volume I—Report.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

Paragraphs.		PAGE.
1.	Introductory	1
2.	Constitution of the Committee	2
3.	Terms of Reference	2
4.	Procedure adopted by the Committee	3
5.	Present Constitution, etc., of the Indian Territorial Force and the Auxiliary Force	4

CHAPTER II.

THE GENERAL PRINCIPLES UPON WHICH THE RECOMMENDATIONS OF THE COMMITTEE FOR THE FUTURE OF THE NON-REGULAR FORCES HAVE BEEN BASED.

6.	The Objects of the Indian Territorial Force	5
7.	The Unsuitability of Compulsory Service	6
8.	The University Training Corps. Its Role	6
9.	Its Functions and Liabilities.	7
10.	The Indian Territorial Force. The Active Battalions	8
11.	Objections to Limited Liability	10
12.	The Functions and Liabilities of a Second Line	10
13.	Duties in Aid of the Civil Power	12
14.	The Auxiliary Force. Its Functions and Liabilities.	13
15.	Standard of Training	14
16.	The Raising of Units of other Arms	16
17.	Advisory Committees	17
18.	Form of Commission for Officers	19
19.	The Grant of Pay	20
20.	The Expansion of the Indian Territorial Force	21
21.	The Removal of Racial Distinctions	22

CHAPTER III.

DETAILED RECOMMENDATIONS FOR THE IMPROVEMENT AND EXPANSION OF THE NON-REGULAR FORCES AND FOR THEIR ASSIMILATION TO ONE ANOTHER.

22.	Detailed Recommendations	23
23.	The University Training Corps	23
24.	The Indian Territorial Force.	26
25.	The Auxiliary Force	31
26.	Miscellaneous	33
27.	Financial Effect.	36

CHAPTER IV.

SUMMARY OF MAIN RECOMMENDATIONS.

Paragraphs		PAGE.
28.	Functions and Liabilities	37
	Composition and Training	38
	Improvement of Conditions of Service	38
	Selection and Training of Officers	38
	Form of Commission for Officers	38
	Expansion	39
	Advisory Committees	39
	Removal of Racial Distinctions in the University Training Corps	40
	Removal of Racial Distinctions in the Auxiliary Force and Indian Territorial Force	40

CHAPTER V.

GENERAL.

29.		41
30.		41
31.		41
32.		41

ANNEXURE.

RECOMMENDATIONS ON POINTS OF LESS IMPORTANT DETAIL.

A.	Pay and Allowance—	
	I. Indian Territorial Force	45
	II. Auxiliary Force	48
B.	Training	50
C.	Medical	51
D.	Legal	51
E.	Miscellaneous	55

APPENDICES.

1. (*a*)	Indian Territorial Force—	
	The present composition	56
	The present liabilities	57
	The budget provision, 1924-25	57
(*b*)	Auxiliary Force—	
	The present composition	58
	The present liabilities	63
	The budget provision, 1924-25	64
2. (*a*)	Form of Commission proposed for officers of the Auxiliary Force and the Indian Territorial Force	65
(*b*)	Form of Commission granted to officers of the Canadian Militia	66
3.	Scheme for the formation of :—	
(*a*)	Electrical and Mechanical Companies of Engineers in the Indian Territorial Force	67
(*b*)	A Light Railway Company of Engineers	75
(*c*)	Heavy Mechanical Transport Sections of Army Service Corps	81
(*d*)	Indian Hospital Corps units	83
(*e*)	Signal Sections	85
(*f*)	Pioneer Companies	86
(*g*)	Army Troops Company of Sappers and Miners	88
(*h*)	Artillery Sections	93
4.	Approximate Cost of University Training Corps	94

AUXILIARY AND TERRITORIAL FORCES COMMITTEE.

REPORT.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

1. The Committee was constituted by the Government of India in accordance with a Resolution adopted by the Legislative Assembly on February 5th, 1924, as a result of a debate on the following Resolution moved by Mr. B. Venkatapatiraju :—

"This Assembly recommends to the Governor General in Council that necessary steps be taken :—

(*a*) for the amalgamation of the Indian Territorial Force and the Auxiliary Force, for the combined purpose of supplementing the regular forces in support of the civil power, and for internal security, and as a second line to the Regular Army, and removal of all distinctions whatsoever as well as in the matter of duties and privileges ;

(*b*) to increase the strength by the annual addition of ten thousand till it reaches the figure which would enable the gradual reduction of regular forces by one half of the present strength for peace establishment ;

(*c*) to provide adequate funds for the efficient organization and training of the same serviceable for military purposes by corresponding reduction in other avoidable military expenditure."

During the course of the debate it was pointed out that the second portion of the Resolution must be unacceptable to the Government, in that it overlooked the basic fact that the distinctions of military organisation were imposed by force of external circumstances, and were not capable of being modified solely at the will and pleasure of Government. For example, the strength of the regular army was fixed according to the task which it might have to undertake from the outbreak of hostilities up to the time when the second line troops were sufficiently trained, and could take their place in the field side by side with it. The training which the second line troops received in time of peace was not calculated to make them fit to take the field immediately on the outbreak of war, but only to lay the foundations of their military

efficiency, so that, with a short period of intensive training after the commencement of hostilities, they might be able to take the field in less time than it would take to train new units *ab initio*. Whatever, therefore, might be the strength of the second line, its unpreparedness for war at the outset made it impossible to regard it as one of the factors to be taken into account in calculating the minimum strength of the regular army. The Assembly recognised the force of this argument, and for this and other reasons finally adopted the following Resolution :—

" That this Assembly recommends to the Governor General in Council that a Committee, including members of the Legislature, be immediately appointed to investigate and report what steps should be taken to improve and expand the Indian Territorial Force, so as to constitute it an efficient second line of reserve to the regular army, and also to remove all racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces in India, including the Auxiliary Force "

Constitution of the Committee.

2. The Committee, as finally constituted, was composed as follows :—

Chairman.

Lieut.-General Sir JOHN SHEA, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O., A.-D.-C., Adjutant General in India.

Members.

Sir P. S. SIVASWAMY AIYER, K.C.S.I., C.I.E., M.L.A.
Dr. R. P. PARANJPYE, D.Sc., J. P.
Dr. ZIA-UD-DIN AHMED, M.L.A., later replaced by
Dr. L. K. HYDER, Ph.D., M.L.A.
Captain AJAB KHAN, O.B.E., I.O.M., M.L.A.
The late Dr. S. K. MULLICK, C.B.E., M.D.
Mr. H. CALVERT, C.I.E., I.C.S., M.L.A.
Captain SURAJ SINGH, Bahadur, I.O.M.
Lieut.-Colonel G. E. LLEWHELLIN, V.D., A.-D.-C., Behar Light Horse.
Lieut.-Colonel H. A. J. GIDNEY, M.L.A., J.P., I.M.S. (retd.).
Mr. E. BURDON, C.I.E., I.C.S., M.L.A., Secretary to the Government of India in the Army Department.

Terms of reference.

3. The detailed terms of reference to the Committee, as finally framed by the Government of India, were as follows :—

To consider and report what steps should be taken—

(i) to improve the Indian Territorial Force so as to constitute it an efficient second line to the regular army ;

(ii) to expand the Indian Territorial Force so as to constitute it an efficient second line to the regular army ;

(iii) to remove racial distinctions in the constitution of the non-regular military forces, including the Auxiliary Force.

Procedure adopted by the Committee.

4. The Committee held preliminary meetings at Simla on June 10th and 11th, 1924, at which it was decided that the formal sittings should commence in the following August, by which time it was hoped that the views of Local Governments with regard to the future development of the non-regular forces would have been obtained. Owing, however, to the fact that two members of the Committee were also serving on the Reforms Enquiry Committee, it proved impossible for the Committee to meet in August, September or October. A further difficulty then arose as a result of Dr. Paranjpye and Dr. Hyder having been appointed to the Taxation Committee, but in the end, with the assistance of the Finance Department, the Committee was enabled to assemble, with all members present, on November 10th, 1924. Before this date the opinions of Local Governments and of General Officers Commanding-in-Chief of Commands upon the points arising out of the Committee's terms of reference had been received, and from their replies a questionnaire was prepared, a copy of which will be found in Volume II. This questionnaire was sent to a large number of persons, official and non-official, who are directly connected with or who have taken an interest in the Indian Territorial Force and University Training Corps in various parts of India. Their answers, which are reproduced in Volume II, together with the views expressed by Local Governments and General Officers Commanding-in-Chief of Commands formed the basis upon which the Committee began its deliberations. Between November 11th and 15th the Committee heard the oral evidence of a number of witnesses representing different shades of thought and outlook. Their evidence is contained in Volume II. The views expressed therein do not reveal such a wide divergence of opinion as might have been expected, when it is remembered that the witnesses examined included the Chief Commissioner of Railways, two British and one Indian members of the Indian Civil Service, seven Adjutants of Territorial Force units, one Deputy Assistant Director of Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, six Indian Territorial Force officers, four non-official members of Territorial Force Advisory Committees, two Auxiliary Force officers, one Adjutant of a University Training Corps battalion, two officers of University Training Corps units, and one Indian private gentleman. Further, although many of the non-official witnesses in their evidence, whether written or oral, showed at times an unfamiliarity, almost complete, though perhaps inevitable, with military science

and military organisation, and were inclined to advocate progressive schemes of a more or less idealistic nature, far removed from the realms of practical possibility, the general principles underlying their ideas differed but little from those of the witnesses who had had practical experience of one branch or other of the non-regular forces. This general unanimity on the major points under consideration greatly assisted the Committee in their task of ascertaining the chief defects of the present organisation, and the most suitable lines for development in the future. Between November 17th and 22nd the Committee examined the evidence, and arrived at specific conclusions on each of the large number of issues arising out of the terms of reference and the evidence tendered. Instructions were given for the report to be drafted in accordance with these conclusions : and the Committee then dispersed. It reassembled and finally passed the report, for presentation to the Government of India, on January 23rd, 1925.

Present constitution, etc., of the Indian Territorial Force and Auxiliary Force.

5. The Indian Territorial Force, as constituted under the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, is recruited from British subjects, other than European British subjects, and consists at present of 20 provincial infantry battalions, and six battalions and two companies of University Training Corps, with a strength, on November 1st, 1924, of 12,552 and 3,748 respectively, or a total of 16,300 as against an establishment of 19,104. The budget estimate for the force for the financial year 1924-25 is Rs. 33,42,920.

The liability of the force for military service is normally limited to service within the borders of India, but may be extended to service outside the limits of India by an order of the Governor-General in Council.

The Auxiliary Force, India, as constituted under the Auxiliary Force Act, 1920, is recruited with a few exceptions from Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and consisted, on November 1st, 1924, exclusive of cadets, of 33,181 officers and men of all arms, as against an established strength of 36,635. The budget estimate for the Force for the financial year 1924-25 is Rs. 75,81,620.

The liability of each unit of the force for military service is limited normally to the military area in which it is located.

Both forces are equally liable to be called upon for service in aid of the civil power in the case of an internal disturbance.

Details of the composition, liability for service and cost of the Indian Territorial Force and Auxiliary Force are given in Appendix I (*a*) and (*b*).

CHAPTER II.

THE GENERAL PRINCIPLES UPON WHICH THE RECOMMENDATIONS OF THE COMMITTEE FOR THE FUTURE OF THE NON-REGULAR FORCES HAVE BEEN BASED.

The object of the Indian Territorial Force.

6. In introducing the Indian Territorial Force Bill in the Imperial Legislative Council in September 1920, Sir Charles Monro, then Commander-in-Chief in India, declared "Our object in creating the latter (*i.e.*, the Indian Territorial Force) is to respond to the aspiration of those Indians who desire to see the formation of a second line to the Indian Army, whereby in time of need the almost unlimited man-power of India may be utilised to strengthen the military forces of the country on a scale commensurate with its vast population," and again "The publication of the Bill which I am now about to introduce will I hope serve to.....give the Government the means of judging whether there is any real desire for military service on the part of classes which have hitherto not been recruited, and whether there is any reasonable prospect of creating a Territorial Force on popular lines, which, as a second line Army, would prove a real addition to the defensive power of India, and make a new departure in the organisation of her armed forces." From these extracts we are led to assume that the policy of Government in introducing the Bill, and of the Imperial Legislative Council in passing it into law, was directed towards the attainment, by the formation of the Indian Territorial Force, of two distinct objects ; the first, an educational one, to create a national desire for patriotic military service, and to afford opportunities for military training to a wide range of the manhood of India, and so lay surely and solidly the foundation of a national army, such as will be essential to India when in course of time she attains to full responsible government, and takes upon her own shoulders the whole burden of her defence ; and the second, a military one, to provide a second line of defence to support the regular army in time of war. These two objects we have taken as the basis of our deliberations. In making our recommendations for the improvement of the Indian Territorial Force we have sought to provide as far as possible for the future, and, while desiring to make the Force an efficient reserve for immediate needs, we think it of even greater importance to develop it as a school wherein the young men of this country may be trained to arms, and may fit themselves to take their places in the national army of the future, ready to defend their country in time of need. The promise to India of self-government implies, in our opinion, the grant to her people of an opportunity of training themselves for her defence. For generations past the defence of India has been entrusted to those classes of her population which are recruited in the regular

Indian Army, and as a result there are many of her people to-day who do not realise the duty of every citizen to be ready and trained to defend his motherland. Before India can hope to create a national army, and be prepared to defend herself by her own efforts against her enemies, that sense of patriotic duty must be inculcated in the minds of the masses by a steady process of education, and our primary conception of the uses of the Indian Territorial Force is that it should provide the means of affording this education.

The Unsuitability of Compulsory Service.

7. We regard it as in the highest degree desirable that so far as possible the ideal in view should be attained without resorting to any form of compulsory military service. In the absence of insistent external danger which would appeal immediately and directly to the whole of the vast population of India, and so long as India continues to enjoy the immunity from such danger which has for many years been secured to her by the power of the British Empire on sea and land, there may be difficulty in pursuing the ideal by the method we contemplate. We are convinced, however, that in the first instance at any rate Government should seek to maintain the principle of voluntary military service, both in the regular and non-regular forces and should endeavour to foster steadily the military spirit by the careful inculcation of ideas of patriotism and the responsibilities of citizenship.

The University Training Corps. Its rôle.

8. In order to achieve the greatest measure of success in this form of national education, it is essential that it should commence at as early an age as is possible, when the mind is most receptive. When a man is full grown, it is no easy matter to alter his outlook, and to graft new ideals upon those he has already set up for himself. The seed must be sown before his mind is formed, and for this reason it appears to us that the schools, colleges and universities offer the most suitable medium through which the first phase of this education can be carried out. We recognise that at the present time there may be serious difficulties in the way of establishing Cadet Corps in all schools in India, but a beginning can be made even in schools with the teaching of elementary principles of civic duty and with physical training and elementary military drill. In the Universities the great opportunity lies, and here it is possible to communicate more advanced ideas on the subjects of patriotism and self-defence to a large and increasingly influential section of the population. We are of opinion that in the present stage of India's evolution, and for many years to come, the University Training Corps should be regarded as the most important section of the Territorial Force. By means of the University Training Corps, if properly organised and developed, it is possible to educate and influence over a number of years that large body of young men who should become

the leaders of thought and the teachers of the next generation. Their training in the principles and the practice of military service will not be limited to themselves, for, when they go out into the world, they will, if their military training has been adequate, take with them the spirit of patriotism, the sense of discipline and the improved physique which will be their legacy from the University Training Corps, and their example should serve to inspire a widening circle of the people of India with a sense of the benefits which fitness for military service confers both upon the individual and the community as a whole. We, therefore, recommend that the University Training Corps be viewed as the foundation stone of the national army, and that no artificial limit be set to the expansion of these Corps, every encouragement being given for the formation and development on sound lines of fresh contingents in all Universities and Colleges where they do not already exist. In conformity with the general principle which we have previously enunciated, we are of opinion that no form of *State* compulsion should be adopted in order to secure the enlistment of students in the University Training Corps: but we should at the same time be content to leave it to the authorities of each individual University to decide whether as a matter of University discipline and regulation it should be made obligatory for their undergraduates to join the University Training Corps.

Its Functions and Liabilities.

9. Since we contemplate that the object of the University Training Corps shall be primarily educational, and because of the youthfulness of their members, we suggest that these Corps should not have any liability for military service. Our own judgment and the evidence we have received lead us to believe that the imposition of such liability would be most unpopular with parents, and would frustrate the purposes which in our opinion the University Training Corps should serve. Moreover, it is clear that in actual practice the military authorities would never reckon upon the University Training Corps as an effective military weapon: and there is no advantage to be gained by prescribing an obligation which it is never intended to exact. The members of the University Training Corps should, however, be encouraged by every other means to realise that they are being trained to qualify for service in the other sections of Indian Territorial Force, where they can have a practical opportunity of undertaking to defend their country, which is alike the duty and privilege of every citizen. We envisage the University Training Corps of the future not only as a school for training the young idea in elementary military matters, but as the recognised recruiting ground for the officers, non-commissioned officers and men of the Indian Territorial Force, and later also as a potential source of supply of candidates for commissions in the regular Indian Army.

The success of the University Training Corps in the rôle which we recommend should be allotted to it depends not solely upon the military but also upon the University authorities. Any efforts which the former may make to promote keenness and efficiency may easily be rendered nugatory by a lack of co-operation on the part of the latter, and in like manner, when encouragement is shown by the University authorities to the members of the University Training Corps, the task of their military instructors will be facilitated. We feel confident, however, that the University authorities may be relied upon to reinforce in a practical manner any efforts which the Government may make to stimulate the successful evolution of the University Training Corps.

The Indian Territorial Force: the Active Battalions.

10. The evidence produced before us has made it clear that the existing provincial battalions are composed almost entirely of men belonging to classes from which the regular army is recruited, in other words of men who already have a natural inclination for military service. It is recognised that this is not the result of deliberate policy on the part of Government, or of misdirected efforts on the part of the agents of Government. The fact seems to be clear that service in the Territorial Force, as at present constituted and organised, does not attract the non-military classes and in particular the educated middle-class Indian. Government have, therefore, failed to secure one of the principal objects for which the Force was created. The fault may lie with the educated middle-classes themselves and may be irremediable: but the evidence which we have heard does not suggest that this is the correct inference to draw. Due account must be taken of lack of opportunities for military service in the past: and it must be recognised that a national military spirit cannot be created in a short space of time, or without patient, intelligent and sympathetic encouragement. We ourselves adhere to the original conception of the Territorial Force as *inter alia* a means of providing national education in military service, and consider that the reforms most urgently called for are those which will enable the Force to fulfil this purpose. We deal elsewhere in our report with the improvements in conditions of service, etc., which are directed towards the same end. In the present connection we desire to state only one recommendation which is of a fundamental character, namely, that in selected large centres of population special companies or battalions should be constituted which should be recruited from the educated classes, and mainly from those engaged in the learned professions, and that these urban units should be trained on the system at present applied to the Auxiliary Force, namely, a system of training throughout the year combined with a short period of annual

training in camp. The advantage of this system of training, from the point of view of encouraging the educated classes to join the Territorial Force, is that it will not interfere with the civil avocations of the Territorial soldiers of this special category. We contemplate that in the course of time the urban units should be open only to men who have previously undergone a period of training in University Training Corps, an arrangement which should have the effect of increasing the efficiency of both formations, and also of preserving the value of the training received in the University Training Corps. The urban units should have the same liability for military service as the existing provincial battalions. It is necessary that this liability should be imposed if the units are to have any real military value, and if training is to be taken in a serious spirit and carried out thoroughly and conscientiously. It is unlikely that the liability will be exacted save in an emergency, since the first call for troops to supplement the regular forces will naturally be made upon the more fully trained units, *e.g.*, the provincial battalions. We recognise also that, if these urban units are to provide reinforcements for the regular army in the field, it will normally be only possible to use them by individuals and sub-units rather than by complete units. But it would be useless to create the urban units if owing to their limited liability they were not to be available for service in time of emergency at the discretion of the military authorities.

We advocate the formation of urban units only in large centres at present because we foresee, in their extension to smaller towns, where no troops are ordinarily stationed, a difficulty in connection with the safe custody of their arms and ammunition. We are fully alive to the necessity of ensuring that the arms of members of the non-regular forces are adequately guarded when not in actual use, and we are convinced that only in the most exceptional cases should the members of these forces be permitted to retain their arms in their own charge. Where, therefore, there exists no means at the disposal of the military authorities for guarding the rifles of a unit when not actually in use, it will be necessary to place them in an armoury under the charge of a civil police guard. We fear that the cost of the provision of such guards in a number of outlying towns would be a disproportionately heavy charge upon the military budget, having regard to the military value of the units for which it is incurred.

The urban units should be in addition to the provincial units, the latter being constituted, organised and trained generally as at present. We recognise that it is mainly to the latter that Government must look for the fulfilment of the further purpose of the Territorial Force, namely, that it should be a second line to the regular army. There is no doubt that the provincial units can discharge this

function adequately if the improvements in regard to training, etc., which we recommend elsewhere in our report, are carried out. The actual system of training and administration at present applied to these units is on the whole well adapted to the circumstances of the rural population from which they are recruited.

Objection to Limited Liability.

11. We have considered and rejected a definite suggestion that it would be desirable to form battalions of the Indian Territorial Force, which should be trained continuously all the year round on the system which we have recommended in the preceding paragraph, but which should have a liability for local service only. The proposal is based upon the theory that the chief, if not the only, purpose of the Territorial Force should be educative. We cannot bring ourselves to support so extreme a view, or its application in the manner here suggested. The only use to which such a force could be put would be to support the civil power in the event of internal disturbance. Taking into consideration the relatively low standard of discipline and efficiency which such a force would be likely to attain, we are convinced that it would be impracticable to employ it, say for the suppression of a riot, when only the steadiest and most highly disciplined troops should normally be used, and its liability would thus be a merely nominal one. The knowledge that in actual fact their liability was non-existent would soon become apparent to the members of the force itself. The realisation of the fact that their training had no objective, and that they were only soldiers in make-believe, would be sufficient to damp the keenness and enthusiasm which can only be roused in the minds of those who see a definite goal ahead, and we feel certain that such a force would have no value even as an educational experiment. Moreover it would in our opinion be incongruous that a young man of fit military age should be permitted to receive military training, but have nothing more than a nominal liability for local military service. A national army cannot be created in this manner, and we do not believe that public opinion, if properly informed, would be in favour of the proposal which we have discussed in this paragraph.

The Functions and Liabilities of a Second Line.

12. Another suggestion which appeared to find favour with some of our witnesses is that in the early stages of the development of the Indian Territorial Force its liability for military service should be limited to service within the borders of India. The extent of the liability of the Force must, however, hinge upon the objects for which it is created. We have considered from this point of view the principles which have determined the constitution of second line armies in other countries, and have sought to apply them to the needs of India. Owing to

the prohibitive cost of maintaining a large standing army, there are few nations which can afford to maintain on a regular footing in time of peace all the forces which may be required to meet every possible contingency in time of war. On the other hand, experience has shown the essential importance of creating in time of peace the necessary machinery whereby such forces as are likely to be required to supplement the regular army may be produced within a reasonable time after the outbreak of hostilities. It is for this reason that second line armies are maintained. These second line formations are not permanently embodied in time of peace, nor are they more than partially trained. For these reasons the cost of their maintenance is relatively small by comparison with the cost of maintaining regular troops. In order, however, to fulfil their functions satisfactorily and to justify their existence, these second line troops must be sufficiently trained in time of peace to be able after a short period of intensive training—

(*a*) to relieve the regular army of garrison, internal security and other less exacting duties, and

(*b*) later, to take their places in the field beside the first line troops for the defence of their country.

They may also, provided that this is specified in their terms of service, be liable to be called out in aid of the civil power in the event of an internal disturbance.

In India the present scale of military expenditure is still the subject of much adverse criticism, despite the fact that in the opinion of military experts the regular army in India is not sufficiently large to meet all contingencies which it may have to face in the event of war. To meet this adverse criticism, and at the same time to comply as far as possible with expert military opinion, numerous economies and expedients have been resorted to in the course of the last few years: and one of the objects with which the Indian Territorial Force was created was to provide an inexpensive second line of defence which could be used to supplement the regular army in time of war. At present the members of the Indian Territorial Force have a liability to serve only in India, but this liability may, by a general or special order of the Governor General in Council, be extended to allow of their serving beyond the borders of India. Now the view that in the earlier stage of its existence it would be well to limit the liability of the Force solely to service within the limits of India, that is to say, to the first of the two main duties for which other nations maintain their second line armies, appears to us to be based upon the belief that any operations beyond the borders of India must of necessity be in the nature of acts of aggression. This belief is entirely fallacious. The country which relies in war on internal rather than on external defence is seriously

handicapped; for not only does it voluntarily relinquish the initiative to the enemy, but, with an invader within its borders, its internal mechanism is in danger and its powers of production seriously threatened. It cannot be asserted too vigorously that the true defence of India lies beyond the borders of India, just as the Great War proved once again that the defence of the British Isles lay across the North Sea. It is significant in this connection to note that, whereas before the Great War members of the Territorial Army in England had a liability for home defence only, every member must now before enrolment accept a liability to serve in any part of the world. We, therefore, hold that the Indian Territorial Force, if it is to form a real second line to the regular army, must be available for service in any theatre in which the defence of India may demand its presence, whether across its land frontiers or overseas. Indeed we would go so far as to maintain that, unless the Indian Territorial Force has such a liability for service, its military value is not sufficient to warrant expenditure upon it from the military budget. We recommend, however, that, as a safeguard against its use for purposes other than the defence of India, the actual imposition, on any given occasion, of liability to serve beyond the confines of India, should, as at present, be subject to the specific order of the Governor-General in Council.

From the evidence laid before us there appears to be some difference of opinion on the point whether the liability for service beyond the borders of India has in the past had an adverse effect upon recruiting for the Force. We are satisfied, however, both from our evidence, and from the response made in India during the Great War to the call for recruits for service overseas, that there will be no difficulty in obtaining the numbers which, within the limits of such funds as are likely to be available in the near future, can be trained and equipped in time of peace, provided that the conditions of service in the Force are improved on the lines recommended elsewhere in this report.

Duties in Aid of the Civil Power.

13. The question whether or not the Indian Territorial Force should be liable to be called upon, as at present it is liable, to assist the civil power in the event of internal disturbance is one to which we have given the most careful consideration. We fully realise that the suppression of internal disturbance is a task upon which only the steadiest and best disciplined troops should rightly be employed, and that for this reason the Army Council in England have laid it down as a principle that the British Territorial Army will not be used for such a purpose. We recognise too that it will not as a rule be possible to collect units of the Indian Territorial Force in sufficient time for them to be of use in dealing with any sudden *émeute*. We

also foresee at the present time a possible danger, peculiar to India, in the use of the Force to suppress disorder arising out of communal strife. Nevertheless we are of opinion that circumstances may arise in which it will be necessary to utilise the Force to support the civil authorities, and for this reason we consider that its present liability to be embodied for duties of this nature should not be removed. It should, however, be distinctly understood that it should be employed for this purpose only as a last resort or as a temporary expedient. The embodiment of a portion of the Force for this purpose should be at the discretion of the local Government, acting with the advice of the local military authorities.

The Auxiliary Force. Its Functions and Liabilities.

14. Side by side with the Indian Territorial Force there exists the Auxiliary Force, composed almost entirely of Europeans and Anglo-Indians, and liable at present only for local service. The Auxiliary Force is an organisation of a peculiar nature, based primarily upon the right of the European British subject residing in India, to protect his life and property from possible attack, and the principle that it is better that that right should be exercised in a definite and organised manner having the sanction of law, than as the wishes of private individuals may dictate. At the same time it provides the military authorities with a non-regular military force. Its value as a military force, however, is much reduced by its limited liability, in that the military authorities are seriously handicapped by their inability to transfer its units from one point to another, as they may wish, in the event of an emergency. A further disadvantage of its limited liability lies in the fact that it encourages certain undesirable types of recruit to enter the Force, who do not join from any desire to become efficient soldiers, but from purely personal and often pecuniary motives. We have had the evidence of senior officers of the Auxiliary Force that the presence of such men in the ranks discourages other and keener men, with the result that the efficiency of the whole unit suffers.

In the debate which led up to the formation of this Committee considerable stress was laid by speakers on behalf of Government on the fact that the liability of the Auxiliary Force had been so limited because the majority of its members were men who, by reason of their civil avocations, were unlikely to be able to serve outside the areas in which they reside. We feel that this attitude is not wholly correct. It is clear that the system of training should within reasonable limits be adapted to the civil avocations of members, and we have recognised this in our proposals for the formation of special urban Territorial units for Indians of the educated and professional classes. But the ultimate liability for service must, in order to enable the military authorities to make the fullest use in a grave emergency of all the available military forces, be

governed by other considerations. It stands to reason that the non-regular forces of the Crown will not normally be used for any purpose for which steadier and more disciplined troops are available, except in times of grave emergency; and on such occasions the dislocation of ordinary business will be so complete that the question whether or not the individual's civil avocation will be disturbed need not be taken into account. At such a moment the national need must take precedence of purely private interests. We are convinced, and in support of our conviction we have the testimony of more than one officer with considerable experience of the Auxiliary Force, that on such an occasion all ranks of the Force, who are worthy of their membership, would willingly undertake liability for general service. With this knowledge of the practical limitations which will govern their employment, we feel that the Auxiliary Force as a whole will be willing to accept the same liability for general service which we have recommended for the Indian Territorial Force, and we advocate that in future its function shall be that of a second line to the regular British troops in India. We recognise that, as in the case of the urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, its services will normally have to be utilised for the purpose of reinforcing the regular troops in the field by individuals and sub-units rather than by complete units.

We have not overlooked the possibility that this extension of the liability of the Force may lead to the resignation of some of its members, but we believe that the elimination of these will add to the general efficiency of the Force: for on the one hand those who disappear will be the least desirable and those who hamper the training of the more enthusiastic, while on the other hand the knowledge that the day may come when they will be utilised to the full extent of their liability will be an incentive to the remainder to improve their efficiency.

We understand that there are a number of eligible men in the large centres who would gladly enrol in the Auxiliary Force, were it not that their employers place hindrances in the way of their doing so. We are anxious to enable such men to fulfil their desire, and to protect the patriotic employer of labour from being at a disadvantage as compared with the unpatriotic by reason of the fact that he is willing to forego the services of members of his staff during their periods of training. We, therefore, advocate that an employer who places any hindrance in the way of one of his employees, who is a member of the Force, carrying out his training should, as in Australia, be made by law liable to punishment.

Standard of Training.

15. The training prescribed for members of the provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force consists at present of 56 days' continuous training in the first year, and 28 days' continuous training in each subsequent year. The

almost unanimous testimony of the witnesses whom we have examined, coupled with the reports of the local military authorities, have led us to the conclusion that these periods are too short, if these units of the Force are ever to fulfil successfully their rôle as a second line to the regular army in war. Both the regular officers serving with the Indian Territorial Force units and the officers of the Force itself are insistent that in present circumstances their men forget all that they have previously learnt in the period intervening between one annual training and the next, that, the initial grounding having been insufficient, each training is merely a repetition of the programme of the previous year, and that in consequence no progress can be achieved from year to year. The reports of the higher commanders as to the present inefficiency of the Force are equally emphatic, and we are forced to the conclusion that scarcely one of the existing units would be fit to take the field, even after a period of intensive training, in an appreciably shorter time than it would take to raise an entirely new unit. For it must not be forgotten that there exists in the training battalions of regular regiments effective machinery for training new units, whereas Territorial battalions would after the outbreak of war have to rely entirely on their own instructors for their intensive training. If, then, the Indian Territorial Force is to fulfil its functions satisfactorily, the periods of training both for officers and men of the provincial battalions must be increased. Otherwise the money expended upon its upkeep in time of peace will, from a purely military point of view, be wasted, and it would be a wiser policy to disband the Force and to seek other means of finding the additional units required in war.

We have further arrived at the conclusion, and in doing so we have been guided by expert military advice, that the minimum periods of training by which we can hope to raise the provincial battalions to the requisite pitch of efficiency in time of peace are three months in the first year, and two months in the second and subsequent years. We recognise that these extended periods of training will make it very difficult for many, who would otherwise do so, to enter the force; but much of our evidence leads us to hope that, provided that the time of training is fixed so as to suit the conditions of each province, the response will be adequate to the needs of the country. It must be reiterated that unless men can be obtained for the force who are willing to undergo training for at least these periods, the idea of raising a second line force on the present system should be abandoned.

We recognise that, where such a thing is possible, a system of intensive training for continuous periods is the best for Indian Territorial Force units. *Ex hypothesi*, however, such a system is not possible for the urban units, and, to enable such units to be raised, we have had to recommend that they should be trained all the year round

on the same system as is at present employed in the case of the Auxiliary Force. But to bring the standard of training and discipline of these units up to the standard of provincial units will be no easy matter. The Auxiliary Force units possess this advantage, that among their officers and men there are a large number who have been inured to discipline from their earliest youth, in a manner which is rarely the lot of a young Indian, or who have been trained to arms, to a greater or less degree, for years before they join the force. It is principally for this reason that Auxiliary Force units are as efficient as they are, notwithstanding the relatively light training to which they are subject. In the case of the urban battalions, to enable a start to be made, we have had to propose that they should in the first instance be open to all men of education. But for the reasons indicated in this paragraph we have been careful to recommend that the urban units should in the end be confined to men who have had a previous training in a University Training Corps; for it may safely be presumed that only those who have had the advantage of this earlier training can hope to attain a sufficient standard of efficiency to enable the units to perform the full liability which they undertake.

The importance of giving to officers and non-commissioned officers of the Indian Territorial Force facilities for improving their military knowledge and efficiency forms the subject of separate recommendations. We fully realise that the value of a military unit must vary in proportion to the capacity of its leaders.

The Raising of Units of other Arms.

16. At present the Territorial Force is composed of infantry units only, and it has been urged upon us that there is a strong desire for units of other arms also to be constituted, notably cavalry and artillery units. The reasons on which this desire is founded can be stated very simply. Those who regard the Territorial Force as the embryo of the national army think it essential that provision should be made for every arm and branch of a military organisation to be included in the Force, so that the training in arms of the people of India may in due course be complete in all respects. It is also held that members of the Territorial Force should have the same opportunities as members of the Auxiliary Force, in which cavalry and artillery units already exist. We have considered the matter very carefully, and we see grave practical difficulties in the way of giving effect to this aspiration immediately. In the first place the infantry arm is acknowledged to be the one which is most easily trained. But we have found that even the infantry units of the Territorial Force cannot reach the essential standard of efficiency unless the present periods of training are considerably extended, and we are not in a position to say with certainty that it will be possible to find men willing and able to spare the time required. The

training of cavalry and artillery units will take longer still: one witness put the annual training required at four months: and it is obvious that it may be impracticable to obtain recruits willing to accept so severe an obligation, until the national conscience has been more fully educated in the duties of citizenship than it is at present. Secondly, it is agreed that it may be difficult to find recruits who in civil life are used to horses and horsemastership, and who would be able to afford the cost of providing their own horses. It is admitted that cavalry units would have to be raised on the yeomanry or silladar system. Finally, the equipment of cavalry and artillery units is much more expensive than that of infantry units: and in all the circumstances it may well be doubted whether it would be worth while at present to spend any considerable sum of money on Territorial cavalry and artillery, to the prejudice, possibly, of the development of other branches of the Force in which real efficiency is more readily obtainable. Our conclusion in the matter is that no attempt should be made to raise cavalry or artillery unless and until our recommendations for the improvement of the infantry arm have been carried out, and a higher standard of efficiency in the infantry has actually been reached. We are, however, definitely of opinion that Government should then make the attempt, if conditions otherwise appear to be favourable and at the time should consider the possibility of diversifying the training in the University Training Corps by giving artillery training therein. For we recognise that the desire to develop the Territorial Force all round is one which ought to be met so soon as material circumstances afford the prospect of success. The attempt need not be long postponed. We are sanguine enough to hope that, without departing from the conditions which we propose, a beginning may be made with a few squadrons of cavalry and a battery of artillery within the next four years.

It should, however, be possible to raise in the near future Signal Sections, Pioneer Companies and Army Troops Companies of Sappers and Miners. There are also certain other branches of the military organisation which it would be possible and advantageous to include at once in the Territorial Force, *e.g.*, Electrical and Mechanical Companies, Mechanical Transport Sections, Railway, Medical and Veterinary units. The object of forming these latter units will be to utilise for a valuable military purpose the professional and mechanical efficiency acquired by citizens in their peace-time avocations. No extensive military training is required in the case of units of this character.

Advisory Committees.

17. The evidence we have heard has made it clear that reform is urgently needed in regard to one fundamental part of the administrative machinery of the Territorial Force, namely the Advisory Committees. While it appears that in some provinces these Committees have in the past

performed valuable services in bringing units into being and in watching over their interests, the majority of our witnesses have given it as their opinion that the Advisory Committees, as at present constituted, are of little or no value. The functions of these Committees under the Indian Territorial Force Act are prescribed in Section 30 of the Rules under the Act, which runs as follows :—

" The Advisory Committee may, in relation to that portion of the Indian Territorial Force which is located within the province for which it is constituted, make recommendations to the General Officer Commanding the District concerned—

(*a*) on applications forwarded to it by the Officer Commanding a corps or unit under sub-rule (2) of rule 13;

(*b*) regarding the period or periods in which the prescribed training is to be carried out in each year by any corps or unit;

(*c*) regarding the time and place at which the annual training in camp of a University Corps shall be undergone ;

(*d*) regarding any matter relating to recruitment for the Indian Territorial Force ; and

(*e*) regarding any matter which may be referred to it for advice by the General Officer or Officers Commanding the District or Districts comprised in the province."

We consider that the failure of these Advisory Committees to make their influence felt is due to three main causes. Firstly, they are limited to three members, and with this limitation of numbers they cannot be sufficiently representative. Secondly, if an attempt is made to secure that the Committee should represent all parts of a province, it then becomes impossible in practice to assemble the members for meetings except at very infrequent intervals. Thirdly, their duties are insufficiently defined and no definite responsibility is placed upon their shoulders.

We are of opinion that Advisory Committees, provided that they are constituted on proper lines, can and should play a leading part in making the Territorial movement a success. If this movement is designed to lay the foundations of India's national army, the people of India must make themselves responsible for its success, and it must lie with the non-official leaders of the people even more than with the Government to foster its growth. It should devolve upon the leaders of the people to bring forward recruits, to guarantee their suitability for enrolment, and to ensure their attendance for training, the responsibility of the Government being confined in the main to the military training, and the military and financial administration of the force. This is the ideal at which all Indians should aim, who would see their country capable of defending herself, and the Advisory Committees should become the channels

through which they can arrive at it. However strong the unofficial representation on the Advisory Committees may be, they cannot exert their influence effectually unless they are given specific duties in connection with the Force, and we are of opinion that the responsibility for recruiting, subject of course to the observance of the military and other standards prescribed, the responsibility for advising Local Governments as to when it is possible or desirable to raise new units, and the responsibility for encouraging by effort and example the growth and popularity of the movement in general, should be formally laid upon them. These are our views as regards the essential point of principle involved. Elsewhere in our report we have made certain further recommendations for the expansion of the existing system of Advisory Committees.

Form of Commission for Officers.

18. There is no doubt that the recruitment of suitable officers for the Indian Territorial Force has been considerably impeded by the unpopularity of the form of Commission which has been granted in the past. Under the Indian Territorial Force Act officers of the Territorial Force are, in respect of powers of command and matters affecting their status, governed by the Indian Army Act which provides only for Indian officers commissioned by His Excellency the Viceroy in an Indian rank, that is, as Subedars, Jemadars, etc. These ranks are suitable for the platoon commanders, that is, for those officers who perform the same duties as the Subedars and Jemadars of the regular army; for it would be incongruous, and would give rise to grave difficulties, if the officers of the second line were at any time invested with higher powers than officers holding corresponding positions in the first line. For the remaining officers of a battalion, however, something different is required: and actually, in pursuance of an undertaking given by Government separately, in order to stimulate the development of the Territorial Force, all Territorial Force officers have in addition to their commissions as Subedar or Jemadar been granted Honorary Commissions in His Majesty's Indian Land Forces, which carry with them British designations. This dual form of commission, as many witnesses have impressed upon us, so far from having the effect intended, has given dissatisfaction to those who hold it and has discouraged others from becoming officers. The honorary British rank, combined as it is with Jemadar's or Subedar's pay and powers of command, is regarded as illusory and valueless, and the Viceroy's commission, taken by itself, is held to be inadequate and inappropriate. We agree in the main with these criticisms, and we recommend that in future a new form of commission should be instituted for the officers of the higher grades in the Indian Territorial Force, *i.e.*, for those who hold appointments corresponding to those held by King's Commissioned officers in the regular Indian Army. The form of commission which we recommend is one to be granted

by His Excellency the Governor-General in the name of His Majesty the King as shown in Appendix 2. This form of commission is based on that granted to officers of the Canadian Militia. The platoon commanders of the Force should, however, continue to receive commissions granted by the Viceroy as Subedars and Jemadars. In order that they may be on an equality with the platoon commanders of the regular Indian Army, we recommend that they should not continue to be granted Honorary British rank in addition.

The form of commission to be held by officers of the Auxiliary Force, as constituted under the Act of 1920, has hitherto not been finally determined. We, therefore, think it appropriate to take the opportunity of making definite recommendations on this point, and we consider that the most suitable form of commission for the Auxiliary Force (as for the Indian Territorial Force) would be a commission given by His Excellency the Governor General in the name of His Majesty the King.

The Grant of Pay.

19. The members of the old Volunteer Force, which was the precursor of the present Auxiliary Force, received no pay either in camp or when doing their periodical parades, but each commanding officer of a unit received a capitation grant on account of each effective member of his corps out of which he paid for the upkeep and administration of the corps. Since the Great War a system of pay has been introduced for members of the Auxiliary Force, which includes payment not only for periods spent in camp, but also for periodical parades. We consider that this system of extended remuneration is uneconomical and unnecessary. In our view a man who undergoes a period of training for a few hours after his day's work is over is only performing a part of his duty as a citizen and is even being made more efficient for his daily work by reason of the training he receives at the expense of the State ; and, provided that he is put to no actual expense in proceeding to and from the parade ground, has no claim to any pay, as such, for that parade. In the case of absence from his home for training in camp, covering a period of days, the additional burden undertaken by, and the additional inconvenience caused to, the individual justify the grant to him of pay. We therefore recommend that in the Auxiliary Force, and in the urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, which are organized and trained on a similar system, adequate concessions should be granted in the shape of allowances to cover actual out-of-pocket expenses in connection with attendance at parades, but that pay should be given only for days spent in camp. This is the system in vogue in the Territorial Army in England. We give elsewhere the precise details of the scale of pay, camp allowances, capitation grant, etc., which we recommend.

We do not fail to recognise that the change here proposed may be unpopular. But the remarks which we have made in paragraph 14 preceding are applicable here also. If the restriction of the grant of pay which we recommend has the result of diminishing the number of men willing to join the Auxiliary Force, those eliminated will in general be men who are not worth retaining. And it must be borne in mind that membership of the Auxiliary Force is claimed as a right and a privilege, no less than it is regarded as the performance of a service to the State.

The observations which we have here made on the subject of pay do not of course apply to the provincial battalions of the Territorial Force. Since these are required to undergo periodical training in camp of a more rigorous character and for relatively long periods, the question of the system and scale of pay which they should receive stands upon a different footing : and we have dealt with this matter elsewhere in our report.

The Expansion of the Indian Territorial Force.

20. We have already stated our view that the University Training Corps should be regarded as the foundation of the national army and as the primary means of diffusing military knowledge and training, and that no artificial limits should be set to its expansion. We desire to reiterate this opinion and definitely to recommend that the University Training Corps should be treated as separate from the active sections of the Indian Territorial Force, and should not be subject to any limitations on the strength of the latter which may be imposed from time to time in the light of military and other considerations.

We have also recommended, in paragraph 10 preceding, the early formation of urban battalions or companies and, in the concluding portion of paragraph 16 preceding, the immediate creation of certain technical units. As regards expansion of the Indian Territorial Force in other directions, the first principle we wish to lay down is that it is from every point of view useless to expand an inefficient force. Consequently, we recommend that in the first instance the existing provincial battalions should be placed on a sound basis in regard to training, in conformity with the detailed proposals we make elsewhere, and that the question of expansion should then be considered in the light of the standard of efficiency which the provincial battalions show themselves capable of achieving. Expansion in the case of these battalions and of the other units, the formation of which we have recommended in paragraph 16 preceding, should not in any event proceed beyond the limits of what is required on military grounds to constitute a second line to the regular army of adequate strength and composition : and no new unit should be created save with the concurrence of the Local Government of the area concerned. As already premised, the Local Governments will rely largely upon the advice and the promise of support of the Advisory Committees.

If the principal measures which we advocate in this report are adopted by the Government, we contemplate that some substantial measure of expansion will be found in the not remote future to be both feasible and desirable. There is evidence to show that in certain areas scope already exists for a useful enlargement of the Force, provided necessary reforms are first carried out and sufficient machinery for training and instruction is provided.

The Removal of Racial Distinctions.

21. The demand which has occasionally been put forward in general terms for the amalgamation of the Auxiliary Force and Indian Territorial Force, does not, we believe, indicate any real desire for the actual fusion of the two forces. The Indian does not really wish to be associated in the same units with Europeans and Anglo-Indians and to eat, sleep and carry on his day's work side by side with them. The real objective of those who have suggested amalgamation is to see the two forces assimilated as far as possible in respect of conditions of service, etc. We have attempted to ascertain from our witnesses the main causes of the grievance which many educated Indians appear to have against the Auxiliary Force. We believe that the grievance arises chiefly out of distinctions at present made in regard to (i) liability for service, (ii) the form of commission granted to officers, (iii) facilities for training, and (iv) general treatment in the matter of pay and allowances. If our recommendations are accepted, the distinctions which exist under the first three heads will disappear. As regards pay and allowances and conditions of service generally we have put forward detailed proposals which will assimilate the two Forces as closely as is possible in this respect, regard being had to the difference in the mode and standard of living of the individuals who compose them, and to the fact that the Auxiliary Force is intended to be a second line to the regular British troops and the Indian Territorial Force a second line to the regular Indian Army. No one claims seriously that the private soldier of the Auxiliary Force should be paid at Indian rates, or that the private soldier of the Territorial Force should be paid at higher rates than the soldier of the regular Indian Army.

CHAPTER III.

DETAILED RECOMMENDATIONS FOR THE IMPROVEMENT AND EXPANSION OF THE NON-REGULAR FORCES AND FOR THEIR ASSIMILATION TO ONE ANOTHER.

Detailed Recommendations.

22. In the preceding chapter we have laid down the general principles which in our opinion should be adopted for the purpose of reforming and improving the Indian Territorial Force (including the University Training Corps) and the Auxiliary Force, and of eliminating differences existing at present between them, which may appear to be based solely upon a distinction of race, and which can be removed without loss of efficiency or breach of sound military principles. The application of these principles, if accepted, will involve considerable changes in the constitution, and in the system of training and administration of the two forces. Some of these changes will call for additional expenditure and others for the amendment of the Acts under which the Forces are constituted. The changes which we recommend in matters of major importance are set forth below, and our recommendations on points of less important detail are contained in the Annexure. We have dealt with the Auxiliary Force under the same main headings as the Territorial Force, as we found this to be necessary if we were to achieve the essential purposes of our inquiry.

UNIVERSITY TRAINING CORPS.

FIRST TERM OF REFERENCE.

Improvement.

University Training Corps: Improvement.

23. (I) *Functions and Objects.*—The function of the University Training Corps should be primarily educational.

They should be regarded definitely as the foundation upon which the Indian Territorial Force, and later the Indian national army, is to be built up, and should become one of the recognised recruiting grounds for the officers, non-commissioned officers and men of this Force. In time they should develop also into a potential source of supply of candidates for commissions in the regular Indian Army.

(II) *Liability.*—The University Training Corps should have no liability for actual military service.

(III) *Organisation.*—The University Training Corps are at present organised as infantry battalions ; this organisation is in our opinion the most suitable for providing the groundwork of military

training and discipline, which these Corps are intended to give. We, therefore, recommend that there should be no change in their organisation.

(IV) *Composition.*—(i) *Men.*—The members of the University Training Corps should be drawn from the staff and students of Universities and Colleges, as at present. All members of a University or College, whether Indian or Anglo-Indian, should be eligible for enrolment, and the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, should be amended so as to allow of this.

(ii) *Officers.*—(*a*) The officers of the University Training Corps should be drawn primarily from among the teaching staff of Universities and Colleges, since they by their age and position are most suited to the task, and alone are likely as a rule to continue as officers in the University corps long enough to justify their being granted commissions. If, however, sufficient suitable candidates for commissions are not available from among the teaching staff, officers should be chosen from among the post-graduate students, particularly from among those who intend to take up teaching as a profession; and finally, if this source also fails to provide the necessary numbers, from among suitable selected senior students.

(*b*) All members of the teaching staff, whether European, Indian or Anglo-Indian, should be eligible to become officers in these corps, and the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, in so far as it deals with the eligibility of persons to serve in the University Training Corps, should be amended so as to allow of this.

(*c*) In order to attract suitable men to become officers and to enable them to make themselves efficient without pecuniary loss, officers of the University Training Corps units should on first appointment receive commissions as 2nd Lieutenants on a special list of the Indian Territorial Force, or, in the case of Europeans and Anglo-Indians, of the Auxiliary Force, and should be subsequently seconded for duty with the University Training Corps ; they should be paid as such for any period spent in camp or at a course of instruction.

(V) *Training.*—(i) *Men.*—(*a*) Since this system alone is adapted to the needs of University life, the University Training Corps should continue to be trained as at present, *i.e.*, on the system laid down in Section 16 (2) of the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920.

(*b*) The subordinate instructional staff should continue to be drawn from British Regiments. The greatest care should be taken in the selection both of the Adjutants and the subordinate instructional staffs, and they should not be changed more often than is absolutely necessary.

(ii) *Officers.*—Too much importance cannot be attached to the training of officers, and every facility and encouragement should be given to them to become proficient in their duties. On first

appointment they should undergo a recruits course under the instructional staff of their own corps, and should then be attached to selected regular units, British or Indian, for six months, either in one continuous period or in two periods of three months each, as may be most convenient to the University or College authorities, before they are confirmed in their commissions. They should have the same opportunities for undergoing courses of instruction at Army schools as are recommended for other Indian Territorial Force officers.

SECOND TERM OF REFERENCE.

Expansion.

The University Training Corps: Expansion.

(VI) The University Training Corps should be allowed to expand up to its natural limits, subject only to financial considerations permitting of this. The military authorities should place no obstacle in the way of any University or College forming a Contingent of the University Training Corps, provided that the University or College authorities can guarantee a fixed minimum number of members and can provide suitable officers. In similar manner no hindrance should be placed in the way of a University or College situated in an Indian State which wishes to form a contingent.

THIRD TERM OF REFERENCE.

Removal of Racial Distinctions.

The University Training Corps: Removal of Racial Distinctions.

(VII) All members of a University or College, who are British subjects, regardless of race or colour, should be eligible for enrolment in the University Training Corps, and the Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920, should be amended so as to allow of this.

GENERAL.

The University Training Corps: General.

(VIII) (*a*) We recommend to University and College authorities the desirability of allowing the days on which members of their Universities or Colleges attend a University Training Corps camp to count towards University or College attendances. This practice has already been introduced in some Universities, but is not universal.

(*b*) In order to ensure that mutual co-operation between the military and University authorities, which alone can ensure the success of the University Training Corps movement, there should be instituted a definite system of technical inspection, and of liaison between the two authorities, so that both may know to whom to look for advice and assistance in case of necessity.

(*c*) A special certificate or certificates of proficiency should in course of time be instituted in University Training Corps units on the lines of the A. and B. Certificates in Officers Training Corps in England, the holders of which should be entitled to a proportion of marks in the competitive examination for Sandhurst, provided that they qualify in all the subjects of the examination in which it is necessary for them to qualify.

(*d*) On his discharge from a University Training Corps each member should be given a discharge certificate showing not only, as at present, the length of his service and his military character, but also the details of any courses of training which he has undergone, and any special military qualifications which he may possess, *e.g.*, whether he is a holder of one or both of the certificates proposed in the preceding paragraph.

INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

First Term of Reference.

Improvement.

The Indian Territorial Force : Improvement.

24. (I) *Functions and Objects.*—The active section of the Indian Territorial Force should be regarded as :—

(i) a means of imparting military and patriotic ideals to the non-martial classes and of familiarising them with military training and service;

(ii) a second line to the regular Indian Army, its functions as such being, firstly—to relieve regular units of garrison duties, etc., in time of war, secondly—to reinforce the first line in time of war, and thirdly—to be used in aid of the civil power, if the local civil and military authorities consider it desirable that territorial units should be embodied for this purpose.

(II) *Liability.*—To enable the Indian Territorial Force to carry out its function as a second line to the regular army it should have, as at present, a liability for general military service. The enforcement of liability to service beyond the borders of India should, however, still be subject to a general or special order of the Governor-General in Council.

(III) *Organisation.*—In order that the force may carry out its rôle as a second line to the regular Indian Army it must be organised on exactly the same lines as the regular Indian Army. This involves only one change from the present system of organization in the provincial battalions, *viz.*, in regard to the officer ranks. In

future the platoon commanders should rank as Subedars and Jemadars only, and should not be granted Honorary King's Commissions in addition, and the higher grades from Company Officer upward should rank as 2nd Lieutenants, Lieutenants, etc.

(IV) *Composition.*—(i) *Men.*—(*a*) There should be two classes of units, the one recruited from rural areas and the other from the towns. The composition of the former should be as at present, but the Advisory Committees should be required to make special efforts to enrol in them those classes which do not ordinarily enrol in the regular Indian Army, and every encouragement should be given to educated men to form their own class platoons consisting of men of the same social status. The urban battalions should at the start be open to all educated men of good social position, but in course of time recruiting for the urban battalions should be limited, as far as practicable, to those who have had previous military training in a University Training Corps.

(*b*) The composition of new units should be determined on the advice of the Local Government, given after consultation with the local Advisory Committee and the local military authorities.

(*c*) We have investigated the complaints of the Parsee community with regard to the conditions of service in the Parsee units of the Indian Territorial Force, and we find that these are based on a misconception. When these units were raised, their members were promised certain concessions. These concessions, which concerned their system of training, rations, clothing and accommodation, have all been granted to them. If our proposals for the formation of urban units of the Indian Territorial Force are accepted, the system of training in the Parsee units will accord with that of the urban units of the Force, and we are satisfied that, with the possible exception of rations, there are no points in respect of which they should receive different treatment from those urban units.

(ii) *Officers.*—(*a*) It is difficult to prescribe any fixed rules for the selection of officers for appointment to direct commissions in the higher grades, and to weigh the relative advantages of educational qualifications, social status and local influence. But we consider that the following general principles should normally guide the selection of officers :—

Firstly, they should be chosen primarily from the same classes from which the men of the unit are drawn. Racial, religious and even provincial differences are still so strong that the best results can probably be obtained by the adoption of this method.

Secondly, provided that in other respects they possess the necessary qualifications for holding commissions, preference should be given to those men who, by reason of their social

standing and influence, may be expected to possess the power of leadership, which is the first essential in an officer.

Thirdly, where possible, officers should be chosen from among men who have had previous military training in a University Training Corps. This early training will, as the efficiency of the University Training Corps increases, ensure that they already have a sound grounding in military matters, and this, combined with their superior educational qualifications, should enable them to become efficient in less time than those who have not the same advantages.

Fourthly, there should be no bar to individuals, who are suitable and have the necessary qualifications, obtaining commissions in the higher grades from the lower grades or from the ranks.

We are convinced that it is necessary to require the Territorial officer to reach a much higher standard of professional skill and knowledge than is at present contemplated. As matters stand now, one of our witnesses, a Territorial Force officer, had never envisaged the possibility of a Territorial unit taking the field under a Territorial Force commander. We, therefore, recommend, in so far as direct commissions in the higher grades carrying with them British rank are concerned, that only those who possess the same social and educational qualifications as are required of Indian candidates who desire to enter Sandhurst, should be eligible for such commissions. Other things being equal, preference should be given to those who have undergone previous military training in a University Training Corps, and who are in possession of satisfactory discharge certificates from their corps. Those who apply for this form of commission should be required to qualify by the same examination as is from time to time prescribed for Indian candidates for Sandhurst. In this examination a proportion of marks should be allowed to any candidate who possesses a satisfactory discharge certificate from a University Training Corps. We realise that these proposals will, if carried into effect, press hardly upon those who have been selected in the past for commissions in the Force, and from whom such high qualifications were not demanded at the time of their selection. We feel, however, that, before they can be admitted to the higher grades, they must be recommended for such promotion by the Commanding Officers of their units, and qualify by the same standards which we have advocated above for direct commissions in these grades.

It will be necessary to frame special rules to govern the cases of officers promoted from the lower grades and from the ranks to the higher grades.

The selection of officers for the lower grades, *i.e.*, the platoon commanders, should normally be from the ranks, in order to give the necessary incentive to the non-commissioned officers to increase

their efficiency. There should, however, be no bar to the admission of individuals into these grades by direct commission.

(*b*) The officers of the lower grades, *i.e.*, Subadars and Jemadars, should be granted commissions similar to those given at present to officers of those ranks in the Indian Territorial Force. These commissions are granted by His Excellency the Viceroy.

The officers of the higher grades, *i.e.*, 2nd Lieutenant and above, should receive commissions in the Indian Territorial Force granted by His Excellency the Governor-General in the name of His Majesty the King in the form shown in Appendix 2, which we have also recommended for officers of the Auxiliary Force.

(V) *Training.*—(i) *Men.*—(*a*) The training of the provincial battalions should be on the present system and should consist of preliminary training in the first year and periodical training in each subsequent year. The minimum periods of training should be three months in the first and two months in each subsequent year.

Provided that the provision of the necessary personnel is practicable, one regular Indian officer per company and one regular non-commissioned officer per platoon of the enrolled strength of each provincial Indian Territorial Force unit should be attached to the regular Training Battalion, to which the territorial battalion is affiliated, under an arrangement similar to that obtaining at present for British officers seconded as Company Commanders of Indian Territorial Force battalions.

(*b*) The training of the urban battalions should be on the system at present in force in the Auxiliary Force and University Training Corps, *i.e.*, a fixed number of drills to be performed throughout the year, with a short period of continuous training in camp.

(*c*) The regular officers selected for the appointments of Adjutants of Indian Territorial Force battalions should for the present be sufficiently senior in rank and service to ensure that they will take command of their units during the training period.

(ii) *Officers and non-commissioned officers.*—(*a*) Every facility and encouragement should be given to officers and non-commissioned officers to make themselves proficient—

Firstly, by attachment to regular Indian Army units;

Secondly, by platoon commanders and non-commissioned officers courses. The scope of these should be developed as the Force develops, in order ultimately to train efficient company commanders and battalion commanders; and

Thirdly, by courses of instruction in musketry, physical training, etc., at Army Schools, when their standard of training admits of it.

(*b*) The examinations of officers for retention and of officers and non-commissioned officers for promotion should be made a thorough

test of efficiency. The period within which an officer is required to qualify for retention might be extended from two to three years at the discretion of his Commanding Officer.

Second Term of Reference.

Expansion.

The Indian Territorial Force: Expansion.

(VI) (*a*) Apart from the University Training Corps, to the expansion of which we have recommended that no artificial limit should be set, we consider that no general expansion of the Indian Territorial Force should be undertaken unless and until the existing provincial battalions have been made more efficient by the adoption of the methods which we have separately proposed. To this recommendation of general principle we make certain specific reservations in the paragraphs which follow.

(*b*) A limited number of urban companies or battalions should be raised in large centres. They should be recruited at first from men of education and good social status, but should later be confined as far as is practicable to those who have had previous military training in University Training Corps.

(*c*) When the provincial infantry battalions have attained to a higher standard of efficiency, an attempt should be made to raise a few cavalry squadrons in those districts where it is possible to recruit men who are in a position to do six months' training in the first year and three months' training in each subsequent year, and who can provide their own horses.

(*d*) Two Electrical and Mechanical Companies should be raised as soon as possible in the large centres of population from among the employees of engineering firms, etc.

(*e*) One Light Railway Company should be raised at once from railway personnel.

(*f*) Two Mechanical Transport Sections should be raised as soon as possible in the large centres of population.

(*g*) One Veterinary unit should be formed as soon as possible.

(*h*) An Indian Territorial Force Medical Corps should be constituted, consisting of a general list of officers available for attachment to Indian Territorial Force units, and of Indian Hospital Corps Companies. There should be no limit to the establishment of the former, as many qualified men being admitted as are procurable. They should be given preliminary training in military medical administration at the most convenient station hospital, and should subsequently be attached for training with units as funds

permit. Indian Hospital Corps units should be raised on the advice of local Governments, after consultation with the military authorities and the Provincial Advisory Committee.

(*i*) There are special difficulties, administrative and financial, in the way of raising and training units of the more technical arms, such as Artillery and Engineer Field Companies. We do not, therefore, recommend the immediate formation of such units, but desire to express the opinion that development of the Territorial Force in these directions should be undertaken as soon as the training of the primary arm, *i.e.*, infantry, has been placed upon a satisfactory footing.

(*j*) We have included in Appendix 3 model schemes for the formation of small units of Signals, Pioneers, Engineers and Artillery.

(*k*) It has been suggested to us that technical units of the Indian Territorial Force might be formed from among the Indian personnel of railways and trained for employment with Auxiliary Force Railway Corps. We recommend that, if our proposals for the reorganisation of the Auxiliary Force Railway Corps [*vide* paragraph 25 (*V*) (*b*)] are accepted, this suggestion should also be adopted, and that in certain of the large railway centres the experiment should be made of forming Indian Territorial Force railway units for use on the railways side by side with Auxiliary Force Railway Corps.

THIRD TERM OF REFERENCE.

Removal of Racial Distinctions.

(VII) On this subject we have nothing to add to the observations contained in paragraph 21 preceding.

The Indian Territorial Force : Removal of Racial Distinctions.

AUXILIARY FORCE.

FIRST TERM OF REFERENCE.

Improvement.

25. (I) *Functions and Objects.*—The Auxiliary Force should be regarded as a potential second line to the regular British troops in India and its functions should be :—

The Auxiliary Force : Improvements.

Firstly, to relieve regular troops of garrison duties, etc., in time of war,

Secondly, to reinforce the first line in time of war, and

Thirdly, to be used in aid of the civil power, if the local civil and military authorities consider it desirable that any unit of the Auxiliary Force should be embodied for this purpose.

(II) *Liability.*—To enable the Auxiliary Force to qualify as a potential second line to the regular British troops in India, it should have a liability for general military service. The enforcement of liability for service beyond the borders of India should, as in the case of the Indian Territorial Force, be subject to a general or special order of the Governor-General in Council.

(III) *Organization.*—We do not recommend any change in the present organization of the Auxiliary Force.

(IV) *Composition.*—(i) Under the Auxiliary Force Act, 1920, the following are eligible for enrolment in the Force :—

" every person who—

(*a*) is a European British subject as defined in the Code of Criminal Procedure, 1898, or

(*b*) was, on the 30th day of September 1920, enrolled or deemed to be enrolled under the Indian Defence Force Act, 1917 (not being a person enrolled under the provisions of section 12 of that Act), or

(*c*) is a British subject of European descent in the male line; or

(*d*) not being a British subject, satisfies the conditions prescribed for enrolment of persons of that class."

We consider that the special and temporary concession permitted by sub-section (*b*) should now cease to be operative, and we recommend the excision of that sub-section from the Act. A reservation should, however, be made that any person, who is a member of the Auxiliary Force under the operation of this sub-section on the date on which it is removed from the Act, shall be permitted to continue serving in the Force, provided he accepts the extended liability.

We are also of opinion that the Auxiliary Force should now be confined to British subjects. This is an almost necessary corollary to our proposal that the liability of the Force should be extended to service beyond the limits of India. We, therefore, recommend the excision of sub-section (*d*).

We wish to make it clear that it is our opinion that all members of the Anglo-Indian community who fall within the definitions suggested in this paragraph should, on enrolment in the Auxiliary Force, be entitled, as regards their position in the force, to precisely the same privileges as British subjects of pure European descent.

(ii) We recommend that officers of the Auxiliary Force should in future receive commissions in the Auxiliary Force granted by His Excellency the Governor-General in the name of His Majesty the King in the form given in Appendix 2, which we have also proposed for officers of the Indian Territorial Force.

(V) *Training.*—(*a*) We recommend no increase in the periods of training laid down in the Auxiliary Force Act; but, wherever possible, members should be given every encouragement to carry out more than the statutory periods.

(*b*) It has been suggested to us that the present system under which the railway units of the Auxiliary Force are constituted and trained as Infantry units is not of an entirely practical nature. It has been pointed out that in an emergency the personnel of these Corps, being required for their normal railway duties, would not as a rule be able to do more than maintain communications. They would provide for their own personal defence while so doing but would not be available for military duties of a more general character. The suggestion has been made that in future these Railway Corps should be organised on a purely technical basis and should be allotted duties akin to the work which the personnel perform in time of peace and to that for which alone they would be available when embodied. We commend this suggestion to the military authorities.

SECOND TERM OF REFERENCE.

Expansion.

The Auxiliary Force: Expansion.

(VI) We have received no evidence to indicate that any expansion of the Auxiliary Force is immediately necessary.

THIRD TERM OF REFERENCE.

Removal of Racial Distinctions.

The Auxiliary Force: Removal of Racial Distinctions.

(VII) The observations which we have made elsewhere and which are summarised in paragraph 21 preceding apply alike to the Auxiliary Force and the Indian Territorial Force.

MISCELLANEOUS.

Miscellaneous.

26. (*a*) In order that the education of the people of India in the principles of patriotic military service may be as complete as possible, we think it desirable that physical training accompanied by some form of military discipline should be adopted as part of the routine of all schools. We

commend to the educational authorities in all provinces the desirability of employing for this purpose military pensioners as instructors. We recommend, in this connection, that private and aided schools should receive assistance from Local Governments towards the expenses of such training or of any cadet corps which may be formed in them. Courses of instruction of the kind indicated will not only fit boys to obtain the fullest advantage from University Training Corps training if they proceed on to a University, but will also benefit those whose education ends at school, by inculcating some idea of discipline and of public duty, and by improving their physique.

(*b*) With the same object in view we commend to the consideration of University and College authorities the desirability of instituting for their students, in consultation with the military authorities, courses of lectures on military subjects.

(*c*) We also commend to the University and College authorities the desirability, when selecting members of their teaching staff, of giving preference, other things being equal, to persons who have undergone a course of military training in a University Training Corps, and hold satisfactory University Training Corps certificates.

(*d*) The Advisory Committees should be made entirely responsible for recruiting, in the manner and to the extent described in paragraph 17 preceding. They should, however, have no authority to interfere with the actual training, military administration and discipline of units. Advisory Committees should in future be constituted on the lines set forth in the Annexure, paragraph E:-3.

(*e*) We consider that some means should be found of attracting to the non-regular forces young men who possess high engineering qualifications, and are accordingly fitted to form a valuable technical reserve for the army. For this purpose we advocate the formation of an Engineer Branch of the Indian section of the Army in India Reserve of Officers, in which such individuals would be eligible for commissions.

(*f*) In order to facilitate recruiting, and also intensive training, in the Auxiliary Force and urban battalions of the Indian Territorial Force, a provision should be inserted in the Auxiliary Force Act and the Indian Territorial Force Act making it a penal offence for employers to impose disabilities (to be specified) on employees who belong to the non-regular forces, and thereby prejudice the rendering of efficient citizen service.

(*g*) The safe custody of arms and ammunition belonging to the non-regular forces is a matter of great importance, and so far as possible a uniform system should be adopted to regulate this matter. In Auxiliary Force units, in urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, when formed, and in University Training Corps units, arms should be kept in armouries. In provincial units of the Indian

Territorial Force arms should be kept in armouries when the units are embodied, and in arsenals when they are not embodied. Members of the Auxiliary Force or the Indian Territorial Force should not be allowed to retain their arms in their personal custody, except when special reasons of a public nature exist for their so doing.

(*h*) There has been some divergence of opinion as to the desirability of allowing Government servants to join either the Auxiliary or the Territorial Force. There appear to be three main objections to the admission of such persons to the non-regular forces :—

Firstly, they are by reason of their civil duties frequently prevented from undergoing their annual training, and they could probably not be spared from those duties in the event of a crisis necessitating the embodiment of the Forces for service.

Secondly, a civil servant of Government belonging to the non-regular forces may be placed in a very embarrassing position and become liable to severe penalties, if at the time of embodiment of his unit the military order for embodiment clashes with an order of his civil superior, requiring him to remain at civil duty.

Thirdly, under existing rules a Government servant, who joins the non-regular forces, is during embodiment entitled to his civil or military pay, whichever is the greater, and his civil pay may be far in excess of his military pay of rank and out of all proportion to his military value.

On the other hand it is desirable for the following reasons that, wherever possible, Government servants should be permitted, and indeed encouraged to join the Auxiliary Force or Indian Territorial Force :—

Firstly, if Government servants are prevented from joining, the private employer is encouraged to prevent his employees from joining.

Secondly, the presence of Government servants in the ranks serves as an example to others and assists recruiting.

Thirdly, the training has a beneficial effect, both physical and moral, on the individual.

We do not consider that the objections which have been put forward are sufficient to warrant a general rule that Government servants should not be allowed to join these Forces. We are of opinion that the matter could be appropriately and adequately regulated by the adoption of the following principles :—

(i) Government servants must, before joining either Force, obtain the written permission of their Local Government, or such authority as the Local Government may

specify for the purpose. When once this permission has been given, it will be understood that in the event of embodiment the military order will be paramount.

(ii) No charge in excess of the liability for military pay and allowances should fall on the military budget on account of the training or embodiment of any Government servant who is a member of either Force.

Moreover, we hope that Local Governments will give every reasonable facility and encouragement to their servants to join the non-regular Forces. In particular, permission should be given more freely to Government servants to join the urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, where these exist, or the Auxiliary Force, as the training is continuous and the periods of embodiment for training are short. We think it would be suitable that periods of embodiment for training or service should not count as leave under the civil rules, and that such service should be allowed to count as a qualifying period for civil leave and pension, unless the individual concerned for any special reason desires that his military service should be treated as leave.

Financial effect.

27. We have not attempted to estimate in any way the financial effect of our proposals; for any estimate which we might frame would be of little practical value until it is known to what extent the Legislature and the Government will be prepared to endorse our recommendations. We have been assured that expenditure upon the improvement and development of the Indian Territorial Force on sound lines will meet with no opposition from the Indian taxpayer. Whether this view is correct or not, we wish to make it clear that in our opinion, for the reasons stated in the debate in the Legislative Assembly as the result of which this Committee was formed, any increase in the expenditure on the Territorial Force must not be allowed in any way to prejudice the strength and efficiency of the regular army. These reasons are summarised in paragraph 1 preceding.

CHAPTER IV.

SUMMARY OF MAIN RECOMMENDATIONS.

28. Our main recommendations may be briefly summarised as follows :—

Functions and Liabilities.

(i) The University Training Corps and Indian Territorial Force should be regarded as existing primarily for the purpose of spreading military training and the inspiration to military service among the manhood of India, in order to lay the foundations upon which a national army can be built up. Such a national army can only be created by gradual stages and by a steady process of education extending over many years. This education should commence, wherever possible, in schools ; it should be continued in the Universities and Colleges by means of the University Training Corps, and should be concluded in the units of the Indian Territorial Force. The growth of a national military spirit should not be forced by the application of any measure of compulsion. [*Paragraphs 6-8, 23 (I) and 24 (I).*]

(ii) The University Training Corps should be given no liability for actual military service [*Paragraphs 9 and 23 (II)*]. The Indian Territorial Force, which is intended also as a second line of reserve to the regular Indian Army, should have a liability for general military service both within and without the borders of India, including service in aid of the civil power. Its units should be organised in every respect on the same lines as the units of the regular Indian Army. [*Paragraphs 10-13 and 24 (II) and (III).*]

The Auxiliary Force should be regarded as a second line to the regular British troops in India, and its units should be organised on the same lines as the regular British units. It should be given liabilities for service identical with those of the Indian Territorial Force. [*Paragraphs 14 and 25 (II) and (III).*]

The liability for service beyond the limits of India, in the case of both Forces, should be enforceable only in emergency and under a special order of the Governor-General in Council. [*Paragraphs 12, 24 (II) and 25 (II).*]

Composition and Training.

(iii) In order to give an opportunity to the educated classes to fit themselves to defend their country, urban units with a special composition should be created in the Indian Territorial Force, in which the system of training should be the same as that in vogue in the Auxiliary Force. [*Paragraphs 10, 15, and 24 (IV) and (V).*] These units should have the same liability for service as other units of the Indian Territorial Force. [*Paragraphs 10 and 24 (II).*]

(iv) The provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force, drawn mainly from the agricultural classes, should continue to exist, but, if they are to reach any degree of efficiency at all, their periods of training must be extended. [*Paragraphs 10, 15 and 24 (IV) and (V).*]

Improvement of Conditions of Service.

(v) The conditions of service in the University Training Corps and Indian Territorial Force should be improved. (*Paragraph 12 and Annexure.*)

Officers and men of the urban units of the Indian Territorial Force and Auxiliary Force should receive pay only for days actually spent in camp, but a sufficient scale of allowances should be introduced to prevent the individual member losing pecuniarily through attendance at periodical parades. Certain additional remuneration is necessary for members of the provincial battalions of the Territorial Force. (*Paragraph 19 and Annexure.*)

Selection and Training of Officers.

(vi) The greatest care should be exercised in the selection of officers for the Indian Territorial Force, and every encouragement and facility should be given to them to become proficient in their military duties. [*Paragraphs 15, 23 (V) and 24 (IV) and (V).*]

Form of Commission for Officers.

(vii) As the units of the Indian Territorial Force are to be organised on exactly the same lines as regular Indian Army units, platoon commanders should receive commissions granted by His Excellency the Viceroy in the ranks of Jemadar, Subadar, etc.; they should not receive honorary King's Commissions in addition. Officers of the higher grades in the Indian Territorial Force should

hold commissions as 2nd Lieutenant, Lieutenant, Captain, etc., in the Indian Territorial Force. These commissions should be granted by His Excellency the Governor-General in the name of His Majesty the King. Officers of the Auxiliary Force, as constituted under the Act of 1920, should hold commissions in the Auxiliary Force, similar to those recommended for officers of the higher grades in the Indian Territorial Force. [*Paragraphs 18, 24 (IV) and 25 (IV); Appendix 2.*]

Expansion.

(viii) The University Training Corps should not be subject to any arbitrary limitation, but should be allowed to expand up to their natural limits. [*Paragraphs 8, 20, and 23 (VI).*]

Apart from the University Training Corps, no general expansion of the Indian Territorial Force, should be undertaken, until the reforms of system advocated in this report have been carried out, and the existing units have shown themselves capable of attaining the prescribed standard of efficiency. In particular the creation of cavalry and artillery units should be postponed, but only for a few years. On the other hand, a certain number of urban units should be raised at once, and there is also no need to postpone the formation of certain technical engineering, mechanical transport, medical and veterinary units. [*Paragraphs 16, 20 and 24 (IV); Appendix 3.*]

The Indian Territorial Force should at no time be allowed to expand beyond the limits of a second line force of the strength required on military grounds. (*Paragraph 20*).

No expansion of the Auxiliary Force is necessary at present. [*Paragraph 25 (VI).*]

Advisory Committees.

(ix) The existing system of Indian Territorial Force Advisory Committees should be expanded, and these Committees should be given a wide responsibility for recruiting for the Force. [*Paragraphs 17 and 26 (d); Annexure.*]

The impulse for the creation of new units should proceed from the natural leaders of the people and the Advisory Committees, and before raising any new unit the concurrence of the Local Government should invariably be obtained. [*Paragraphs 17, 20, and 24 (VI).*]

Removal of Racial Distinctions in the University Training Corps.

(x) All members of a University or College, who are British subjects, should be eligible to join the local contingent of the University Training Corps, without distinction of race. [*Paragraphs 21 and 23 (IV) and (VII).*]

Removal of Racial Distinctions in the Auxiliary Force and Indian Territorial Force.

(xi) The Committee consider that, if their proposals are accepted regarding liability for service, system of training, general treatment, and form of commission there will exist between the Auxiliary Force and Indian Territorial Force no distinction based solely upon race to which any reasonable exception can be taken. [*Paragraphs 21 and 24 (VII); Annexure.*]

CHAPTER V.

GENERAL.

29. In considering the evidence which has been placed before us we have been very favourably impressed by the keenness and sympathy evinced by the regular officers who hold appointments as Adjutants in the Indian Territorial Force and University Training Corps. We recognise that their task in organising the units of a Force, which is admittedly in an experimental stage, has of necessity been attended with considerable difficulty. That we are in a position to make recommendations which are intended to place this experiment on a more solid and progressive footing is in itself a testimony to the good work which, in our opinion, they have performed, and, if we have had cause in the course of this report to criticise the present state of efficiency of the Indian Territorial Force, our criticisms are not directed against them, but against those limitations in the constitution of the Force, and in the rules and regulations for its government, which have prevented their labours from being crowned with a greater measure of success. Of those who were summoned to give their evidence before us in person we wish particularly to bring to notice Major H. S. Cardew, Adjutant, 11/18th Royal Garhwal Rifles and Lieutenant (local Captain) F. Maxwell-Lawford, Adjutant, Madras Battalion, University Training Corps.

30. We also desire to acknowledge the invaluable assistance we have received from Colonel J. C. Freeland, Deputy Director of Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Army Headquarters, who has acted as Secretary of the Committee. In organising methodically and energetically our programme of work, in marshalling material for our consideration, and in placing at our disposal his own intimate knowledge of the working of the Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, he has contributed materially to the results exhibited in our report, and in particular to the unanimity of the conclusions at which we have arrived.

31. We also desire to express our appreciation of the services rendered to us by Major A. F. R. Lumby, General Staff, Army Headquarters, who assisted Colonel Freeland in recording the progress of our deliberations and has been mainly responsible for the drafting of our report.

32. To our great sorrow, our colleague, Dr. S. K. Mullick, who had taken part in all our discussions and had assented cordially to all our conclusions, up to the 22nd November 1924, died very suddenly a short time thereafter from the effects of illness contracted at Delhi. The spread of the ideals for which the Indian

Territorial Force stands had formed one of the absorbing interests of Dr. Mullick's life. During the period of the Great War he was the prime mover in all recruiting work in Bengal, and in later years he became one of the most ardent supporters of the Indian Territorial Force. We wish to pay a tribute to the enthusiasm, the ripe experience and sound judgment which he brought to our deliberations and to express our profound regret that he did not live to sign our report. To his family we offer our respectful sympathy in their great loss.

(Signed) J. S. SHEA, *Lieut.-Genl.*
,, P. S. SIVASWAMY AIYER.
,, R. P. PARANJPYE.
,, L. K. HYDER.
,, AJAB KHAN.
,, H. CALVERT.
,, H. GIDNEY.*
,, SURAJ SINGH.
,, E. BURDON.
,, G. E. LLEWHELLIN.

DELHI ;
23rd January 1925.

*Signature subject to the remarks contained in the following Notes:—

I accept the Report as presented, subject to the two notes I append. These refer to certain very pressing and vital matters in connection with the Domiciled Community who are enrolled as members of the Auxiliary Force, on which matters the Committee as a whole does not consider it is in a position to make any recommendation.

Note 1.—This refers to compulsory enlistment in the Railway Battalions of the Auxiliary Force of members of the Domiciled Community in every Railway in India, as a term of employment This fact has been frankly admitted in letters addressed to me by every Agent of every important Railway in India. I submit, that, to resort to such a measure of conscription in a purely voluntary Force as is the Auxiliary Force, is, not only commercialising one's patriotism and loyalty, which in the Anglo-Indian are both traditional and inherent, but also violates the very essentials of a Voluntary Force. Moreover, with the military liability now recommended to be extended to any part of the British Empire, conscription in the Auxiliary Force should, on no account, be allowed. It would be distinctly unfair. It does not obtain in the Indian Territorial

Force and should not be resorted to in the Auxiliary Force. I have no desire to be misunderstood in this matter. My objection is against the principle underlying this arbitrary conscription on the part of the various Railways. I wish to make it quite clear that I have no desire to offer the Domiciled Community any excuse to evade its military liabilities in the Empire. Indeed, such is certainly not necessary: because the martial spirit, at all times prevailing the entire community is so engrained, so apparent and so strong, that, no matter what the circumstances might be, there would be no dearth of Anglo-Indians joining the Auxiliary Force. I am fully conscious of the various advantages secured by the community by being members of the Auxiliary Force: but, even these do not satisfy my objection to conscription by the Railways of their Domiciled Community employees *only* in a purely voluntary Force. Various Railways, *e.g.*, N. W. Railway, O. and R. Railway, E. B. S. Railway, E. I. Railway (and very soon the G. I. P. Railway), are under State management. All its employees are, therefore, Government servants. I ask, why should Anglo-Indian employees, only, in these State Railways be compelled to join the Auxiliary Force, as a term of employment, while the members of other Government Departments, such as the Secretariat, Telegraph, etc., are not similarly conscribed. I, therefore, as follows:—

"I recommend that enlistment in the Auxiliary Force should not be made a condition of employment under the Railway administrations in India, and that Government should bring pressure to bear upon the Railway administrations to give effect to this recommendation".

Note 2.—My second note may appear, on first consideration, to be *ultra vires* and outside the scope and terms of reference of this Committee; but, with all respect to the members of this Committee, I offer this note for the serious and sympathetic consideration of Government. In my opinion, this matter certainly comes within the scope of the third term of reference which this Committee has been called upon to enquire and remedy: I refer to "Removal of Racial Distinctions". I go further and say that if this Committee were to recommend to the Government of India to remove this legal hardship under which the majority of members of the Domiciled Community enrolled in the Auxiliary Force to-day suffer, it would not only pave the way for action being taken to alter this particular Section of the Criminal Procedure Code, and so bring the Domiciled Community on an equality with the other communities in the two Forces, but, it would also certainly popularise the Auxiliary Force, which is another term of reference with which this Committee has to deal. I submit that if members of the Domiciled Community, in which are included Anglo-Indians, are accepted under sub-section (*c*), Section 4, Auxiliary Force Act, as it appears in para. 25 (IV) of this Report, *i.e.*, "As British subjects of European descent in the Male line", such recognition is *a priori* evidence, and implies, that such members of the Auxiliary Force are entitled to all the privileges as are granted to the European members of that military Force—I refer particularly to the Jury rights enjoyed by European British subjects in mixed Criminal trials under the Criminal Procedure Code.

The Racial Distinctions Act, as it operates in India to-day, unquestioningly gives to the *pure* European and the *pure* Indian members of the Auxiliary and Indian Territorial Forces, their

European or Indian majority Juries in mixed criminal trials—a right which was demanded by and given to both European and Indian accused, so that each would be tried by Jury-men who were thoroughly conversant with his respective language, customs and manners. The only community in these military Forces that is denied this right is the Anglo-Indian community, unless they are able, by some supernatural means, to communicate with the spirits of their forefathers who came out to India as pioneer Englishmen in John Company's service, and obtain from them their marriage and baptismal certificates, without which documents as proofs of their legitimacy and European origin, they are denied trial by a majority Jury of their own countrymen, who are familiar with their own language, manners and customs. It cannot be denied that the Anglo-Indian of European descent in the male line is *entirely* British in his manners, ways and customs, and that his national language is that of his father—English. Nevertheless, he alone is denied an European or Anglo-Indian majority Jury in mixed criminal trials. I submit that (*i*) to accept an Anglo-Indian into the Auxiliary Force under this sub-section (*c*) which accepts him as a "British subject of European descent in the male line", (*ii*) to admit, as is recommended in this Report in para. 25 (IV)," that the Auxiliary Force should now be confined to British subjects", and also (*iii*) to recommend, as is stated in the last sub-para. of para. 25 (IV) (i) of the Report: "We wish to make it clear that it is our opinion that all members of the Anglo-Indian community who fall within the definitions suggested in this paragraph should, on enrolment in the Auxiliary Force, be entitled, as regards their position in the force, to precisely the same privileges as British subjects of *pure* European descent": in short, to treat him in exactly the same manner as if he were an European British subject, as defined in the Code of Criminal Procedure, 1898, is *a priori* evidence that he is accepted an European British subject possessing, if not a strictly legal claim, a more than moral claim for similar Jury privileges in mixed criminal trials, especially for offences he might commit whilst employed as a member of the Auxiliary Force. In presenting my second recommendation, I should like to add that, after having compulsorily enlisted the Anglo-Indian in a voluntary Force, as obtains to-day in every Railway Auxiliary Force Battalion, and in which we are recommending an extended military liability; after having recognised him for purposes of defence of the British Empire as a "British subject of European descent in the male line"; also, after having recognised him for every other purpose as the equal of an European British subject, and then to deny him the Jury rights so unquestioningly given to Europeans in the Auxiliary Force, and to Indians in the Indian Territorial Force, is, in my opinion, such marked differential treatment, and so singularly inequitable as to amount to a travesty of justice. Holding such views, I submit my second recommendation:

"I recommend that every person who is adjudged eligible to join the Auxiliary Force under the condition proposed by the Act should be made eligible for the privileges enjoyed by European British subjects in the matter of trial by Jury under the Criminal Procedure Code".

(Signed) H. GIDNEY, *Lt.-Col.*,
M.L.A., I.M.S. (Retd.).

DELHI,
23rd January 1925.

ANNEXURE.

Recommendations on points of less important detail.

The Committee make the following recommendations, in addition to those contained in the main text of their report:—

A.—PAY AND ALLOWANCES.

I.—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

1. The following should be the rates of pay and camp allowances of officers, other than Viceroy's commissioned officers:—

Description of training for which pay and allowances to be admissible.	Pay and allowances to be admissible.
(*a*) Days of actual attendance at annual training in camp.	(i) Pay and allowances as for corresponding ranks of the British Service in India. (ii) Camp allowance at Rs. 5 a day. (iii) A grant of Rs. 15 in aid of the expenses of the officers' mess for each officer feeding in the mess. This grant is not personal to officers, but is to be administered as a special grant in aid of the cost of officers' messing in each unit.
(*b*) Authorised courses of instruction in Army Schools, with regular units or otherwise.	As in (i) above.

Pay as in (*a*) above should not be admissible for a greater number of days than are laid down in the I. T. F. Rules for the annual training.

2. The following should be the rates of pay and camp allowances of Viceroy's commissioned officers, non-commissioned officers and men of urban units:—

Description of training for which pay and allowances to be admissible.	Pay and allowances to be admissible.
(*a*) Days of actual attendance at annual training in camp.	(i) Pay and allowances as for corresponding ranks of the regular Indian Army. (ii) Extra messing allowance at 5½ annas a day.
(*b*) Authorised courses of instruction in Army Schools, with regular units or otherwise.	As in (i) and (ii) above.

Pay as in (*a*) above will not be admissible for a greater number of days than are laid down in the I. T. F. Rules for the annual training.

3. The following bounties should be given, subject to efficiency:—

(*a*) Viceroy's commissioned officers, non-commissioned officers and men of urban units:—

For the completion, during the training year, of 20 days' periodical training and the musketry course laid down in regulations . . . . . Rs. 30

(*b*) Recruits:—

For the completion of the preliminary training laid down in the I. T. F. Rules within 12 months of his enrolment	Rs. 25

(*c*) Viceroy's commissioned officers, non-commissioned officers and men, including recruits:—

If he has fired the musketry course laid down in regulations	Rs. 7-8

A recruit will be eligible to earn the bounty of Rs. 7/8 for musketry as a recruit at any time within 12 months of his enrolment. He will also be eligible to earn a further bounty of Rs. 7/8 as a trained man, provided that he qualifies in both musketry courses by the second 31st March following his enrolment.

4. The following Capitation grant should be given to urban units:—

Efficient.—A member who has, during the training year, completed the periodical training laid down in the I. T. F. Rules, of which at least 8 days has been performed in camp, and who is at least a second class shot.

Grant.—Rs. 5 per officer, non-commissioned officer or man.

Extra efficient.—A member who has qualified as an "Efficient" and in addition is a first class shot and has performed at least 4 days' extra training.

Grant.—Rs. 10 per officer, non-commissioned officer or man.

Additional grant for officers, who have passed their examinations for promotion to the next higher rank:—

	Rs.
Officers above the rank of Lieutenant	20
Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants	15

Additional grant for Viceroy's commissioned officers and non-commissioned officers.

	Rs.
For every officer, havildar and naik who has passed a special proficiency test within the preceding two training years .	10

The proficiency test to consist of a practical examination in:—

(*a*) The geography of the locality in which his unit is situated.

(*b*) Practical work on the parade ground to show ability to instruct a section of men in drill, manœuvre, musketry and bayonet fighting.

(*c*) A simple tactical exercise involving a knowledge of attack and defence, outposts, reconnaissance and escort duties.

5. Members of provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force, other than officers holding British ranks, should be given a retaining fee for the months during which they do no training, this fee to be paid in a lump sum at the end of the training following the period for which it is earned, subject to the satisfactory completion of the annual training. The fee should be Rs. 15 after the first year, and should increase by Rs. 5 annually for each subsequent annual training performed up to a maximum of Rs. 30.

6. The mileage allowance authorised for the Regular Army in Army Instruction (India), 573 of 1924 (new para. 29-O. A. R., I., Volume X), should be applied to the Territorial Force. For journeys by rail, daily allowance should be given at the following rates:—

I. T. F.	Officers of the higher grade . .	Rs. 5 a day.
	Viceroy's commissioned officers . .	Rs. 2-8 a day.
	N. C. Os.	Rs. 1-4 a day.
	Men	As. 12 a day.

7. Travelling allowances for University Training Corps should be as follows:—

(i) *Travelling to and from parades.*

(*a*) *Officers* should receive a refund of any conveyance expenses incurred, subject to the proviso that no allowance will be admissible if the distance in a single direction is less than one mile. The C. O. of the unit to authorise any payments at a rate not exceeding 8 annas a mile. Where railways, tramways, or similar conveyances can be used, the actual fares only to be admissible, and in all cases public facilities to be taken into consideration in determining the rate of allowances.

(*b*) *Other Ranks.*—As at present.

(ii) *Travelling to and from camp.*

(*a*) *Officers* when travelling by rail or river should receive first class warrants and Rs. 5 a day subsistence allowance; when travelling by road the same rate as for other officers of the Territorial Force.

(*b*) *Other Ranks* when travelling by rail or river, should receive third class warrants *plus* Rs. 1/4 a day subsistence allowance; and when travelling by road, as at present.

Note:—Military Transport should be employed whenever possible for the conveyance of personnel and their kits.

8. In provincial units in which an Indian Territorial Force officers' mess is maintained, a messing allowance of Rs. 15 should be given in respect of each officer attending annual training in aid of the expenses of the Indian Territorial Force officers' mess. This grant not to be personal to officers but to be administered as a special grant in aid of the cost of officers messing in each unit, and in addition to that, officers should be allowed to draw the cash equivalent of the rations in lieu of the ration. Also, officers' messes should be allowed to obtain articles of ration from the Indian Army Service Corps on payment, at the same rates as officers of the Regular Army.

9. Travelling and subsistence allowance for recruits, including those of urban units, should be the same as allowed for other members of the Territorial Force. If they travel by rail they should receive the railway fare at third class rates.

10. Recruits, including those of urban units, should receive a mufti allowance at the same rate as the Regular Army, namely Rs. 20, after satisfactory completion of preliminary training. No further issue of mufti or mufti allowance should be made thereafter.

11. As in Burma members of the Regular Army are exempted from the payment of the capitation tax, members of the Indian Territorial Force in Burma should also be exempted.

12. (*a*) Where there is no Indian Territorial Force officers' mess, a club should be instituted as a meeting place for officers.

(*b*) Provincial units should receive an initial grant and an annual allowance for upkeep of the mess or club during the training period. Urban units should receive a monthly allowance.

13. In addition to the outfit allowance already granted, Government should supply all officers with a free issue of swords and binoculars, the latter being issued only for training and returned to store on conclusion. Officers should be permitted to purchase their swords when they resign their commission, subject to the approval of the District Commander.

Officers of the Auxiliary Force should receive similar treatment.

14. The competent military authority should have discretion to vary the ration to suit local conditions in accordance with the advice of the Provincial Advisory Committee, provided the cost of the ration is not exceeded.

15. The existing allowance of eight annas is sufficient for the actual repair of clothing but the cost of washing clothing should be paid from the camp grant.

16. Indian Territorial Force platoon commanders' pay should not be increased above that received by platoon commanders of the regular Indian Army, but they should receive the retaining fee recommended for N. C. Os. and men, *vide* para. 1 above.

17. A band allowance should not be authorised for Indian Territorial Force units generally, as the maintenance of bands is impracticable. If any individual unit wishes to start a band and can show that it is capable of doing so, a band allowance should be considered on its merits.

II—Auxiliary Force.

The following should be the rates of pay, camp allowances, bounties and capitation grant:—

1. *Officers*—

Description of training for which pay and allowances to be admissible.	Pay or allowances to be admissible.
(*a*) Days of actual attendance at annual training in camp.	(i) Pay and allowances as for corresponding ranks of the British Service in India. (ii) Camp allowance at Rs. 5 per diem. (iii) A grant of Re. 1 a day in aid of expenses of the officers' mess for each officer. This grant is not personal to officers, but is to be administered as a special grant in aid of the cost of officers' messing in each unit.
(*b*) Authorised courses of instruction in Army Schools or with regular units.	As in (i) above.
(*c*) Days of actual attendance at any assembly of members of the unit for training of not less than 3 days' duration, at which not less than 4 hours of actual work is carried out each day. (For units the members of which are widely scattered.)	As in (i) above. As in (ii) above for each member attending such an assembly at an out-station, as defined in para. 1 (i), Regulations for the A. F. (I.). As in (iii) above, for each officer feeding regularly in the mess, provided an officers' mess is maintained.

2. *Warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men—*

Description of training for which pay and allowances to be admissible.	Pay or allowances to be admissible.
(*a*) Days of actual attendance at annual training in camp.	(i) Pay and allowances as for corresponding ranks of the regular British Army in India. (ii) Messing allowance at 5½ annas a day. (iii) Marriage allowance at the rates laid down for the regular army in England.
(*b*) Authorized courses of instruction in Army Schools or with regular units.	As in (i) and (ii) above.
(*c*) Days of actual attendance at any assembly of members of the unit for training of not less than 3 days' duration at which not less than 4 hours of actual work is carried out each day. (For units the members of which are widely scattered.)	As in (i) above. As in (ii) and (iii) above for each member attending such assembly at an out-station, as defined in para. 1 (i), Regulations for the A. F. (I.).

Pay as in paras. 1 (*a*) and (*c*) and 2 (*a*) and (*c*) above will not be admissible for a greater number of days than are laid down in Schedule I of the A. F. Act, 1920, for the various arms and classes.

3. *Bounties—*

(*a*) *Warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men of the Active Class—*

	Rs.
For the completion, during the training year, of 20 days' periodical training and the musketry or gun course laid down in regulations	30

(*b*) *Recruits—*

	Rs.
For the completion of the preliminary training laid down in Schedule I of the A. F. Act, 1920, within 12 months of his enrolment	25

(*c*) *Warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men, including recruits—*

	Rs.	A.
If he has fired the musketry course or gun course laid down in regulations	7	8

A recruit will be eligible to earn the bounty of Rs. 7/8 for musketry as a recruit at any time within 12 months of his enrolment. He will also be eligible to earn a further bounty of Rs. 7/8 as a trained man, provided that he qualifies in both musketry courses or gun courses by the second 31st March following his enrolment.

4. *Capitation Grant.*

Active Class.

Efficient.—A member who has, during that training year, completed the periodical training laid down in Schedule I of the A. F. Act, of which at least 8 days, in not more than two periods, has been performed in camp, and who is at least a second class shot.

Grant.—Rs. 5 per officer, warrant officer, non-commissioned officer or man.

Extra efficient.—A member who has qualified as an Active Class "efficient" and in addition is a first class shot and has performed at least 4 days' extra training.

Grant.—Rs. 10 per officer, warrant officer, non-commissioned officer or man.

"A" Class Reserve.

Efficient.—A member who has, during the training year, completed the periodical training laid down in Schedule I of the A. F. Act, of which at least 4 days' continuous has been performed in camp, and who is at least a second class shot.

Grant.—Rs. 3 per warrant officer, non-commissioned officer or man.

Additional grant for officers, who have passed their respective examinations for promotion to the next higher rank—

Officers above the rank of Lieutenant	Rs. 20
Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants	Rs. 15

Additional grant for non-commissioned officers—

For every sergeant and corporal who has passed a special proficiency test within the preceding 2 training years .	Rs. 10

The proficiency test to consist of a practical examination in:—

(*a*) The geography of the locality in which his corps is situated.

(*b*) Practical work on the parade ground to show ability to instruct a section of men in drill, manœuvre, musketry and bayonet fighting.

(*c*) A simple tactical exercise involving a knowledge of attack and defence, outposts, reconnaissance and escort duties.

B.—TRAINING.

1. Every facility should be given for the permanent retention of a certain number of arms and rounds of ammunition by units, wherewith to raise rifle clubs during the non-training period, provided that it can be arranged by the local military authorities for these rifles and ammunition to be kept at a convenient centre in a suitable and properly protected armoury, and that the Local Government approves. Shooting and rifle clubs should be under the supervision of the Instructional Staff.

2. Company Commanders should join the unit headquarters 7 days before and remain for 7 days after the training period. Remuneration as Company Commanders should be admissible during these periods.

3. Although Army Headquarters has already taken steps to co-ordinate and bring into touch the University Training Corps in different places, Provincial Advisory Committees should do something in this direction as well.

4. Where Universities wish to institute examinations in military subjects, the military authorities should co-operate in holding examinations for A and B certificates and in providing lecturers on military subjects.

5. The military authorities should hold out facilities to University Training Corps to take part in rifle and sports meetings.

6. "Territorial Weeks" for sports and shooting competitions, to be held immediately after training, should be encouraged.

7. The calling up of I. T. F. N. C. Os. before training commences to be put through a short course of instruction in drill, is a matter which should be left to the administrative military authorities.

C.—MEDICAL.

1. Both medical officers and medical units of the Indian Territorial Force, should be attached to I. T. F. combatant provincial units during the training period.

2. Beds and mosquito curtains should be provided for each man if recommended by the local medical authorities.

D—LEGAL.

I.—Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920.

1. (i) The following should be added to Section 5 (i) of the Act:—

"provided that a person, who has been commissioned as an officer, shall be deemed to be enrolled for so long as he holds a commission"; and

(ii) Subsidiary orders (or regulations) should be issued by the Government of India or the Commander-in-Chief to provide for:—

(*a*) the age limit to which officers may serve. This should be 52 years, or on completion of 32 years' service including commissioned service in any branch of His Majesty's Indian Land Forces, whichever may happen first;

(*b*) for the acceptance of resignation of the commission before the expiry of the age or service limit;

(*c*) for the termination at any time of the commission, should such be desired by the authority granting the same;

(*d*) for the discharge from the Indian Territorial Force if the commission is terminated during the original period of enrolment, should such discharge be considered desirable.

2. Section 11 (1) of the I. T. F. Act should follow as closely as possible Section 21 of the A. F. Act and should be amended accordingly.

3. Rules in accordance with Sections 6 (1) and 7 (1) of the I. T. F. Act, to regulate appointments and transfers, should be prescribed and

should be included in Part I of the I. T. F. Rules, after Rule 10, as follows:—

Appointment.

"10A. (1) A person enrolled for a particular unit or for a corps that consists of one unit only shall be appointed to that corps or unit by the officer who enrolled him.

(2) A person enrolled for a particular corps shall, if that corps consists of more than one unit, be appointed by the Officer Commanding the District within which the neadquarters of that corps is situated to a unit of that corps.

(3) A person enrolled for a particular branch shall be appointed by the Officer Commanding the District within which the person resides to a unit of that branch situated within that District and constituted for the Province within which the person resides; or where no such unit of that branch is situated within that District by the Officer Commanding that District in communication with the Officer Commanding any other District, to a unit of that branch constituted for the Province within which the person resides.

(4) All appointments shall be reported to the headquarters of the corps or unit concerned.

Transfer.

10B. (1) The transfer to another corps or unit of a person who has been appointed to a corps or unit shall be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District within which the headquarters of the corps or unit to which the person belongs is situated.

(2) An authority who proposes to authorise a transfer shall, if the proposed transfer is to a corps or unit the headquarters of which is situated within the command of an Officer Commanding another District, before authorising the transfer obtain the concurrence of the Officer Commanding the District within which the headquarters of the said corps or unit is situated.

(3) A person who desires to be transferred shall submit his application in writing, through his Commanding Officer, to the authority competent to authorise the transfer and shall, in the application, state his reasons for desiring the transfer and the corps or unit to which he desires to be transferred.

(4) Excepting when a person has ceased to reside within the Province for which the corps or unit to which he belongs is constituted, the authority competent to authorise the transfer may refuse to authorise it.

(5) A person who has ceased to reside in the Province for which the corps or unit to which he belongs is constituted may, if not enrolled for that particular corps or unit, be compulsorily transferred to a corps or unit of the same branch constituted for the Province in which he for the time being resides; and a person enrolled for a particular corps may be compulsorily transferred to any unit of that corps.

(6) On disbandment of a corps or unit a person not enrolled for that particular corps or unit may be compulsorily transferred to another corps or unit, provided that if he was enrolled for a particular branch he is transferred to a corps or unit of that branch."

The heading of Part I of the I. T. F. Rules should be altered to read as follows:—

"ENROLMENT, APPOINTMENT TO CORPS OR UNITS AND TRANSFER."

4. Rule 12 should be re-cast as follows, in order to make clear the authority to authorise discharge:—

"*Rule 12.*—The following officers are the authorities to authorise discharges under Rule 11:—

Ground of discharge.	Authority to authorise discharge.	Ground for discharge.	Authority to authorise discharge.
In the case of persons enrolled who are commissioned officers.		*In the case of persons who are not commissioned officers.*	
1. As in sub-rule (1) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District.	1. As in sub-rule (1) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding.
2. As in clause (*a*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Governor General in Council.	2. As in clause (*a*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District.
3. As in clause (*b*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	Ditto	3. As in clause (*b*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	Ditto.
4. As in clause (*c*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	Ditto	4. As in clause (*c*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	
		(*a*) When the person enrolled is unlikely to become an efficient soldier.	(*a*) The Commanding Officer but only in the case of persons enrolled who have not completed their preliminary training.
		(*b*) All other cases	(*b*) The Officer Commanding the District.
5. As in clause (*d*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Officer Commanding the District on the recommendation of a board of at least two medical officers.	5. As in clause (*d*) of sub-rule (2) of Rule 11.	The Commanding Officer on the recommendation of a board of at least two medical officers.

A discharge duly authorised will be carried out by the Commanding Officer with all convenient speed.

Any discharge in the above table that can be authorised by the Commanding Officer may be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District, the Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in India, or the Governor-General in Council.

Any discharge in the above table that can be authorised by the Officer Commanding the District, may be authorised by the Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in India or the Governor General in Council."

The Auxiliary Force Rules regarding discharge should be recast on the lines of I. T. F. Rules 11 and 12 (amended as recommended above).

5. Rule 17 should be amended by the addition of a proviso at the end of the Rule as follows:—

> "provided that an enrolled person who is not a member of a University Corps, and who is called out or embodied for training, shall not be entitled to any such pay and allowances for any day or days he may be absent on leave during the period of training".

6. If the Committee's recommendation that officers of U. T. C. units should be officers in the I. T. F. or A. F. and that other members of the U. T. C. should have no liability for military service, amendment of the Rule 11 (3) will be neither necessary nor expedient.

7. If the recommendations of the Committee with regard to the constitution, composition and duties of Advisory Committees contained in para. E. 3 of this Annexure and in para. 26 (*d*) of Volume I of their Report are accepted, Section 12 (1) of the I. T. F. Act and Rules 29 and 30 will require amendment accordingly.

II.—Auxiliary Force Act, 1920 and Indian Territorial Force Act, 1920.

1. *Discharge.*—Amendments similar to those recommended to Rule 12 of the I. T. F. Rules (*vide* D. I. 4, above), should be made in the A. F. Rules (Rule 9).

2. *Imprisonment.*—The first proviso of Section 27 of the A. F. Act and Rule 21 (*b*) of the I. T. F. Rules should be assimilated.

3. *Discipline.*—(*a*) Units of the Auxiliary Force, Provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force and, if and when formed, urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, when embodied for training, should all be subject to military law, that is, to the Army Act in the case of the Auxiliary Force and to the Indian Army Act in the case of the Indian Territorial Force.

(*b*) When members of the Auxiliary Force and members of the urban units of the Indian Territorial Force, if and when formed, are performing drills, for which they have not been embodied, they should be subject to Rules as at present in the Auxiliary Force (*vide* A. F. Act, Sections 24, 25, 26 and 27 and A. F. Rules 15, 16, 17 and 18).

In this respect the I. T. F. Act and Rules and the A. F. Act and Rules should be similar.

(*c*) Care should be taken in amending the A. F. and I. T. F. Acts, that the special provisions for trial by criminal courts in both Acts and the Rules under them are in harmony with the Racial Distinctions Removal Act.

4. *Advisory Committees.*—The powers of Advisory Committees should be assimilated in both Forces (*vide* A. F. Act, Section 28 and Rule 11 and I. T. F. Act, Section 12 and Rule 30).

5. *Enrolment.*—(*a*) The Rules for enrolment should be simplified as much as possible and made more uniform for both forces and, as far as possible, in accordance with enrolment for the regular army in each case.

(*b*) The question regarding whipping in the Enrolment Form for the Indian Territorial Force (question 9) should be omitted. The question should be—

"Have you ever been convicted by a criminal court and, if so, in what circumstances and what was the sentence?"

(*c*) Question 12 in the Indian Territorial Force Enrolment Form should be omitted.

6. *Form of Oath.*—The Form of Oath in the Auxiliary Force should be amended, if the recommendation of the Committee regarding the liabilities of that Force are accepted.

E—MISCELLANEOUS.

1. Units should be given provincial names in addition to their army designations. Provincial Advisory Committees should be consulted in settling the former.

2. An outline of the I. T. F. Act and Rules and all orders referring to pay and allowances should be prepared in English at Army Headquarters in as simple language as possible and issued to Local Governments for dissemination by them in appropriate vernaculars.

3. Provincial Advisory Committees should be increased from three to five members, who should be selected as follows:—

One military officer ...	To be nominated by the G. O. C.-in-C., Command.
One I. T. F. officer ...	
One official or non-official member who will represent the views of the Local Government.	To be nominated by the Local Government.
Two non-official members ...	

In addition to the Provincial Advisory Committees there should be established local unit committees directly associated with individual units of the I. T. F. These local Unit Advisory Committees should consist of five members, who should be selected as follows:—

One military officer ...	To be nominated by the G. O. C. District.
One I. T. F. officer ...	
One civil official member ...	To be nominated by the Local Government.
Two non-official members ...	

The civil official member should preferably be the Collector of the District or of one of the Districts concerned.

If the unit for which a Unit Advisory Committee is constituted is recruited from such a large area that such a course is necessary, it should form sub-committees in the various Districts in order to facilitate the carrying out of its duties.

For the purpose of enabling them to carry out their responsibilities in connection with recruiting a special allotment of funds should be made to these Committees.

4. The Bihar and Orissa Companies of the 11/19th Hyderabad Regiment should be separated from the Bengal Companies of that regiment.

APPENDIX 1 (*a*).

The present composition of the Indian Territorial Force.

Provincial units—20 Battalions of Infantry.

University Training Corps—6 Battalions and 2 Companies of Infantry.

Provincial units.	Training Centres
Punjab—	
11/1st Punjab Regiment	Jhelum.
11/13th Frontier Force Rifles	Campbellpore.
11/14th Punjab Regiment	Delhi.
11/15th Punjab Regiment	Jullundur.
11/17th Dogra Regiment	Jullundur.
North-West Frontier Province—	
11/12th Frontier Force Regiment	Nowshera.
Bombay—	
11/2nd Bombay Pioneers	Bombay.
12/2nd Bombay Pioneers	Poona.
11/5th Mahratta Light Infantry	Belgaum
Bengal—	
Headquarters and 2 Companies, 11/19th Hyderabad Regiment.	Calcutta.
Bihar and Orissa—	
2 Companies, 11/19th Hyderabad Regiment	Dinapore.
United Provinces—	
11/7th Rajput Regiment	Fyzabad.
12/7th Rajput Regiment	Agra.
11/9th Jat Regiment	Meerut.
11/18th Royal Garhwal Rifles	Lansdowne.
Ajmer-Merwara—	
11/4th Bombay Grenadiers	Ajmer.
Madras—	
11/3rd Madras Regiment	Trichinopoly.
12/3rd Madras Regiment	Cannanore.
13/3rd Madras Regiment	Cannanore.
14/3rd Madras Regiment	Mercara.
Burma—	
11/20th Burma Rifles	Mandalay.

University Training Corps.	Training Centres.
Bombay—	
No. 1 (Bombay) Battalion, U. T. C.	Bombay, Poona.
Bengal—	Kirkee.
No. 2 (Calcutta) Battalion, U. T. C.	Calcutta.
United Provinces—	
No. 3 (United Provinces) Battalion, U. T. C.	Allahabad, Lucknow, Agra, Aligarh, Roorkee, Benares.
Punjab—	
No. 4 (Lahore) Battalion, U. T. C.	Lahore.
Madras—	
No. 5 (Madras) Battalion, U. T. C.	Madras, Trichinopoly.
Burma—	
No. 6 (Rangoon) Battalion, U. T. C.	Rangoon.
Bihar and Orissa—	
No. 7 (Patna) Company, U. T. C.	Patna.
Delhi—	
No. 9 (Delhi) Company, U. T. C.	Delhi.

THE PRESENT LIABILITIES OF THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

I. T. F. Act, 1920.

Section 9.—(1) Every person enrolled shall, subject to such conditions as may be prescribed, be bound to serve in any corps or unit of the Indian Territorial Force to which he has been appointed or transferred or is for the time being attached, and shall be subject to all rules and regulations that may be made under this Act relating to such corps or unit.

(2) Every person enrolled shall be liable to perform military service—

(*a*) when called out with any portion of the Indian Territorial Force by an order of the senior military officer present either to act in support of the civil power or to provide guards which, in the opinion of such officer, are essential; or

(*b*) when any portion of the Indian Territorial Force to which he belongs has been embodied to support or supplement His Majesty's regular forces in India in the event of an emergency by a notification directing such embodiment issued by the Governor General in Council and published in the *Gazette of India*; or

(*c*) when attached at his own request to any regular forces.

Section 10.—(1) No person embodied under section 9 shall be required to perform military service beyond the limits of India save under a general or special order of the Governor General in Council.

(2) Any portion of the Indian Territorial Force which, having been called out or embodied under section 9, is performing military service shall be replaced by regular troops or otherwise as soon as circumstances permit, and shall not be required to perform such service after such replacement has been effected to the satisfaction of the senior military officer in charge or after the cancellation of the order or notification under clause (*a*) or (*b*), as the case may be, of section 9.

BUDGET PROVISION, INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE, 1924-25.

	Rs.
(1) Pay and allowances of officers of the permanent staff	11,45,240
(2) Pay and allowances of warrant and non-commissioned officers of the permanent staff	1,51,510
(3) Pay and allowances of officers under training	2,81,810
(4) Pay and allowances of men under training	4,54,280
(5) Pay and allowances of clerks (6) Pay and allowances of menials	1,01,940
(7) Provisions	1,00,000
(8) (*a*) Clothing. (Maintenance)	64,600
(8) (*b*) Clothing. (Initial issues)	3,60,000
(9) Fuel and Light	35,810
(10) Maintenance of Ordnance equipment	52,340
(11) Miscellaneous stores	...
(12) Travelling allowances and incidental expenses	3,15,390
(13) Training grant	97,800
(14) Practice small arms ammunition	92,200
(15) Special expenditure on account of families of British soldiers	...
Total	33,42,920

APPENDIX 1 (*b*).

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India.

Unit.	Headquarters.	Training Centres.
Cavalry.		
Bihar Light Horse	Muzaffarpur	Muzaffarpur, Patna, Motihari, Chupra, Arrah, Samastipur, Gaya, Bhagalpore, Monghyr, Dumka, Purneah, Darbhanga.
Calcutta Light Horse	Calcutta	Calcutta.
Surma Valley Light Horse	Silchar	Silchar, Srimangal, Hellicherra, Dullabcherra.
Assam Valley Light Horse	Dibrugarh	Doom-Dooma, Panitola, Margherita, Dibrugarh, Sonari, Amguri, Marian, Nowgong, Bishnath, Thakurbari, Mangaldai, Shillong, Gauhati, North Lakhimpur, Tezpur, Makum Junction.
Bombay Light Horse	Bombay	Bombay.
Northern Bengal Mounted Rifles	Darjeeling	Darjeeling, Kurseong, Magrakata, Kalchina, Mal.
Punjab Light Horse	Lahore	Lahore, Rawalpindi, Ambala, Amritsar.
Southern Provinces Mounted Rifles	Madras	Madras, Coimbatore, Bellary, Anamalai, Salem, Nilgiri-Wynaud, Meppadi-Vizitri Manantoddy, Trichinopoly, Madura, Kodaikanal, Tuticorin, Quinlon, Peerumade, Munnar, Munddakayorm.
Chota Nagpur Regiment	Ranchi	Ranchi, Asansol, Kulti, Hazaribagh, Dhanbar, Purulia, Ranigange, Sijua, Huntodik, Jherria, Kumardholi, Jamshedpur, Hakhamines.
United Provinces Horse (Northern Regiment)	Dehra Dun	Dehra Dun, Mussoorie, Naini Tal, Agra.
United Provinces Horse (Southern Regiment).	Cawnpore	Gorakhpore, Allahabad, Lucknow, Cawnpore, Ghazipur.

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India—contd.

Unit.	Headquarters.	Training Centres.
Artillery.		
No. I (Calcutta) Bde.	Calcutta	Calcutta.
No. II (Madras) Bde.	Madras	Madras.
No. III (Rangoon) Bde.	Rangoon	Rangoon.
No. IV (Cossipore) Bde.	Barrackpore	Kankinara, Calcutta, Cossipore, Sibpore, Barrackpore, Garden Reach, Serampore, Barnagore, Gouripore, Telinapara.
No. V (Bombay) Bde.	Bombay	Bombay.
No. VI (Lucknow) Bde.	Lucknow	Lucknow
No. 14 (Bangalore) Bty.	Bangalore	Bangalore.
No. 15 (Kirkee) Bty.	Poona	Poona, Kirkee.
No. 16 (Delhi) Bty.	Delhi	Delhi.
No. 17 (Agra) Bty.	Agra	Agra.
No. 18 (Bareilly) Bty.	Bareilly	Bareilly
No. 19 (Allahabad) Bty.	Allahabad	Allahabad.
No. 20 (Cawnpore) Bty.	Cawnpore	Cawnpore.
Engineers.		
No. 1 (Calcutta) Coy.	Calcutta	Calcutta.
No. 2 (Rangoon) Coy.	Rangoon	Rangoon.
No. 3 (Bombay) Coy.	Bombay	Bombay.
No. 4 (Karachi) Coy.	Karachi	Karachi.
No. 5 (Madras) Coy.	Madras	Madras.
Infantry.		
Madras Guards	Madras	Madras.
Nagpur Rifles	Nagpur	Nagpur, Jubbulpore.
Punjab Rifles	Lahore	Srinagar, Murree, Ghora Gali, Lahore, Rawalpindi, Peshawar, Sialkot, Amritsar, Ferozepore, Ambala.

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India—contd.

Unit.	Headquarters.	Training Centres.
Infantry—contd.		
Simla Rifles	Simla	Simla, Sanawar.
Calcutta Battalion	Calcutta	Calcutta.
Bangalore Battalion	Bangalore	Bangalore.
Allahabad Rifles	Allahabad	Allahabad, Mirzapur, Chunnar, Ghazipur.
Mussoorie Battalion	Mussoorie	Mussoorie, Dehra Dun, Barlowgunj, Roorkee.
Naini Tal Rifles	Bareilly	Bareilly, Ranikhet, Naini Tal.
Tenasserim Battalion	Moulmein	Moulmein Mergui, Tavoy, Thaton, Thambyuzyat.
Bombay Battalion	Bombay	Bombay.
Cawnpore Rifles	Cawnpore	Cawnpore.
Rangoon Battalion	Rangoon	Rangoon, Syriam, Dalla, Kanaungtoe, Akyab, Twante, Kyaiktaw, Pyapon, Myaungmya, Maubin.
Nilgiri Malabar Battalion	Wellington	Wellington, Ootacamund, Coonoor, Calicut, Cochin, Kotagiri, Levedale, Coimbatore, Cannanore, Tellicherry, Alleppey, Wuilton.
Sind Rifles	Karachi	Karachi.
Hyderabad Rifles	Secunderabad	Secunderabad, Lallaguda, Purna, Hyderabad, Singareni, Dornakal, Kasipet.
Baluchistan Company	Quetta	Quetta.
Eastern Bengal Company	Dacca	Dacca, Narainguni, Chandpur, Mymensingh.
East Coast Battalion	Vizagapatam	Vizagapatam, Cocanada, Vizianagram, Deswada.
Upper Burma Battalion	Mandalay	Mandalay, Yerangyaung, Mogok, Namtu, Maymyo, Myitkyina, Meiktila.
Poona Rifles	Poona	Poona, Kurduwadi, Lonavla, Bhusawal, Panchgani.

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India—contd.

Unit.	Headquarters.	Training Centres.
Infantry—concld.		
Kolar Gold Fields Bn.	Oorgaum	Oorgaum, Champion Reef, Marikuppam, Oorgaum, Nundydroog.
Calcutta Scottish	Calcutta	Calcutta, Barrackpore.
Calcutta Presidency Bn.	Calcutta	Calcutta.
Delhi Contingent	Delhi	Delhi, Raisina, Simla.
Railway Corps.		
1st Bn., East India Rly. Regt.	Lillooah	Lillooah, Sibpur, Howrah, Asansol, Bandel, Raneegunge.
2nd Bn., East India Rly. Regt.	Jamalpur	Jamalpur, Dinapur, Dhanbad, Sahibgunj.
3rd Bn., East India Rly. Regt.	Allahabad	Allahabad, Jubbulpore, Sutna, Matai, Kalka, Ambala, Aligarh, Delhi, Tundla, Etawah, Cawnpore, Mirzapore, Moghalsarai.
Eastern Bengal Rly. Bn.	Sealdah	Sealdah, Saidpur, Kanchrapara
1st Bn., G. I. P. Rly. Regt.	Bombay	Bombay, Igatpuri, Bhusawal, Lonavla, Jubbulpore, Parel, Byculla, Kalyan, Dhond, Matunga, Manmad Itarsi, Khandwa, Sholapur, Nagpur.
2nd Bn., G. I. P. Rly. Regt.	Jhansi	Jhansi, Bina, Agra.
1st Bn., B., B. & C. I. Rly. Regt.	Bombay	Bombay, Bulsar, Rutlam, Ahmedabad, Gangapur, Lower-Parel, Churchgate.
2nd Bn., B., B. & C. I. Rly. Regt.	Ajmer	Ajmer, Bandikui, Sirsa, Phalera, Fatehgarh, Jodhpur, Abu-Road.
Burma Railways Bn.	Rangoon	Rangoon, Bassein, Toungoo, Maymyo, Insein, Mahlwagon, Henzada, Prome, Letpadan, Pegu, Mandalay, Myituge, Yamethin, Ywataung
Bengal and N. W. Rly. Bn.	Gorakhpur	Gorakhpur, Samastipur, Sonepore, Benares, Gonda.

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India—contd.

Unit.	Headquarters	Training Centres.
Railway Corps—contd.		
1st Bn., North Western Rly. Regt.	Lahore	Lahore, Moghalpura, Rawalpindi, Bhatinda, Saharanpur, Lalamusa, Peshawar, Ferozepore, Ambala, Bhawalnagar, Jind.
2nd Bn., North Western Rly. Regt.	Karachi	Karachi, Multan, Sukkur, Quetta, Kotri, Robri, Sibi.
O. and R. Rly. Battalion	Lucknow	Lucknow, Fyzabad, Moradabad, Bareilly.
South Indian Rly. Bn.	Trichinopoly	Trichinopoly, Negapatam, Villupuram, Madwa, Podanor, Calicut, Madras, Tanjore, Coonoor, Salem.
1st Bn., M. and S. M. Rly. Rifles	Perambur	Perambur, Madras, Arkonam, Rajahmundry, Jalarpet, Rayapuram, Ritraguota, Pakala, Gooty.
2nd Bn., M. and S. M. Rly. Rifles	Hubli	Hubli, Belgaum, Gadag, Bangalore, Guntakal, Poona, Castle-Rock.
1st Bn., Bengal Nagpur Rly. Regt.	Khargpur	Khargpur, Kinda Road, Santragachi, Cuttack
2nd Bn., Bengal Nagpur Rly. Regt.	Nagpur	Nagpur, Dongagarh, Adra, Bilaspur, Chakandharpur.
Assam Bengal Rly. Bn.	Chittagong	Chittagong, Badarpur, Pahartali, Lumding, Chittagong Jetties.
Machine Gun Corps.		
No. 1 Coorg and Mysore Coy.	Mercara	Mercara, Somwarpet, Pollibetta, Santaveri, Ghikmagalpur, Sallebile, Saklaspur, Mudigere.
No. 2 Karachi Coy.	Karachi	Karachi, Hyderabad, Sukkur.
No. 4 Delhi Coy.	Delhi	Delhi, Raisina.
No. 5 Agra Coy.	Agra	Agra.
No. 6 Bareilly Coy.	Naini Tal	Naini Tal, Bareilly.
No. 7 Lucknow Coy.	Lucknow	Lucknow.
No. 8 Bombay Coy.	Bombay	Bombay.

The present composition of the Auxiliary Force, India—concld.

Unit.	Headquarters.	Training Centres.
Machine Gun Corps—contd.		
No. 9 Cossipore Coy. . .	Barrackpore . .	Barrackpore, Calcutta, Jagatdal, Bhadreswar, Ishapore, Tittaghur, Kamarhatty, Cossipore, Seebpore, Fort Gloster.
No. 10 Cossipore Coy. . .		
No. 11 Allahabad Coy . . .	Allahabad . .	Allahabad.
No. 12 Cawnpore Coy. . . .	Cawnpore . .	Cawnpore.
No. 13 Yercaud Coy. . . .	Trichinopoly . .	Trichinopoly, Yercaud.
Royal Army Service Corps.		
No. 1 Rangoon Coy. . . .	Rangoon . .	Rangoon.
No. 2 Calcutta Coy. . . .	Calcutta . . .	Calcutta.
No. 3 Bombay Coy. . . .	Bombay . . .	Bombay.
No. 4 Allahabad Coy. . . .	Allahabad .	Allahabad.
No. 5 Cawnpore Coy. . . .	Cawnpore . .	Cawnpore.

The Present Liabilities of the Auxiliary Force India.

A. F. Act, 1920.

Section 18.—No person liable to perform military service under this Act shall be required to perform such service except—

(*a*) when called out with any portion of the Auxiliary Force, India, by an order of the senior military officer present either to act in support of the civil power or to provide guards which, in the opinion of such officer, are essential; or

(*b*) when any portion of the Auxiliary Force, India, to which he belongs has been embodied to support or supplement His Majesty's regular forces in the event of an emergency by a notification directing such embodiment issued by the Governor General in Council or any Local Government empowered by the Governor General in Council in that behalf and published in the *Gazette of India* or the local official Gazette, as the case may be; or

(*c*) when attached at his own request to any regular forces.

Section 19.—No person called out under clause (*a*), or embodied under clause (*b*), of section 18 shall be required to perform military service beyond the limits of the prescribed military area in which the corps or unit to which he has been appointed or is for the time being

attached is located, save when it is, in the opinion of the senior military officer present, necessary to proceed beyond those limits in the course of the military operations upon which the corps or unit or any portion thereof is for the time being engaged.

Section 20.—Any portion of the Auxiliary Force, India, which, having been called out or embodied under section 18, is performing military service, shall be replaced by regular troops or otherwise as soon as circumstances permit, and shall not be required to perform such service after such replacement has been effected to the satisfaction of the senior military officer present or after the cancellation of the order or notification under clause (*a*) or (*b*), as the case may be, of section 18.

Budget Provision, Auxiliary Force, India, 1924-25.

	Rs.
(1) Pay and allowances of officers of the permanent staff	6,72,600
(2) Pay and allowances of warrant officers and non-commissioned officers of the permanent staff	12,00,740
(3) Pay and allowances of officers under training	5,70,000
(4) Pay and allowances of men under training	25,82,000
(5) Pay and allowances of clerks (6) Pay and allowances of menials	4,08,000
(7) Provisions	1,74,100
(8) Forage	23,100
(9) Clothing	1,50,000
(10) Fuel and Light	7,750
(11) Maintenance of Ordnance equipment	1,50,000
(12) Miscellaneous Stores	...
(13) Travelling allowances and incidental expenses	7,67,330
(14) Training Grant	2,80,000
(15) Practice ammunition for artillery	1,45,000
(16) Practice small arms ammunition	4,26,400
(17) Special expenditure on account of families of British soldiers (permanent staff)	44,600
Total	75,81,620

APPENDIX 2 (*a*).

FORM OF COMMISSION PROPOSED FOR OFFICERS OF THE AUXILIARY FORCE, INDIA, AND THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

George V by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, King, Defender of the Faith, Emperor of India.

To Our Trusty and well beloved..... Greeting. We reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage, and good Conduct, do by these Presents Constitute and Appoint you to be an.....in Our Auxiliary Force, India / Indian Territorial Force from the.....day of.....19.....You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge your Duty as such in the Rank of.....or in such higher Rank as we may from time to time hereafter be pleased to promote or appoint you to, of which a notification will be made in the *Gazette of India*, and you are to exercise and well discipline in Arms, both the inferior Officers and Men serving under you and use your best endeavours to keep them in good Order and Discipline. And we do hereby Command them to Obey you as their superior Officer, and you to observe and follow such Orders and Directions as from time to time you shall receive from Us, or any your superior Officer according to Law, in pursuance of the Trust hereby reposed in you.

Given at Our....., this.....day of ..... in the Year of Our Lord One Thousand Nine Hundred..... and in the.....Year of Our Reign.

In Witness Whereof Our Governor General of India hath hereunto set his hand and Seal at.....the day and year last above mentioned.

By His Excellency's Command.

Secretary to the Government of India,
Army Department.

APPENDIX 2 (*b*).

FORM OF COMMISSION GRANTED TO OFFICERS OF THE CANADIAN MILITIA.

George V by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, King, Defender of the Faith, Emperor of India.

To Our Trusty and well beloved.....Greeting. We reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage, and good Conduct, do by these Presents Constitute and Appoint you to be an.....in Our.....Militia of Our Dominion of Canada from the.....day of.....19..... You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge your Duty as such in the Rank of.....or in such higher Rank as we may from time to time hereafter be pleased to promote or appoint you to, of which a notification will be made in the *Canada Gazette*, and you are to exercise and well discipline in Arms, both the inferior Officers and Men serving under you and use your best endeavours to keep them in good Order and Discipline. And we do hereby Command them to Obey you as their superior Officer, and you to observe and follow such Orders and Directions as from time to time you shall receive from Us, or any your superior Officer according to Law, in pursuance of the Trust hereby reposed in you.

Given at Our City of Ottawa, this.....day of..... in the Year of Our Lord One Thousand Nine Hundred..... and in the.....Year of Our Reign.

In Witness Whereof Our Governor General of Our Dominion of Canada hath hereunto set his hand and Seal at Ottawa the day and year last above mentioned.

By His Excellency's Command.

Minister of Militia and Defence.

APPENDIX 3 (*a*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF AN ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL COMPANY OF ENGINEERS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from artizan classes whose civil occupation fits them for the particular work which they will be called upon to perform in the company.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the I. T. F., with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—The Company Commander (performing in peace the duties of Adjutant and Administrative Commandant) and the Company Sergeant Major will be regulars of the Royal Engineers and will constitute the permanent staff. The remainder of the company (officers, N. C. Os. and men) will belong to the Indian Territorial Force.

(iv) *Pay.*—Company and Section officers and Section Commanders according to ranks, *plus* engineer pay. Other ranks will be graded for pay according to trade qualifications on enrolment, or subsequent regrading, at rates to be fixed in consultation with Local Governments. The initial and subsequent grading will be determined by trade tests, conducted under arrangements to be made by District Commanders. In the case of trade categories, which are sub-divided into two or more classes, no man will be graded in the higher classes unless fully qualified. Similarly, officers will not be appointed or promoted unless they are technically qualified for their appointments or promotion.

Officers and other ranks will in peace be entitled to a retaining fee, provided they carry out the annual training detailed in para. (v) below.

On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—A monthly parade, not exceeding four hours in duration, at which drill will be carried out and instruction given by lectures.

In addition, and at the discretion of the District Commander, annual embodiment for a period not exceeding 48 hours, consecutively. The work to be carried out during this period will consist of drill and instruction by means of lectures and inspections of local electrical and mechanical installations under the orders of the C. R. E.

ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Details.	British Permanent Staff.		Indian Territorial Force.							Remarks.
	Officers.	Staff Sergeants.	Officers.	Non-commissioned officers, Havildars.	Non-commissioned officers, Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	*Followers.* Class 1.	*Followers.* Private.	
Summary.										
Headquarters Section	1	1	2	8	4	71	85	7	4	
Two Erecting Sections	...	...	4	8	14	150	176	12	4	
Operating Section	...	...	2	4	7	75	88	6	2	
Total Company .	1	1	8	20	25	296	349	25	10	

Headquarters Section.			COMPOSITION IN DETAIL.								
Company Commander (Adjutant)	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2		
Company Officer (Lieutenant)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1		
Section Officer (2nd Lieutenant) (*a*)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1	(*a*) Mechanist (Machinery).	
Company Sergeant Major (Staff Sergeant Instructor)	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...		
Company Havildar Major	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Mechanist, Machinery	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Mechanist, Electrician	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Instrument repairers	...	...	...	2	...	...	2	...	...		
Quartermaster Havildar	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Fitters	...	...	...	...	...	8	8	...	...		
Electricians	...	...	...	1	...	8	9	...	...		
Turners, 1st class	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Turners, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Carpenters, 1st class	...	...	...	...	1	1	2	...	...		
Carpenters, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	3	3	...	...		
Blacksmiths, 1st class	...	...	...	...	1	1	2	...	...		
Blacksmiths, 2nd class	...	...	..	...	...	3	3	...	...		
Boilermakers	...	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	...		

ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE—*contd.*

Establishment—contd.

Details.	British Permanent Staff.		Indian Territorial Force.							Remarks.
	Officers.	Staff Sergeants.	Officers.	Non-commissioned officers, Havildars.	Non-commissioned officers, Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	*Followers.* Class I.	*Followers.* Private	
Headquarters Section—contd.			Composition in detail—*contd.*							
Electric wiremen	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...	
Electric linesmen	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...	
Ice mechanist	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	
Engine drivers, oil	...	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	...	
Engine drivers, steam	...	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	...	
Drivers, M. T.	...	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	...	
Clerk, 1st class	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	...	...	
Clerk, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Store-keeper	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Pioneers	...	...	...	...	1	21	22	...	...	

Mochi	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...		
Tailor	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...		
Cooks	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...		
Bhisties	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...		
Sweeper	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...		
Total	1	1	2	8	4	71	85	7	4		
Two Erecting Sections (each).											
Section Commander (Lieutenant)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1		
Section Officer (2nd Lieutenant) (a)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1	(a) Mechanist (Machinery.)	
Mechanist, Machinery	...	...	...	2	...	...	2	...	...		
Mechanist, Electrician	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Electricians	...	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	...		
Fitters	...	...	...	1	3	18	22	...	...		
Blacksmiths, 1st class	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Blacksmiths, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Boilermakers	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Carpenters, 1st class	...	...	...	...	1	2	3	...	...		
Carpenters, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	6	6	...	...		

ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE—*contd.*

Establishment—contd.

Detail.	British Permanent Staff.		Indian Territorial Force.							Remarks.
	Officers.	Staff Sergeants.	Officers.	Non-commissioned officers, Havildars.	Non-commissioned officers, Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	*Followers.* Class I.	*Followers.* Private.	
Two Erecting Sections (each)—contd.										
Electric wiremen	...	...	...	...	1	3	4	...	...	
Electric linesmen	...	...	...	...	...	3	3	...	...	
Pipe layers	...	...	...	...	1	6	7	...	...	
Ice mechanists	...	...	...	...	1	1	2	...	...	
Engine drivers, oil	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Engine drivers, steam	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Clerks, 1st class	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Clerks, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Storekeepers	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Drivers, M. T.	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	

Pioneers	...	...	...	...	...	20	20	...	...		
Cooks	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...		
Bhisties	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...		
Sweeper	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...		
Total	..	...	2	4	7	75	88	6	2		
Operating Section.											
Section Commander (Lieut.)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1		
Section Officer (2nd Lieut.) (*a*)	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	1	(*a*) Mechanist (Machinery).	
Mechanist, Machinery	...	...	...	2	...	...	2	...	...		
Mechanist, Electrician	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...		
Fitters	...	...	...	1	1	6	8	...	...		
Electricians	...	...	...	...	1	8	9	...	...		
Carpenter, 1st class	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	..	...		
Carpenters, 2nd class	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...		
Electric wiremen	...	...	...	...	1	2	3	...	...		
Electric linesmen	...	...	...	...	...	3	3	...	...		
Ice mechanists	...	...	...	...	1	6	7	...	...		
Engine drivers, oil	...	...	...	...	2	12	14	...	...		

ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE—*concld.*

Establishment—concld.

Detail.	British Permanent Staff.		Indian Territorial Force.							Remarks.
	Officers.	Staff Sergeants.	Officers.	Non-commissioned officers, Havildars.	Non-commissioned officers, Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	*Followers.* Class 1.	*Followers.* Private.	
Operating Section—contd.										
Engine drivers, steam	...	...	...	...	1	11	12	...	...	
Driver, M. T.	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Clerk, 1st class	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Clerk, 2nd clas	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Store-keeper	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Pioneers	...	...	...	...	...	20	20	...	...	
Cooks	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...	
Bhistis	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	
Sweeper	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	
Total	...	...	2	4	7	75	88	6	2	

APPENDIX 3(*b*).

Scheme for the formation of a Light Railway Company.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from railway servants whose peace occupation fits them for the particular work which they will be called upon to perform in the company, and who are permitted to enrol for such service by the Railway authority concerned.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment. A regular officer of the Royal Engineers will perform in peace the duties of Adjutant and Administrative Commandant, in addition to his other duties. The British officers, warrant officers and non-commissioned officers shown in the establishment will be attached until such time as Indians are available who are technically qualified and fit to hold the appointments. The remainder of the personnel will belong to the Indian Territorial Force.

(iv) *Pay.*—The Company Commander and Section Commanders when appointed, according to rank as officers of the Indian Territorial Force, *plus* engineer pay. The pay of Section officers and other ranks will be fixed in consultation with the Railway authorities.

Officers and other ranks will in peace be entitled to a retaining fee, provided that the Administrative Commandant of the Company is satisfied that they have undergone training for the period laid down for training for urban units of the Indian Territorial Force in the particular work they have been enrolled to perform in the company, either in the normal course of their civil railway occupation or otherwise, and are fitted for the duties which they will have to perform in the company.

On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—The Company will not ordinarily be embodied for training and will not be required to carry out musketry.

LIGHT RAILWAY COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(OPERATING, TRAIN CREWS, AND WORKSHOPS.)

Establishment.

Detail.	BRITISH.				INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.						FOLLOWERS.		REMARKS.
	Officers.	Warrant Officers.	Staff Sergeants and Sergeants.	Total.	Officers.	Clerks.	Havildars.	Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	Public.	Private.	
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
(i) SUMMARY.													
Headquarters	...	...	...	...	1	2	...	...	...	3	3	1	
Traffic Section	...	...	...	...	6	4	21	26	60	117	44	6	
Locomotive and Wagon Section .	...	...	...	...	3	4	21	23	123	174	20	3	
TOTAL .	...	...	...	...	10	10	42	49	183	294	67	10	
Attached .	3	2	2	7	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	5	

(ii) COMPOSITION IN DETAIL.

Headquarters.													
Company Commander (*a*)	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	(*a*) Superintendent.
Clerks	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	2	...	...	
Messengers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...	
Total Headquarters	...	...	...	...	1	2	...	...	...	3	3	1	
Attached	1(*a*)	...	...	1	...	...	...	..	..	...	..	1	
Traffic Section.													
Section Commander (*b*)	...	..	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	(*b*) Assistant Superintendent, Traffic.
Section Officers (*c*)	...	...	...	...	2	..	...	...	...	2	...	2	(*c*) Traffic Inspectors.
Subedars and Jemadars	...	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	..	3	...	3	
Clerks	...	...	...	...	...	4	...	...	...	4	...	...	
Havildars	...	...	...	...	...	...	21	...	...	21	...	...	
Naiks	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	26	...	26	...	...	
Sepoys	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	60	60	...	...	
Messengers	...	...	...	...	...	..	...	...	...	...	4	...	

LIGHT RAILWAY COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE—*contd.*

(OPERATING, TRAIN CREWS, AND WORKSHOPS)—*contd.*

Establishment—contd.

Detai	BRITISH.				INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.						FOLLOWERS.		REMARKS.
	Officers.	Warrant Officers.	Staff Sergeants and Sergeants.	Total.	Officers.	Clerks.	Havildars.	Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	Public.	Private.	
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
Traffic Section—contd.													
Bhisties	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	20	...	
Sweepers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	..	...	...	20	...	
Total Traffic Section .	..	...	...	...	6	4	21	26	60	117	44	6	
Attached .	1	2	...	3	..	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	

Loco. and Wagon Section.													
Section Commander (*d*)	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	(*d*) Assistant Superintendent, Mechanical.
Section officers (*e*)	...	...		...	2	...	...	...	...	2	...	2	(*e*) 1 Foreman, Loco., and 1 Foreman, Wagon.
Clerks	...	...		...	...	4	...	...	...	4	...	...	
Havildars	...	...	...	...	...	...	21	...	...	21	...	...	
Naiks	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	23	...	23	...	...	
Sepoys	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	82	82	...	...	
Artificers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	41	41	...	...	
Messengers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	4	...	
Coolies (*f*)	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	12	...	(*f*) Ashpit and other coolies and menials.
Bhisties	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	
Sweepers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	
Total Loco. and Wagon Section	...	...	...	...	3	4	21	23	123	174	20	3	
Attached	1	...	2	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	

LIGHT RAILWAY COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(iii) Distribution of personnel by trades.

Detail.	Subedars and Jemadars.	Clerks.	Havildars.	Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	Remarks.
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
Headquarters.							
Clerks . . .	...	2	...	...	...	3	
Traffic Section.							
Traffic Inspectors . .	3	...	...	...	...	2	
Station masters . .	3	...	...	...	...	2	
Clerks . . .	...	4	...	...	...	4	
Assistant Station masters	...	...	11	12	...	23	
Guards . . .	...	...	10	11	...	21	
Shunting jemadars .	...	...	...	3	...	3	
Pointsmen . . .	...	...	...	...	60	60	
Loco. and Wagon Section.							
Foreman, Loco. . .	1	...	...	...	...	1	
Foreman, Wagon . .	1	...	...	...	...	1	
Clerks	...	4	...	...	...	4	
Drivers . . .	...	...	20	21	...	41	
Firemen . . .	...	...	...	...	41	41	
Cleaners . . .	...	...	...	...	41	41	
Artizans (*g*) . .	...	...	1	2	23	26	(*g*) Fitters, boiler-makers, blacksmiths, carpenters, etc., includes 4 pumping engine drivers and 4 firemen for running sheds.
Artizan helpers . .	...	...	..	...	18	18	
Total	7	10	42	49	183	291	

APPENDIX 3(*c*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF A HEAVY MECHANICAL TRANSPORT SECTION OF ARMY SERVICE CORPS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from those classes whose civil occupation fits them for the particular work which they will be called upon to perform in the section.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment. All ranks will belong to the Indian Territorial Force.

(iv) *Pay.*—Section Commanders, pay of rank, *plus* corps pay; other ranks will be graded for pay according to trade qualifications on enrolment, or subsequent regrading, at rates to be fixed in consultation with Local Governments. The initial and subsequent grading will be determined by trade tests, conducted under arrangements to be made by District Commanders. In the case of trade categories which are sub-divided into two or more classes no man will be graded in the higher classes unless fully qualified.

Officers and other ranks will in peace time be entitled to a retaining fee, provided they carry out the annual training detailed in para. (v) below.

On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—(*a*) A monthly parade, not exceeding four hours in duration, at which elementary drill will be carried out and instruction given by means of lectures.

(*b*) In addition, and at the discretion of the District Commander, annual embodiment for a period not exceeding 48 hours consecutively. The work to be carried out during this period will consist of drill and instruction by means of lectures.

(vi) *Administration.*—Sections will be attached for administration and training to regular Mechanical Transport Companies.

HEAVY MECHANICAL TRANSPORT SECTION—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	Officers.	Havildars.	Naicks.	Artificers.	Rank and File.	Total.	Followers. Class I.	Followers. Private.	Remarks.
Section Commander (Lieut. or 2nd Lieut.)	1	...	..	..	...	1	...	...	
Havildars . . .	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	...	
Mechanist, Havildar .	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	...	
Artificer, Havildars .	...	2	...	...	..	2	...	...	
Drivers . . .	...	1	3	...	*72	76	...	...	*Includes 6 Lance Naiks.
Artificers . . .	...	1	2	15	...	18	...	...	
Cooks	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	
Water-carriers . .	...	...	...	...	..	.	2	...	
Sweeper . . .	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	
Cleaners . . .	...	...	...	...	...	...	10	...	
Servant for officer . .	...	..	...	...	...	...	...	1	
Total Section .	1	6	5	15	72	99	15	1	

DISTRIBUTION OF ARTIFICERS BY TRADES.

Detail.	No.
Fitters	5
Turner	1
Tin and copper-smith	1
Blacksmiths	2
Upholsterer	1
Wheelers	2
Painter	1
Electrician	1
Hammermen	2
Bellowsboys	2
Total .	18

APPENDIX 3(*d*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF INDIAN HOSPITAL CORPS UNITS OF THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from:—

(*a*) British subjects, other than Europeans, who have not served before in the regular army.

(*b*) Regular I. H. C. personnel who were discharged under the retrenchment scheme.

(*c*) Retired regular I. H. C. personnel willing to serve in the Indian Territorial Force.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment. All ranks will belong to the Indian Territorial Force.

(iv) *Pay.*—All ranks will receive pay as for corresponding ranks of the regular Indian Hospital Corps.

On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—The periods of training will be the same as for other provincial units of the Indian Territorial Force. Units will normally be attached to regular Indian Hospital Corps units or to Indian Station Hospitals for training and administration.

Officers of the Indian Territorial Force Medical Corps will be attached to units during the training period. When trained, Indian Territorial Force Hospital Corps units will be attached to combatant provincial units during the annual training period.

INDIAN HOSPITAL CORPS UNIT—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	Jemadar.	Havildars.	Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	Remarks.
Headquarters—						
Jemadar . . .	1	...	...	...	1	
Havildar Major . .	...	1	..	...	1	
Clerical Section—						
Havildars . . .	...	5	...	...	5	
Naiks	...	...	10	...	10	
Orderlies . .	...	...	...	15	15	
Stores Section—						
Havildars . . .	...	5	...	...	5	
Naiks	...	...	15	...	15	
Orderlies . . .	...	..	...	30	30	
Nursing Section—						
Havildars . . .	...	5	...	...	5	
Naiks	...	...	10	...	10	
Orderlies . . .	...	...	...	105	105	
Ambulance Section—						
Havildars . . .	...	15	...	.	15	
Naiks	...	...	15	...	15	
Orderlies . . .	...	...	...	370	370	
Total .	1	31	50	520	602	

APPENDIX 3(*e*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF SIGNAL SECTIONS IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from educated classes in towns where such units may be formed.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment.

(iv) *Pay.*—As for infantry of the Indian Territorial Force. When embodied for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—As for other urban units of the Indian Territorial Force. One British N. C. O. will be attached to one or more Signal Sections as instructor.

SIGNAL SECTION—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	Officers.	Havildars.	Naiks.	Rank and File.	Total.	REMARKS.
Section Commander (Lieutenant or 2nd Lieutenant) .	1	...	...	...	1	
Havildar	...	1	...	...	1	
Naik	...	...	1	...	1	
Signallers	...	...	...	38	38	
Total Section .	1	1	1	38	41	

APPENDIX 3(*f*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF PIONEER COMPANIES IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from educated classes in towns where such units may be formed.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment.

(iv) *Pay.*—As for infantry of the Indian Territorial Force. On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—As laid down for other urban units. One British non-commissioned officer will be attached to each company as instructor.

PIONEER COMPANY—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	Officers.	Havildars.	Buglers.	Rank and File.	Total.	Followers.		Remarks.
						Class I.	Private.	
COMPANY HEADQUARTERS.								
Company Commander .	1	..	...	...	1	...	...	
Company Officer . .	1	...	...	...	1	...	...	
Company Havildar Major	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	
Company Quartermaster Havildar.	..	1	...	...	1	...	...	
Pay Havildar . . .	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	
Orderlies	...	...	...	2	2	...	...	
Storeman . . .	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Sanitary duties . .	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	
Drivers for equipment mules.	...	...	...	4	4	...	...	
Cooks		...	...	...	...	4	...	
Water carriers . .	...	...	...	...	...	4	...	
Sweepers . . .	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	
Officers' servants . .	...	...	..	...	...	...	1	
TOTAL COMPANY HEADQUARTERS.	2	3	..	8	13	10	1	
FOUR PLATOONS (EACH), HEADQUARTERS.								
Platoon Commander .	1	...	..	...	1	...	...	
Platoon Havildar . .	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	
Orderly	..	...	1	...	1	...	...	
FOUR SECTIONS.								
Pioneers	...	...	...	(a) 40	40	...	...	(a) Includes 2 Naiks and 2 Lance Naiks.
TOTAL PLATOON .	1	1	1	40	43	...	...	
TOTAL FOUR PLATOONS	4	4	4	160	172	...	...	
TOTAL COMPANY .	6	7	4	168	185	10	1	

APPENDIX 3(*g*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF AN ARMY TROOPS COMPANY, SAPPERS AND MINERS, IN THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from artizan classes, as shewn in the attached list, whose civil occupations fit them for the particular work which they will be required to perform in the Company.

(ii) *Terms of Service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the I. T. F., with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—The Company Commander (performing in peace the duties of Adjutant and Administrative Commandant), the Company Serjeant Major, 3 British N. C. Os. and 1 Havildar Instructor will be regulars and will constitute the permanent staff. The remainder of the Company (Officers, N. C. Os. and men) will belong to the Indian Territorial Force.

(iv) *Pay.*—Company Officers according to ranks, *plus* engineer pay. Other ranks will be graded for pay at Indian Army rates according to trade qualifications on enrolment or subsequent regrading. The initial or subsequent grading will be determined by trade tests conducted under arrangements to be made by District Commanders. Similarly, officers will not be appointed or promoted unless they are technically qualified for their appointments or promotion. On embodiment for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—As laid down for other urban units.

ARMY TROOPS COMPANY, SAPPERS AND MINERS—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	PERSONNEL.										ANIMALS.					Motor cycles with side cars.	Bicycles.
	BRITISH.			INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.					FOLLOWERS.								
	Officers.	W. O. and N. C. Os.	Total.	Officers.	Havildars.	Buglers.	Rank and File.	Total.	Class I.	Private.	Riding Horses.	Riding Ponies.	Pack Mules.	Draught Mules.	Total.		
Summary.																	
Total Company	...	...	...	6	6	1	107	120	7	9	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Attached (a)	1	4	5	...	1	...	...	1	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Total Company (including attached)	1	4	5	6	7	1	107	121	7	11	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Composition in detail.																	
Company Commander	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Company Officers	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Subedars	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...

(a) Instructional Staff.

ARMY TROOPS COMPANY, SAPPERS AND MINERS—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE—*contd.*

Establishment—contd.

Detail.	PERSONNEL.										ANIMALS.						
	BRITISH.			INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.					FOLLOWERS.								
	Officers.	W. O. and N. C. Os.	Total.	Officers.	Havildars.	Buglers.	Rank and File.	Total.	Class I.	Private.	Riding Horses.	Riding Ponies.	Pack Mules.	Draught Mules.	Total.	Motor cycles with side cars.	Bicycles.
Jemadars	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Company Havildar Major	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Company Q. M. Havildar	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Pay Havildar	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Havildars	...	...	...	...	3	...	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Bugler	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...

Naiks	...	...	...	...	...	...	6	6	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Clerk	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Sappers (*b*)	...	...	...	...	...	...	100	100	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Cook for British Instructional Staff	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	..	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Cooks for Indian ranks	...	.	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Water carriers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Sweepers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Servants for Officers	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Syces	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Servant for Officers' mess	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Private followers (*c*)	...	..	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	—
Total Company (excluding attached)	...	...	...	6	6	1	107	120	7	9	...	...	...	..	...	...	...	...

(*b*) Includes 3 paid Lance Naiks.
(*c*) Selected by Company Commander.

ARMY TROOPS COMPANY, SAPPERS AND MINERS—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Distribution of ranks by trades.

Detail.	No.	Remarks.
Clerk	1	
Technical clerk	1	
Bricklayers and masons	8	
Carpenters	10	
Smiths	7	
Fitters	3	
Painters	2	
Surveyors and draughtsmen	3	
Electricians	2	
Engine drivers	6	
Tinsmiths and moulders	3	
Wheeler	1	
Saddlers	2	
Motor mechanics	2	
Brickmaker	1	
Miscellaneous	55	
Total	107	

APPENDIX 3(*h*).

SCHEME FOR THE FORMATION OF ARTILLERY SECTIONS OF THE INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

(i) *Personnel.*—Personnel to be recruited from educated classes in towns where such units may be formed.

(ii) *Terms of service.*—Personnel to be enrolled and attested as for other units of the Indian Territorial Force, with the same liabilities for service.

(iii) *Establishment.*—As shown in the following establishment.

(iv) *Pay.*—The Section Commander will receive pay according to rank as an officer of the Indian Territorial Force. The Jemadar and other ranks will receive pay as for corresponding ranks of the Artillery of the regular Indian Army.

When embodied for training or service all ranks will be entitled to any concessions, in addition to pay, that may be admissible to the infantry of the Indian Territorial Force in like circumstances.

(v) *Training.*—As for other urban units of the Indian Territorial Force.

An British N. C. O. of the Royal Artillery will be attached to each section as instructor.

An British officer of the Royal Artilley will be detailed to co-ordinate the training of the several sections.

ARTILLERY SECTION (FIELD OR PACK)—INDIAN TERRITORIAL FORCE.

Establishment.

Detail.	Officers.	Havildars.	Rank and File.	Total.	REMARKS.
Section Commander (Lieut. or 2nd-Lieut.)	1	...	...	1	
Jemadar	1	...	...	1	
Havildar gunners	...	2	...	2	
Gunners	...	...	(*a*) 28	28	(*a*) Includes 4 Naiks and 4 Lance-Naiks.
Total Section	2	2	28	32	

APPENDIX 4.

Approximate Cost—University Training Corps.

	1 Company.		2 Companies.		3 Companies.		4 Companies.	
	Initial.	Recurring.	Initial.	Recurring.	Initial.	Recurring.	Initial.	Recurring.
	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.
Adjutant (including staff pay and syce and forage allowance and excluding Presidency House rent).—								
Captain	...	...	...	12,520	...	12,520	...	12,520
Warrant officers and non-commissioned officers, permanent staff.	...	3,840	...	12,000	...	20,000	...	23,530
Pay, lascars, clerks and followers . . .	...	1,015	...	2,030	...	3,045	...	4,060
Office allowance	...	240	...	480	...	720	...	960
Camp grant	...	2,500	...	5,000	...	7,500	...	10,000
Travelling and incidental expenses . . .	...	2,500	...	5,000	...	7,500	...	10,000
Clothing	12,500	1,250	25,000	2,500	37,500	3,750	50,000	5,000
Equipment	12,500	1,250	25,000	2,500	37,500	3,750	50,000	5,000
Total . .	25,000	12,595	50,000	42,030	75,000	58,785	1,00,000	71,070

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA PRESS, DELHI.

Digitized with financial assistance from

Government of Maharashtra

on 01 February, 2020